



OpenEnglish**Bible**

New Testament

and Psalms

Version 2013.11  
Built by [github.com/openenglishbible/USFM-Tools](https://github.com/openenglishbible/USFM-Tools)  
on Saturday, 16 November 2013

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

1	Matthew	5
2	Mark	59
3	Luke	95
4	John	159
5	Acts	207
6	Romans	271
7	1 Corinthians	297
8	2 Corinthians	323
9	Galatians	341
10	Ephesians	351
11	Philippians	361
12	Colossians	367
13	1 Thessalonians	375
14	2 Thessalonians	381
15	1 Timothy	385
16	2 Timothy	393
17	Titus	399
18	Philemon	403
19	Hebrews	405
20	James	427
21	1 Peter	435
22	2 Peter	443

23	1 John	449
24	2 John	457
25	3 John	459
26	Jude	461
27	Revelation	465
28	Psalms	497

THE  
GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO  
MATTHEW

*The Birth, Parentage and Infancy*

A GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST, a descendant of David and Abraham. 1  
Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac of Jacob, Jacob of 2  
Judah and his brothers, Judah of Perez and Zerah, whose mother 3  
was Tamar, Perez of Hezron, Hezron of Aram, Aram of Ami- 4  
nadab, Aminadab of Nahshon, Nahshon of Salmon, Salmon of 5  
Boaz, whose mother was Rahab, Boaz of Obed, whose mother 6  
was Ruth, Obed of Jesse, Jesse of David the King. David was the 7  
father of Solomon, whose mother was Uriah's widow, Solomon 8  
of Rehoboam, Rehoboam of Abijah, Abijah of Asa, Asa of Je- 9  
hoshaphat, Jehoshaphat of Joram, Joram of Uzziah, Uzziah of 10  
Jotham, Jotham of Ahaz, Ahaz of Hezekiah, Hezekiah of Man- 11  
asseh, Manasseh of Amon, Amon of Josiah, Josiah of Jechoniah 12  
and his brothers, at the time of the Exile to Babylon. After the Ex- 13  
ile to Babylon — Jechoniah was the father of Salathiel, Salathiel of 14  
Zerubbabel, Zerubbabel of Abiud, Abiud of Eliakim, Eliakim of 15  
Azor, Azor of Zadok, Zadok of Achim, Achim of Eliud, Eliud of 16  
Eleazar, Eleazar of Matthan, Matthan of Jacob, Jacob of Joseph, 17  
the husband of Mary, who was the mother of Jesus, who is called  
"Christ". So the whole number of generations from Abraham to 17  
David is fourteen; from David to the Exile to Babylon fourteen;  
and from the Exile to Babylon to the Christ fourteen.

This is how Jesus Christ was born: 18

His mother Mary was engaged to Joseph, but, before the marriage took place, she found herself to be pregnant by the power of

19 the Holy Spirit. Her husband, Joseph, was a just man and, since  
 20 he did not want to disgrace her publicly, he resolved to put an end  
 to their engagement privately. He had been thinking this over,  
 when an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream.

‘Joseph, son of David,’ the angel said, ‘do not be afraid to take  
 Mary for your wife, for her child has been conceived by the power  
 21 of the Holy Spirit. She will give birth to a son; name him Jesus,  
 for he will save his people from their sins.’

22 All this happened in fulfilment of these words of the Lord in  
 the prophet, where he says —

23 “The virgin will conceive and will give birth to a son, and  
 they will give him the name Immanuel”

24 — a word which means “God is with us.” When Joseph woke up,  
 25 he did as the angel of the Lord had directed him. He made Mary  
 his wife, but they did not sleep together before the birth of her  
 son; and to this son he gave the name Jesus.

2 After the birth of Jesus at Bethlehem in Judea, in the reign of King  
 Herod, some astrologers from the East arrived in Jerusalem, ask-  
 2 ing: ‘Where is the newborn king of the Jews? For we saw his star  
 3 in the east, and have come to worship him.’ When King Herod  
 heard of this, he was much troubled, and so too was all Jerusalem.  
 4 He called together all the chief priests and teachers of the Law in  
 the nation, and questioned them as to where the Christ was to be  
 born.

5 ‘At Bethlehem in Judea,’ was their answer, ‘for it is said in the  
 prophet —

6 “And you, Bethlehem in Judah’s land,  
 are in no way least among the chief cities of Judah,  
 for out of you will come a ruler —  
 who will shepherd my people Israel.”

7 Then Herod secretly sent for the astrologers. He found out from  
 8 them the time of the appearance of the star. Sending them to Beth-  
 lehem he said: ‘Go and make a careful search for the child. When  
 you have found him, bring word back to me, so that I, too, can  
 9 go and worship him.’ The astrologers heard what the king had

to say, and then continued their journey. The star which they had seen in the east led them on, until it reached and stood over the place where the child was. At the sight of the star they were filled with joy. Entering the house, they saw the child with his mother, Mary, and fell at his feet and worshipped him. Then they opened their treasure chests, and offered to the child presents of gold, frankincense, and myrrh. But afterwards, having been warned in a dream not to go back to Herod, they returned to their own country by another road.

After they had left, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, and said:

‘Get up, take the child and his mother, and seek refuge in Egypt; and stay there until I tell you to return, for Herod is about to search for the child, to put him to death.’ Joseph woke up, and taking the child and his mother by night, went into Egypt, and there he stayed until Herod’s death; in fulfilment of these words of the Lord in the prophet, where he says —

“Out of Egypt I called my Son.”

When Herod found out that the astrologers had tricked him, he flew into a rage. He sent and put to death all the boys in Bethlehem and the whole of that region, who were two years old or under, guided by the time which he had learned from the astrologers. Then were fulfilled these words spoken in the prophet Jeremiah, where he says —

“A voice was heard in Ramah,  
weeping and mourning loudly;  
Rachel, weeping for her children,  
refusing all comfort for they were dead.”

But, on the death of Herod, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, and said: ‘Get up, take the child and his mother, and go into the Land of Israel, for those who sought to take the child’s life are dead.’ He woke up, and taking the child and his mother, went into the Land of Israel. But, hearing that Archelaus had succeeded his father Herod as king of Judea, he was afraid to go back there; and having been warned in a dream, he went into the part of the country called Galilee. There he settled in the town of Nazareth, in fulfilment of these words in the prophets — “He will be called a Nazarene.”

*The Preparation*

3 ABOUT THAT TIME JOHN THE BAPTIST FIRST APPEARED, proclaiming in  
 2 the wilderness of Judea: 'Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at  
 3 hand.' John was the one who was spoken of in the prophet Isaiah,  
 where he says —

"The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:  
 'Make ready the way of the Lord,  
 make his paths straight.'"

4 John's clothes were made of camels' hair, with a leather strap  
 5 round his waist, and his food was locusts and wild honey. At  
 that time Jerusalem, and all Judea, as well as the whole district  
 6 of the Jordan, went out to him and were baptized by him in the  
 Jordan River, confessing their sins.

7 But when John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming  
 to receive his baptism, he said to them:

'You children of snakes! Who has prompted you to seek refuge  
 8 from the coming judgment? Let your life, then, prove your re-  
 9 pentance; and do not think that you can say among yourselves  
 "Abraham is our ancestor," for I tell you that out of these stones  
 10 God is able to raise descendants for Abraham! Already the axe  
 is lying at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to  
 11 bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire. I, in-  
 deed, baptize you with water to teach repentance; but he who is  
 coming after me is more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to  
 carry his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and  
 12 with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand, and he will clear his  
 threshing-floor, and store his grain in the barn, but the chaff he  
 will burn with a fire that cannot be put out.'

13 Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan, to John, to be bap-  
 14 tized by him. But John tried to prevent him.

'I need to be baptized by you,' he said, 'so why have you come  
 to me?'

15 'This is the way it should be for now,' Jesus answered, 'because  
 we should do everything that God requires.' So John agreed.

16 After the baptism of Jesus, and just as he came up from the  
 water, the heavens opened, and he saw the Spirit of God coming  
 17 down like a dove and resting on him, and from the heavens there



came a voice which said: 'This is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy.'

Then Jesus was led up into the wilderness by the Spirit to be 4  
tempted by the devil. And, after he had fasted for forty days and 2  
forty nights, he became hungry. The Tempter came to him, and 3  
said:

'If you are God's Son, tell these stones to become loaves of bread.'

But Jesus answered: 'Scripture says — 4

"It is not on bread alone that a person is to live, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God."

Then the devil took him to the Holy City, and, placing him on the 5  
parapet of the temple, said to him: 'If you are God's Son, throw 6  
yourself down, for scripture says —

"He will give his angels commands about you,  
and on their hands they will lift you up,  
so you do not even strike your foot against a stone."

'Scripture also says,' answered Jesus, 7

'You must not tempt the Lord your God.'"

The third time, the devil took Jesus to a very high mountain, and, 8  
showing him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendour,  
said to him:

'All these I will give you, if you will fall at my feet and 9  
worship me.'

Then Jesus said to him: 'Go away, Satan! For scripture says — 10

"You must worship the Lord your God, and worship him only."

Then the devil left him alone, and angels came and helped him. 11

*The Work in Galilee*

12 WHEN JESUS HEARD THAT JOHN HAD BEEN ARRESTED, he returned to  
 13 Galilee. Afterwards, leaving Nazareth, he went and settled at Capernaum, which is by the side of the sea, within the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali; in fulfilment of these words in the prophet Isaiah —

15 “The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,  
 the land of the Road by the sea, and beyond the Jordan,  
 with Galilee of the Gentiles —  
 16 The people who were living in darkness  
 have seen a great light,  
 and, for those who were living in the shadow-land of  
 death,  
 a light has dawned!”

17 At that time Jesus began to proclaim —

‘Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.’

18 As Jesus was walking along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw two brothers — Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew — casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen.

19 ‘Come and follow me,’ Jesus said, ‘and I will teach you to fish for people.’ The two men left their nets at once and followed him.  
 20 Going further on, he saw two other men who were also brothers, James, Zebedee’s son, and his brother John, in their boat with their father, mending their nets. Jesus called them, and they at once left their boat and their father, and followed him.

23 Jesus went all through Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness among the people; and  
 24 his fame spread all through Syria. They brought to him all who were ill with any form of disease, or who were suffering pain — any who were either possessed by demons, or were lunatic, or paralysed; and he cured them. He was followed by large crowds from Galilee, the district of the Ten Towns, Jerusalem, Judea, and from beyond the Jordan.

On seeing the crowds of people, Jesus went up the hill; and, 5  
when he had taken his seat, his disciples came up to him; and he 2  
began to teach them, saying

‘Blessed are the poor in spirit, 3  
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are the mourners, 4  
for they will be comforted.

Blessed are the gentle, 5  
for they will inherit the earth.

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, 6  
for they will be satisfied.

Blessed are the merciful, 7  
for they will find mercy.

Blessed are the pure in heart, 8  
for they will see God.

Blessed are the peacemakers, 9  
for they will be called children of God.

Blessed are those who have been persecuted in the cause 10  
of righteousness,  
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are you when people insult you, and persecute you, and 11  
say all kinds of evil lies about you because of me. Be glad and 12  
rejoice, because your reward in heaven will be great; this is the  
way they persecuted the prophets who lived before you.

You are salt for the world. But if salt becomes tasteless, how 13  
can it be made salty again? It is no longer good for anything, but  
is thrown away, and trampled underfoot. It is you who are the 14  
light of the world. A town that stands on a hill cannot be hidden.  
People do not light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on the 15  
lamp-stand, where it gives light to everyone in the house. Let 16  
your light so shine before the eyes of others so that, seeing your  
good actions, they will praise your Father who is in heaven.

Do not think that I have come to do away with the Law or the 17  
prophets; I have not come to do away with them, but to complete  
them. For I tell you, until the heavens and the earth disappear, not 18  
even the smallest letter, nor one stroke of a letter, will disappear  
from the Law until all is done. Whoever, therefore, breaks one 19  
of these commandments, even the least of them, and teaches oth-  
ers to do so, will be the least esteemed in the kingdom of heaven;

20 but whoever keeps them, and teaches others to do so, will be esteemed great in the kingdom of heaven. Indeed I tell you that, unless you obey God's commands better than of the teachers of the Law, and Pharisees, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven.

21 You have heard that to our ancestors it was said — "You must not commit murder," and "Whoever commits murder will be brought to trial." But I say to you that anyone who is angry at their brother or sister will be brought to trial; and whoever insults their brother or sister will be brought before the High Council, while whoever calls them a fool will be in danger of the fires of Gehenna. Therefore, when presenting your gift at the altar, if even there you remember that your brother or sister has something against you, leave your gift there, before the altar, go and be reconciled to them, first, then come and present your gift.  
22 Be ready to make friends with your opponent, even when you meet them on your way to the court; otherwise they might hand you over to the judge, and the judge to the judicial officer, and you will be thrown into prison. I tell you, you will not come out until you have paid the last cent.

27 You have heard that it was said — "You must not commit adultery." But I say to you that anyone who looks at a woman and desires her has already committed adultery with her in his heart.  
28 If your right eye causes you to sin, take it out and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it thrown into Gehenna. And, if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it go down to Gehenna.

31 It was also said — "Let anyone who divorces his wife serve her with a notice of separation." But I say to you that anyone who divorces his wife, except on the ground of some serious sexual sin, leads to her committing adultery; while anyone who marries her after her divorce is guilty of adultery. Again, you have heard that our ancestors were told — "Do not break your oaths, keep your vows to the Lord." But I say to you that you must not swear at all, either by heaven, since that is God's throne, or by the earth, since that is his footstool, or by Jerusalem, since that is the city of the Great King. Nor should you swear by your head, since you cannot make a single hair either white or black. Let your words

be simply “Yes” or “No”; anything beyond this comes from what is evil.

You have heard that it was said — “An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.” But I say to you that you must not resist those who wrong you; but, if anyone strikes you on the right cheek, turn the other to them also. If someone sues you for your shirt, let them have your cloak as well. If you are forced to carry a soldier’s pack for one mile, carry it two. Give to anyone who asks and, if someone wants to borrow from you, do not turn them away.

You have heard that it was said — “You must love your neighbour and hate your enemy.” But what I tell you is this: love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, so that you may become children of your Father who is in heaven; for he causes his sun to rise on bad and good alike, and sends rain on the righteous and on the unrighteous. For, if you love only those who love you, what reward will you have? Even the tax-gatherers do this! And, if you only welcome your brothers and sisters, what are you doing more than others? Even the Gentiles do this! You, then, must become perfect — as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Take care not to perform your religious duties in public in order to be seen by others; if you do, your Father who is in heaven has no reward for you. Therefore, when you do acts of charity, do not have a trumpet blown in front of you, as hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets so that people will praise them. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when you do acts of charity, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your charity may be secret; and your Father, who sees what is in secret, will reward you.

And, when you pray, you are not to behave as hypocrites do. They like to pray standing in the synagogues and at the corners of the streets, so that people will see them. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of you prays, they should go into their own room, shut the door, and pray to their Father who dwells in secret; and their Father, who sees what is secret, will reward them. When praying, do not repeat the same words over and over again, as is done by the Gentiles, who think that by using many words they will obtain a hearing. Do not imitate them; for God, your Father, knows what you need before you ask him. You, therefore, should pray like this —

- “Our Father, who is in heaven,  
may your name be held holy,  
10 your kingdom come, your will be done —  
on earth, as in heaven.  
11 Give us today  
the bread that we will need;  
12 and forgive us our wrong-doings,  
as we have forgiven those who have wronged us;  
13 and take us not into temptation,  
but deliver us from evil.”
- 14 For, if you forgive others their offences, your heavenly Father will  
15 forgive you also; but, if you do not forgive others their offences,  
not even your Father will forgive your offences.
- 16 And, when you fast, do not put on gloomy looks, as hypocrites  
do who disfigure their faces so that they may be seen by people to  
17 be fasting. That, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of you  
18 fasts, they should anoint their head and wash their face, so that  
they may not be seen by people to be fasting, but by their Father  
who dwells in secret; and their Father, who sees what is secret,  
will reward them.
- 19 Do not store up treasures for yourselves on earth, where moth  
20 and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store  
up treasures for yourselves in heaven, where neither moth nor  
21 rust destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal. For  
22 where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The lamp  
of the body is the eye. If your eye is unclouded, your whole body  
23 will be lit up; but, if your eye is diseased, your whole body will  
be darkened. And, if the inner light is darkness, how intense must  
24 that darkness be! No one can serve two masters, for either they  
will hate one and love the other, or else they will attach them-  
selves to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God  
and Money.
- 25 This is why I say to you: Do not be anxious about your life —  
what you can get to eat or drink, or about your body — what you  
can get to wear. Is not life more than food, and the body more than  
26 clothing? Look at the wild birds — they neither sow, nor reap,  
nor gather into barns; and yet your heavenly Father feeds them!  
27 Aren’t you more precious than they? But which of you, by being  
28 anxious, can prolong their life a single moment? And why be

anxious about clothing? Study the wild lilies, and how they grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet I tell you that even Solomon in all his splendour was not robed like one of these. If God so clothes even the grass of the field, which is living today and tomorrow will be thrown into the oven, won't he much more clothe you, you of little faith? Do not then ask anxiously "What can we get to eat?" or "What can we get to drink?" or "What can we get to wear?" All these are the things for which the nations are seeking, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But first seek his kingdom and the righteousness that he requires, and then all these things will be added for you. Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow, for tomorrow will bring its own anxieties. Every day has trouble enough of its own.

Do not judge and you will not be judged. For, just as you judge others, you will yourselves be judged, and the standard that you use will be used for you. Why do you look at the speck of sawdust in your friend's eye, while you pay no attention at all to the plank of wood in yours? How will you say to your friend "Let me take out the speck from your eye," when all the time there is a plank in your own? Hypocrite! Take out the plank from your own eye first, and then you will see clearly how to take out the speck from your friend's.

Do not give what is sacred to dogs; they will turn and maul you. Do not throw your pearls before pigs; they will trample them underfoot. Ask, and it will be given to you; search, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to you. For the person who asks receives, the person who searches finds, and to the door will be opened to the person who knocks. Who among you, when their child asks them for bread, will give them a stone, or when they ask for a fish, will give them a snake? If you, then, wicked though you are, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give what is good to those who ask him!

Do to others whatever you would wish them to do to you; for that is the teaching of both the Law and the prophets. Go in by the small gate. Broad and spacious is the road that leads to destruction, and those who go in by it are many; for small is the gate, and narrow the road, that leads to life, and those who find it are few.

15 Beware of false teachers — people who come to you in the guise  
16 of sheep, but at heart they are ravenous wolves. By the fruit of  
17 their lives you will know them. Do people pick grapes from thorn  
18 bushes, or figs from thistles? So, too, every sound tree bears good  
19 fruit, while a worthless tree bears bad fruit. A sound tree cannot  
20 produce bad fruit, nor can a worthless tree bear good fruit. Every  
21 tree that fails to bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the  
22 fire. So it is by the fruit of their lives that you will know such peo-  
23 ple. Not everyone who says to me “Master! Master!” will enter  
24 the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Fa-  
25 ther who is in heaven. On “that day” many will say to me “Master,  
26 Master, was not it in your name that we taught, and in your name  
27 that we drove out demons, and in your name that we did many  
28 miracles?” And then I will say to them plainly “I never knew you.  
29 Go from my presence, you who live in sin.”

24 Everyone, therefore, who listens to this teaching of mine and  
25 acts on it may be compared to a prudent person, who built their  
26 house on the rock. The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the  
27 winds blew and beat on that house, but it did not fall, for its founda-  
28 tions were on the rock. Everyone who listens to this teaching  
29 of mine and does not act on it may be compared to a foolish per-  
30 son, who built their house on the sand. The rain poured down,  
31 the rivers rose, the winds blew and struck against that house, and  
32 it fell; and great was its downfall.’

28 By the time that Jesus had finished speaking, the crowd was  
29 filled with amazement at his teaching. For he taught them like  
30 one who had authority, and not like their teachers of the Law.

8 When Jesus had come down from the hill, great crowds followed  
2 him. He saw a leper who came up, and bowed to the ground be-  
3 fore him, and said: ‘Master, if only you are willing, you are able  
4 to make me clean.’ Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him,  
5 saying as he did so: ‘I am willing; become clean.’ Instantly he was  
6 made clean from his leprosy; and then Jesus said to him: ‘Be care-  
7 ful not to say a word to anyone, but go and show yourself to the  
8 priest, and offer the gift directed by Moses, as evidence of your  
9 cure.’ After Jesus had entered Capernaum, a captain in the Ro-  
10 man army came up to him, entreating his help. ‘Sir,’ he said, ‘my



manservant is lying ill at my house with a stroke of paralysis, and is suffering terribly.'

'I will come and cure him,' answered Jesus. 'Sir,' the captain 7  
went on, 'I am unworthy to receive you under my roof; but only 8  
speak, and my manservant will be cured. For I myself am a man 9  
under the orders of others, with soldiers under me; and, if I say  
to one of them "Go," he goes, and to another "Come," he comes,  
and to my slave "Do this," he does it.' Jesus was surprised to 10  
hear this, and said to those who were following him: 'Never I tell 11  
you, in any Israelite have I met with such faith as this! Yes, and  
many will come in from East and West and take their places be-  
side Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven; while  
the heirs to the kingdom will be "banished into the darkness' 12  
outside; there, there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.' Then  
Jesus said to the captain: 'Go now, and it will be according to your 13  
faith.' And the man was cured that very hour.

When Jesus went into Peter's house, he saw Peter's 14  
mother-in-law prostrated with fever. On his taking her hand, 15  
the fever left her, and she rose and began to take care of him. In 16  
the evening the people brought to Jesus many who were  
possessed by demons; and he drove out the spirits with a word,  
and cured all who were ill, in fulfilment of these words in the 17  
prophet Isaiah — "He took our infirmities on himself, and bore  
the burden of our diseases."

Seeing a crowd round him, Jesus gave orders to go across. A 18  
teacher of the Law came up to him, and said: 'Teacher, I will follow 19  
you wherever you go.'

'Foxes have holes,' answered Jesus, 'and wild birds their nests, 20  
but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head.' 'Master,' said 21  
another, who was a disciple, 'let me first go and bury my father.'  
But Jesus answered: 'Follow me, and leave the dead to bury their 22  
dead.' Then he got into the boat, followed by his disciples. Sud- 23  
denly so great a storm came up on the sea, that the waves broke 24  
right over the boat. But Jesus was asleep; and the disciples came 25  
and roused him. 'Master,' they cried, 'save us; we are lost!'

'Why are you so timid?' he said. 'You of little faith!' Then Je- 26  
sus rose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and a great calm 27  
followed. The men were amazed, and exclaimed: 'What kind of  
man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him!'

28 On getting to the other side — the country of the Gadarenes —  
Jesus met two men who were possessed by demons, coming out  
of the tombs. They were so violent that no one was able to pass  
29 that way. Suddenly they shrieked out: 'What do you want with  
us, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before our  
30 time?' A long way off, there was a drove of many pigs, feeding;  
31 and the foul spirits began begging Jesus: 'If you drive us out, send  
us into the drove of pigs.'

32 'Go,' he said. The spirits came out, and entered the pigs; and  
the whole drove rushed down the steep slope into the sea, and  
33 died in the water. At this the men who tended them ran away  
and went to the town, carrying the news of all that had occurred,  
34 and of what had happened to the possessed men. At the news  
the whole town went out to meet Jesus, and, when they saw him,  
they entreated him to go away from their region.

9 Afterwards Jesus got into a boat, and, crossing over, came  
2 to his own city. There some people brought to him a paralysed  
man on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man:  
3 'Courage, child! Your sins are forgiven.' Then some of the teach-  
ers of the Law said to themselves: 'This man is blaspheming!'  
4 Knowing their thoughts, Jesus exclaimed: 'Why do your cher-  
5 ish such wicked thoughts? Which, I ask, is the easier? — to say  
6 "Your sins are forgiven"? Or to say "Get up, and walk"? But to  
show you that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins'  
— then he said to the paralysed man — 'Get up, take up your bed,  
7 and return to your home.' The man got up and went to his home.  
8 When the crowd saw this, they were awe-struck, and praised God  
for giving such power to human beings.

9 As Jesus went along, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting in  
the tax office, and said to him: 'Follow me.' Matthew got up and  
followed him.

10 And, later on, when he was having dinner in the house, a num-  
ber of tax-gatherers and outcasts came in and took their places at  
11 the table with Jesus and his disciples. When the Pharisees saw  
this, they said to his disciples: 'Why does your teacher eat in the  
12 company of tax-gatherers and outcasts?' On hearing this, Jesus  
said: 'It is not those who are healthy who need a doctor, but those  
13 who are ill. Go and learn what this means — "I desire mercy,  
and not sacrifice"; for I did not come to call the religious, but the  
14 outcast.' Then John's disciples came to Jesus, and asked: 'Why

do we and the Pharisees fast while your disciples do not?' Jesus 15  
answered: 'Can the groom's friends mourn as long as the groom  
is with them? But the days will come, when the groom will be  
taken away from them, and they will fast then. Nobody ever puts 16  
a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; for such a patch tears  
away from the garment, and a worse tear is made. Nor do people 17  
put new wine into old wine-skins; for, if they do, the skins burst,  
and the wine runs out, and the skins are lost; but they put new  
wine into fresh skins, and so both are preserved.'

While Jesus was saying this, a synagogue leader came up and 18  
bowed to the ground before him. 'My daughter,' he said, 'has just  
died; but come and place your hand on her, and she will be re-  
stored to life.' So Jesus rose and followed him, and his disciples 19  
went also. But meanwhile a woman, who had been suffering from  
haemorrhage for twelve years, came up behind and touched the  
tassel of his cloak. 'If I only touch his cloak,' she said to herself, 20  
'I will get well.' Turning and seeing her, Jesus said: 'Courage,  
daughter! Your faith has delivered you.' And at that very moment 21  
she became well. When Jesus reached the leader's house, seeing  
the flute players, and a number of people all in confusion, he said: 22  
'Go away, the little girl is not dead; she is asleep.' They began to  
laugh at him; but, when the people had been sent out, Jesus went 23  
in, and took the little girl's hand, and she rose. The report of this  
spread through all that part of the country. 24  
25  
26

As Jesus was passing on from there, he was followed by two 27  
blind men, who kept calling out: 'Take pity on us, Son of David!'  
When he had gone indoors, the blind men came up to him; and 28  
Jesus asked them: 'Do you believe that I am able to do this?' 'Yes,  
Master!' they answered. Then he touched their eyes, and said: 'It 29  
will be according to your faith.' Then their eyes were opened. Je- 30  
sus sternly cautioned them. 'See that no one knows of it,' he said.  
But the men went out, and spread the news about him through all 31  
that part of the country. Just as they were going out, some people 32  
brought up to Jesus a dumb man who was possessed by a demon;  
and, as soon as the demon had been driven out, the dumb man 33  
spoke. The people were astonished at this, and exclaimed: 'Noth-  
ing like this has ever been seen in Israel!' But the Pharisees said: 34  
'He drives out the demons by the help of the chief of the demons.'

Jesus went round all the towns and the villages, teaching in 35  
their synagogues, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom,

and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. But,  
36 when he saw the crowds, his heart was moved with compassion  
37 for them, because they were distressed and harassed, "like sheep  
38 without a shepherd"; and he said to his disciples: 'The harvest is  
abundant, but the labourers are few. Therefore pray to the owner  
of the harvest to send labourers to gather in his harvest.'

10 Calling his twelve Disciples to him, Jesus gave them author-  
ity over foul spirits, so that they could drive them out, as well  
as the power of curing every kind of disease and every kind of  
2 sickness. The names of the twelve apostles are these: First Si-  
mon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew; James the  
3 son of Zebedee, and his brother John; Philip and Bartholomew;  
Thomas and Matthew the tax-gather; James the son of Alphaeus,  
4 and Thaddaeus; Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot — the apos-  
tle who betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent out as his messengers, after giving  
them these instructions — 'Do not go to the Gentiles, nor enter  
6 any Samaritan town, but make your way rather to the lost sheep  
7 of Israel. On your way proclaim that the kingdom of heaven is  
8 at hand. Cure the sick, raise the dead, make the lepers clean,  
drive out demons. You have received free of cost, give free of cost.  
9 Do not provide yourselves with gold, or silver, or coins in your  
10 purses; not even with a bag for the journey, or a change of clothes,  
or sandals, or even a staff; for the worker is worth his food. What-  
11 ever town or village you visit, find out who is worthy in that  
12 place, and remain there until you leave. As you enter the house,  
13 greet it. Then, if the house is worthy, let your blessing rest on it,  
14 but, if it is unworthy, let your blessing return on yourselves. If  
no one welcomes you, or listens to what you say, as you leave that  
15 house or that town, shake off its dust from your feet. I tell you, the  
doom of the land of Sodom and Gomorrah will be more bearable  
in the "day of judgment" than the doom of that town.

16 Remember, I am sending you out as my messengers like sheep  
among wolves. So be as wise as snakes, and as blameless as doves.  
17 Be on your guard against others, for they will betray you to courts  
18 of law, and scourge you in their synagogues; and you will be  
brought before governors and kings for my sake so that you may  
19 witness for me before them and the nations. Whenever they be-  
tray you, do not be anxious as to how you will speak or what you  
will say, for what you will say will be given you at the moment;

for it will not be you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father that 20  
speaks within you. Brother will betray brother to death, and the 21  
father his child; and children will turn against their parents, and  
cause them to be put to death; and you will be hated by every- 22  
one because of me. Yet the person who endures to the end will be  
saved. But, when they persecute you in one town, escape to the 23  
next; for, I tell you, you will not have come to the end of the towns  
of Israel before the Son of Man comes. A student is not above his 24  
teacher, nor a servant above his master. It is enough for a student 25  
to be treated like his teacher, and a servant like his master. If the  
head of the house has been called Beelzebul, how much more the 26  
members of his household! Do not, therefore, be afraid of them.  
There is nothing concealed which will not be revealed, nor any- 27  
thing hidden which will not become known. What I tell you in  
the dark, say again in the light; and what is whispered in your 28  
ear, proclaim on the housetops. Do not be afraid of those who  
kill the body, but are unable to kill the soul; rather be afraid of 29  
him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna. Are  
not two sparrows sold for a one copper coin? Yet not one of them  
will fall to the ground without your Father's knowledge. While 30  
as for you, even the hairs of your head are numbered. Do not, 31  
therefore, be afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows.  
Everyone, therefore, who will publicly acknowledge me, I, too, 32  
will acknowledge before my Father who is in heaven; but, if any- 33  
one publicly disowns me, I, too, will disown him before my Father  
who is in heaven.

Do not imagine that I have come to bring peace to the earth. 34  
I have come to bring, not peace, but the sword. For I have come 35  
to set — "a man against his father, and a daughter against her  
mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. A per- 36  
son's enemies will be the members of their own household." Any-  
one who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of 37  
me; and anyone who loves son or daughter more than me is not  
worthy of me. Anyone who does not take their cross and follow 38  
in my steps is not worthy of me. The person who has found their 39  
life will lose it, while the person who, for my sake, has lost their  
life will find it.

Anyone who welcomes you is welcoming me; and anyone 40  
who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his  
messenger. The person who welcomes a prophet, because they 41

are a prophet, will receive a prophet's reward; and anyone who welcomes a good person, because they are a good person, will  
42 receive a good person's reward. And, if anyone gives but a cup of cold water to one of these little ones because they are a disciple, I tell you that they will assuredly not lose their reward.'

11 After Jesus had finished giving directions to his twelve Disciples, he left that place in order to teach and preach in their towns.

2 Now John had heard in prison what the Christ was doing, and  
3 he sent a message by his disciples, and asked — 'Are you "the  
4 coming one," or are we to look for someone else?' The answer of Jesus to the question was — 'Go and report to John what you  
5 hear and see — the blind recover their sight and the lame walk, the lepers are made clean and the deaf hear, the dead, too, are  
6 raised to life, and the good news is told to the poor. Blessed is the person who finds no hindrance in me.'

7 While John's disciples were going back, Jesus began to say to  
8 the crowds with reference to John: 'What did you go out into the wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did you go out to see? A man richly dressed? Why, those who wear  
9 rich things are to be found in the courts of kings! What, then, did you go for? To see a prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a  
10 prophet. This is the man of whom scripture says — "I am sending my messenger ahead of you, and he will prepare your way before  
11 you." I tell you, no one born of a woman has yet appeared who is greater than John the Baptist; and yet the least in the kingdom  
12 of heaven is greater than he. From the time of John the Baptist to this very hour, the kingdom of heaven has been taken by force,  
13 and people using force have been seizing it. For the teaching of all the prophets and of the Law continued until the time of John; and  
14 — if you are ready to accept it — John is himself the Elijah who was destined to come. If you have ears, listen. But to what will I  
15 compare the present generation? It is like little children sitting in the market-places and calling out to their playmates — "We have  
16 played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not mourned." For, when John came, neither eating  
17 nor drinking, people said "He has a demon in him"; and now that the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, they are saying  
18 "Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts!" And yet wisdom is vindicated by her actions.'

Then Jesus began to reproach the towns in which most of his miracles had been done, because they had not repented: 'Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the miracles which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Yet, I tell you, the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable in the "day of judgment" than yours. And you, Capernaum! Will you "exalt yourself to heaven"? "You will go down to the place of death." For, if the miracles which have been done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have been standing to this day. Yet, I tell you, the doom of Sodom will be more bearable in the "day of judgment" than yours.' At that same time Jesus uttered the words: 'I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that, though you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, you have revealed them to the child-like! Yes, Father, I thank you that this has seemed good to you. Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor does anyone fully know the Son, except the Father, or fully know the Father, except the Son and those to whom the Son may choose to reveal him. Come to me, all you who toil and are burdened, and I will give you rest! Take my yoke on you, and learn from me, for I am gentle and humble, and "you will find rest for your souls"; for my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.'

About the same time Jesus walked through the cornfields one Sabbath. His disciples were hungry, and began to pick some ears of wheat and eat them. But, when the Pharisees saw this, they said: 'Look! Your disciples are doing what it is not allowable to do on a Sabbath!'

'Haven't you read,' replied Jesus, 'what David did, when he and his companions were hungry — how he went into the house of God, and how they ate the consecrated bread, through it was not allowable for him or his companions to eat it, but only for the priests? And haven't you read in the law that, on the Sabbath, the priest in the Temple break the Sabbath and yet are not guilty? Here, however, I tell you, there is something greater than the Temple! Had you learned the meaning of the words — "I desire mercy, and not sacrifice," you would not have condemned those who are not guilty. For the Son of Man is lord of the Sabbath.'

Passing on, Jesus went into their synagogue, and there he saw a man with a withered hand. Some people asked Jesus whether it

11 was allowable to work a cure on the Sabbath — so that they might  
12 have a charge to bring against him. But Jesus said to them: ‘Which  
13 of you, if he had only one sheep, and that sheep fell into a pit on  
14 the Sabbath, would not lay hold of it and pull it out? How much  
15 more precious a person is than a sheep! Therefore it is allowable  
16 to do good on the Sabbath.’ Then he said to the man. ‘Stretch out  
17 your hand.’ The man stretched it out; and it had become as sound  
18 as the other. On coming out, the Pharisees plotted against Jesus,  
19 to put him to death.

20 Jesus, however, became aware of it, and went away from that  
21 place. A number of people followed him, and he cured them all;  
22 but he warned them not to make him known, in fulfilment of  
23 these words in the prophet Isaiah — “Here is my chosen servant,  
24 who I love and who pleases me! I will breathe my spirit on him,  
25 and he will announce a time of judgment to the Gentiles. He will  
26 not contend, nor cry aloud, Neither will anyone hear his voice in  
27 the streets; a bruised reed he will not break, and a smouldering  
28 wick he will not quench, until he has brought the judgment to  
29 a victorious issue, and on his name will the Gentiles rest their  
30 hopes.”

31 Then some people brought to Jesus a possessed man, who was  
32 blind and dumb; and he cured him, so that the man who had been  
33 dumb both talked and saw. At this all the people were astounded.  
34 ‘Is it possible that this is the son of David?’ they exclaimed. But  
35 the Pharisees heard of it and said: ‘He drives out demons only  
36 by the help of Beelzebul the chief of the demons.’ Jesus, however,  
37 was aware of what was passing in their minds, and said to them:  
38 ‘Any kingdom divided against itself becomes a desolation, and  
39 any town or household divided against itself will not last. So, if  
40 Satan drives Satan out, he must be divided against himself; and  
41 how, then, can his kingdom last? And, if it is by Beelzebul’s help  
42 that I drive out demons, by whose help is it that your own sons  
43 drive them out? Therefore they will themselves be your judges.  
44 But, if it is by the help of the Spirit of God that I drive out demons,  
45 then the kingdom of God must already be upon you. How, again,  
46 can anyone get into a strong man’s house and carry off his goods,  
47 without first securing him? Not until then will he plunder his  
48 house. Anyone who is not with me is against me, and the person  
49 who does not help me to gather is scattering. Therefore, I tell you,  
50 people will be forgiven every sin and slander; but slander against



the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. Whoever speaks against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in the present age, or in the age to come. 32

You must assume either that both tree and fruit are good, or that both tree and fruit are worthless; since it is by its fruits that a tree is known. You children of snakes! How can you, evil as you are, say anything good? For what fills the heart will rise to the lips. A good person, from his good stores, produces good things; while an evil person, from his evil stores, produces evil things. I tell you that for every careless thing that people say, they must answer on the "day of judgment." For it is by your words that you will be acquitted, and by your words that you will be condemned.' 33 34 35 36 37

At this point, some teachers of the Law and Pharisees spoke up. 'Teacher,' they said, 'we want to see some sign from you.' 38

'It is a wicked and unfaithful generation,' answered Jesus, 'that is asking for a sign, and no sign will be given it except the sign of the prophet Jonah. For, just as "Jonah was inside the sea-monster three days and three nights," so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. At the judgment, the people of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! At the judgment the Queen of the South will rise up with the present generation, and will condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! No sooner does a foul spirit leave a person, than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest, and does not find it. Then it says "I will go back to the home which I left"; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, and swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than the first. So, too, will it be with this wicked generation.' 39 40 41 42 43 44 45

While he was still speaking to the crowds, his mother and brothers were standing outside, asking to speak to him. Someone told him this, and Jesus replied: 'Who is my mother? And who are my brothers?' Then, stretching out his hands towards his disciples, he said: 'Here are my mother and my brothers! For 46 47 48

50 anyone who does the will of my Father who is in heaven is my brother and sister and mother.'

13 That same day, when Jesus had left the house and was sitting  
 2 by the sea, such great crowds gathered round him, that he got  
 into a boat, and sat in it, while all the people stood on the beach.  
 3 Then he told them many truths in parables. 'The sower,' he be-  
 4 gan, 'went out to sow; and, as they were sowing, some seed fell  
 5 along the path, and the birds came and ate it up. Some fell on  
 rocky places, where it had not much soil, and, because the soil  
 6 wasn't deep, sprang up at once. As soon as the sun had risen,  
 it was scorched, and, because their roots were not deep enough,  
 7 withered away. Some, again, fell into the brambles; but the bram-  
 8 bles shot up and choked it. Some, however, fell on good soil, and  
 yielded a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, some-  
 9 times thirty fold. Let those who have ears hear.'

10 Afterwards his disciples came to him, and said: 'Why do you speak to them in parables?'

11 'To you,' answered Jesus, 'the knowledge of the hidden truths of the kingdom of heaven has been imparted, but not to those.  
 12 For, to all who have, more will be given, and they will have abundance; but, from all who have nothing, even what they have will  
 13 be taken away. That is why I speak to them in parables, because, though they have eyes, they do not see, and though they have  
 14 ears, they do not hear or understand. In them is being fulfilled that prophecy of Isaiah which says —

"You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,  
 and, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving,

15 for the mind of this nation has grown dense,  
 and their ears are dull of hearing,  
 their eyes also have they closed;

Otherwise some day they might perceive with their eyes,  
 and with their ears they might hear,  
 and in their mind they might understand,  
 and might turn —

and I might heal them."

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they  
 17 hear; for I tell you that many prophets and good people have longed for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never

saw them, and to hear the things which you are hearing, yet never heard them.

Listen, then, yourselves to the parable of the sower. When any- 18  
 one hears the message of the kingdom without understanding it, 19  
 the evil one comes and snatches away what has been sown in their  
 mind. This is the person meant by the seed which was sown along  
 the path. By the seed which was sown on rocky places is meant 20  
 the person who hears the message, and at once accepts it joyfully;  
 but, as they have no root, they stand for only a short time; and, 21  
 when trouble or persecution arises because of the message, they  
 fall away at once. By the seed which was sown among the bram- 22  
 bles is meant the person who hears the message, but the cares of  
 life and the glamour of wealth completely choke the message, so  
 that it gives no return. But by the seed which was sown on the 23  
 good ground is meant the person who hears the message and un-  
 derstands it, and really yields a return, sometimes one hundred,  
 sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold.'

Another parable which Jesus told them was this — 'The king- 24  
 dom of heaven is compared to a person who sowed good seed in  
 their field. But, while everyone was asleep, their enemy came and 25  
 sowed weeds among the wheat, and then went away. So, when 26  
 the blades of corn shot up, and came into ear, the weeds made  
 their appearance also. The owner's servants came to them, and 27  
 said "Was not it good seed that you sowed in your field? Where,  
 then, do the weeds in it come from?" "An enemy has done this," 28  
 was the owner's answer. "Do you wish us, then," they asked," to  
 go and gather them together?" "No," said he, "because while you 29  
 are pulling up the weeds you might uproot the wheat with them.  
 Let both grow side by side until harvest; and then I will say to the 30  
 reapers, Gather the weeds together first, and tie them in bundles  
 for burning; but bring all the wheat into my barn.'"

Another parable which he told them was this — 'The kingdom 31  
 of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a person took and sowed  
 in his field. This seed is smaller than all other seeds, but, when 32  
 it has grown up, it is larger than the herbs and becomes a tree, so  
 that "the wild birds come and roost in its branches.'"

This was another parable which Jesus related — 'The kingdom 33  
 of heaven is like some yeast which a woman took and covered up  
 in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen.' Of all this Jesus 34  
 spoke to the crowd in parables; indeed to them he used never to

35 speak at all except in parables, in fulfilment of these words in the prophet — “I will speak to them in parables; I will utter things kept secret since the foundation of the world.”

36 Then Jesus left the crowd, and went into the house. Presently his disciples came to him, and said: ‘Explain to us the parable of the weeds in the field.’ He answered: ‘The sower of the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world. By the good seed is meant the people of the kingdom. The weeds are the wicked, and the enemy who sowed them is the devil. The harvest time is the close of the age, and the reapers are angels. And, just as the weeds are gathered and burnt, so it will be at the close of the age. The Son of Man will send his angels, and they will gather from his kingdom all that hinders and those who live in sin, and  
42 “will throw them into the blazing furnace,” where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. Then will the righteous shine, like the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. If you have ears, listen.

44 The kingdom of heaven is like a treasure hidden in a field, which a person found and hid again, and then, in their delight, went and sold everything that they had, and bought that field.

45 Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant in search of choice pearls. Finding one of great value, they went and sold everything that they had, and bought it. Or again, the kingdom of heaven is like a net which was cast into the sea, and caught  
48 fish of all kinds. When it was full, they hauled it up on the beach, and sat down and sorted the good fish into baskets, but threw the worthless ones away. So will it be at the close of the age. The angels will go out and separate the wicked from the righteous, and  
50 “will throw them into the blazing furnace,” where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.

51 Have you understood all this?’ Jesus asked. ‘Yes,’ they answered. Then he added: ‘So every teacher of the Law, who has received instruction about the kingdom of heaven, is like a householder who produces from his stores things both new and old.’

53 When Jesus had finished these parables, he withdrew from that place. Going to his own part of the country, he taught the people in their synagogue in such a manner that they were deeply impressed. ‘Where did he get this wisdom?’ they said, ‘and the miracles? Isn’t he the carpenter’s son? Isn’t his mother called Mary, and his brothers James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? And

his sisters, too — are not they all living among us? Where, then 56  
 did he get all this?' These things proved a hindrance to their be- 57  
 lieving in him. But Jesus said: 'A prophet is not without honour,  
 except in his own country and in his own house.' He did not work 58  
 many miracles there, because of their want of faith.

At that time Prince Herod heard of the fame of Jesus, and 14  
 said to his attendants: 'This must be John the Baptist; he must 2  
 be risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous pow-  
 ers are active in him.' For Herod had arrested John, put him in 3  
 chains, and shut him up in prison, to please Herodias, the wife  
 of Herod's brother Philip. For John had said to him "You have 4  
 no right to be living with her." Yet, though Herod wanted to put 5  
 him to death, he was afraid of the people, because they looked on  
 John as a prophet. But, when Herod's birthday came, the daugh- 6  
 ter of Herodias danced before his guests, and so pleased Herod,  
 that he promised with an oath to give her whatever she asked. 7  
 Prompted by her mother, the girl said "Give me here, on a dish, 8  
 the head of John the Baptist." The king was distressed at this; yet, 9  
 because of his oath and of the guests at his table, he ordered it to  
 be given her. He sent and beheaded John in the prison; and his 10  
 head was brought on a dish and given to the girl, and she took 11  
 it to her mother. Then John's disciples came, and took the body 12  
 away, and buried it; and went and told Jesus.

When Jesus heard of it, he left privately in a boat to a lonely 13  
 spot. The people, however, heard of his going, and followed him  
 in crowds from the towns on foot. On getting out of the boat, 14  
 Jesus saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of  
 them; and he cured all the sick among them. In the evening the 15  
 disciples came up to him, and said: 'This is a lonely spot, and the  
 day is now far advanced; send the crowds away so that they can  
 to the villages, and buy themselves food.' But Jesus said: 'They 16  
 need not go away, it is for you to give them something to eat.' 'We  
 have nothing here,' they said, 'except five loaves and two fish.' 17

'Bring them here to me,' was his reply. Jesus ordered the peo- 18  
 ple to take their seats on the grass; and, taking the five loaves and 19  
 the two fish, he looked up to heaven, and said the blessing, and,  
 after he had broken the loaves, gave them to his disciples; and  
 they gave them to the crowds. Everyone had sufficient to eat, 20  
 and they picked up enough of the broken pieces that were left to  
 fill twelve baskets. The men who ate were about five thousand 21

22 in number, without counting women and children. Immediately  
23 afterwards Jesus made the disciples get into a boat and cross over  
24 in advance of him, while he dismissed the crowds. After dismissing  
25 the crowds, he went up the hill by himself to pray; and, when  
26 evening fell, he was there alone. The boat was by this time some  
27 miles from shore, labouring in the waves, for the wind was against  
28 her. Three hours after midnight, however, Jesus came towards the  
29 disciples, walking on the water. But, when they saw him walking  
30 on the water, they were terrified. 'It is a ghost,' they exclaimed,  
31 and cried out in fear. But Jesus at once spoke to them. 'Courage!'  
32 he said, 'It is I, do not be afraid!' 'Master,' Peter exclaimed, 'if it is  
33 you, tell me to come to you on the water.' Jesus said: 'Come.' So  
34 Peter got down from the boat, and walked on the water, and went  
35 towards Jesus; but, when he felt the wind, he was frightened,  
36 and, beginning to sink, cried out: 'Master! Save me!' Instantly Jesus  
37 stretched out his hand, and caught hold of him. 'You of little  
38 faith!' he said, 'Why did you falter?' When they had got into the  
39 boat, the wind dropped. But the men in the boat threw themselves  
40 on their faces before him, and said: 'You are indeed God's  
41 Son.'

34 When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret. But  
35 the people of that place, recognising Jesus, sent out to the whole  
36 country round, and brought to him all who were ill, begging  
37 him merely to let them touch the tassel of his cloak; and all who  
38 touched were made perfectly well.

15 Then some Pharisees and teachers of the Law came to Jesus,  
2 and said: 'How is it that your disciples break the traditions of our  
3 ancestors? For they do not wash their hands when they eat food.'  
4 His reply was: 'How is it that you on your side break God's com-  
5 mandments out of respect for your own traditions? For God said  
6 — "Honour your father and mother," and "Anyone who abuses  
7 his father or mother shall suffer death," but you say "Whenever  
8 anyone says to his father or mother "Whatever of mine might have  
9 been of service to you is "Given to God,"" he is in no way bound  
10 to honour his father." In this way you have nullified the words  
11 of God for the sake of your traditions. Hypocrites! It was well  
12 said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you — "This is a people  
13 that honour me with their lips, While their hearts are far re-  
14 moved from me; but vainly do they worship me, For they teach  
15 but human precepts.'" Then Jesus called the people to him, and

said: 'Listen, and mark my words. It is not what enters a person's 11  
mouth that "defiles" them, but what comes out from their mouth 12  
— that does defile them!' His disciples came up to him, and said:  
'Do you know that the Pharisees were shocked on hearing what  
you said?'

'Every plant,' Jesus replied, 'that my heavenly Father has not 13  
planted will be rooted up. Leave them be; they are but blind 14  
guides; and, if one blind person guides another, both of them will  
fall into a ditch.' Peter spoke up: 'Explain this saying to us.' 15

'What, do even you understand nothing yet?' Jesus exclaimed. 16  
'Don't you see that whatever goes into the mouth passes into the 17  
stomach, and is afterwards expelled? But the things that come 18  
out of the mouth proceed from the heart, and it is these that defile  
a person; for out of the heart proceed evil thoughts — murder, 19  
adultery, sexual immorality, theft, perjury, slander. These are the 20  
things that defile a person; but eating with unwashed hands does  
not defile a person.'

On going away from that place, Jesus went to the country 21  
round Tyre and Sidon. There, a Canaanite woman of that 22  
district came out and began calling to Jesus: 'Take pity on me,  
Master, Son of David; my daughter is grievously possessed by a  
demon.' But Jesus did not answer her a word; and his disciples 23  
came up and begged him to send her away. 'She keeps calling  
out after us,' they said. 'I was not sent,' replied Jesus, 'to anyone 24  
except the lost sheep of Israel.' But the woman came, and, 25  
bowing to the ground before him, said: 'Master, help me.'

'It is not fair,' replied Jesus, 'to take the children's food and 26  
throw it to dogs.' 'Yes, Master,' she said, 'for even dogs do feed 27  
on the scraps that fall from their owners' table.'

'Your faith is great,' was his reply to the woman; 'it will be as 28  
you wish!' And her daughter was cured that very hour.

On leaving that place, Jesus went to the shore of the Sea of 29  
Galilee; and then went up the hill, and sat down. Great crowds 30  
of people came to him, bringing with them those who were lame,  
crippled, blind, or dumb, and many others. They put them down  
at his feet, and he cured them; and the crowds were astonished, 31  
when they saw the dumb talking, the cripples made sound, the  
lame walking about, and the blind with their sight restored; and  
they praised the God of Israel. Afterwards Jesus called his disci- 32  
ples to him, and said: 'My heart is moved at the sight of all these

people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; and I am unwilling to send them away hungry; they might faint on the way home.' 'Where can we,' his disciples asked, 'in a lonely place find enough bread for such a crowd as this?'

34 'How many loaves have you?' said Jesus. 'Seven,' they  
35 answered, 'and a few small fish.' Telling the crowd to sit down  
36 on the ground, Jesus took the seven loaves and the fish, and,  
after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to the  
37 disciples; and the disciples gave them to the crowds. Everyone  
had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the  
38 broken pieces left. The men who ate were four thousand in  
39 number without counting women and children. Then, after  
dismissing the crowds, Jesus got into the boat, and went to the  
region of Magadan.

16 Here the Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and, to test Jesus,  
2 requested him to show them some sign from the heavens. But  
Jesus answered: 'In the evening you say "It will be fine weather,  
3 for the sky is as red as fire." But in the morning you say "Today it  
will be stormy, for the sky is as red as fire and threatening." You  
learn to read the sky; yet you are unable to read the signs of the  
4 times! A wicked and unfaithful generation is asking for a sign,  
but no sign will be given it except the sign of Jonah.' So he left  
them and went away.

5 Now the disciples had crossed to the opposite shore, and had  
6 forgotten to take any bread. Presently Jesus said to them: 'Take  
care and be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and  
7 Sadducees.' But the disciples began talking among themselves  
8 about their having brought no bread. On noticing this, Jesus said:  
'Why are you talking among yourselves about your being short  
9 of bread, you of little faith? Don't you yet see, nor remember the  
five loaves for the five thousand, and how many baskets you took  
10 away? Nor yet the seven loaves for the four thousand, and how  
11 many basketfuls you took away? How is it that you do not see that  
I was not speaking about bread? Be on your guard against the  
12 leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.' Then they understood  
that he had told them to be on their guard, not against the leaven  
of bread, but against the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

13 On coming into the region of Caesarea Philippi, Jesus asked his  
disciples this question — 'Who do people say that the Son of Man



is?’ ‘Some say John the Baptist,’ they answered, ‘Others, however, 14  
say that he is Elijah, while others again say Jeremiah, or one of the  
prophets.’

‘But you,’ he said, ‘who do you say that I am?’ To this Simon 15  
Peter answered: ‘You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.’ 16

‘Blessed are you, Simon, Son of Jonah,’ Jesus replied. ‘For no 17  
human being has revealed this to you, but my Father who is in  
heaven. Yes, and I say to you, Your name is “Peter” — a Rock, 18  
and on this rock I will build my church, and the powers of the  
place of death will not prevail over it. I will give you the keys of 19  
the kingdom of heaven. Whatever you forbid on earth will be held  
in heaven to be forbidden, and whatever you allow on earth will  
be held in heaven to be allowed.’ Then he charged his disciples 20  
not to tell anyone that he was the Christ.

At that time Jesus Christ began to explain to his disciples that 21  
he must go to Jerusalem, and undergo much suffering at the  
hands of the elders, and chief priests, and teachers of the Law,  
and be put to death, and rise on the third day. But Peter took 22  
Jesus aside, and began to rebuke him. ‘Master,’ he said, ‘please  
God that will never be your fate!’ Jesus, however, turning to 23  
Peter, said: ‘Out of my way, Satan! You are a hindrance to me; for  
you look at things, not as God does, but as person does.’ Then 24  
Jesus said to his disciples: ‘If anyone wishes to walk in my steps,  
they must renounce self, and take up their cross, and follow me.  
For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, and whoever, for 25  
my sake, loses his life will find it. What good will it do a person  
to gain the whole world, if he forfeits his life? Or what will a 26  
person give that is of equal value with his life? For the Son of 27  
Man is to come in his Father’s glory, with his angels, and then he  
“will give to everyone what his actions deserve.” I tell you, 28  
some of those who are standing here will not know death until  
they have seen the Son of Man coming into his kingdom.’

Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, and the brothers 17  
James and John, and led them up a high mountain alone. There  
his appearance was transformed before their eyes; his face shown  
like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. All 2  
at once Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Jesus.  
‘Master,’ exclaimed Peter, interposing, ‘it is good to be here; if 3  
you wish, I will make three tents here, one for you, one for Moses, 4

- 5 and one for Elijah.' While he was still speaking, a bright cloud enveloped them, and there was a voice from the cloud that said —  
6 'This is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy; listen to  
7 him.' The disciples, on hearing this, fell on their faces, greatly  
8 afraid. But Jesus came and touched them, saying as he did so:  
9 'Rise up, and do not be afraid.' When they raised their eyes, they  
10 saw no one but Jesus himself alone. As they were going down  
the mountain side, Jesus gave them this warning — 'Do not speak  
of this vision to anyone, until the Son of Man has risen from the  
11 dead.' 'How is it,' his disciples asked, 'that our teachers of the  
Law say that Elijah has to come first?'
- 12 'Elijah indeed does come,' Jesus replied, 'and will restore  
everything; and I tell you that Elijah has already come, and  
people have not recognised him, but have treated him just as  
they pleased. In the same way, too, the Son of Man is destined to  
13 undergo suffering at people's hands.' Then the disciples  
understood that it was of John the Baptist that he had spoken to  
them.
- 14 When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, and,  
15 kneeling down before him, said: 'Master, take pity on my son, for  
he is epileptic and suffers terribly; indeed, he often falls into the  
16 fire and into the water; I brought him to your disciples, but they  
could not cure him.'
- 17 'Faithless and perverse generation!' Jesus exclaimed, 'how long  
must I be among you? How long must I have patience with you?  
18 Bring the boy here to me.' Then Jesus rebuked the demon, and it  
came out of the boy; and he was cured from that very hour. After-  
19 wards the disciples came up to Jesus, and asked him privately:  
'Why was it that we could not drive it out?'
- 20 'Because you have so little faith,' he answered; 'for, I tell you,  
if your faith were only like a mustard seed, you could say to this  
mountain "Move from this place to that!" and it would be moved;  
and nothing would be impossible to you.'
- 22 While Jesus and his disciples were together in Galilee, he said  
to them: 'The Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into human  
23 hands, and they will put him to death, but on the third day he  
will rise.' The disciples were greatly distressed.
- 24 After they had reached Capernaum, the collectors of the Tem-  
ple-rate came up to Peter, and said: 'Does not your Master pay the  
Temple-rate?'

'Yes,' answered Peter. But, on going into the house, before he 25  
 could speak, Jesus said: 'What do you think, Simon? From whom  
 do earthly kings take taxes or tribute? From their sons, or from  
 others?' 'From others,' answered Peter. 'Well then,' continued Je- 26  
 sus, 'their sons go free. Still, so we don't offend them, go and 27  
 throw a line into the sea; take the first fish that rises, open its  
 mouth, and you will find in it a piece of money. Take that, and  
 give it to the collectors for both of us.'

On the same occasion the disciples came to Jesus, and asked 18  
 him: 'Who is really the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?' Jesus  
 called a little child to him, and placed it in the middle of them, 2  
 and then said: 'I tell you, unless you change and become like 3  
 little children, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven at all.  
 Therefore, anyone who will humble themselves like this child — 4  
 that person will be the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And 5  
 anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even one little  
 child like this, is welcoming me. But, if anyone puts temptation 6  
 in the way of one of these little ones who believe in me, it would  
 be best for them to be sunk in the depths of the sea with a great  
 millstone hung round their neck. Alas for the world because of 7  
 such temptations! There cannot but be temptations but sorrow  
 awaits the person who does the tempting!

If your hand or your foot causes you to sin, cut it off, and throw 8  
 it away. It would be better for you to enter the life maimed or lame,  
 than to have both hands, or both feet, and be thrown into the fire  
 that never goes out. If your eye causes you to sin, take it out, and 9  
 throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the life with  
 only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into the fires  
 of Gehenna. Beware of despising one of these little ones, for in 10  
 heaven, I tell you, their angels always see the face of my Father  
 who is in heaven.

What think you? If a person owns a hundred sheep, and one 12  
 of them strays, will the person not leave the ninety-nine on the  
 hills, and go and search for the one that is straying? And, if they 13  
 succeed in finding it, I tell you that they rejoice more over that  
 one sheep than over the ninety-nine which did not stray. So, too, 14  
 it is the will of my Father who is in heaven that not one of these  
 little ones should be lost.

If your brother or sister does wrong, go to them and convince 15  
 them of their fault when you are both alone. If they listen to you,

16 you have won them over. But, if they do not listen to you, take  
17 with you one or two others, so that “on the evidence of two or  
18 three witnesses, every word may be put beyond dispute.” If they  
19 refuse to listen to them, speak to the church; and, if they also  
20 refuse to listen to the church, treat him as you would a Gentile  
21 or a tax-gatherer.

18 I tell you, all that you forbid on earth will be held in heaven  
to be forbidden, and all that you allow on earth will be held in  
19 heaven to be allowed. Again, I tell you that, if but two of you on  
earth agree as to what they will pray for, whatever it be, it will be  
20 granted them by my Father who is in heaven. For where two or  
three have come together in my name, I am present with them.’

21 Then Peter came up, and said to Jesus: ‘Master, how often am  
I to forgive someone who wrongs me? As many as seven times?’  
22 But Jesus answered: ‘Not seven times, but “seventy times seven.”  
23 Therefore the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a king who  
24 wished to settle accounts with his servants. When he had begun  
to do so, one of them was brought to him who owed him ten thou-  
25 sand bags of gold; and, as he could not pay, his master ordered  
him to be sold towards the payment of the debt, together with his  
26 wife, and his children, and everything that he had. The servant  
threw himself down on the ground before him and said “Have  
27 patience with me, and I will pay you all.” The master was moved  
with compassion; and he let him go, and forgave him the debt.  
28 But, on going out, that same servant came upon one of his fellow  
servants who owed him a hundred silver coins. Seizing him by the  
29 throat, he said “Pay what you owe me.” His fellow servant threw  
himself on the ground and begged for mercy. “Have patience with  
30 me,” he said, “and I will pay you.” But the other would not, but  
went and put him in prison until he should pay his debt. When  
31 his fellow servants saw what had happened, they were greatly  
distressed, and went to their master and laid the whole matter  
32 before him. So the master sent for the servant, and said to him  
“You wicked servant! When you begged me for mercy, I forgave  
33 you the whole of that debt. Shouldn’t you, also, to have shown  
mercy to your fellow servant, just as I showed mercy to you?”  
34 Then his master, in anger, handed him over to the jailers, until  
35 he should pay the whole of his debt. So, also, will my heavenly  
Father do to you, unless each one of you forgives his brother or  
sister from your heart.’

*The Journey to Jerusalem*

AT THE CONCLUSION OF THIS TEACHING, Jesus withdrew from 19  
Galilee, and went into that district of Judea which is on the other  
side of the Jordan. Great crowds followed him, and he cured 2  
them there. Presently some Pharisees came up to him, and, to 3  
test him, said: 'Has a man the right to divorce his wife for every  
cause?'

'Haven't you read,' replied Jesus, 'that at the beginning the 4  
Creator "made them male and female," and said — "For this reason 5  
a man will leave his father and mother, and be united to his  
wife, and the man and his wife will become one"? So that they 6  
are no longer two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked  
together people must not separate.' 'Why, then,' they said, 'did 7  
Moses direct that a man should "serve his wife with a notice of  
separation and divorce her"?''

'Moses, owing to the hardness of your hearts,' answered Je- 8  
sus, 'permitted you to divorce your wives, but that was not so at  
the beginning. But I tell you that anyone who divorces his wife, 9  
except on the ground of some serious sexual sin, and marries an-  
other woman, is guilty of adultery.' 'If that,' said the disciples, 10  
'is the position of a man with regard to his wife, it is better not to  
marry.'

'It is not everyone,' replied Jesus, 'who can accept this teach- 11  
ing, but only those who have been enabled to do so. Some men, 12  
it is true, have from birth been disabled for marriage, while oth-  
ers have been disabled by their fellow men, and others again have  
disabled themselves for the sake of the kingdom of heaven. Ac-  
cept this if you can.'

Then some little children were brought to Jesus, for him to 13  
place his hands on them, and pray; but the disciples found fault  
with those who had brought them. Jesus, however, said: 'Let the 14  
little children come to me, and do not hinder them, for it is to the  
childlike that the kingdom of heaven belongs.' So he placed his 15  
hands on them, and then went on his way.

A man came up to Jesus, and said: 'Teacher, what good thing 16  
must I do to obtain eternal life?'

17 'Why ask me about goodness?' answered Jesus. 'There is but  
One who is good. If you want to enter the life, keep the com-  
18 mandments.' 'What commandments?' asked the man. 'These,'  
answered Jesus: — "You must not kill. You must not commit  
adultery. You must not steal. You must not say what is false about  
19 others. Honour your father and your mother." And "You must  
20 love your neighbour as you love yourself." 'I have observed all  
these,' said the young man. 'What is still wanting in me?'  
21 'If you wish to be perfect,' answered Jesus, 'go and sell your  
property, and give to the poor, and you will have wealth in  
22 heaven; then come and follow me.' On hearing these words, the  
young man went away distressed, for he had great possessions.  
23 At this, Jesus said to his disciples: 'I tell you that a rich person  
24 will find it hard to enter the kingdom of heaven! I say again, it is  
easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich  
25 person to enter the kingdom of heaven!' On hearing this, the  
disciples exclaimed in great astonishment: 'Who then can  
26 possibly be saved?' But Jesus looked at them, and said: 'With  
people this is impossible, but with God everything is possible.'  
27 Then Peter turned and said to Jesus: 'But we — we left  
everything, and followed you; what, then, will we have?'  
28 'I tell you,' answered Jesus, 'that at the new creation, "when  
the Son of Man takes his seat on his throne of glory," you who  
followed me will be seated on twelve thrones, as judges of the  
29 twelve tribes of Israel. Everyone who has left houses, or brothers,  
or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or land, for my sake,  
will receive many times as much, and will "gain eternal life." But  
30 many who are first now will then be last, and those who are last  
20 will be first. For the kingdom of heaven is like an employer who  
went out in the early morning to hire labourers for his vineyards.  
2 He agreed with the labourers to pay them the standard daily rate  
3 of two silver coins, and sent them into his vineyard. On going  
out again, about nine o'clock, he saw some others standing in  
4 the marketplace, doing nothing. "You also may go into my vine-  
5 yard," he said, "and I will pay you what is fair." So they went.  
Going out again about midday and about three o'clock, he did  
6 as before. When he went out about five, he found some others  
standing there, and said to them "Why have you been standing  
7 here all day long, doing nothing?" "Because no one has hired us,"  
they answered. "You also may go into my vineyard," he said. In

the evening the owner of the vineyard said to his steward “Call 8  
the labourers, and pay them their wages, beginning with the last, 9  
and ending with the first. Now when those who had been hired  
about five o’clock went up, they received two silver coins each. 10  
So, when the first went up, they thought that they would receive 11  
more, but they also received two silver coins each; at which they 12  
began to grumble at their employer. “These last,” they said, “have  
done only one hour’s work, and yet you have put them on the 13  
same footing with us, who have borne the brunt of the day’s work,  
and the heat.” “My friend,” was his reply to one of them, “I am 14  
not treating you unfairly. Didn’t you agree with me for two sil- 15  
ver coins? Take what belongs to you, and go. I choose to give to  
this last man the same as to you. Don’t I have the right to do as I 16  
choose with what is mine? Are you envious because I am liberal?”  
So those who are last will be first, and the first last.’

When Jesus was on the point of going up to Jerusalem, he 17  
gathered the twelve disciples round him by themselves, and said  
to them as they were on their way: ‘Listen! We are going up to 18  
Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief  
priests and teachers of the Law, and they will condemn him to 19  
death, and give him up to the Gentiles for them to mock, and to  
scourge, and to crucify; and on the third day he will rise.’

Then the mother of Zebedee’s sons came to him with her sons, 20  
bowing to the ground, and begging a favour. ‘What is it that you 21  
want?’ he asked. ‘I want you to say,’ she replied, ‘that in your king-  
dom these two sons of mine may sit, one on your right, and the 22  
other on your left.’

‘You do not know what you are asking,’ was Jesus’ answer. 22  
‘Can you drink the cup that I am to drink?’ ‘Yes,’ they exclaimed,  
‘we can.’

‘You will indeed drink my cup,’ he said, ‘but as to a seat at 23  
my right and at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for  
those for whom it has been prepared by my Father.’ On hearing 24  
of this, the ten others were very indignant about the two broth-  
ers. Jesus, however, called the ten to him, and said: ‘The rulers 25  
of the Gentiles lord it over them as you know, and their high offi-  
cials oppress them. Among you it is not so. No, whoever wants 26  
to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever 27  
wants to take the first place among you, must be your slave; just 28

as the Son of Man came, not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.'

- 29 As they were going out of Jericho, a great crowd followed him.  
 30 Two blind men who were sitting by the roadside, hearing that  
 Jesus was passing, called out: 'Take pity on us, Master, Son of  
 31 David!' The crowd told them to be quiet; but the men only called  
 32 out the louder: 'Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!' Then Jesus  
 stopped and called them. 'What do you want me to do for you?'  
 33 he said. 'Master,' they replied, 'we want our eyes to be opened.'  
 34 So Jesus, moved with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediately they recovered their sight, and followed him.

### *The Last Days*

- 21 WHEN THEY HAD ALMOST REACHED JERUSALEM, having come as far as Bethphage, on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two disciples.  
 2 'Go to the village facing you,' he said, 'and you will immediately find an ass tethered, with a foal by her side; untie her, and lead her  
 3 here for me. And, if anyone says anything to you, you are to say this — "The Master wants them"; and he will send them at once.'  
 4 This happened in fulfilment of these words in the prophet — "Say  
 5 to the people of Zion — 'Your King is coming to you, gentle, and riding on an ass, and on the foal of a beast of burden.'"  
 6 So the disciples went and did as Jesus had directed them. They  
 7 led the ass and the foal back, and, when they had put their cloaks  
 8 on them, he seated himself on them. The immense crowd of people  
 9 spread their cloaks in the road, while some cut branches off the trees, and spread them on the road. The crowds that led the way, as well as those that followed behind, kept shouting: 'God save the Son of David! Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord! God save him from on high!' When he had entered  
 11 Jerusalem, the whole city was stirred, and asked — 'Who is this?', to which the crowd replied — 'This is the prophet Jesus from Nazareth in Galilee.'  
 12 Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and drove out all those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the  
 13 money changers, and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, and said to them: 'Scripture says "My house will be called a house of prayer";  
 14 but you are making it "a den of robbers."' While he was still in



the Temple Courts, some blind and some lame people came up to him, and he cured them. But, when the chief priests and the teachers of the Law saw the wonderful things that Jesus did, and the boys who were calling out in the Temple Courts ‘God save the Son of David!’, they were indignant, and said to him: ‘Do you hear what these boys are saying?’

‘Yes,’ answered Jesus; ‘but did you never read the words — “Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings you have called forth perfect praise”?’

Then he left them, and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

The next morning, in returning to the city, Jesus became hungry; and, noticing a solitary fig tree by the roadside, he went up to it, but found nothing on it but leaves. So he said to it: ‘Never again will fruit be gathered off you.’ And suddenly the fruit tree withered up. When the disciples saw this, they exclaimed in astonishment: ‘How suddenly the fig tree withered up!’

‘I tell you,’ replied Jesus, ‘if you have faith, without ever a doubt, you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill “Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!” it would be done. And whatever you ask for in your prayers will, if you have faith, be granted you.’

After Jesus had come into the Temple Courts, the chief priests and the elders of the people came up to him as he was teaching, and said: ‘What authority have you to do these things? Who gave you this authority?’

‘I, too,’ said Jesus in reply, ‘will ask you one question; if you will give me an answer to it, then I, also, will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It is about John’s baptism. What was its origin? Divine or human?’ But they began arguing among themselves: ‘If we say “divine,” he will say to us “Why then didn’t you believe him?” But if we say “human,” we are afraid of the people, for everyone regards John as a prophet.’ So the answer they gave Jesus was — ‘We do not know.’

‘Then I,’ he said, ‘refuse to tell you what authority I have to do these things. What do you think of this? There was a man who had two sons. He went to the elder and said “Go and work in the vineyard today my son.” “Yes, sir,” he answered; but he did not go. Then the father went to the second son, and said the same. “I will not,” he answered; but afterwards he was sorry and

- 31 went. Which of the two sons did as his father wished?' 'The second,' they said. 'I tell you,' added Jesus, 'that tax-gatherers and prostitutes are going into the kingdom of God before you. For
- 32 when John came to you, walking in the path of righteousness, you did not believe him, but tax-gatherers and prostitutes did; and yet you, though you saw this, even then were not sorry, nor did you believe him.
- 33 Listen to another parable. A man, who was an employer, once planted a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a winepress in it, built a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. When
- 34 the time for the grape harvest drew near, he sent his servants to the tenants, to receive his share of the produce. But the tenants
- 35 seized his servants, beat one, killed another, and stoned a third. A second time the owner sent some servants, a larger number than
- 36 before, and the tenants treated them in the same way. As a last resource he sent his son to them. "They will respect my son," he
- 37 said. But the tenants, on seeing his son, said to each other "Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and get his inheritance." So they seized him, and threw him outside the vineyard, and killed him.
- 38 Now, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants?' 'Miserable wretches!' they exclaimed, 'he will put them to a miserable death, and he will let out the vineyard
- 39 to other tenants, who will pay him his share of the produce at the proper times.' Then Jesus added: 'Have you never read in the scriptures? — "The stone which the builders despised — Has
- 40 now itself become the corner-stone; This corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is marvellous in our eyes." That, I tell you, is why the kingdom of God will be taken from you, and given to a
- 41 nation that does produce the fruit of the kingdom. Yes, and he who falls on this stone will be dashed to pieces, while anyone on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust.'
- 42 After listening to these parables, the chief priests and the Pharisees saw that it was about them that he was speaking; yet, although eager to arrest him, they were afraid of the crowds, who regarded him as a prophet.
- 22 Once more Jesus spoke to them in parables. 'The kingdom of heaven,' he said, 'may be compared to a king who gave a banquet in honour of his son's wedding. He sent his servants to call those who had been invited to the banquet, but they were unwilling to come. A second time he sent some servants, with orders

to say to those who had been invited "I have prepared my breakfast, my cattle and fat beasts are killed and everything is ready; come to the banquet." They, however, took no notice, but went 5  
off, one to their farm, another to their business; while the rest, 6  
seizing his servants, ill-treated them and killed them. The king, 7  
in anger, sent his troops, put those murderers to death, and set  
their city on fire. Then he said to his servants "The banquet is 8  
prepared, but those who were invited were not worthy. So go 9  
to the cross-roads, and invite everyone you find to the banquet."  
The servants went out into the roads and collected all the people 10  
whom they found, whether bad or good; and the bridal-hall was  
filled with guests. But, when the king went in to see his guests, he 11  
noticed there a man who had not put on a wedding-robe. So he 12  
said to him "My friend, how is it that you came in here without a  
wedding-robe?" The man was speechless. Then the king said to 13  
the attendants "Tie him hand and foot, and "put him out into the  
darkness" outside, where there will be weeping and grinding of  
teeth." For many are called, but few chosen.' 14

Then the Pharisees went away and conferred together as to 15  
how they might lay a trap for Jesus in the course of conversa-  
tion. They sent their disciples, with the Herodians, to say to him: 16  
'Teacher, we know that you are an honest person, and that you  
teach the way of God honestly, and are not afraid of anyone; for 17  
you pay no regard to a person's position. Tell us, then, what you  
think. Are we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not?' Per- 18  
ceiving their malice, Jesus answered: 'Why are you testing me,  
you hypocrites? Show me the coin with which the tax is paid.' 19  
And, when they had brought him a coin, he asked: 'Whose head 20  
and title are these?' 'The Emperor's,' they answered: at which he 21  
said to them: 'Then pay to the Emperor what belongs to the Em-  
peror, and to God what belongs to God.' They wondered at his 22  
answer, and left him alone and went away.

That same day some Sadducees came up to Jesus, maintaining 23  
that there is no resurrection. Their question was this: — 'Teacher,  
Moses said — "should a man die without children, the man's 24  
brother will become the husband of the widow, and raise a family  
for his brother." Now we had living among us seven brothers; of 25  
whom the eldest married and died, and, as he had no family, left  
his wife for his brother. The same thing happened to the second 26  
and the third brothers, and indeed to all the seven. The woman 27

28 herself died last of all. At the resurrection, then, whose wife will she be out of the seven, all of them having been married to her?’

29 ‘Your mistake,’ replied Jesus, ‘is due to your ignorance of the  
30 scriptures, and of the power of God. For at the resurrection there is no marrying or being married, but all who rise are as angels  
31 in heaven. As to the resurrection of the dead, have you not read these words of God — “I am the God of Abraham, and the God  
32 of Isaac, and the God of Jacob”? He is not the God of dead people, but of living.’ The crowds, who had been listening to him, were  
33 greatly struck with his teaching.

34 When the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees, they collected together. Then one of them, a Student of the Law, to test him, asked this question — ‘Teacher, what is the  
35 great commandment in the Law?’ His answer was: “‘You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul,  
36 and with all your mind.” This is the great first commandment. The second, which is like it, is this — “‘You must love your neighbour  
37 as you love yourself.” On these two commandments hang all the Law and the prophets.’ Before the Pharisees separated, Jesus  
38 put this question to them — ‘What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he?’ ‘David’s,’ they said. ‘How is it, then,’  
39 Jesus replied, ‘that David, speaking under inspiration, calls him “lord,” in the passage — “The Lord said to my Lord: ‘Sit at my  
40 right hand, until I put your enemies beneath your feet’”? Since, then, David calls him “lord,” how is he David’s son?’ No one  
41 could say a word in answer; nor did anyone after that day venture to question him further.

23 Then Jesus speaking to the crowds and to his disciples, said:  
2 ‘The teachers of the Law and the Pharisees now occupy the chair  
3 of Moses. Therefore practice and lay to heart everything that they tell preach but do not practice. While they make up heavy loads  
4 and pile them on other people’s shoulder’s they decline, themselves, to lift a finger to move them. All their actions are done to  
5 attract attention. They widen their phylacteries, and increase the size of their tassels, and like to have the place of honour at dinner,  
6 and the best seats in the synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect, and to be called “Rabbi” for everybody. But  
7 do not allow yourselves to be called “Rabbi,” for you have only one teacher, and you yourselves are all brothers and sisters. And  
8 do not call anyone on the earth your “Father,” for you have only

one Father, the heavenly Father. Nor must you allow yourselves 10  
to be called “leaders,” for you have only one leader, the Christ.  
The person who wants to be the greatest among you must be 11  
your servant. Whoever exalts themselves will be humbled, and 12  
whoever humbles themselves will be exalted. But alas for you, 13  
teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You  
turn the key of the kingdom of heaven in people’s faces. For you  
do not go in yourselves, and do not allow those who try to go in to  
do so. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites 15  
that you are! You scour land and sea to make a single convert,  
and, when they are gained, you make them twice as deserving of  
Gehenna as you are yourselves. Alas for you, you blind guides! 16  
You say “if any answer by the Temple, their oath counts for noth-  
ing; but, if anyone swears by the gold of the Temple, their oath is  
binding them”! Fools that you are and blind! Which is the more 17  
important? The gold? Or the Temple which has given sacredness  
to the gold? You say, too, “If anyone swears by the altar, their oath  
counts for nothing, but, if anyone swears by the offering placed  
on it, their oath is binding on them”! Blind indeed! Which is the 19  
more important? The offering? Or the altar which gives sacred-  
ness to the offering? Therefore a person, swearing by the altar, 20  
swears by it and by all that is on it, and a person, swearing by the  
Temple, swears by it and by him who dwells in it, while a person, 22  
swearing by heaven, swears by the throne of God, and by him who  
sits on it. Alas for you, teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hyp- 23  
ocrites that you are! You pay tithes on mint, fennel, and caraway  
seed, and have neglected the weightier matters of the Law — jus-  
tice, mercy, and good faith. These last you ought to have put into 24  
practice, without neglecting the first. You blind guides, to strain  
out a gnat and to swallow a camel! Alas for you, teachers of the 25  
Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You clean the outside  
of the cup and the dish, but inside they are filled with the results  
of greed and self-indulgence. You blind Pharisee! First clean the 26  
inside of the cup and the dish, so that the outside may become  
clean as well. Alas for you, teachers of the Law and Pharisees, 27  
hypocrites that you are! You are like whitewashed tombs, which  
indeed look fair outside, while inside they are filled with dead  
people’s bones and all kinds of filth. It is the same with you. Out- 28  
wardly, and to others, you have the look of religious people, but  
inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and sin. Alas for you, teachers 29

of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You build the tombs of the prophets, and decorate the monuments of religious people, and say "Had we been living in the days of our ancestors, we should have taken part in their murder of the prophets! By doing this you are furnishing evidence against yourselves that you are true children of the people who murdered the prophets. Fill up the measure of your ancestor's guilt. You snakes and children of snakes! How can you escape being sentenced to Gehenna? That is why I send you prophets, wise people, and teachers of the Law, some of whom you will crucify and kill, and some of whom you will scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from town to town; in order the blood on your heads may fall every drop of innocent "blood split on earth," from the blood of innocent Abel down to that of Zechariah, Barachiah's son, whom you murdered between the Temple and the altar. All this, I tell you, will come home to the present generation. Jerusalem! Jerusalem! She who slays the prophets and stones the messengers sent to her — Oh, how often have I wished to gather your children round me, as a hen gathers her brood under her wings, and you would not come! Verily, your house is left to you desolate! For nevermore, I tell you, will you see me, until you say — "Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord!"

24 Leaving the Temple Courts, Jesus was walking away, when his disciples came up to draw his attention to the Temple buildings. 2 'Do you see all these things?' was his answer. 'I tell you, not a single stone will be left here on another, which will not be thrown down,' so, while Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, his disciples came up to him privately and said: 'Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign of your coming, and of the close of the age.' Jesus replied to them: 'See that no one leads you astray; for, many will take my name, and come saying "I am the Christ," and will lead many astray. You will hear of wars and rumours of wars; take care not to be alarmed, for such things must occur; but the end is not yet here. For "nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom," and there will be famines and earthquakes in various places. All this, however, will be but the beginning of the birth pangs! When that time comes, they will give you up to persecution, and will put you to death, and you will be hated by all nations because of me. And then many will fall away, and will betray one another, and hate one another. Many false

prophets, also, will appear and lead many astray; and, owing to 12  
 the increase of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold. Yet 13  
 the person who endures to the end will be saved. This good news 14  
 of the kingdom will be proclaimed throughout the world as a wit-  
 ness to all nations; and then will come the end. As soon, then, as 15  
 you see "the Foul Desecration," mentioned by the prophet Daniel,  
 standing in the Holy place; (the reader must consider what this  
 means) then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in 16  
 the mountains; and a man on the housetop must not go down to 17  
 get the things that are in his house; nor must one who is on their 18  
 farm turn back to get his cloak. Alas for pregnant women, and for 19  
 those who are nursing infants in those days! Pray, too, that your 20  
 flight may not take place in winter, nor on a Sabbath; for that will 21  
 be "a time of great distress, the like of which has not occurred  
 from the beginning of the world down to the present time" — no,  
 nor ever will again. Had not those days been limited, not a single 22  
 soul would escape; but for the sake of "God's people" a limit will  
 be put to them. At that time, if anyone should say to you "Look! 23  
 Here is the Christ!" or "Here he is!", do not believe it; for false 24  
 Christs and false prophets will arise, and will display great signs  
 and marvels, so that, were it possible, even God's people would  
 be led astray. Remember, I have told you beforehand. Therefore, 25  
 if people say to you "He is in the wilderness!", do not go out 26  
 there; or "He is in an inner room!", do not believe it; for, just as 27  
 lightning will start from the east and flash across to the west, so  
 will it be with the coming of the Son of Man. Wherever a dead 28  
 body lies, there will the vultures flock." Immediately after the 29  
 distress of those days, "the sun will be darkened, the moon will  
 not give her light, the stars will fall from the heavens," and "the  
 forces of the heavens will be convulsed." Then will appear the 30  
 sign of the Son of Man in the heavens; and all the peoples of the  
 earth will mourn, when they see the Son of Man coming on the  
 clouds of the heavens," with power and great glory; and he will 31  
 send his angels, with a great trumpet, and they will gather his  
 people round him from the four winds, from one end of heaven  
 to the other.

Learn the lesson taught by the fig tree. As soon as its branches 32  
 are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer  
 is near. And so may you, as soon as you see all these things, know 33  
 that he is at your doors. I tell you, even the present generation 34

35 will not pass away, until all these things have taken place. The  
36 heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words will never  
37 pass away. But about that day and hour, no one knows — not  
38 even the angels of heaven, not even the Son — but only the Father  
39 himself. For, just as in the days of Noah, so will it be at the coming  
40 of the Son of Man. In those days before the flood they went on  
41 eating and drinking, marrying and being married, up to the very  
42 day on which Noah entered the ark, taking not notice until the  
43 flood came and swept them one and all away; and so will it be  
44 at the coming of the Son of Man. At that time, of two men on a  
45 farm one will be taken and one left; of two women grinding with  
46 the hand-mill one will be taken and one left. Therefore watch; for  
47 you cannot be sure on what day your Master is coming. But this  
48 you do know, that, had the owner of the house known at what  
49 time of night the thief was coming, they would have been on the  
50 watch, and would not have allowed their house to be broken into.  
51 Therefore, you must also prepare, since it is just when you are  
least expecting him that the Son of Man will come. Who, then  
is that trustworthy, careful servant, who has been placed by their  
master over his household, to give them their food at the proper  
time? Happy will that servant be whom their master, when he  
comes home, will find doing this. I tell you that their master will  
put them in charge of the whole of his property. But, should the  
servant be a bad servant, and say to themselves "My master is a  
long time in coming," and begin to beat their fellow servants, and  
eat and drink with drunkards, that servant's master will come on  
a day when they do not expect him, and at an hour of which they  
are unaware, and will flog the servant severely, and assign them  
their place among the hypocrites, where there will be weeping  
and grinding of teeth.

25 Then the kingdom of heaven will be like ten bridesmaids who  
2 took their lamps and went out to meet the groom. Five of them  
3 were foolish, and five were prudent. The foolish ones took their  
4 lamps, but took no oil with them; while the prudent ones, be-  
5 sides taking their lamps, took oil in their jars. As the groom was  
6 late in coming, they all became drowsy, and slept. But at mid-  
7 night a shout was raised — "The groom is coming! Come out to  
8 meet him!" Then all the bridesmaids woke up and trimmed their  
9 lamps, and the foolish said to the prudent "Give us some of your  
oil; our lamps are going out." But the prudent ones answered



"No, There may not be enough for you and for us. Go instead to those who sell it, and buy for yourselves." But while they were 10  
on their way to buy it, the groom came; and the bridesmaids who  
were ready went in with him to the banquet, and the door was  
shut. Afterwards the other bridesmaids came. "Sir, Sir," they said, 11  
"open the door to us!" But the groom answered "I tell you, I do 12  
not know you." Therefore watch, since you know neither the day 13  
nor the hour.

For it is as though a man, going on his travels, called his ser- 14  
vants, and gave his property into their charge. He gave five bags 15  
of gold to one, two to another, and one bag to a third, in propor-  
tion to the ability of each. Then he set out on his travels. The 16  
servant who had received the five bags of gold went at once and  
traded with it, and made another five bags. So, too, the servant 17  
who had received the two bags of gold made another two bags.  
But the servant who had received the one bag went and dug a 18  
hole in the ground, and hid his master's money. After a long time 19  
the master of those servants returned, and settled accounts with  
them. The servant who had received the five bags of gold came 20  
up and brought five bags more. "Sir," he said, "you entrusted me  
with five bags of gold; look, I have made another five bags!" "Well 21  
done, good, trustworthy servant!" said his master. "You have been  
trustworthy with a small sum; now I will place a large one in your 22  
hands; come and share your master's joy!" Then the one who  
had received the two bags of gold came up and said "Sir, you 23  
entrusted me with two bags pounds; look, I have made another  
two!" "Well done, good, trustworthy servant!" said his master. 23  
"You have been trustworthy with a small sum; now I will place  
a large one in your hands; come and share your master's joy!" 24  
The man who had received the single bag of gold came up, too,  
and said "Sir, I knew that you were a hard man; you reap where 24  
you have not sown, and gather up where you have not winnowed;  
and, in my fear, I went and hid your money in the ground; look, 25  
here is what belongs to you!" "You lazy, worthless servant!" was 26  
his master's reply. "You knew that I reap where I have not sown,  
and gather up where I have not winnowed? Then you ought to 27  
have placed my money in the hands of bankers, and I, on my re-  
turn, should have received my money, with interest. "Therefore," 28  
he continued, "take away from him the one bag of gold, and give 28  
it to the one who has the ten bags. For, to him who has, more 29

- will be given, and he will have abundance; but, as for him who  
30 has nothing, even what he has will be taken away from him. As  
for the useless servant, “put him out into the darkness” outside,  
where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.”
- 31 When the Son of Man has come in his glory and all the angels  
with him, then he “will take his seat on his throne of glory”; and  
32 all the nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate  
the people — just as a shepherd separates sheep from goats —  
33 placing the sheep on his right hand, and the goats on his left.  
34 Then the king will say to those on his right “Come, you who are  
blessed by my Father, enter into possession of the kingdom pre-  
35 pared for you ever since the beginning of the world. For, when I  
was hungry, you gave me food; when I was thirsty, you gave me  
36 drink; when I was a stranger, you took me to your homes; when  
I was naked, you clothed me; when I fell ill, you visited me; and  
37 when I was in prison, you came to me.” Then the righteous will  
answer “Lord, when did we see you hungry, and feed you? Or  
38 thirsty, and give you a drink? When did we see you a stranger,  
and take you to our homes? Or naked, and clothe you? When did  
39 we see you ill, or in prison, and come to you?” And the king will  
reply “I tell you, as often as you did it to one of these my brothers  
or sisters, however unimportant they seemed, you did it to me.”  
41 Then he will say to those on his left “Go from my presence, ac-  
cursed, into the “permanent fire which has been prepared for the  
42 devil and his angels.” For, when I was hungry, you gave me no  
43 food; when I was thirsty, you gave me no drink; when I was a  
stranger, you did not take me to your homes; when I was naked,  
you did not clothe me; and, when I was ill and in prison, you did  
44 not visit me.” Then they, in their turn, will answer “Lord, when  
did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger, or naked, or ill,  
45 or in prison, and did not supply your wants?” And then he will  
reply “I tell you, as often as you failed to do it to one of these, how-  
46 ever unimportant, you failed to do it to me.” And these last will  
go away “into lasting correction,” but the righteous “into lasting  
life.”
- 26 When Jesus had finished teaching all of that, he said to his  
2 disciples: ‘You know that in two days time the Festival of the  
Passover will be here; and that the Son of Man is to be given up to  
3 be crucified.’ Then the chief priests and the elders of the people  
met in the house of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and

plotted together to arrest Jesus by stealth and put him to death; 4  
but they said: 'Not during the Festival, or the people may riot.' 5

After Jesus had reached Bethany, and while he was in the house 6  
of Simon the leper, a woman came up to him with an alabaster 7  
jar of very costly perfume, and poured the perfume on his head 8  
as he sat at the table. The disciples were indignant at seeing this. 9  
'What is this waste for?' they exclaimed. 'It could have been sold 9  
for a large sum, and the money given to poor people.'

'Why are you troubling the woman?' Jesus said, when he noticed 10  
it. 'For this is a beautiful deed that she has done to me. You 11  
always have the poor with you, but you will not always have me. 12  
In pouring this perfume on my body, she has done it for my bury- 13  
ing. I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, this good news is 13  
proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory 13  
of her.'

It was then that one of the Twelve, named Judas Iscariot, made 14  
his way to the chief priests, and said 'What are you willing to give 15  
me, if I betray Jesus to you?' The Priests "weighed him out thirty 16  
pieces of silver" as payment. So from that time Judas looked for 16  
an opportunity to betray Jesus.

On the first day of the Festival of the unleavened bread, the 17  
disciples came up to Jesus, and said: 'Where do you wish us to 17  
make preparations for you to eat the Passover?'

'Go into the city to a certain man,' he answered, 'and say to him 18  
"The teacher says — My time is near. I will keep the Passover with 19  
my disciples at your house.'" The disciples did as Jesus directed 20  
them, and prepared the Passover. In the evening Jesus took his 21  
place with the twelve disciples, and, while they were eating, he 22  
said: 'I tell you that one of you will betray me.' In great grief they 22  
began to say to him, one by one: 'Can it be I, Master?'

'The one who dipped his bread beside me in the dish,' replied 23  
Jesus, 'is the one who will betray me. True, the Son of Man must 24  
go, as scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son 24  
of Man is being betrayed! For that man "it would be better never 25  
to have been born!"' Judas, who was betraying him, turned to 25  
him and said: 'Can it be I, Rabbi?'

'It is,' answered Jesus.

While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after say- 26  
ing the blessing, broke it and, as he gave it to his disciples, said: 27  
'Take it and eat it; this is my body.' Then he took a cup, and, after 27

28 saying the thanksgiving, gave it to them, with the words: 'Drink  
29 from it, all of you; for this is my covenant blood, which is poured  
out for many for the forgiveness of sins. I tell you that I will never,  
after this, drink of this juice of the grape, until that day when I will  
drink it new with you in the kingdom of my Father.'

30 They then sang a hymn, and went out to the Mount of Olives.  
31 Then Jesus said to them: 'Even you will all fall away from me  
tonight. Scripture says — "I will strike down the shepherd, and  
32 the sheep of the flock will be scattered." But, after I have risen, I  
33 will go before you into Galilee.' 'If everyone else falls away from  
you,' Peter answered, 'I will never fall away!'

34 'I tell you,' replied Jesus, 'that this very night, before the cock  
35 crows, you will disown me three times!' 'Even if I must die with  
you,' Peter exclaimed, 'I will never disown you!' All the disciples  
spoke in the same way.

36 Then Jesus came with them to a garden called Gethsemane,  
and he said to his disciples: 'Sit down here while I go and pray  
37 over there.' Taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee,  
38 he began to show signs of sadness and deep distress of mind. 'I  
am sad at heart,' he said, 'sad even to death; wait here and watch  
39 with me.' Going on a little further, he threw himself on his face  
in prayer. 'My Father,' he said, 'if it is possible, let me be spared  
40 this cup; only, not as I will, but as you will.' Then he came to his  
disciples, and found them asleep. 'What!' he said to Peter, 'could  
41 none of you watch with me for one hour? Watch and pray so that  
you don't fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but hu-  
42 man nature is weak.' Again, a second time, he went away, and  
prayed. 'My Father,' he said, 'if I cannot be spared this cup, but  
43 must drink it, your will be done!' And coming back again he  
44 found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy. So he left them,  
and went away again, and prayed a third time, again saying the  
45 same words. Then he came to the disciples, and said: 'Sleep on  
now, and rest yourselves. Look - my time is close at hand, and the  
Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of wicked people.  
46 Up, and let us be going. Look! My betrayer is close at hand.' And,  
47 while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one of the Twelve,  
came in sight; and with him was a great crowd of people, with  
swords and clubs, sent from the chief priests and elders of the  
48 people. Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with them. 'The  
49 man whom I kiss,' he had said, 'will be the one; arrest him.' So he

went up to Jesus at once, and exclaimed: 'Welcome, Rabbi!' and kissed him; at which Jesus said to him: 'Friend, do what you have come for.' The men went up, seized Jesus, and arrested him. Suddenly one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and striking the high priest's servant, cut off his ear. 'Sheathe your sword,' Jesus said, 'for all who draw the sword will be put to the sword. Do you think that I cannot ask my Father for help, when he would at once send to my aid more than twelve legions of angels? But in that case how would the scriptures be fulfilled, which say that this must be?' Jesus at the same time said to the crowds: 'Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I have sat teaching day after day in the Temple Courts, and yet you did not arrest me.' The whole of this occurred in fulfilment of the Prophetic scriptures. Then the disciples all forsook him and fled.

Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas, the high priest, where the teachers of the Law and elders had assembled. Peter followed him at a distance as far as the courtyard of the offices, to see the end. Meanwhile the chief priests and the whole of the High Council were trying to get such false evidence against Jesus, as would warrant putting him to death, but they did not find any, although many came forward with false evidence. Later on, however, two men came forward and said: 'This man said "I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three days."' Then the high priest stood up, and said to Jesus: 'Have you no answer? What is this evidence which these men are giving against you?' But Jesus remained silent. The high priest said to him: 'I order you, by the living God, to tell us whether you are the Christ, the Son of God.'

'It is true,' Jesus answered; 'Moreover I tell you all that hereafter you will "see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming on the clouds of the heavens."' Then the high priest tore his robes. 'This is blasphemy!' he exclaimed. 'Why do we want any more witnesses? You have just heard his blasphemy! What is your decision?' They answered: 'He deserves death.' Then they spat in his face, and struck him, while others dealt blows at him, saying as they did so: 'Now play the prophet for us, you Christ! Who was it that struck you?' Peter, meanwhile, was sitting outside in the courtyard; and a maidservant came up to him, and exclaimed: 'Why, you were with Jesus the Galilean!'

70 But Peter denied it before them all. 'I do not know what you  
71 mean,' he replied. When he had gone out into the gateway, another  
72 maid saw him, and said to those who were there: 'This man was with  
73 Jesus of Nazareth!' Again he denied it with an oath: 'I do not know  
74 the man!' But soon afterwards those who were standing by came up  
75 and said to Peter: 'You also are certainly one of them; why, even your  
way of speaking proves it!' Then Peter said: 'I swear that I do not know  
the man! May God punish me if I am lying!' At that moment a cock  
crowed; and Peter remembered the words which Jesus had said —  
"Before a cock has crowed, you will disown me three times"; and  
he went outside, and wept bitterly.

27 At daybreak all the chief priests and the elders of the people  
consulted together against Jesus, to bring about his death. They  
2 put him in chains and led him away, and gave him up to the  
3 Roman Governor, Pilate. Then Judas, who betrayed him, seeing  
that Jesus was condemned, repented of what he had done, and  
returned the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders.  
4 'I did wrong in betraying a good man to his death,' he said. 'What  
has that to do with us?' they replied. 'You must see to that yourself.'  
5 Judas flung down the pieces of silver in the Temple, and left;  
6 and went away and hanged himself. The chief priests took the  
pieces of silver, but they said: 'We must not put them into the  
7 Temple treasury, because they are blood-money.' So, after  
consultation, they bought with them the "Potter's Field" for a  
8 burial-ground for foreigners; and that is why that field is called  
9 "Field of Blood" to this very day. Then it was that these words  
spoken by the prophet Jeremiah were fulfilled — "They took the  
thirty pieces of silver, the price of him who was valued, whom  
10 some of the people of Israel valued, and gave them for the Potter's  
11 field, as the Lord commanded me." Meanwhile Jesus was brought  
before the Roman Governor. 'Are you the king of the Jews?'  
12 asked the Governor. 'It is true,' answered Jesus. While charges  
were being brought against him by the chief priests and elders,  
13 Jesus made no reply. Then Pilate said to him: 'Don't you hear  
14 how many accusations they are making against you?' Yet Jesus  
made no reply — not even a single word; at which the Governor  
15 was greatly astonished. Now, at the feast, the Governor was  
accustomed to grant the people the release of any one prisoner

whom they might choose. At that time they had a notorious prisoner called Barabbas. So, when the people had collected, Pilate said to them: 'Which do you wish me to release for you? Barabbas? Or Jesus who is called "Christ"?' For he knew that it was out of jealousy that they had given Jesus up to him. While he was still on the Bench, his wife sent this message to him — 'Do not have anything to do with that good man, for I have been very unhappy today in a dream because of him.' But the chief priests and elders persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas, and to kill Jesus. The Governor, however, said to them: 'Which of these two do you wish me to release for you?'

'Barabbas,' they answered. 'What then,' Pilate asked, 'should I do with Jesus who is called "Christ"?' 'Crucify him,' they all replied. 'Why, what harm has he done?' he asked. But they kept shouting furiously: 'Crucify him!' When Pilate saw that his efforts were unavailing, but that, on the contrary, a riot was beginning, he took some water, and washed his hands in the sight of the crowd, saying as he did so: 'I am not answerable for this bloodshed; you must see to it yourselves.' And all the people answered: 'His blood be on our heads and on our children's!' The Pilate released Barabbas to them; but Jesus he scourged, and gave him up to be crucified.

After that, the Governor's soldiers took Jesus with them into the Government house, and gathered the whole garrison round him. They stripped him, and put on him a red military cloak, and having twisted some thorns into a crown, put it on his head, and a rod in his right hand, and then, going down on their knees before him, they mocked him. 'Long life to you, king of the Jews!' they said. They spat at him and, taking the rod, kept striking him on the head; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the military cloak, and put his own clothes on him, and led him away to be crucified.

As they were on their way out, they came upon a man from Cyrene of the name of Simon; and they compelled him to go with them to carry the cross. On reaching a place named Golgotha (a place named from its likeness to a skull), they gave him some wine to drink which had been mixed with gall; but after tasting it, Jesus refused to drink it. When they had crucified him, they divided his clothes among them by casting lots. Then they sat down, and kept watch over him there. Above his head they

38 fixed the accusation against him written out — “THIS IS JESUS  
39 THE KING OF THE JEWS.” At the same time two robbers were  
40 crucified with him, one on the right, the other on the left. The  
41 passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads as they said: ‘You  
42 who “destroy the Temple and build one in three days,” save your-  
43 self! If you are God’s Son, come down from the cross!’ In the same  
44 way the chief priests, with the Teachers of the Law and elders, said  
45 in mockery: ‘He saved others, but he cannot save himself! He is  
46 the “king of Israel”! Why doesn’t he come down from the cross  
47 now, then we will believe in him. He has trusted in God; if God  
48 wants him, let him deliver him now; for he said “I am God’s Son.”’  
49 Even the robbers, who were crucified with him, insulted him in  
50 the same way. After midday a darkness came over all the coun-  
51 try, lasting until three in the afternoon. About three Jesus called  
52 out loudly: ‘Eloi, Eloi, lema sabacthani’ — that is to say, “My God,  
53 my God, why have you forsaken me?” Some of those standing by  
54 heard this, and said: ‘The man is calling for Elijah!’ One of them  
55 immediately ran and took a sponge, and, filling it with common  
56 wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink. But  
57 the rest said: ‘Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to save him.’<sup>1</sup>  
58 But Jesus, uttering another loud cry, gave up his spirit. Suddenly  
59 the Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom, the earth  
shook, the rocks were torn asunder, the tombs opened, and the  
bodies of many of God’s people who had fallen asleep rose, and  
they, leaving their tombs, went, after the resurrection of Jesus,  
into the Holy City, and appeared to many people. The Roman  
captain, and the men with him who were watching Jesus, on see-  
ing the earthquake and all that was happening, became greatly  
frightened and exclaimed: ‘This must indeed have been God’s  
Son!’ There were many women there, watching from a distance,  
who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee and had been attending  
on him. Among them were Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother  
of James and Joseph, and the mother of Zebedee’s sons.

When evening had fallen, there came a rich man belonging  
to Ramah, named Joseph, who had himself become a disciple of  
Jesus. He went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus. Pilate  
ordered it to be given him. So Joseph took the body, and wrapped

---

<sup>1</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *However another man took a spear, and pierced his side; and water and blood flowed from it.*



it in a clean linen sheet, and laid it in his newly made tomb which 60  
he had cut in the rock; and, before he left, he rolled a great stone  
against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and the other 61  
Mary remained behind, sitting in front of the grave.

The next day — that is, the day following the Preparation-day 62  
— the chief priests and Pharisees came in a body to Pilate, and  
said: ‘Sir, we remember that, during his lifetime, that impostor 63  
said “I will rise after three days.” So order the tomb to be made 64  
secure until the third day. Otherwise his disciples may come and  
steal him, and then say to the people “He has risen from the  
dead,” when the latest imposture will be worse than the first.’

‘You may have a guard,’ was Pilate’s reply; ‘go and make the 65  
tomb as secure as you can.’ So they went and made the tomb 66  
secure, by sealing the stone, in presence of the guard.

*The Risen Life*

AFTER THE SABBATH, as the first day of the week began to dawn, 28  
Mary of Magdala and the other Mary had gone to look at the  
grave, when suddenly a great earthquake occurred. For an angel 2  
of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away  
the stone, and seated himself on it. His appearance was as daz- 3  
zling as lightning, and his clothing was as white as snow; and, in 4  
their terror of him, the men on guard trembled violently and be-  
came like dead men. But the angel, addressing the women, said; 5  
‘You need not be afraid. I now that it is Jesus, who was crucified,  
for whom you are looking. He is not here; for he has risen, as 6  
he said he would. Come, and see the place where he was lying;  
and then go quickly and say to his disciples “He has risen from 7  
the dead, and is going before you into Galilee; there you will see  
him.” Remember, I have told you.’ They left the tomb quickly, in 8  
awe and great joy, and ran to tell the news to the disciples. Sud-  
denly Jesus met them. ‘Welcome!’ he said. The women went up to 9  
him, and clasped his feet, bowing to the ground before him. Then  
Jesus said to them: ‘Do not be afraid; go and tell my brothers and 10  
sisters to set out for Galilee, and they will see me there.’ While 11  
they were still on their way, some of the guard came into the city,  
and reported to the chief priests everything that had happened.  
So they and the elders met and, after holding a consultation, gave 12

13 a large sum of money to the soldiers, and told them to say that  
his disciples came in the night, and stole him while they were  
14 asleep; 'And should this matter come before the Governor,' they  
added, 'we will satisfy him, and see that you have nothing to fear.'  
15 So the soldiers took the money, and did as they were instructed.  
This story spread widely; the people of Judea still tell it today.

16 The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain where Je-  
17 sus told them to meet him; and, when they saw him, they bowed  
18 to the ground before him; although some felt doubtful. Then Je-  
sus came up, and spoke to them, saying:

'All authority in heaven and on the earth has been given to  
19 me. Therefore go and make disciples of all the nations, baptiz-  
ing them into the faith of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit,  
20 and teaching them to lay to heart all the commands that I have  
given you; and, remember, I myself am with you every day until  
the close of the age.'

# THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO MARK

## *The Preparation*

THE BEGINNING OF THE GOOD NEWS ABOUT JESUS CHRIST.	1
It is said in the prophet Isaiah —	2
“I am sending my messenger ahead of you; he will prepare your way. The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:	3
‘Prepare the road for the Lord, make a straight path for him.’”	
John the Baptizer appeared in the wilderness, proclaiming a bap- tism on repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. The whole of Judea, as well as all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, went out to him; and they were baptized by him in the Jordan River, confessing their sins.	4 5
John wore clothes made of camels’ hair, with a leather strap round his waist, and lived on locusts and wild honey; and he proclaimed — ‘After me is coming someone more powerful than I am, and I am not fit even to stoop down and unfasten his sandals. I have baptized you with water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit.’	6 7 8
Now about that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee, and was baptized by John in the Jordan. Just as he was coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens split open and the Spirit coming down to him like a dove, and from the heavens came a voice — ‘You are my dearly loved son; you bring me great joy.’	9 10 11
Immediately afterwards the Spirit drove Jesus out into the wilderness; and he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted by Satan, and among the wild beasts, while the angels helped him.	12 13

*The Work in Galilee*

14 AFTER JOHN HAD BEEN ARRESTED, Jesus went to Galilee, proclaiming  
15 the good news of God — ‘The time has come, and the kingdom  
of God is at hand; repent, and believe the good news.’

16 As Jesus was going along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he  
saw Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net in the sea, for  
17 they were fishermen. ‘Come and follow me,’ Jesus said, ‘and I  
18 will teach you to fish for people.’ They left their nets at once, and  
followed him.

19 Going on a little further, he saw James, Zebedee’s son, and  
his brother John, who were in their boat mending the nets. Je-  
20 sus called them at once, and they left their father Zebedee in the  
boat with the crew, and went after him.

21 They walked to Capernaum. On the next Sabbath Jesus went  
22 into the synagogue and began to teach. The people were amazed  
at his teaching, for he taught them like one who had authority,  
23 and not like the teachers of the Law. Now there was in their syn-  
agogue at the time a man under the power of a foul spirit, who  
24 called out: ‘What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have  
you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One  
25 of God!’ But Jesus rebuked the spirit: ‘Be silent! Come out from  
26 him.’ The foul spirit threw the man into a fit, and with a loud  
27 cry came out from him. They were all so amazed that they kept  
asking each other: ‘What is this? What is this, a new kind of teach-  
ing? He gives his commands with authority even to the foul spir-  
28 its, and they obey him!’ His fame spread at once in all directions,  
through the whole region of Galilee.

29 As soon as they had left the synagogue, they went to the house  
30 of Simon and Andrew, along with James and John. Now Simon’s  
mother-in-law was lying ill with a fever, and they at once told  
31 Jesus about her. Jesus went up to her and, grasping her hand,  
raised her up; the fever left her, and she began to take care of them.

32 In the evening, after sunset, the people brought to Jesus all  
33 who were ill or possessed by demons; and the whole city was  
34 gathered round the door. Jesus cured many who were ill with  
various diseases, and drove out many demons, and would not  
permit them to speak, because they knew him to be the Christ.

In the morning, long before daylight, Jesus got up and went out to a lonely spot, and there he began to pray. But Simon and his companions went out searching for him; and, when they found him, they exclaimed: 'Everyone is looking for you!' But Jesus said to them: 'Let us go somewhere else, into the country towns nearby so that I can make my proclamation in them also; for that was why I came.' And he went about making his proclamation in their synagogues all through Galilee, and driving out the demons.

One day a leper came to Jesus and, falling on his knees, begged him for help. 'If only you are willing,' he said, 'you are able to make me clean.' Moved with compassion, Jesus stretched out his hand and touched him, saying as he did so: 'I am willing; become clean.' Instantly the leprosy left the man, and he became clean; and then Jesus, after sternly warning him, immediately sent him away, and said to him: 'Be careful not to say anything to anyone; but go and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure.' The man, however, went away, and began to speak about it publicly, and to spread the story so widely, that Jesus could no longer go openly into a town, but stayed outside in lonely places; and people came to him from every direction.

Some days later, when Jesus came back to Capernaum, the news spread that he was in a house there; and so many people collected together, that after a while there was no room for them even round the door; and he began to tell them his message. Some people came, bringing to him a paralysed man, who was being carried by four of them. Being, however, unable to get him near to Jesus, owing to the crowd, they removed the roofing above Jesus; and, when they had made an opening, they let down the mat on which the paralysed man was lying. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man: 'Child, your sins are forgiven.'

But some of the teachers of the Law who were sitting there were debating in their minds: 'Why does this man speak like this? He is blaspheming! Who can forgive sins except God?' Jesus, at once intuitively aware that they were debating with themselves in this way, said to them: 'Why are you debating in your minds about this? Which is easier? — to say to the paralysed man, "Your sins are forgiven"? Or to say "Get up, and take up your mat, and walk"? But so you may know that the Son of Man has power to forgive sins on earth' — here he said to the paralysed man — 'To

- 11 you I say, Get up, take up your mat, and return to your home.’  
12 The man got up, and immediately took up his mat, and went out before them all; at which they were amazed, and, as they praised God, they said: ‘We have never seen anything like this!’
- 13 Jesus went out again to the sea; and all the people came to him, and he taught them. As he went along, he saw Levi, the son of Alphaeus, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: ‘Follow me.’ Levi got up and followed him.
- 15 Later on he was in his house having dinner, and a number of tax-gatherers and outcasts took their places at the table with Jesus and his disciples; for many of them were following him. When the teachers of the Law belonging to the party of the Pharisees saw that he was eating in the company of such people, they said to his disciples: ‘Why does he eat with the tax-gatherers and outcasts?’  
17 Hearing this, Jesus said: ‘It is not those who are healthy who need a doctor, but those who are ill. I did not come to call the religious, but the outcast.’
- 18 Now John’s disciples and the Pharisees were fasting, and people came and asked Jesus: ‘Why is it that John’s disciples and the disciples of the Pharisees fast, while yours do not?’ Jesus answered: ‘Can the groom’s friends fast, while the groom is with them? As long as they have the groom with them, they cannot  
20 fast. But the days will come, when the groom will be taken away from them, and they will fast then — when that day comes.
- 21 ‘No one ever sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; if they do, the patch tears away from it — the new from the old —  
22 and a worse tear is made. And no one ever puts new wine into old wine-skins; if they do, the wine will burst the skins, and both the wine and the skins are lost. But new wine is put into fresh skins.’
- 23 One Sabbath, as Jesus was walking through the cornfields, his disciples began to pick the ears of wheat as they went along.  
24 ‘Look!’ the Pharisees said to him, ‘why are they doing what is not allowed on the Sabbath?’
- 25 ‘Have you never read,’ answered Jesus, ‘what David did when  
26 he was in need and hungry, he and his companions — How he went into the house of God, in the time of Abiathar the high priest, and ate the consecrated bread, which only the priests are allowed to eat, and gave some to his comrades as well?’

Then Jesus added: 'The Sabbath was made for people, and not 27  
people for the Sabbath; so the Son of Man is lord even of the 28  
Sabbath.'

On another occasion Jesus went in to a synagogue, where there 3  
was a man whose hand was withered. And they watched Jesus 2  
closely, to see if he would cure the man on the Sabbath, so that  
they might have a charge to bring against him. 'Stand out in the 3  
middle,' Jesus said to the man with the withered hand; and to 4  
the people he said: 'Is it allowable to do good at the Sabbath —  
or harm? To save a life, or destroy it?' As they remained silent, 5  
Jesus looked round at them in anger, grieving at the hardness of  
their hearts, and said to the man: 'Stretch out your hand.' The man  
stretched it out; and his hand had become sound. Immediately on 6  
leaving the synagogue, the Pharisees and the Herodians united in  
laying a plot against Jesus, to put him to death.

Then Jesus went away with his disciples to the sea, followed by a 7  
great number of people from Galilee. A great number, hearing of 8  
all that he was doing, came to him from Judea, from Jerusalem,  
from Edom, from beyond the Jordan, and from the country round  
Tyre and Sidon. So Jesus told his disciples to keep a small boat 9  
close by, so that the crowd would not crush him. For he had cured 10  
many of them, and so people kept crowding around him, so all  
who were sick might touch him. The foul spirits, too, whenever 11  
they caught sight of him, flung themselves down before him, and  
screamed out: 'You are the Son of God!' But he repeatedly warned 12  
them not to make him known.

Jesus made his way up the hill, and called those whom he 13  
wished; and they went to him. He appointed twelve — whom 14  
he also named "apostles" — so that they might be with him, and  
that he might send them out as his messengers, to preach, and 15  
with power to drive out demons. So he appointed the Twelve — 16  
Peter (which was the name that Jesus gave to Simon), James, the 17  
son of Zebedee, and his brother John (to whom he gave the  
name of Boanerges, which means the Thunderers), Andrew, 18  
Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James the son of  
Alphaeus, Thaddaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot, the 19  
man who betrayed him.

20 Jesus went into a house; and again a crowd collected, so that  
 21 they were not even able to eat their food. When his relatives heard  
 of it, they went to take charge of him, for they said that he was out  
 of his mind.

22 The teachers of the Law, who had come down from Jerusalem,  
 said: 'He has Beelzebul in him! He drives the demons out by the  
 23 help of their chief.' So Jesus called them to him, and answered  
 24 them in parables: 'How can Satan drive out Satan? When a king-  
 25 dom is divided against itself, it cannot last; and when a household  
 26 is divided against itself, it will not be able to last. So, if Satan is  
 in revolt against himself and is divided, he cannot last — his end  
 has come!

27 'No man who has broken into a strong man's house can carry  
 off his goods, without first tying him up; and not until then will  
 28 he plunder his house. I tell you that people will be forgiven every-  
 29 thing — their sins, and all the slanders that they utter; but who-  
 ever slanders the Holy Spirit remains unforgiven to the end; he  
 30 has to answer for an enduring sin.' This was said in reply to the  
 31 charge that he had a foul spirit in him. His mother and his broth-  
 ers came, and stood outside, and sent to ask him to come to them.  
 32 There was a crowd sitting round Jesus, and some of them said  
 to him: 'Look, your mother and your brothers are outside, asking  
 for you.'

33 'Who is my mother? And my brothers?' was his reply. Then  
 34 he looked around on the people sitting in a circle round him, and  
 35 said: 'Here are my mother and my brothers! Whoever does the  
 will of God is my brother and sister and mother.'

4 Jesus again began to teach by the sea; and, as an immense crowd  
 was gathering round him, he got into a boat, and sat in it on the  
 sea, while all the people were on the shore at the water's edge.

2 Then he taught them many truths in parables; and in the course  
 of his teaching he said to them:

3 'Listen! The sower went out to sow; and presently, as he was  
 4 sowing, some of the seed fell along the path; and the birds came,  
 5 and ate it up. Some fell on rocky ground, where it had not much  
 6 soil, and, because the soil wasn't deep, sprang up at once; but,  
 when the sun rose, it was scorched, and, because their roots were



not deep enough, withered away. Some of the seed fell among 7  
brambles; but the brambles shot up and completely choked it,  
and it yielded no return. Some fell into good soil, and, shoot- 8  
ing up and growing, yielded a return, amounting to thirty, sixty,  
and even a hundred fold.’ And Jesus said: ‘Let anyone who has 9  
ears to hear with hear.’

Afterwards, when he was alone, his followers and the Twelve 10  
asked him about his parables; and he said: ‘To you the hidden 11  
truth of the kingdom of God has been imparted; but to those  
who are outside it all teaching takes the form of parables so that  
— “Though they have eyes, they may see without perceiving; 12  
and though they have ears, they may hear without understand-  
ing; otherwise some day they might turn and be forgiven.”

‘You do not know the meaning of this parable?’ he went on; 13  
‘Then how will you understand all the other parables? The sower 14  
sows the message. The people meant by the seed that falls along 15  
the path are these — where the message is sown, but, as soon  
as they have heard it, Satan immediately comes and carries away  
the message that has been sown in them. So, too, those meant 16  
by the seed sown on the rocky places are the people who, when  
they have heard the message, at once accept it joyfully; but, as 17  
they have no root, they stand only for a short time; and so, when  
trouble or persecution arises because of the message, they fall  
away at once. Those meant by the seed sown among the brambles 18  
are different; they are the people who hear the message, but the 19  
cares of life, and the glamour of wealth, and cravings for many  
other things come in and completely choke the message, so that  
it gives no return. But the people meant by the seed sown on the 20  
good ground are those who hear the message, and welcome it,  
and yield a return, thirty, sixty, and even a hundred fold.’

Jesus said to them: ‘Is a lamp brought to be put under a bas- 21  
ket or under the couch, instead of being put on the lamp-stand?  
There is nothing hidden that will not come to light and nothing 22  
is concealed that will not be brought into the open. Let all who 23  
have ears to hear with hear.

‘Take care what you listen to,’ said Jesus. ‘The standard you 24  
use will be used for you, and more will be added for you. For, to 25  
those who have, more will be given; while, from those who have  
nothing, even what they have will be taken away.’

26 Jesus also said: 'This is what the kingdom of God is like — like  
27 a man who has scattered seed on the ground, and then sleeps by  
night and rises by day, while the seed is shooting up and growing  
28 — he knows not how. The ground bears the crop of itself — first  
29 the blade, then the ear, and then the full grain in the ear; but,  
as soon as the crop is ready, immediately he "puts in the sickle  
because harvest has come".'

30 Jesus also said: 'To what can we liken the kingdom of God? By  
31 what can we illustrate it? Perhaps by the growth of a mustard  
seed. This seed, when sown in the ground, though it is smaller  
32 than all other seeds, yet, when sown, shoots up, and becomes  
larger than any other herb, and puts out great branches, so that  
even "the wild birds can roost in its shelter."' "

33 With many such parables Jesus used to speak to the people of  
34 his message, as far as they were able to receive it; and to them he  
never used to speak except in parables; but in private to his own  
disciples he explained everything.

35 In the evening of the same day, Jesus said to them: 'Let us go  
36 across.' So, leaving the crowd behind, they took him with them,  
just as he was, in the boat; and there were other boats with him. A  
37 violent squall came on, and the waves kept dashing into the boat,  
38 so that the boat was actually filling. Jesus was in the stern asleep  
on the cushion; and the disciples roused him and cried: 'Teacher!  
39 Is it nothing to you that we are lost?' Jesus rose and rebuked the  
wind, and said to the sea: 'Hush! Be still!' Then the wind dropped,  
40 and a great calm followed. 'Why are you so timid?' he exclaimed.  
41 'Have you no faith yet?' But they were struck with great awe, and  
said to one another: 'Who can this be that even the wind and the  
sea obey him?'

5 They came to the other side of the sea — the country of the  
2 Gerasenes; and, as soon as Jesus had got out of the boat, he met  
a man coming out of the tombs, who was under the power of a  
3 foul spirit, and who made his home in the tombs. No one had  
4 ever been able to secure him, even with a chain; for, though he  
had many times been left secured with fetters and chains, he had  
snapped the chains and broken the fetters to pieces, and no one

could master him. Night and day alike, he was continually shrieking in the tombs and among the hills, and cutting himself with stones. Catching sight of Jesus from a distance, he ran and bowed to the ground before him, shrieking out in a loud voice: 'What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? For God's sake do not torment me!' For Jesus had said: 'Come out from the man, you foul spirit.' And he asked him: 'What is your name?' 'My name,' he said, 'is Legion, for there are many of us;' and he begged Jesus again and again not to send them away out of that country.

There was a large drove of pigs close by, feeding on the hillside; and the spirits begged Jesus: 'Send us into the pigs so that we can take possession of them.' Jesus gave them leave. They came out, and entered into the pigs; and the drove — about two thousand in number — rushed down the steep slope into the sea and were drowned in the sea.

Then the men who tended them ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country round; and the people went to see what had happened. When they came to Jesus, they found the possessed man sitting there, clothed and in his right mind — the man who had had the "Legion" in him — and they were awe-struck. Then those who had seen it related to them all that had happened to the possessed man, as well as about the pigs; so they began to beg Jesus to leave their region.

As Jesus was getting into the boat, the possessed man begged him to let him stay with him. But Jesus refused. 'Go back to your home, to your own people,' he said, 'and tell them of all that the Lord has done for you, and how he took pity on you.' So the man went, and began to proclaim in the district of the Ten Towns all that Jesus had done for him; and everyone was amazed.

By the time Jesus had recrossed in the boat to the opposite shore, a great number of people had gathered to meet him, and were standing by the sea. One of the leaders of the synagogue, whose name was Jairus, came and, as soon as he saw Jesus, threw himself at his feet and begged him repeatedly, saying, 'My little daughter is at death's door. Please come and place your hands on her so that she may recover and live.' So Jesus went with him. A great number of people followed Jesus, and kept pressing round him.

25     Meanwhile a woman who for twelve years had suffered from  
26 haemorrhage, and undergone much at the hands of many doctors,  
27 (spending all she had without obtaining any relief, but, on  
28 the contrary, growing worse), heard about Jesus, came behind in  
29 the crowd, and touched his cloak. 'If I can only touch his clothes,'  
30 she said, 'I will get well!' At once her bleeding stopped, and she  
31 felt in herself that she was cured of her affliction. Jesus at once be-  
32 came aware of the power that had gone out from him, and, turn-  
33 ing round in the crowd, he said: 'Who touched my clothes?'

31     'You see the people pressing round you,' exclaimed his dis-  
32 ciples, 'and yet you say "Who touched me?"' But Jesus looked  
33 about to see who had done it. Then the woman, in fear and trem-  
34 bling, knowing what had happened to her, came and threw her-  
35 self down before him, and told him the whole truth. 'Daughter,'  
36 he said, 'your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you;  
37 be free from your affliction.'

35     Before he had finished speaking, some people from the house  
36 of the synagogue leader came and said: 'Your daughter is dead!  
37 Why should you trouble the teacher further?' But Jesus, overhear-  
38 ing what they were saying, said to the synagogue leader: 'Do not  
39 be afraid; only have faith.' And he allowed no one to accompany  
40 him, except Peter, James, and John, the brother of James. Presently  
41 they reached the leader's house, where Jesus saw a scene of con-  
42 fusion — people weeping and wailing incessantly. 'Why this con-  
43 fusion and weeping?' he said on entering. 'The little child is not  
44 dead; she is asleep.' They began to laugh at him; but he sent them  
45 all out, and then, with the child's father and mother and his com-  
46 panions, went into the room where she was lying. Taking her  
47 hand, Jesus said to her: 'Talitha ; OK, so it's not a name, koum!' —  
48 which means "little girl, I am speaking to you — Rise!" The little  
49 girl stood up at once, and began to walk about; for she was twelve  
50 years old. And, as soon as they saw it, they were overwhelmed  
51 with amazement; but Jesus repeatedly cautioned them not to let  
52 anyone know of it, and told them to give her something to eat.

6     On leaving that place, Jesus, followed by his disciples, went  
2 to his own part of the country. When the Sabbath came, he be-  
3 gan to teach in the synagogue; and the people, as they listened,  
4 were deeply impressed. 'Where did he get this?' they said, 'and  
5 what is this wisdom that has been given him? And these mira-  
6 cles which he is doing? Isn't he the carpenter, the son of Mary,

and the brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? And aren't his sisters, too, living here among us?' This proved a hindrance to their believing in him; at which Jesus said: 'A prophet is not without honour, except in his home town, and among his own relatives, and in his own home.' And he could not work any miracle there, beyond placing his hands on a few infirm persons, and curing them; and he wondered at the want of faith shown by the people. Jesus went round the villages, one after another, teaching.

He called the Twelve to him, and began to send them out as his messengers, two and two, and gave them authority over foul spirits. He instructed them to take nothing but a staff for the journey — not even bread, or a bag, or coins in their purse; but they were to wear sandals, and not to put on a second coat. 'Whenever you go to stay at a house,' he said, 'remain there until you leave that place; and if a place does not welcome you, or listen to you, as you go out of it shake off the dust that is on the soles of your feet, as a protest against them.' So they set out, and proclaimed the need of repentance. They drove out many demons, and anointed with oil many who were infirm, and cured them.

Now King Herod heard of Jesus; for his name had become well known. People were saying — 'John the Baptizer must have risen from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active in him.' Others again said — 'He is Elijah,' and others — 'He is a prophet, like one of the great prophets.' But when Herod heard of him, he said — 'The man whom I beheaded — John — he must be risen!'

For Herod himself had sent and arrested John, and put him in prison, in chains, to please Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip, because Herod had married her. For John had said to Herod — 'You have no right to be living with your brother's wife.' So Herodias was incensed against John, and wanted to put him to death, but was unable to do so, because Herod stood in fear of John, knowing him to be an upright and holy man, and protected him. He had listened to John, but still remained much perplexed, and yet he found pleasure in listening to him.

- 21 A suitable opportunity, however, occurred when Herod, on  
his birthday, gave a dinner to his high officials, and his generals,  
22 and the foremost men in Galilee. When his daughter — that is,  
the daughter of Herodias — came in and danced, she delighted  
Herod and those who were dining with him. ‘Ask me for what-  
ever you like,’ the king said to the girl, ‘and I will give it to you’;  
23 and he swore to her that he would give her whatever she asked  
24 him — up to half his kingdom. The girl went out, and said to her  
mother ‘What must I ask for?’  
25 ‘The head of John the Baptizer,’ answered her mother. So she  
went in as quickly as possible to the king, and made her request.  
‘I want you,’ she said, ‘to give me at once, on a dish, the head of  
26 John the Baptist.’ The king was much distressed; yet, because of  
his oath and of the guests at his table, he did not like to refuse her.  
27 He immediately dispatched one of his bodyguard, with orders  
to bring John’s head. The man went and beheaded John in the  
28 prison, and, bringing his head on a dish, gave it to the girl, and  
the girl gave it to her mother.  
29 When John’s disciples heard of it, they came and took his body  
away, and laid it in a tomb.  
30 When the apostles came back to Jesus, they told him all that  
31 they had done and all that they had taught. ‘Come by yourselves  
privately to some lonely spot,’ he said, ‘and rest for a while’ —  
for there were so many people coming and going that they had  
32 not time even to eat. So they set off privately in their boat for a  
lonely spot. Many people saw them going, and recognised them,  
33 and from all the towns they flocked together to the place on foot,  
and got there before them. On getting out of the boat, Jesus saw  
34 a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of them, be-  
cause they were “like sheep without a shepherd”; and he began  
35 to teach them many things. When it grew late, his disciples came  
up to him, and said: ‘This is a lonely spot, and it is already late.  
36 Send the people away, so that they may go to the farms and vil-  
lages around and buy themselves something to eat.’ But Jesus  
37 answered: ‘It is for you to give them something to eat.’ ‘Are we  
to go and spend almost a year’s wages on bread,’ they asked, ‘to  
give them to eat?’  
38 ‘How many loaves have you?’ he asked; ‘Go, and see.’ When  
39 they had found out, they told him: ‘Five, and two fish.’ Jesus di-  
rected them to make all the people take their seats on the green

grass, in parties; and they sat down in groups — in hundreds, and 40  
in fifties. Taking the five loaves and the two fish, Jesus looked up 41  
to heaven, and said the blessing; he broke the loaves into pieces,  
and gave them to his disciples for them to serve out to the people,  
and he divided the two fish also among them all. Everyone had 42  
sufficient to eat; and they picked up enough broken pieces to fill 43  
twelve baskets, as well as some of the fish. The people who ate 44  
the bread were five thousand in number.

Immediately afterwards Jesus made his disciples get into the 45  
boat, and cross over in advance, in the direction of Bethsaida,  
while he himself was dismissing the crowd. After he had taken 46  
leave of the people, he went away up the hill to pray. When 47  
evening fell, the boat was out in the middle of the sea, and Jesus  
on the shore alone. Seeing them labouring at the oars — for the 48  
wind was against them — about three hours after midnight  
Jesus came towards them, walking on the water, intending to 49  
join them. But, when they saw him walking on the water, they  
thought it was a ghost, and cried out; for all of them saw him, 50  
and were terrified. But Jesus at once spoke to them. 'Courage!'  
he said, 'it is I; do not be afraid!' Then he got into the boat with 51  
them, and the wind dropped. The disciples were utterly  
amazed, for they had not understood about the loaves, their 52  
minds being slow to learn. When they had crossed over, they 53  
landed at Gennesaret, and moored the boat. But they had no 54  
sooner left her than the people, recognising Jesus, hurried over 55  
the whole country-side, and began to carry about on mats those  
who were ill, wherever they heard he was. So wherever he went 56  
— to villages, or towns, or farms — they would lay their sick in  
the market-places, begging him to let them touch only the tassel  
of his cloak; and all who touched were made well.

One day the Pharisees and some of the teachers of the Law who 7  
had come from Jerusalem gathered round Jesus. They had 2  
noticed that some of his disciples ate their food with their hands  
"defiled," by which they meant unwashed. (For the Pharisees, 3  
and indeed all strict Jews, will not eat without first scrupulously

4 washing their hands, holding in this to the traditions of their an-  
cestors. When they come from market, they will not eat with-  
out first sprinkling themselves; and there are many other customs  
5 which they have inherited and hold to, such as the ceremonial  
washing of cups, and jugs, and copper pans). So the Pharisees  
and the teachers of the Law asked Jesus this question — ‘How is  
6 it that your disciples do not follow the traditions of our ancestors,  
but eat their food with defiled hands?’ His answer was: ‘It was  
well said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you hypocrites in  
the words — “This is a people who honour me with their lips,  
7 while their hearts are far removed from me; but vainly do they  
8 worship me, For they teach but human precepts.” You neglect  
9 God’s commandments and hold to human traditions. Wisely do  
you set aside God’s commandments,’ he exclaimed, ‘to keep your  
10 own traditions! For while Moses said “Honour your father and  
your mother,” and “Let anyone who abuses their father or mother  
11 suffer death,” you say “If a person says to their father or mother  
‘Whatever of mine might have been of service to you is Korban’”  
12 (which means “Given to God”) — why, then you do not allow  
them to do anything further for their father or mother! In this  
13 way you nullify the words of God by your traditions, which you  
hand down; and you do many similar things.’

14 Then Jesus called the people to him again, and said: ‘Listen  
15 to me, all of you, and mark my words. There is nothing external  
to a person, which by going into them can “defile” them; but the  
things that come out of a person are the things that defile them.’

17 When Jesus went indoors, away from the crowd, his disciples  
18 began questioning him about this saying. ‘What, do even you  
understand so little?’ exclaimed Jesus. ‘Don’t you see that there  
is nothing external to a person, which by going into a person, can  
19 “defile” them, because it does not pass into his heart, but into  
his stomach, and is afterwards got rid of? — in saying this Jesus  
20 pronounced all food “clean.” ‘It is what comes out from a per-  
son,’ he added, ‘that defiles them, for it is from within, out of the  
21 hearts of people, that there come evil thoughts — sexual immoral-  
22 ity, theft, murder, adultery, greed, wickedness, deceit, indecency,  
23 envy, slander, haughtiness, folly; all these wicked things come  
from within, and do defile a person.’

24 On leaving that place, Jesus went to the district of Tyre and  
Sidon. He went into a house, and did not wish anyone to know it,



but could not escape notice. For a woman, whose little daughter 25  
 had a foul spirit in her, heard of him immediately, and came and 26  
 threw herself at his feet — the woman was a foreigner, from Syr-  
 ian Phoenicia — and she begged him to drive the demon out of 27  
 her daughter. ‘Let the children be satisfied first,’ answered Jesus.  
 ‘For it is not fair to take the children’s food, and throw it to dogs.’

‘Yes, Master,’ she replied; ‘even the dogs under the table do 28  
 feed on the children’s crumbs.’

‘For saying that,’ he answered, ‘you may go. The demon has 29  
 gone out of your daughter.’ The woman went home, and found 30  
 the child lying on her bed, and the demon gone.

On returning from the district of Tyre, Jesus went, by way of 31  
 Sidon, to the Sea of Galilee, across the district of the Ten Towns.  
 Some people brought to him a man who was deaf and almost 32  
 dumb, and they begged Jesus to place his hand on him. Jesus 33  
 took him aside from the crowd quietly, put his fingers into the  
 man’s ears, and touched his tongue with saliva. Then, looking 34  
 up to heaven, he sighed, and said to the man: ‘Ephphatha!’ which  
 means “Be opened.” The man’s ears were opened, the string of 35  
 his tongue was freed, and he began to talk plainly. Jesus insisted 36  
 on their not telling anyone; but the more he insisted, the more  
 perseveringly they made it known, and a profound impression 37  
 was made on the people. ‘He has done everything well!’ they ex-  
 claimed. ‘He makes even the deaf hear and the dumb speak!’

About that time, when there was again a great crowd of people 8  
 who had nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples to him, and said:  
 ‘My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have 2  
 already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat;  
 and if I send them away to their homes hungry, they will break 3  
 down on the way; and some of them have come a long distance.’

‘Where will it be possible,’ his disciples answered, ‘to get suffi- 4  
 cient bread for these people in this lonely place?’

‘How many loaves have you?’ he asked. ‘Seven,’ they 5  
 answered. Jesus told the crowd to sit down on the ground. Then 6  
 he took the seven loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving,  
 broke them, and gave them to his disciples to serve out; and they 7  
 served them out to the crowd. They had also a few small fish;

and, after he had said the blessing, he told the disciples to serve  
8 out these as well. The people had sufficient to eat, and they  
picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces that were left.  
9 There were about four thousand people. Then Jesus dismissed  
10 them. Immediately afterwards, getting into the boat with his  
disciples, Jesus went to the district of Dalmanutha.

11 Here the Pharisees came out, and began to argue with Jesus,  
12 asking him for some sign from the heavens, to test him. Sighing  
deeply, Jesus said: 'Why does this generation ask for a sign? I tell  
13 you, no sign will be given it.' So he left them to themselves, and,  
getting into the boat again, went away to the opposite shore.

14 Now the disciples had forgotten to take any bread with them,  
15 one loaf being all that they had in the boat. So Jesus gave them  
this warning. 'Take care,' he said, 'beware of the leaven of the  
16 Pharisees and the leaven of Herod.' They began talking to one  
17 another about their being short of bread; and, noticing this, Je-  
sus said to them: 'Why are you talking about your being short of  
bread? Don't you yet see or understand? Are your minds still so  
18 slow or comprehension? 'Though you have eyes, do you not see?  
And though you have ears, do you not hear?'" Don't you remem-  
19 ber, when I broke up the five loaves for the five thousand, how  
many baskets of broken pieces you picked up?'

20 "Twelve,' they said. 'And when the seven for the four thousand,  
how many basketfuls of broken pieces did you pick up?'

21 'Seven,' they said. 'Don't you understand now?' he repeated.

22 They came to Bethsaida. There some people brought a blind  
23 man to Jesus, and begged him to touch him. Taking the blind  
man's hand, Jesus led him to the outskirts of the village, and,  
when he had put saliva on the man's eyes, he placed his hands  
24 on him, and asked him: 'Do you see anything?'" The man looked  
up, and said: 'I see the people, for, as they walk about, they look  
25 to me like trees.' Then Jesus again placed his hands on the man's  
eyes; and the man saw clearly, his sight was restored, and he saw  
26 everything with perfect distinctness. Jesus sent him to his home,  
and said: 'Do not go even into the village.'

27 Afterwards Jesus and his disciples went into the villages round  
Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples this  
question — 'Who do people say that I am?'

'John the Baptist,' they answered, 'but others say Elijah, while 28  
others say one of the prophets.'

'But you,' he asked, 'who do you say that I am?' To this Peter 29  
replied: 'You are the Christ.' At which Jesus charged them not to 30  
say this about him to anyone. Then he began to teach them that 31  
the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and that he must  
be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the teachers of  
the Law, and be put to death, and rise again after three days. He  
said all this quite openly. But Peter took Jesus aside, and began 32  
to rebuke him. Jesus, however, turning round and seeing his dis- 33  
ciples, rebuked Peter. 'Out of my sight, Satan!' he exclaimed. 'For  
you look at things, not as God does, but as people do.'

Calling the people and his disciples to him, Jesus said: 'If any- 34  
one wishes to walk in my steps, they must renounce self, take up  
their cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their life 35  
will lose it, and whoever, for my sake and for the sake of the good  
news, will lose their life will save it. What good is it to a per- 36  
son to gain the whole world and forfeit their life? For what could 37  
a person give that is of equal value with their life? Whoever is 38  
ashamed of me and of my teaching, in this unfaithful and wicked  
generation, of them will the Son of Man be ashamed, when he  
comes in his Father's glory with the holy angels.'

'I tell you,' he added, 'that some of those who are standing 9  
here will not know death until they have seen the kingdom of  
God come in power.'

Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John, and 2  
led them up a high mountain alone by themselves. There his ap-  
pearance was transformed before their eyes, and his clothes be- 3  
came whiter than any launderer in the whole world could bleach  
them. And Elijah appeared to them, in company with Moses; and 4  
they were talking with Jesus. 'Rabbi,' said Peter, interposing, 'it 5  
is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for you, one for  
Moses, and one for Elijah.' For he did not know what to say, be- 6  
cause they were much afraid. Then a cloud came down and en- 7  
veloped them; and from the cloud there came a voice — 'This is  
my dearly loved son; listen to him.' And suddenly, on looking 8  
round, they saw that there was now no one with them but Jesus  
alone.

As they were going down the mountainside, Jesus cautioned 9  
them not to relate what they had seen to anyone, until after the

- 10 Son of Man had risen from the dead. They seized on these words  
and discussed with one another what this "rising from the dead"  
11 meant. 'How is it,' they asked Jesus, 'that our teachers of the Law  
say that Elijah has to come first?'
- 12 'Elijah does indeed come first,' answered Jesus, 'and re-establish  
everything; and does not scripture speak, with regard to the  
Son of Man, of his undergoing much suffering and being utterly  
13 despised? But I tell you that Elijah has come, and people have  
treated him just as they pleased, as scripture says of him.'
- 14 When they came to the other disciples, they saw a great crowd  
round them, and some teachers of the Law arguing with them.  
15 But, as soon as they saw Jesus, all the people, in great astonish-  
16 ment, ran up and greeted him. 'What are you arguing about with  
17 them?' Jesus asked. 'Teacher,' answered a man in the crowd, 'I  
brought my son to see you, as he has a spirit in him that makes  
18 him mute; and, wherever it seizes him, it dashes him down; he  
foams at the mouth and grinds his teeth, and he is pining away. I  
asked your disciples to drive the spirit out, but they failed.'
- 19 'Faithless generation!' exclaimed Jesus. 'How long must I be  
with you? How long must I have patience with you? Bring the  
20 boy to me.' They brought him to Jesus; but no sooner did the  
boy see him than the spirit threw him into convulsions; and he  
fell on the ground, and rolled about, foaming at the mouth. 'How  
21 long has he been like this?' Jesus asked the boy's father. 'From  
22 his childhood,' he answered; 'and it has often thrown him into fire  
and into water to put an end to his life; but, if you can possibly  
23 do anything, take pity on us, and help us!' Why say "possibly"?'  
Jesus replied. 'Everything is possible for one who has faith.' The  
24 boy's father immediately cried out: 'I have faith; help my want  
25 of faith!' But, when Jesus saw that a crowd was quickly collect-  
ing, he rebuked the foul spirit: 'Deaf and dumb spirit, it is I who  
command you. Come out from him and never enter him again.'
- 26 With a loud cry the spirit threw the boy into repeated convul-  
sions, and then came out from him. The boy looked like a corpse,  
27 so that most of them said that he was dead. But Jesus took his  
hand, and lifted him; and he stood up.
- 28 When Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him pri-  
vately: 'Why couldn't we drive it out?'
- 29 'A spirit of this kind,' he said, 'can be driven out only by prayer.'

Leaving that place, Jesus and his disciples went on their way 30  
 through Galilee; but he did not wish anyone to know it, for he 31  
 was instructing his disciples, and telling them — ‘The Son of Man  
 is being betrayed into the hands of his fellow men, and they will  
 put him to death, but, when he has been put to death, he will rise  
 again after three days.’ But the disciples did not understand his 32  
 meaning and were afraid to question him.

They came to Capernaum. When Jesus had gone into the 33  
 house, he asked them: ‘What were you discussing on the way?’ 34  
 But they were silent; for on the way they had been arguing with  
 one another which was the greatest. Sitting down, Jesus called 35  
 the Twelve and said: ‘If anyone wishes to be first, he must be last  
 of all, and servant of all.’ Then Jesus took a little child, and 36  
 placed it in the middle of them. Taking it in his arms, he said to  
 them: ‘Anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even a 37  
 little child like this is welcoming me, and anyone who welcomes  
 me is welcoming not me, but him who sent me as his messenger.’

‘Teacher,’ said John, ‘we saw a man driving out demons by 38  
 using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he did  
 not follow us.’

‘None of you must prevent the man,’ answered Jesus, ‘for no 39  
 one will use my name in working a miracle, and yet find it easy  
 to speak evil of me. He who is not against us is for us. If anyone 40  
 gives you a cup of water because you belong to Christ, I tell you, 41  
 he will assuredly not lose his reward.

“And, if anyone puts temptation in the way of one of these little 42  
 ones who believe in me, it would be far better for him if he had  
 been thrown into the sea with a great millstone round his neck. If 43  
 your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It would be better for you to  
 enter the life maimed, than to have both your hands and go into  
 Gehenna, into the fire that cannot be put out. If your foot causes 45  
 you to sin, cut it off. It would be better for you to enter the life  
 lame, than to have both your feet and be thrown into Gehenna. If  
 your eye causes you to sin, tear it out. It would be better for you 47  
 to enter the kingdom of God with only one eye, than to have both  
 eyes and be thrown into Gehenna, where “their worm does not 48  
 die, and the fire is not put out.”

‘For it is by fire that everyone will be salted. 49

50 'Salt is good, but, if the salt should lose its saltiness, what will you use to season it?

'You must have salt in yourselves, and live at peace with one another.'

### *The Journey to Jerusalem*

10 ON LEAVING THAT PLACE, Jesus went into the district of Judea on the other side of the Jordan. Crowds gathered about him again; and again, as usual, he began teaching them. Presently some Pharisees came up and, to test him, asked: 'Has a husband the right to divorce his wife?'

3 'What direction did Moses give you?' replied Jesus. 'Moses,'  
4 they said, 'permitted a man to "draw up in writing a notice of separation and divorce his wife."'

5 'It was owing to the hardness of your hearts,' said Jesus, 'that  
6 Moses gave you this direction; but, at the beginning of the Cre-  
7 ation, God "made them male and female." "For this reason a man  
8 will leave his father and mother, and the man and his wife will  
9 become one;" so that they are no longer two, but one. What God  
himself, then, has yoked together no one must separate.'

10 When they were indoors, the disciples asked him again about  
11 this, and he said: 'Anyone who divorces his wife and marries an-  
12 other woman is guilty of adultery against his wife; and, if the  
woman divorces her husband and marries another man, she is  
guilty of adultery.'

13 Some of the people were bringing little children to Jesus, for  
him to touch them; but the disciples rebuked those who had  
14 brought them. When, however, Jesus saw this, he was indignant.  
'Let the little children come to me,' he said, 'do not hinder them;  
15 for it is to the childlike that the kingdom of God belongs. I tell  
you, unless a person receives the kingdom of God like a child,  
16 they will not enter it at all.' Then he embraced the children, and,  
placing his hands on them, gave them his blessing.

17 As Jesus was resuming his journey, a man came running up to  
him, and threw himself on his knees before him. 'Good teacher,'  
he asked, 'what must I do to gain eternal life?'

18 'Why do you call me good?' answered Jesus. 'No one is good  
19 but God. You know the commandments — "Do not kill. Do not

commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not say what is false about others. Do not cheat. Honour your father and your mother.”

‘Teacher,’ he replied, ‘I have observed all these from my childhood.’ Jesus looked at the man, and his heart went out to him, and he said: ‘There is still one thing wanting in you; go and sell all that you have, and give to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven; then come and follow me.’ But the man’s face clouded at these words, and he went away distressed, for he had great possessions.

Then Jesus looked round, and said to his disciples: ‘How hard it will be for people of wealth to enter the kingdom of God!’ The disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus said again: ‘My children, how hard a thing it is to enter the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to get through a needle’s eye, than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God.’

‘Then who can be saved?’ they exclaimed in the greatest astonishment. Jesus looked at them, and answered: ‘With people it is impossible, but not with God; for everything is possible with God.’

‘But we,’ began Peter, ‘we left everything and have followed you.’

‘I tell you,’ said Jesus, ‘there is no one who has left house, or brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or land, for my sake and for the good news, who will not receive a hundred times as much, even now in the present — houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land, though not without persecutions — and in the age that is coming, eternal life. But many who are first now will then be last, and the last will be first.’

One day, when they were on their way, going up to Jerusalem, Jesus was walking in front of the apostles, who were filled with misgivings; while those who were following behind were alarmed. Gathering the Twelve round him once more, Jesus began to tell them what was about to happen to him. ‘Listen!’ he said. ‘We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and the teachers of the Law, and they

- will condemn him to death, and they will give him up to the Gentiles, who will mock him, spit on him, and scourge him, and put him to death; and after three days he will rise again.'
- 34 James and John, the two sons of Zebedee, went to Jesus, and said: 'Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever we ask.'
- 35 'What do you want me to do for you?' he asked. 'Grant us this,'
- 36 they answered, 'to sit, one on your right, and the other on your left, when you come in glory.'
- 37 'You do not know what you are asking,' Jesus said to them. 'Can you drink the cup that I am to drink? Or receive the baptism that I am to receive?'
- 38 'Yes,' they answered, 'we can.'
- 39 'You will indeed drink the cup that I am to drink,' Jesus said, 'and receive the baptism that I am to receive, but as to a seat at my right or at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared.'
- 40 On hearing of this, the ten others were at first very indignant about James and John. But Jesus called the ten to him, and said: 'Those who are regarded as ruling among the Gentiles lord it over them, as you know, and their great men oppress them. But among you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to take the first place among you must be the servant of all; for even the Son of Man came, not be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.'
- 41 They came to Jericho. When Jesus was going out of the town with his disciples and a large crowd, Bartimaeus, the son of
- 42 Timaeus, a blind beggar, was sitting by the roadside. Hearing that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to call out: 'Jesus, Son of
- 43 David, take pity on me.' Many of the people kept telling him to be quiet; but the man continued to call out all the louder: 'Son of
- 44 David, take pity on me.' Then Jesus stopped. 'Call him,' he said. So they called the blind man. 'Have courage!' they exclaimed.
- 45 'Get up; he is calling you.' The man threw off his cloak, sprang up, and came to Jesus. 'What do you want me to do for you?'
- 46 said Jesus, addressing him. 'Rabboni,' the blind man answered, 'I want to recover my sight.'
- 47 'You may go,' Jesus said; 'your faith has delivered you.' Immediately he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus along the road.



*The Last Days*

WHEN THEY HAD ALMOST REACHED JERUSALEM, as far as Bethphage 11  
 and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two of his  
 disciples. 'Go to the village facing you,' he said; 'and, as soon 2  
 as you get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has  
 ever ridden; untie it, and bring it. And, if anyone says to you 3  
 "Why are you doing that?", say "The Master wants it, and will be  
 sure to send it back here at once.'" The two disciples went, and, 4  
 finding a foal tethered outside a door in the street, they untied  
 it. Some of the bystanders said to them: 'What are you doing, 5  
 untying the foal?' And the two disciples answered as Jesus had 6  
 told them; and they allowed them to go. Then they brought the 7  
 foal to Jesus, and, when they had laid their cloaks on it, he seated  
 himself on it. Many of the people spread their cloaks on the road, 8  
 while some strewed boughs which they had cut from the fields;  
 and those who led the way, as well as those who followed, kept 9  
 shouting: "'God save him! Blessed is He who comes in the name  
 of the Lord!'" Blessed is the coming kingdom of our father David!  
 "God save him from on high!" 10

Jesus entered Jerusalem, and went into the Temple Courts; and, 11  
 after looking round at everything, as it was already late, he went  
 out to Bethany with the Twelve.

The next day, after they had left Bethany, Jesus became hungry; 12  
 and, noticing a fig-tree at a distance in leaf, he went to it to see if 13  
 by any chance he could find something on it; but, on coming up to  
 it, he found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs.  
 So, addressing the tree, he exclaimed: 'May no one ever again eat 14  
 of your fruit!' And his disciples heard what he said.

They came to Jerusalem. Jesus went into the Temple Courts, 15  
 and began to drive out those who were buying and selling there.  
 He overturned the tables of the money changers, and the seats 16  
 of the pigeon-dealers, and would not allow anyone to carry any-  
 thing across the Temple Courts. Then he began to teach. 'Does 17  
 not scripture say,' he asked, "'My house will be called a house of  
 prayer for all the nations"'? But you have made it a den of rob-  
 bers.'" Now the chief priests and the teachers of the Law heard 18  
 this and began to look for some way of putting Jesus to death;

19 for they were afraid of him, since all the people were greatly impressed by his teaching. As soon as evening fell, Jesus and his disciples went out of the city.

20 As they passed by early in the morning, they noticed that the fig-tree was withered up from the roots. Then Peter recalled what  
21 had occurred. 'Look, Rabbi,' he exclaimed, 'the fig-tree which you doomed is withered up!'

22 'Have faith in God!' replied Jesus. 'I tell you that if anyone  
23 should say to this hill "Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!", without ever a doubt in his mind, but in the faith that what he says will  
24 be done, he would find that it would be. And therefore I say to you "Have faith that whatever you ask for in prayer is already granted you, and you will find that it will be."

25 'And, whenever you stand up to pray, forgive any grievance that you have against anyone, so that your Father who is in heaven also may forgive you your offences.'

27 They came to Jerusalem again. While Jesus was walking about in the Temple Courts, the chief priests, the teachers of the Law, and  
28 the elders came up to him. 'What authority have you to do these things?' they said. 'Who gave you the authority to do them?'

29 'I will put one question to you,' said Jesus. 'Answer me that,  
30 and then I will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It is about John's baptism. Was it of divine or human origin? Answer  
31 me that.' They began arguing together; 'If we say "divine," he will say "Why then didn't you believe him?" Yet can we say "human"?' — They were afraid of the people, for everyone regarded  
32 John as undoubtedly a prophet. So their answer to Jesus was —  
33 'We do not know.'

'Then I,' replied Jesus, 'refuse to tell you what authority I have to do these things.'

12 Jesus began to speak to them in parables: 'A man once planted a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a wine-press, built a tower,  
2 and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. At the proper time he sent a servant to the tenants, to receive from them a share of the  
3 produce of the grape harvest; but they seized him, and beat him,  
4 and sent him away empty-handed. A second time the owner sent a servant to them; this man, too, the tenants struck on the head,

and insulted. He sent another, but him they killed; and so with 5  
 many others — some they beat and some they killed. He had 6  
 still one son, who was very dear to him; and him he sent to them  
 last of all. “They will respect my son,” he said. But those tenants 7  
 said to one another “Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and  
 his inheritance will be ours.” So they seized him, and killed him, 8  
 and threw his body outside the vineyard. What will the owner of 9  
 the vineyard do? He will come and put the tenants to death, and  
 he will let the vineyard to others.

“Have you never read this passage of scripture? — “The stone 10  
 which the builders despised has now itself become the  
 corner-stone; this corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is 11  
 marvellous in our eyes.”

After this his enemies were eager to arrest him, but they were 12  
 afraid of the crowd; for they saw that it was at them that he had  
 aimed the parable. So they left him alone, and went away.

Afterwards they sent to Jesus some of the Pharisees and Hero- 13  
 dians, to set a trap for him in the course of conversation. These  
 men came to him and said: ‘Teacher, we know that you are an 14  
 honest man, and are not afraid of anyone, for you pay no regard  
 to a person’s position, but teach the way of God honestly; are we 15  
 right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not? Should we pay, or  
 should we not pay?’ Knowing their hypocrisy, Jesus said to them:  
 ‘Why are you testing me? Bring me a coin to look at.’ And, when 16  
 they had brought it, he asked: ‘Whose head and title are these?’

‘The Emperor’s,’ they said; and Jesus replied: ‘Pay to the Em- 17  
 peror what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to  
 God.’ And they wondered at him.

Next came some Sadducees — the men who maintain that 18  
 there is no resurrection. Their question was this — ‘Teacher, in 19  
 our scriptures Moses decreed that, should a man’s brother die,  
 leaving a widow but no child, the man should take the widow as 20  
 his wife, and raise up a family for his brother. There were once  
 seven brothers; of whom the eldest took a wife, but died and left 21  
 no family; and the second took her, and died without family; and  
 so did the third. All the seven died and left no family. The woman 22

23 herself died last of all. At the resurrection whose wife will she be, all seven brothers having had her as their wife?’

24 ‘Is not the reason of your mistake,’ answered Jesus, ‘your ignorance of the scriptures and of the power of God? When people rise from the dead, there is no marrying or being married; but they are as angels in heaven.

26 ‘As to the dead, and the fact that they rise, have you never read in the book of Moses, in the passage about the Bush, how God spoke to him saying — “I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob”? He is not God of dead people, but of living. You are greatly mistaken.’

28 Then came up one of the teachers of the Law who had heard their discussions. Knowing that Jesus had answered them wisely, he asked him this question: ‘Which commandment is the most important of all?’

29 ‘The most important,’ answered Jesus, ‘is — “Hear, Israel; the Lord our God is the one Lord; and you must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and with all your strength.” The second is this — “You must love your neighbour as you love yourself.” There is no commandment greater than these.’

32 ‘Wisely answered, teacher!’ exclaimed the teacher of the Law. ‘It is true, as you say, that “there is one God,” and that “there is no other besides him”; and to “love him with all one’s heart, and with all one’s understanding, and with all one’s strength,” and to “love one’s neighbour as one loves oneself” is far beyond all “burnt offerings and sacrifices.”’ Seeing that he had answered with discernment, Jesus said to him: ‘You are not far from the kingdom of God.’

After that no one ventured to question him further.

35 While Jesus was teaching in the Temple Courts, he asked: ‘How is it that the teachers of the Law say that the Christ is to be David’s son? David said himself, speaking under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit — “The Lord said to my lord: ‘Sit at my right hand, until I put your enemies beneath your feet.”’ David himself calls him “lord,” how comes it, then, that he is to be his son?’

38 The mass of the people listened to Jesus with delight. In the course of his teaching, Jesus said: ‘See that you are on your guard against the teachers of the Law, who delight to walk about in long robes, and to be greeted in the streets with respect, and to have

the best seats in the synagogues, and places of honour at dinner. They are the men who rob widows of their homes, and make a pretence of saying long prayers. Their sentence will be all the heavier.' 40

Then Jesus sat down opposite the chests for the Temple offerings, and watched how the people put money into them. Many rich people were putting in large sums; but one poor widow came and put in two small coins, worth very little. Then, calling his disciples to him, Jesus said: 'I tell you that this poor widow has put in more than all the others who were putting money into the chests; for everyone else put in something from what he had to spare, while she, in her need, put in all she had — everything that she had to live on.' 41 42 43 44

As Jesus was walking out of the Temple Courts, one of his disciples said to him: 'Teacher, look what fine stones and buildings these are!' 13

'Do you see these great buildings?' asked Jesus. 'Not a single stone will be left here on another, which will not be thrown down.'

When Jesus had sat down on the Mount of Olives, facing the Temple, Peter, James, John and Andrew questioned him privately: 'Tell us when this will be, and what will be the sign when all this is drawing to its close.' 2 3 4

Then Jesus began: 'See that no one leads you astray. Many will take my name, and come saying "I am He", and will lead many astray. 5 6

'And, when you hear of wars and rumours of wars, do not be alarmed; such things must occur; but the end is not yet. For "nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom"; there will be earthquakes in various places; there will be famines. This will be but the beginning of the birth-pangs. 7 8

'See to yourselves! They will betray you to courts of law; and you will be taken to synagogues and beaten; and you will be brought up before governors and kings for my sake, so that you can bear witness before them. But the good news must first be proclaimed to every nation. Whenever they betray you and hand you over for trial, do not be anxious beforehand as to what you will say, but say whatever is given you at the moment; for it 9 10 11

12 will not be you who speak, but the Holy Spirit. Brother will  
betray brother to death, and the father his child; and children  
will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to  
13 death; and you will be hated by everyone because of me. Yet the  
person who endures to the end will be saved.

14 'As soon, however, as you see "the Foul Desecration" standing  
where it ought not' (the reader must consider what this means)  
'then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the moun-  
15 tains; and a person on the house-top must not go down, or go in  
to get anything out of their house: nor must one who is on their  
16 farm turn back to get their cloak. And alas for pregnant women,  
17 and for those who are nursing infants in those days! Pray, too,  
18 that this may not occur in winter. For those days will be a time of  
distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of  
20 God's creation until now — and never will again. And, had not  
the Lord put a limit to those days, not a single soul would escape;  
but, for the sake of God's own chosen people, he did limit them.

21 'And at that time if anyone should say to you "Look, here is the  
22 Christ!" "Look, there he is!", do not believe it; for false Christs and  
false prophets will arise, and display signs and marvels, to lead  
23 astray, were it possible, even God's people. But see that you are  
on your guard! I have told you all this beforehand.

24 'In those days, after that time of distress, "the sun will be dark-  
25 ened, the moon will not give her light, the stars will be falling  
from the heavens," and "the forces that are in the heavens will be  
26 convulsed." Then will be seen the "Son of Man coming in clouds"  
27 with great power and glory; and then he will send the angels, and  
gather his people from the four winds, from one end of the world  
to the other.

28 'Learn the lesson taught by the fig-tree. As soon as its branches  
are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer  
29 is near. And so may you, as soon as you see these things happen-  
30 ing, know that he is at your doors. I tell you that even the present  
generation will not pass away, until all these things have taken  
31 place. The heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words  
will not pass away.

32 'But about "that day," or "the hour," no one knows — not even  
the angels in heaven, not even the Son — but only the Father.

33 'See that you are on the watch; for you do not know when  
34 the time will be. It is like a man going on a journey, who leaves

his home, puts his servants in charge — each having their special duty — and orders the porter to watch. Therefore watch, for you cannot be sure when the Master of the house is coming — whether in the evening, at midnight, at daybreak, or in the morning — otherwise he might come suddenly and find you asleep. And what I say to you I say to all — Watch!

It was now two days before the Festival of the Passover and the unleavened bread. The chief priests and the teachers of the Law were looking for an opportunity to arrest Jesus by stealth, and to put him to death; for they said: 'Not during the Festival, or the people may riot.'

When Jesus was still at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, while he was sitting at the table, a woman came with an alabaster jar of choice spikenard perfume of great value. She broke the jar, and poured the perfume on his head. Some of those who were present said to one another indignantly: 'Why has the perfume been wasted like this? This perfume could have been sold for more than a year's wages, and the money given to the poor.'

'Leave her alone,' said Jesus, as they began to find fault with her, 'why are you troubling her? This is a beautiful deed that she has done for me. You always have the poor with you, and whenever you wish you can do good to them; but you will not always have me. She has done what she could; she has perfumed my body beforehand for my burial. And I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, the good news is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of her.'

After this, Judas Iscariot, one of the Twelve, went to the chief priests, to betray Jesus to them. They were glad to hear what he said, and promised to pay him. So he began looking for a good opportunity to betray Jesus.

On the first day of the Festival of the unleavened bread, when it was customary to kill the Passover lambs, his disciples said to Jesus: 'Where do you wish us to go and make preparations for your eating the Passover?' Jesus sent forward two of his disciples and said to them: 'Go into the city, and there a man carrying a

14 pitcher of water will meet you; follow him; and, wherever he goes  
in, say to the owner of the house "The teacher says — Where is my  
15 room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?" He will  
himself show you a large upstairs room, set out ready; and there  
16 make preparations for us.' So the disciples set out and went into  
the city, and found everything just as Jesus had told them; and  
they prepared the Passover.

17 In the evening he went there with the Twelve, and when they  
18 had taken their places and were eating, Jesus said: 'I tell you that  
one of you is going to betray me — one who is eating with me.'  
19 They were grieved at this, and began to say to him, one after  
another: 'Can it be I?'

20 'It is one of you Twelve,' said Jesus, 'the one who is dipping his  
21 bread beside me into the dish. True, the Son of Man must go, as  
scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of  
Man is being betrayed! For that man "it would be better never to  
have been born!"'

22 While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after say-  
ing the blessing, broke it, and gave it to them, and said: 'Take it;  
23 this is my body.' Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanks-  
giving, gave it to them, and they all drank from it. 'This is my  
24 covenant-blood,' he said, 'which is poured out on behalf of many.  
25 I tell you that I will never again drink of the juice of the grape,  
until that day when I will drink it new in the kingdom of God.'

26 They then sang a hymn, and went out up the Mount of Olives,  
27 presently Jesus said to them: 'All of you will fall away; for scrip-  
ture says — "I will strike down the shepherd, and the sheep will  
28 be scattered." Yet, after I have risen, I will go before you into  
Galilee.'

29 'Even if everyone else falls away,' said Peter, 'I will not.'

30 'I tell you,' answered Jesus, 'that you yourself today — yes, this  
very night — before the cock crows twice, will disown me three  
31 times.' But Peter vehemently protested: 'Even if I must die with  
you, I will never disown you!' And they all said the same.

32 Presently they came to a garden known as Gethsemane, and Jesus  
33 said to his disciples 'Sit down here while I pray.' He took with him  
Peter, James, and John; and began to show signs of great dismay



and deep distress of mind. 'I am sad at heart,' he said, 'sad even 34  
to death; wait here, and watch.' Going on a little further, he threw 35  
himself on the ground, and began to pray that, if it were possible,  
he might be spared that hour. 'Abba, Father,' he said, 'all things 36  
are possible to you; take away this cup from me; yet, not what I  
will, but what you will.'

Then he came and found the three apostles asleep. 'Simon,' he 37  
said to Peter, 'are you asleep? Couldn't you watch for one hour?  
Watch and pray,' he said to them all, 'so that you may not fall 38  
into temptation. True, the spirit is willing, but the flesh is weak.'  
Again he went away, and prayed in the same words; and coming 39  
back again he found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy; and 40  
they did not know what to say to him.

A third time he came, and said to them: 'Sleep on now, and rest 41  
yourselves. Enough! My time has come. Look: the Son of Man is  
being betrayed into the hands of wicked people. Up, and let us 42  
be going. Look! My betrayer is close at hand.'

And just then, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one 43  
of the Twelve, came up; and with him a crowd of people, with  
swords and clubs, sent by the chief priests, the teachers of the 44  
Law, and the elders. Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with  
them. 'The man whom I kiss,' he had said, 'will be the one; arrest 45  
him and take him away safely.' As soon as Judas came, he went  
up to Jesus at once, and said: 'Rabbi!' and kissed him. Then the 46  
men seized Jesus, and arrested him.

One of those who were standing by drew his sword, and struck 47  
at the high priest's servant, and cut off his ear. But Jesus spoke up, 48  
and said to the men: 'Have you come out, as if after a robber, with  
swords and clubs, to take me? I have been among you day after 49  
day in the Temple Courts teaching, and yet you did not arrest me;  
but this is in fulfilment of the scriptures.' And all the apostles 50  
forsook him, and fled. One young man did indeed follow him, 51  
wrapped only in a linen sheet. They tried to arrest him; but he 52  
left the sheet in their hands, and fled naked.

Then they took Jesus to the high priest; and all the chief priests, 53  
elders, and the teachers of the Law assembled. Peter, who had 54  
followed Jesus at a distance into the courtyard of the high priest,

was sitting there among the police officers, warming himself at the blaze of the fire.

55 Meanwhile the chief priest and the whole of the High Council  
were trying to get such evidence against Jesus as would warrant  
56 his being put to death, but they could not find any; for, though  
there were many who gave false evidence against him, yet their  
57 evidence did not agree. Presently some men stood up, and gave  
58 this false evidence against him — ‘We ourselves heard him say  
“I will destroy this Temple made with hands, and in three days  
59 build another made without hands.”’ Yet not even on that point  
did their evidence agree.

60 Then the high priest stood forward, and questioned Jesus.  
‘Have you no answer to make?’ he asked. ‘What is this evidence  
61 which these men are giving against you?’ But Jesus remained  
silent, and made no answer.

A second time the high priest questioned him. ‘Are you,’ he  
asked, ‘the Christ, the Son of the Blessed One?’

62 ‘I am,’ replied Jesus, ‘and you will all see the Son of Man sit-  
ting on the right hand of the Almighty; and “coming in the clouds  
63 of heaven”.’ At this the high priest tore his vestments. ‘Why do  
64 we want any more witnesses?’ he exclaimed. ‘You heard his blas-  
phemy? What is your verdict?’ They all condemned him, declar-  
ing that he deserved death.

65 Some of those present began to spit at him, and to blindfold  
his eyes, and strike him, saying, as they did so, ‘Now play the  
prophet!’ and even the police officers received him with blows.

66 While Peter was in the courtyard down below, one of the high  
67 priest’s maidservants came up; and, seeing Peter warming him-  
self, she looked closely at him, and exclaimed: ‘Why, you were  
68 with Jesus, the Nazarene!’ But Peter denied it. ‘I do not know or  
understand what you mean,’ he replied. Then he went out into  
69 the porch; and there the maidservant, on seeing him, began to  
70 say again to the bystanders: ‘This is one of them!’ But Peter again  
denied it.

Soon afterwards the bystanders again said to him: ‘You cer-  
71 tainly are one of them; why you are a Galilean!’ But he said to  
them: ‘I swear that I do not know the man you are talking about!  
72 May God punish me if I am lying!’ At that moment, for the sec-  
ond time, a cock crowed; and Peter remembered the words that  
Jesus had said to him — “Before a cock has crowed twice, you

will disown me three times"; and, as he thought of it, he began to weep.

As soon as it was daylight, the chief priests, after holding a consultation with elders and teachers of the Law — that is to say, the whole High Council — put Jesus in chains, and took him away, and gave him up to Pilate. 'Are you the king of the Jews?' asked Pilate. 'It is true,' replied Jesus. Then the chief priests brought a number of charges against him. So Pilate questioned Jesus again. 'Have you no reply to make?' he asked. 'Listen, how many charges they are bringing against you.' But Jesus still made no reply whatever; at which Pilate was astonished. 15

Now, at the feast, Pilate used to grant the people the release of any one prisoner whom they might ask for. A man called Barabbas was in prison, with the rioters who had committed murder during a riot. So, when the crowd went up and began to ask Pilate to follow his usual custom, he answered: 'Do you want me to release the "king of the Jews" for you?' For he was aware that it was out of jealousy that the chief priests had given Jesus up to him. But the chief priests incited the crowd to get Barabbas released instead. Pilate, however, spoke to them again: 'What should I do then with the man whom you call the "king of the Jews"?' Again they shouted: 'Crucify him!' 13

'Why, what harm has he done?' Pilate kept saying to them. But they shouted furiously: 'Crucify him!' And Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas to them, and, after scourging Jesus, gave him up to be crucified. 14 15

The soldiers then took Jesus away into the courtyard — that is the Government house — and they called the whole garrison together. They dressed him in a purple robe, and, having twisted a crown of thorns, put it on him, and then began to salute him. 'Long life to you, king of the Jews!' they said. And they kept striking him on the head with a rod, spitting at him, and bowing to the ground before him — going down on their knees; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the purple robe, and put his own clothes on him. 16 17 18 19 20

21 They led Jesus out to crucify him; and they compelled a passer-by, Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with them to carry his cross.

22 They brought Jesus to the place which was known as Golgotha  
23 — a name which means “place of a Skull.” There they offered him  
24 drugged wine; but Jesus refused it. Then they crucified him, and divided his clothes among them, casting lots for them, to settle what each should take.

25 It was nine in the morning when they crucified him. The words  
26 of the charge against him, written up over his head, read — “THE  
27 KING OF THE JEWS.” And with him they crucified two robbers, one on the right, and the other on the left.

28 The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads, as they said:  
29 ‘Ah! You who would destroy the Temple and build one in three  
30 days, come down from the cross and save yourself!’ In the same  
31 way the chief priests, with the teachers of the Law, said to one  
32 another in mockery: ‘He saved others, but he cannot save himself! Let the Christ, the “king of Israel,” come down from the cross now so that we can see it and believe.’ Even the men who had been crucified with Jesus insulted him.

33 At midday, a darkness came over the whole country, lasting  
34 until three in the afternoon. And, at three, Jesus called out loudly:  
35 “Eloi, Eloi, lama sabacthani?” which means “My God, my God,  
36 why have you forsaken me?” Some of those standing round heard this, and said: ‘Listen! He is calling for Elijah!’ And a man ran, and, soaking a sponge in common wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink, saying as he did so: ‘Wait and let us see if Elijah is coming to take him down.’ But Jesus, giving  
37 a loud cry, breathed his last. The Temple curtain was torn in two  
38 from top to bottom. The Roman officer, who was standing facing  
39 Jesus, on seeing the way in which he breathed his last, exclaimed: ‘This man must indeed have been “God’s Son”!’

40 There were some women also watching from a distance, among  
41 them being Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James the Little and of Joseph, and Salome — all of whom used to accompany Jesus when he was in Galilee, and give him support — besides many other women who had come up with him to Jerusalem.

The evening had already fallen, when, as it was the Preparation day — the day before the Sabbath — Joseph from Ramah, a councillor of good position, who was himself living in expectation of the kingdom of God, came and ventured to go in to see Pilate, and to ask for the body of Jesus. But Pilate was surprised to hear that he had already died. So he sent for the officer, and asked if he were already dead; and, on learning from the officer that it was so, he gave the corpse to Joseph. Joseph, having bought a linen sheet, took Jesus down, and wound the sheet round him, and laid him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock; and then rolled a stone up against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and Mary, the mother of Joseph, were watching to see where he was laid.

*The Risen Life Announced*

WHEN THE SABBATH WAS OVER, Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought some spices, so that they might go and anoint the body of Jesus. Very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, after sunrise. They were saying to one another: 'Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance of the tomb?' But, on looking up, they saw that the stone had already been rolled back; it was a very large one. Going into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on their right, in a white robe, and they were dismayed; but he said to them: 'Do not be dismayed; you are looking for Jesus, the Nazarene, who has been crucified; he has risen, he is not here! Look! Here is the place where they laid him. But go, and say to his disciples and to Peter "He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see him, as he told you."' They went out, and fled from the tomb, for they were trembling and bewildered; and they did not say a word to anyone, for they were frightened.

*A late appendix*

*(Inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source)*

AFTER HIS RISING AGAIN, early on the first day of the week, Jesus appeared first of all to Mary of Magdala, from whom he had

10 driven out seven demons. She went and told the news to those  
11 who had been with him and who were now in sorrow and tears;  
12 yet even they, when they heard that he was alive and had been  
13 seen by her, did not believe it. Afterwards, altered in appearance,  
14 he made himself known to two of them, as they were walking,  
15 on their way into the country. They also went and told the rest,  
16 but they did not believe even them. Later on, he made himself  
17 known to the Eleven themselves as they were at a meal, and re-  
18 proached them with their want of faith and their stubbornness,  
19 because they did not believe those who had seen him after he  
20 had risen from the dead. Then he said to them: 'Go into all the  
world, and proclaim the good news to all creation. He who be-  
lieves and is baptized will be saved; but he who refuses to believe  
will be condemned. Moreover these signs will attend those who  
believe. In my name they will drive out demons; they will speak  
with "tongues"; they will take up snakes in their hands; and, if  
they drink any poison, it will not hurt them; they will place their  
hands on sick people and they will recover.' So the Lord Jesus,  
after he had spoken to them, was taken up into heaven, and sat  
at the right hand of God. But they set out, and made the procla-  
mation everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming  
the message by the signs which attended it.

*Another appendix*

BUT ALL THAT HAD BEEN REVEALED TO THEM THEY REPORTED briefly to Peter and his companions. Afterwards Jesus himself sent them out, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal salvation.

# THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO LUKE

## *Dedication*

TO HIS EXCELLENCY, Theophilus. 1  
 Many attempts have been already made to draw up an account  
 of those events which have reached their conclusion among us,  
 just as they were reported to us by those who from the begin- 2  
 ning were eye-witnesses, and afterwards became bearers of the  
 message. And, therefore, I also, since I have investigated all these 3  
 events with great care from their very beginning, have resolved  
 to write a connected history of them for you, in order that you 4  
 may be able to satisfy yourself of the accuracy of the story which  
 you have heard from the lips of others.

## *Birth, Parentage, Infancy and Boyhood*

IN THE REIGN OF HEROD, king of Judea, there was a priest named 5  
 Zechariah, who belonged to the division called after Abijah. His  
 wife, whose name was Elizabeth, was also a descendant of  
 Aaron. They were both righteous people, who lived blameless 6  
 lives, guiding their steps by all the commandments and  
 ordinances of the Lord. But they had no child, Elizabeth being 7  
 barren; and both of them were advanced in years.  
 One day, when Zechariah was officiating as priest before God, 8  
 during the turn of his division, it fell to him by lot, in accor- 9  
 dance with the practice among the priests, to go into the Temple  
 of the Lord and burn incense; and, as it was the Hour of Incense, 10  
 the people were all praying outside. And an angel of the Lord 11  
 appeared to him, standing on the right of the Altar of Incense.  
 Zechariah was startled at the sight and was awe-struck. But the 12  
13

angel said to him: 'Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard, and your wife Elizabeth will bear you a son, whom  
14 you will call by the name John. He will be to you a joy and a del-  
15 light; and many will rejoice over his birth. For he will be great in  
the sight of the Lord; he will not drink any wine or strong drink,  
and he will be filled with the Holy Spirit from the very hour of his  
16 birth, and will reconcile many of the Israelites to the Lord their  
17 God. He will go before him in the spirit and with the power of  
Elijah, "to reconcile fathers to their children" and the disobedient  
to the wisdom of the righteous, and so make ready for the Lord a  
people prepared for him.'

18 'How can I be sure of this?' Zechariah asked the angel. 'For I  
am an old man and my wife is advanced in years.'

19 'I am Gabriel,' the angel answered, 'who stand in the presence  
of God, and I have been sent to speak to you and to bring you this  
20 good news. And now you will be silent and unable to speak until  
the day when this takes place, because you did not believe what  
I said, though my words will be fulfilled in due course.'

21 Meanwhile the people were watching for Zechariah, wonder-  
22 ing at his remaining so long in the Temple. When he came out, he  
was unable to speak to them, and they perceived that he had seen  
a vision there. But Zechariah kept making signs to them, and re-  
23 mained dumb. And, as soon as his term of service was finished,  
24 he returned home. After this his wife, Elizabeth, became preg-  
25 nant and lived in seclusion for five months. 'The Lord has done  
this for me,' she said, 'he has shown me kindness and taken away  
the public disgrace of childlessness under which I have been liv-  
ing.'

26 Six months later the angel Gabriel was sent from God to a town  
27 in Galilee called Nazareth, to a maiden there who was engaged  
to a man named Joseph, a descendant of David. Her name was  
28 Mary. Gabriel came into her presence and greeted her, saying:  
'You have been shown great favour - the Lord is with you.'

29 Mary was much disturbed at his words, and was wondering to  
30 herself what such a greeting could mean, when the angel spoke  
again: 'Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favour with  
31 God. And now, you will conceive and give birth to a son, and



you will give him the name Jesus. The child will be great and 32  
will be called "Son of the Most High," and the Lord God will give 33  
him the throne of his ancestor David, and he will reign over the  
descendants of Jacob for ever; And to his kingdom there will be  
no end.'

'How can this be?' Mary asked the angel. 'For I have no hus- 34  
band.'

'The Holy Spirit will descend on you,' answered the angel, 'and 35  
the Power of the Most High will overshadow you; and therefore  
the child will be called "holy," and "Son of God." And Elizabeth, 36  
your cousin, is herself also expecting a son in her old age; and it  
is now the sixth month with her, though she is called barren; for 37  
no promise from God will fail to be fulfilled.'

'I am the servant of the Lord,' exclaimed Mary; 'let it be with 38  
me as you have said.' Then the angel left her.

Soon after this Mary set out, and made her way quickly into 39  
the hill-country, to a town in Judah; and there she went into 40  
Zechariah's house and greeted Elizabeth. When Elizabeth heard 41  
Mary's greeting, the child moved within her, and Elizabeth  
herself was filled with the Holy Spirit, and cried aloud: 'Blessed 42  
are you among women, and blessed is your unborn child! But 43  
how have I this honour, that the mother of my Lord should come  
to me? For, as soon as your greeting reached my ears, the child 44  
moved within me with delight! Happy indeed is she who 45  
believed that the promise which she received from the Lord  
would be fulfilled.'

And Mary said: 46

'My soul exalts the Lord,  
and my spirit delights in God my Saviour, 47  
for he has looked with favour on his humble servant girl. 48  
From now on all generations will call me blessed!

For the Almighty has done great things for me, 49  
and holy is his name.

He has mercy on those who revere him 50  
in every generation.

Mighty are the deeds of his arm; 51

he has scattered the self-satisfied proud, 52  
he has cast down the mighty from their thrones,

and he uplifts the humble,  
 53 he has filled the hungry with good things,  
 and the rich he has sent away empty.

54 He has stretched out his hand to his servant Israel,  
 ever mindful of his mercy,  
 55 as he promised to our ancestors  
 for Abraham and his descendents for ever.'

56 Mary stayed with Elizabeth about three months, and then  
 57 returned to her home. When Elizabeth's time came, she gave  
 58 birth to a son; and her neighbours and relatives, hearing of the  
 59 great goodness of the Lord to her, came to share her joy. A week  
 later they met to circumcise the child, and were about to call him  
 60 "Zechariah" after his father, when his mother spoke up: 'No, he  
 is to be called John.'

61 'You have no relation of that name!' they exclaimed; and they  
 62 made signs to the child's father, to find out what he wished the  
 63 child to be called. Asking for a writing-tablet, he wrote the words  
 64 — "His name is John." Everyone was surprised; and immediately  
 Zechariah recovered his voice and the use of his tongue, and be-  
 65 gan to bless God. All their neighbours were awe-struck at this;  
 and throughout the hill-country of Judea the whole story was  
 66 much talked about; and all who heard it kept it in mind, ask-  
 ing one another — 'What can this child be destined to become?'  
 For the Power of the Lord was with him.

67 Then his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit, and,  
 speaking under inspiration, said:

68 'Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel,  
 Who has visited his people and wrought their deliver-  
 ance,  
 69 and has raised up for us the Strength of our salvation  
 In the house of his servant David —

70 As he promised by the lips of his holy prophets of old —  
 71 salvation from our enemies and from the hands of all  
 who hate us,  
 72 showing mercy to our ancestors,  
 And mindful of his sacred covenant.

73 This was the oath which he swore to our ancestor Abra-  
 ham —

That we should be rescued from the hands of our ene- 74  
mies,  
and should serve him without fear in holiness and right- 75  
eousness,  
In his presence all our days.  
And you, child, will be called prophet of the Most High, 76  
For you will go before the Lord to make ready his way,  
to give his people the knowledge of salvation 77  
In the forgiveness of their sins,  
through the tender mercy of our God, 78  
Whereby the Dawn will break on us from heaven,  
to give light to those who live in darkness and the shadow 79  
of death,  
And guide our feet into the way of peace.'

The child grew and became strong in spirit; and he lived in the 80  
Wilds until the time came for his appearance before Israel.

About that time an edict was issued by the Emperor Augustus 2  
that a census should be taken of the whole Empire. (This was the 2  
first census taken while Quirinius was Governor of Syria). And 3  
everyone went to his own town to be registered. Among others 4  
Joseph went up from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to Bethle-  
hem, the town of David, in Judea — because he belonged to the 5  
family and house of David — To be registered with Mary, his en- 5  
gaged wife, who was about to become a mother. While they were 6  
there her time came, and she gave birth to her first child, a son. 7  
And because there was no room for them in the inn, she swathed 8  
him round and laid him in a manger. In that same country-side 8  
were shepherds out in the open fields, watching their flocks that 9  
night, when an angel of the Lord suddenly stood by them, and 9  
the glory of the Lord shone around them; and they were seized 9  
with fear. 'Have no fear,' the angel said. 'For I bring you good 10  
news of a great joy in store for all the nation. This day there has 11  
been born to you, in the town of David, a Saviour, who is Christ 11  
and Lord. And this will be the sign for you. You will find the 12  
infant swathed, and lying in a manger.'

Then suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of 13  
the heavenly Host, praising God, and singing —

'glory to God on high, 14

And on earth peace among those in whom he finds  
pleasure.'

- 15 Now, when the angels had left them and gone back to heaven, the  
shepherds said to one another: 'Let us go at once to Bethlehem,  
16 and see this thing that has happened, of which the Lord has told  
us.' So they went quickly, and found Mary and Joseph, and the  
17 infant lying in a manger; and, when they saw it, they told of all  
18 that had been said to them about this child. All who heard the  
19 shepherds were astonished at their story, while Mary treasured  
up all that they said, and thought about it often in her thoughts.  
20 And the shepherds went back, giving glory and praise to God for  
all that they had heard and seen, as it had been told them.

- 21 Eight days after the birth of the child, when it was time to cir-  
cumcise him, he received the name Jesus — the name given him  
by the angel before his conception.

- 22 When the period of purification of mother and child, required by  
the Law of Moses, came to an end, his parents took the child up  
23 to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, in compliance with the  
Law of the Lord that "every first-born male will be dedicated to  
24 the Lord," And also to offer the sacrifice required by the Law of  
the Lord — "a pair of turtle-doves or two young pigeons."

- 25 There was at that time in Jerusalem a man named Simeon, a  
righteous and devout man, who lived in constant expectation of  
the Consolation of Israel, and under the guidance of the Holy  
26 Spirit. It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he  
27 should not die until he had seen the Lord's Christ. Moved by  
the Spirit, Simeon came into the Temple Courts, and, when the  
parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him what was cus-  
28 tomary under the Law, Simeon himself took the child in his arms,  
and blessed God, and said:

- 29 'Now, Lord, you will let your servant go,  
According to your word, in peace,

for my eyes have seen the salvation 30  
Which you have prepared in the sight of all nations — 31  
A light to bring light to the Gentiles, 32  
And to be the glory of your people Israel.'

While the child's father and mother were wondering at what 33  
was said about him, Simeon gave them his blessing, and said to 34  
Mary, the child's mother: 'This child is appointed to be the cause  
of the fall and rise of many in Israel, and to be a sign much spo- 35  
ken against — Yes, the sword will pierce your own heart — and  
so the thoughts in many minds will be disclosed.'

There was also a prophet named Hannah, a daughter of 36  
Phanuel and of the tribe of Asher. She was far advanced in years,  
having lived with her husband for seven years after marriage, 37  
and then a widow, until she had reached the age of eighty-four.  
She never left the Temple Courts, but, fasting and praying, 38  
worshiped God night and day. At that moment she came up,  
and began publicly to thank God and to speak about the child to 38  
all who were looking for the deliverance of Jerusalem.

When the child's parents had done everything required by the 39  
Law of the Lord, they returned to Galilee to their own town of  
Nazareth. The child grew and became strong and wise, and the 40  
blessing of God was on him.

Every year the child's parents used to go to Jerusalem at the 41  
Passover Festival. When Jesus was twelve years old, they went 42  
according to custom to Jerusalem, and had finished their visit; 43  
but, when they started to return, the boy Jesus remained behind  
in Jerusalem, without their knowing it. Thinking that he was with 44  
their fellow travellers, they went one day's journey before search-  
ing for him among their relatives and acquaintances; and then, 45  
as they did not find him, they returned to Jerusalem, searching  
everywhere for him. It was not until the third day that they found 46  
him in the Temple Courts, sitting among the teachers, now listen-  
ing to them, now asking them questions. All who listened to him 47  
marvelled at his intelligence and his answers.

His parents were amazed when they saw him, and his mother 48  
said to him: 'My child, why have you treated us like this? Your  
father and I have been searching for you in great distress.'

49 'What made you search for me?' he answered. 'Didn't you  
 50 know that I must be in my Father's house?' His parents did not  
 51 understand what he meant. However he went down with them to  
 Nazareth, and submitted himself to their control; and his mother  
 52 treasured all that was said in her heart. And Jesus grew in wis-  
 dom as he grew in years, and "gained the blessing of God and  
 people."

### *The Preparation*

3 IN THE FIFTEENTH YEAR OF THE REIGN OF THE EMPEROR TIBERIUS, when  
 Pontius Pilate was Governor of Judea, Herod Ruler of Galilee, his  
 brother Philip Ruler of the territory comprising Ituraea and Tra-  
 2 chonitis, and Lysanias Ruler of Abilene, and when Annas and Ca-  
 iaphas were high priests, a command from God came to John, the  
 3 son of Zechariah, while he was in the wilderness. And John went  
 through the whole district of the Jordan, proclaiming baptism on  
 4 repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. This was in fulfilment of  
 what is said in the writings of the prophet Isaiah —

"The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness:

'Make ready the way of the Lord,

Make his paths straight.

5 Every chasm will be filled,

Every mountain and hill will be levelled,

The winding ways will be straightened,

The rough roads made smooth,

6 and everyone will see the salvation of God."

7 And John said to the crowds that went to be baptized by him:  
 'You children of snakes! Who has prompted you to seek refuge  
 8 from the coming judgment? Let your lives, then, prove your re-  
 pentance; and do not begin to say among yourselves "Abraham is  
 our ancestor," for I tell you that out of these stones God is able to  
 9 raise descendants for Abraham! Already, indeed, the axe is lying  
 at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear good  
 fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire.'

10 'What are we to do then?' the people asked. 'Let anyone who  
 11 has two coats,' answered John, 'share with the person who has  
 none; and anyone who has food do the same.'

Even tax-gatherers came to be baptized, and said to John: 12  
 ‘Teacher, what are we to do?’

‘Do not collect more than you have authority to demand,’ John 13  
 answered. And when some soldiers on active service asked ‘And 14  
 we — what are we to do?’ he said: ‘Never use violence, or exact  
 anything by false accusation; and be content with your pay.’

Then, while the people were in suspense, and were all debating 15  
 with themselves whether John could be the Christ, John, address- 16  
 ing them all, said: ‘I, indeed, baptize you with water; but there is  
 coming one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to un-  
 fasten his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and  
 with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand so that he may clear 17  
 his threshing-floor, and store the grain in his barn, but the chaff  
 he will burn with a fire that cannot be put out.’

And so with many different appeals John told his good news to 18  
 the people. But Prince Herod, being rebuked by John respecting 19  
 Herodias, the wife of Herod’s brother, and for all the evil things  
 that he had done, crowned them all by shutting John up in prison. 20

Now after the baptism of all the people, and when Jesus had been 21  
 baptized and was still praying, the heavens opened, and the Holy 22  
 Spirit came down on him in the form of a dove, and from the  
 heavens came a voice — ‘You are my dearly loved son; you bring  
 me great joy.’

When beginning his work, Jesus was about thirty years old. He 23  
 was regarded as the son of Joseph, whose ancestors were —

Eli, Mattith, Levi, Melchiah, Janna, Joseph, Mattithiah, 24  
 Amos, Nahum, Azaliah, Nogah, Mattith, Mattithiah, 25  
 Shimei, Joseph, Josheh, Johanan, Rhesa, Zerubbabel, 27  
 Salathiel, Neriah, Melchiah, Addi, Cosam, Elmodam, Er, 28  
 Joshua, Eliezer, Joram, Mattith, Levi, Simeon, Judah, 29  
 Joseph, Jonam, Eliakim, Meleah, Menan, Mattithiah, 30  
 Nathan, David, Jesse, Obed, Boaz, Salah, Nahshon, 32  
 Aminadab, Arni, Hezron, Perez, Judah, Jacob, Isaac, 33  
 Abraham, Terah, Nahor, Serug, Reu, Peleg, Eber, Shelah, 35  
 Kenan, Arpachshad, Shem, Noah, Lamech, Methuselah, 36  
 Enoch, Jared, Mahalalel, Kenan, Enosh, Seth and Adam 38  
 the son of God.

4 On returning from the Jordan, full of the Holy Spirit, Jesus was led by the power of the Spirit through the wilderness for forty days, tempted by the devil.

2 All that time he ate nothing; and, when it was over, he became  
3 hungry. So the devil said to him: 'If you are God's Son, tell this  
4 stone to become a loaf of bread.' And Jesus answered him: 'Scripture says — "It is not on bread alone that a person is to live."'

5 And the devil led Jesus up, and showing him in a single moment all the kingdoms of the earth, said to him: 'I will give you all this power, and the splendour of them; for it has been given into  
6 my hands and I give it to whom I wish. If you worship me, it will  
7 all be yours.' And Jesus answered him: 'Scripture says — "You should worship the Lord your God, and worship him only."'

9 The devil next led him into Jerusalem, and, placing him on the parapet of the Temple, said: 'If you are God's Son throw yourself  
10 down from here, for scripture says — "He will give his angels  
11 commands about you, to guard you safely;" And "On their hands they will lift you up, otherwise you might strike your foot against  
12 a stone."' But Jesus answered him: 'It is said — "You must not tempt the Lord your God."'

13 When he had tried every kind of temptation, the devil left Jesus, until another opportunity.

### *The Work in Galilee*

14 MOVED BY THE POWER OF THE SPIRIT, Jesus returned to Galilee. Reports about him spread through all that region; and he began to teach in their synagogues, and was honoured by everyone.

16 Coming to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, Jesus, as was his custom, went on the Sabbath into the synagogue, and stood up to read the scriptures. He was given the book of the prophet Isaiah; and Jesus opened the book and found the place where it says —

18 "The Spirit of the Lord is on me,  
For he has consecrated me to bring good news to the poor,



He has sent me to proclaim release to captives and restoration of sight to the blind,  
 To set the oppressed at liberty,  
 to proclaim the accepted year of the Lord." 19

Then, closing the book and returning it to the attendant, he sat down. The eyes of all in the synagogue were fixed on him, and Jesus began: 20

"This very day this passage has been fulfilled in your hearing."

All who were present spoke well of him, and were astonished at the beautiful words that fell from his lips. 'Isn't Joseph's son?' they asked. 'Doubtless,' said Jesus, 'you will remind me of the saying — "Doctor, cure yourself;" and you will say "Do here in your own country all that we have heard that has been done at Capernaum." I tell you,' he continued, 'that no prophet is acceptable in his own country. There were, doubtless, many widows in Israel in Elijah's days, when the heavens were closed for three years and six months, and a severe famine prevailed throughout the country; and yet it was not to one of them that Elijah was sent, but to a widow at Zarephath in Sidonia. And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of the prophet Elisha, yet it was not one of them who was made clean, but Naaman the Syrian.' All the people in the synagogue, as they listened to this, became enraged. Starting up, they drove Jesus out of the town, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their town stood, intending to hurl him down. But he passed through the middle of the crowd and went on his way. 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30

Then Jesus went down to Capernaum, a city in Galilee. On the Sabbath he taught the people. They were amazed at his teaching, because his words were spoken with authority. In the synagogue there was a man with the spirit of a foul demon in him, who called out loudly: 'Stop! What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One of God!' But Jesus rebuked the demon. 'Be silent! Come out from him,' he said. The demon flung the man down in the middle of the people, and then came out from him, without causing him further harm. And they were all lost in amazement, and kept saying to one another: 'What words are these? For he gives his 31 32 33 34 35 36

37 commands to the foul spirits with a marvellous authority, and  
they come out.' And rumours about Jesus traveled through every  
place in the region.

38 On leaving the synagogue, Jesus went into Simon's house.  
Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a severe attack  
39 of fever, and they asked Jesus to cure her. Bending over her, he  
rebuked the fever; the fever left her, and she immediately got up  
40 and began to take care of them. At sunset, all who had friends  
suffering from various diseases took them to Jesus; and he  
41 placed his hands on everyone of them and cured them. And  
even demons came out from many people, screaming "You are  
the Son of God." Jesus rebuked them, and would not allow them  
to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.

42 At daybreak, Jesus went out and walked to a lonely spot. But  
crowds of people began to look for him; and they came to where  
he was and tried to detain him and prevent his leaving them. Je-  
43 sus, however, said to them: 'I must take the good news of the  
kingdom of God to the other town also, for that was why I was  
44 sent.' And he continued to make his proclamation in the syna-  
gogues of Judea.

5 Once, when the people were pressing round Jesus as they listened  
to God's message, he happened to be standing by the shore  
of the Lake of Gennesaret, and saw two boats close to the shore.  
2 The fishermen had gone away from them and were washing the  
3 nets. So, getting into one of the boats, which belonged to Simon,  
Jesus asked him to push off a little way from the shore, and then  
4 sat down and taught the people from the boat. When he had finished  
speaking, he said to Simon: 'Push off into deep water, and  
throw out your nets for a haul.'

5 'We have been hard at work all night, Sir,' answered Simon,  
'and have not caught anything, but, at your bidding, I will throw  
6 out the nets.' They did so, and enclosed such a great shoal of  
7 fish that their nets began to break. So they signalled to their partners  
in the other boat to come and help them; and they came and  
filled both the boats so full of fish that they were almost sink-  
8 ing. When Simon Peter saw this, he threw himself down at Jesus'  
9 knees, exclaiming: 'Master, leave me, for I am a sinful man!' For

he and all who were with him were lost in amazement at the haul of fish which they had made; and so, too, were James and John, Zebedee's sons, who were Simon's partners. 'Do not be afraid,' Jesus said to Simon; 'from today you will catch people.' And, when they had brought their boats to shore, they left everything, and followed him.

On one occasion Jesus was staying in a town, when he saw a man who was covered with leprosy. When the leper saw Jesus, he threw himself on his face and implored his help: 'Master, if only you are willing, you are able to make me clean.' Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying as he did so: 'I am willing; become clean.'

Instantly the leprosy left the man; and then Jesus impressed on him that he was not to say a word to anyone, 'but,' he added, 'set out and show yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing, in the manner directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure.' However, the story about Jesus spread all the more, and great crowds came together to listen to him, and to be cured of their illnesses; but Jesus used to withdraw to lonely places and pray.

On one of those days, when Jesus was teaching, some Pharisees and Doctors of the Law were sitting near by. (They had come from all the villages in Galilee and Judea, and from Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was on Jesus, so that he could work cures.) And there some men brought on a bed a man who was paralysed. They tried to get him in and lay him before Jesus; but, finding no way of getting him in owing to the crowd, they went up on the roof and lowered him through the tiles, with his pallet, into the middle of the people and in front of Jesus. When he saw their faith, Jesus said: 'Friend, your sins have been forgiven you.' The teachers of the Law and the Pharisees began debating about this. 'Who is this man who speaks so blasphemously?' they asked. 'Who can forgive sins except God?'

When Jesus became aware of the way in which they were debating, he turned to them and exclaimed: 'What are you debating with yourselves? Which is the easier? — to say "Your sins have been forgiven you"? Or to say "Get up, and walk"? But so that

you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins' — he spoke to the paralysed man — 'To you I say, Get  
25 up, and take up your pallet, and go to your home.' Instantly the  
man stood up before their eyes, took up what he had been lying  
26 on, and went to his home, praising God. The people, one and all,  
were lost in amazement, and praised God; and in great awe they  
said: 'We have seen marvellous things today!'

27 After this, Jesus went out; and he noticed a tax-gatherer, named  
28 Levi, sitting in the tax office, and said to him: 'Follow me.' Levi  
29 left everything and got up and followed him. And Levi gave a  
great entertainment at his house, in honour of Jesus; and a large  
number of tax-gatherers and others were having dinner with  
them.

30 The Pharisees and the teachers of the Law belonging to their  
31 party complained of this to the disciples of Jesus.' In answer Jesus  
said: 'It is not those who are well who need a doctor, but those  
32 who are ill. I have not come to call the religious, but the outcast,  
to repent.'

33 'John's disciples,' they said to Jesus, 'Often fast and say prayers,  
and so do the disciples of the Pharisees, while yours are eating  
and drinking!'

34 But Jesus answered them: 'Can you make the groom's friends  
35 fast while the groom is with them? But the days will come — a  
time when the groom will be taken away from them; and they will  
36 fast then, when those days come.' Then, as an illustration, Jesus  
said to them: 'No one ever tears a piece from a new garment and  
puts it on an old one; for, if they do, they will not only tear the  
new garment, but the piece from the new one will not match the  
37 old. And no one puts new wine into old wine-skins; for, if they  
do, the new wine will burst the skins, and the wine itself will run  
38 out, and the skins be lost. But new wine must be put into fresh  
39 skins. No one after drinking old wine wishes for new. "No," they  
say, "the old is excellent."'

6 One Sabbath Jesus was walking through cornfields, and his  
disciples were picking the ears of wheat, and rubbing them in

their hands, and eating them. 'Why are you doing what it is not 2  
allowable to do on the Sabbath?' asked some of the Pharisees. Je- 3  
sus' answer was: 'Haven't you read even of what David did, when 4  
he was hungry, he and his companions — That he went into the 5  
house of God, and took the consecrated bread and ate it, and gave 6  
some to his companions, though only the priests are allowed to 7  
eat it?' Then Jesus added: 'The Son of Man is lord even of the 8  
Sabbath.'

On another Sabbath Jesus went into the synagogue and taught; 9  
and there was a man there whose right hand was withered. The 10  
teachers of the Law and the Pharisees watched Jesus closely, to 11  
see if he would work cures on the Sabbath, so that they might find 12  
a charge to bring against him. Jesus, however, knew what was in 13  
the their minds, and said to the man whose hand was withered: 14  
'Stand up and come out into the middle.' The man stood up; and 15  
Jesus said to them: 'I ask you, is it allowable to do good on the 16  
Sabbath — or harm? To save a life, or let it perish?' Then, looking 17  
round at them all, he said to the man: 'Stretch out your hand.' The 18  
man did so; and his hand had become sound. But the teachers of 19  
the Law and the Pharisees were mad with rage, and consulted 20  
together what they could do to Jesus.

Now about that time, Jesus went out, up the hill, to pray, and 12  
spent the whole night in prayer to God. When day came, he sum- 13  
moned his disciples, and chose twelve of them, whom he also 14  
named "apostles." They were Simon (whom Jesus also named Pe- 15  
ter), and his brother Andrew, James, John, Philip, Bartholomew, 16  
Matthew, Thomas, James son of Alphaeus, Simon known as the 17  
Zealot, Judas son of James, and Judas Iscariot, who proved a trai- 18  
tor. Afterwards Jesus came down the hill with them and took 19  
his stand on a level place. With him were a large crowd of his 20  
disciples, and great numbers of people from the whole of Judea,  
Jerusalem, and the coast district of Tyre and Sidon, who had  
come to hear him and to be restored to health. Those, too, who  
were troubled with foul spirits were cured; and everyone in the  
crowd was trying to touch him, because a power went out from  
him which restored them all.

Then, raising his eyes and looking at his disciples, Jesus said: 20

'Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the kingdom of  
God.

- 21 Blessed are you who hunger now, for you will be satisfied.  
Blessed are you who weep now, for you will laugh.
- 22 Blessed are you when people hate you,  
and when they expel you from among them,  
and insult you,  
and reject your name as an evil thing —  
because of the Son of Man.
- 23 Then indeed you may be glad and dance for joy, for be sure  
that your reward in heaven will be great; for that is what  
24 their ancestors did to the prophets. But  
“alas for you who are rich,”  
for you have had your comforts in full.
- 25 Alas for you who are sated now,  
for you will hunger.  
Alas for you who laugh now,  
for you will mourn and weep.
- 26 Alas for you when everyone speaks well of you;  
for this is what their ancestors did to the false prophets.
- 27 But to you who hear I say — love your enemies, show kind-  
28 ness to those who hate you, bless those who curse you,  
29 pray for those who insult you. When someone gives one  
of you a blow on the cheek, offer the other cheek as well;  
and, when anyone takes away your cloak, do not keep back  
30 your coat either. Give to everyone who asks of you; and,  
when anyone takes away what is yours, do not demand its  
31 return. Do to others as you wish them to do to you.
- 32 If you love only those who love you, what thanks will  
be due to you? Why, even the outcast love those who love  
33 them! For, if you show kindness only to those who show  
kindness to you, what thanks will be due to you? Even the  
34 outcast do that! If you lend only to those from whom you  
expect to get something, what thanks will be due to you?  
Even the outcast lend to the outcast in the hope of get-  
35 ting as much in return! But love your enemies, and show  
them kindness, and lend to them, never despairing. Then  
your reward will be great, and you will be sons of the Most  
High, for he is kind to the thankless and the bad.

Learn to be merciful — even as your Father is merciful. 36  
 Do not judge, and you will not be judged; do not con- 37  
 demn, and you will not be condemned. Forgive, and you  
 will be forgiven. Give, and others will give to you. A gener- 38  
 ous measure, pressed and shaken down, and running over,  
 will they pour into your lap; For The standard you use will  
 be the standard used for you.'

Then, speaking in parables, Jesus said: 'Can one blind person 39  
 guide another? Will they not both fall into a ditch? A student 40  
 is not above their teacher; yet every finished student will be like  
 their teacher. And why do you look at the speck of sawdust in 41  
 someone's eye, while you pay no attention at all to the plank of  
 wood in your own? How can you say to your friend "Friend, let 42  
 me take out the speck in your eye," while you yourself do not see  
 the plank in your own? Hypocrite! Take out the plank from your  
 own eye first, and then you will see clearly how to take out the  
 speck in your friend's. There is no such thing as a good tree bear- 43  
 ing worthless fruit, or, on the other hand, a worthless tree bearing  
 good fruit. For every tree is known by its own fruit. People do not 44  
 gather figs off thorn bushes, nor pick a bunch of grapes off a bram-  
 ble. A good person, from the good stores of their heart, brings out 45  
 what is good; while a bad person, from their bad stores, brings out  
 what is bad. For what fills someone's heart will rise to their lips.  
 Why do you call me "Master! Master!" and yet fail to do what I 46  
 tell you? Everyone who comes to me and listens to my teaching 47  
 and acts on it — I will show you to whom they may be compared.  
 They may be compared to a person building a house, who dug, 48  
 and went deep, and laid the foundation on the rock. Then, when a  
 flood came, the river swept down on that house, but had no power  
 to shake it, because it had been built well. But those who have 49  
 listened and not acted on what they have heard may be compared  
 to a person who built a house on the ground without any founda-  
 tion. The river swept down on it, and the house immediately  
 collapsed; and great was the crash that followed.'

When Jesus had brought to a conclusion all that he had then 7  
 had to say to the people, he entered Capernaum.

2 A captain in the Roman army had a slave whom he valued, and  
3 who was seriously ill — almost at the point of death. And, hearing  
4 about Jesus, he sent some Jewish elders to him, with the request  
5 that he would come and save his slave's life. When they found  
6 Jesus, they earnestly implored him to do so. 'He deserves the  
7 favour from you,' they said, 'For he is devoted to our nation,  
8 and himself built our synagogue for us.' So Jesus went with them.  
9 But, when he was no great distance from the house, the captain  
10 sent some friends with the message — 'Do not trouble yourself,  
11 Sir; for I am unworthy to receive you under my roof. That was  
12 why I did not even venture to come to you myself; but speak, and  
13 let my manservant be cured. For I myself am a man under the  
14 orders of others, with soldiers under me; and if I say to one of them  
15 "Go," he goes, and to another "Come," he comes, and to my slave  
16 "Do this," he does it.' Jesus was surprised to hear these words  
17 from him; and, turning to the crowd which was following him,  
18 he said: 'I tell you, nowhere in Israel have I met with such faith  
19 as this!' And, when the messengers returned to the house, they  
20 found the slave recovered.

21 Shortly after, Jesus went to a town called Nain, his disciples and  
22 a great crowd going with him. Just as he approached the gate of  
23 the town, there was a dead man being carried out for burial —  
24 an only son, and his mother was a widow. A large number of the  
25 people of the town were with her. When he saw her, the Master  
26 was moved with compassion for her, and he said to her: 'Do not  
27 weep.' Then he went up and touched the bier, and the bearers  
28 stopped; and Jesus said: 'Young man, I am speaking to you —  
29 Rise!' The dead man sat up and began to talk, and Jesus restored  
30 him to his mother. Everyone was awe-struck and began praising  
31 God. 'A great prophet has arisen among us,' they said; 'and God  
32 has visited his people.'

33 And this story about Jesus spread all through Judea, and in the  
34 neighbouring countries as well.

35 All these events were reported to John by his disciples. So he  
36 summoned two of them, and sent them to the Master to ask —  
37 'Are you "the coming one," or are we to look for someone else?'



When these men found Jesus, they said: 'John the Baptist has sent us to you to ask — "Are you "the coming one," or are we to look for somebody else?"' At that very time Jesus had cured many people of diseases, afflictions, and wicked spirits, and had given many blind people their sight. So his answer to the question was: 'Go and report to John what you have witnessed and heard — the blind recover their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are made clean, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised to life, the good news is told to the poor. And blessed is the person who finds no hindrance in me.'

When John's messengers had left, Jesus, speaking to the crowds, began to say with reference to John: 'What did you go out into the wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did you go out to see? A man dressed in rich clothing? Why, those who are accustomed to fine clothes and luxury live in royal palaces. What then did you go to see? A prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a prophet. This is the man of whom scripture says —

"I am sending my messenger ahead of you,  
and he will prepare your way before you."

There is, I tell you, no one born of a woman who is greater than John; and yet the least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.'

(All the people, when they heard this, and even the tax-gatherers, having accepted John's baptism, acknowledged the justice of God. But the Pharisees and the students of the Law, having rejected John's baptism, frustrated God's purpose in regard to them.)

'To what then,' Jesus continued, 'should I compare the people of the present generation? What are they like? They are like some little children who are sitting in the marketplace and calling out to one another — "We have played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not wept!" For now that John the Baptist has come, not eating bread or drinking wine, you are saying "He has a demon in him"; and now that the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, you are saying "Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts." And yet wisdom is vindicated by all her children.'

36 One of the Pharisees asked Jesus to dine with him, so Jesus  
37 went to his house and took his place at the table. Just then a  
woman, who was an outcast in the town, having heard that Je-  
sus was eating in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster jar  
38 of perfume, and placed herself behind Jesus, near his feet, weep-  
ing. Then she began to make his feet wet with her tears, and she  
dried them with the hair of her head, repeatedly kissing his feet  
and anointing them with the perfume.

39 When the Pharisee who had invited Jesus saw this, he said to  
himself: 'Had this man been "The prophet," he would have  
known who, and what sort of woman, this is who is touching  
40 him, and that she is an outcast.' But, addressing him, Jesus said:  
'Simon, I have something to say to you.'

'Pray do so, teacher,' Simon answered; and Jesus began: 'There  
41 were two people who were in debt to a moneylender; one owed  
42 five hundred silver coins, and the other fifty. As they were unable  
to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them, do you think, will  
love him the more?'

43 'I suppose,' answered Simon, 'it will be the man to whom he  
forgave the greater debt.'

44 'You are right,' said Jesus, and then, turning to the woman, he  
said to Simon: 'Do you see this woman? I came into your house  
— you gave me no water for my feet, but she has made my feet  
45 wet with her tears and dried them with her hair. You did not give  
me one kiss, but she, from the moment I came in, has not ceased  
46 to kiss my feet. You did not anoint even my head with oil, but  
47 she has anointed my feet with perfume. And for this, I tell you,  
her sins, many as they are, have been pardoned, because she has  
loved greatly; but one who has little pardoned him, loves but lit-  
48 tle.' Then he said to the woman: 'Your sins have been pardoned.'  
49 The other guests began to say to one another: 'Who is this man  
50 who even pardons sins?' But Jesus said to the woman: 'Your faith  
has delivered you; go, and peace be with you.'

8 Shortly afterwards, Jesus went on a journey through the towns  
and villages, proclaiming the good news of the kingdom of God.

2 With him went the Twelve, as well as some women who had  
been cured of wicked spirits and of infirmities. They were Mary,

known as Mary of Magdala (from whom seven demons had been expelled), and Joanna (the wife of Herod's steward, Chuza), and Susannah, and many others — all of whom provided for Jesus and his apostles out of their own resources. 3

Once, when a great crowd was collecting, and, when the people of town after town were flocking to Jesus, he spoke to them in the form of a parable: 'The sower went out to sow his seed; and, as he was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path and was trodden on; and the wild birds ate it up. Other seed fell on rock, and, as soon as it began to grow, because it had no moisture, it withered away. Other seed fell in the middle of brambles, but the brambles grew up with it and choked it entirely. Other seed fell into rich soil, and grew, and gave a hundredfold return.' After saying this, Jesus cried aloud: 'Let those who have ears to hear with hear.' 4 5 6 7 8

His disciples asked Jesus the meaning of this parable. 'To you,' he said, 'the knowledge of the hidden truths of the kingdom of God has been imparted, but to others in parables only, so that "though they have eyes they may not see, and though they have ears, they may not understand." This is the parable — The seed is God's message. By the seed which fell along the path are meant those who hear the message; but then comes the devil and carries away the message from their minds, to prevent their believing it and being saved. By the seed which fell on the rock are meant those who, as soon as they hear the message, welcome it joyfully; but they have no root, and believe it only for a time, and, when the time of temptation comes, they draw back. By that which fell among the brambles are meant those who hear the message, but who, as they go on their way, are completely choked by this world's cares and wealth and pleasures, and bring nothing to perfection. But by that in the good ground are meant those who, having heard the message, keep it in the good, rich soil of their hearts, and patiently yield a return. 9 10 11 12 13 14 15

No one sets light to a lamp and then covers it with a bowl or puts it underneath a couch, but they put it on a lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. Nothing is hidden which will not be brought into the light of day, not ever kept hidden which will not some day become known and come into the light of day. Take care, then, how you listen. For, to all those who 16 17 18

have, more will be given; while, from all those who have nothing, even what they seem to have will be taken away.'

19 Presently Jesus' mother and brothers came where he was, but  
20 they were not able to join him because of the crowd. So word was  
brought to him — "Your mother and your brothers are standing  
21 outside, wanting to see you." His reply, spoken to them all, was:  
'My mother and my brothers are those who listen to God's teaching  
and do what it says.'

22 One day about that time, Jesus got into a boat with his disciples  
23 and said to them: 'Let us go across the lake.' So they put off. While  
they were sailing, Jesus fell asleep. A squall swept down on the  
24 lake, and their boat was filling and they were in danger. So the  
disciples came and roused him. 'Sir, Sir,' they cried, 'we are lost!' Jesus  
rose and rebuked the wind and the rushing waves, and they  
25 fell, and a calm followed. 'Where is your faith?' he exclaimed. But  
in great awe and amazement they said to one another: 'Who can  
this be, who commands even the winds and the waves, and they  
obey him?'

26 And they reached the country of the Gerasenes, which is on  
27 the opposite side to Galilee; and, on getting ashore, Jesus met  
a man, who had demons in him, coming out of the town. For a  
long time this man had worn no clothing, and he had not lived  
28 in a house, but in the tombs. Catching sight of Jesus, he shrieked  
out and threw himself down before him, and in a loud voice ex-  
claimed: 'What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High  
29 God? I beg you not to torment me.' For Jesus was commanding  
the foul spirit to come out of the man. On many occasions it had  
seized him, and, even when secured with chains and fetters, and  
watched, he would break through anything that bound him, and  
be driven by the demon into the Wilds.

30 'What is your name?' Jesus asked.

'Legion,' he answered (for many demons had taken possession  
31 of him); and the demons begged Jesus not to order them away  
32 into the bottomless pit. There was a drove of many pigs close  
by feeding on the hill-side; and the demons begged Jesus to give  
33 them leave to enter into them. Jesus gave them leave. They came  
out from the man and took possession of the pigs; and the drove

rushed down the steep slope into the lake and were drowned. When the men who tended them saw what had happened, they ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country round. The people went out to see what had happened, and when they came to Jesus, they found the man from whom the demons had gone out, sitting, clothed and in his right mind, at Jesus' feet; and they were awe-struck. Those who had seen it told them how the possessed man had been delivered. Then all the people in the region of the Gerasenes asked Jesus to leave them, for they were terrified. Jesus got into a boat and returned. The man from whom the demons had gone out begged Jesus to let him be with him; but Jesus sent him away. 'Go back to your home,' he said, 'and relate the story of all that God has done for you.' So the man went through the whole town and proclaimed, as he went, all that Jesus had done for him.

On his return, Jesus was welcomed by the people; for everyone was looking out for him. And a man named Jairus, who was a synagogue leader, came to Jesus, and threw himself at Jesus' feet, with entreaties that he would come to his house, because his only daughter, who was about twelve years old, was dying. As Jesus was going, the people were pressing closely round him. And a woman, who had suffered from haemorrhage for twelve years, and whom no one could cure, came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. Instantly the haemorrhage ceased.

'Who touched me?' Jesus asked; and, while everyone was denying having done so, Peter exclaimed: 'Why, Sir, the people are crowding round you and pressing against you!'

'Somebody touched me,' said Jesus; 'for I felt that power had gone out from me.' Then the woman, when she saw that she was discovered, came forward trembling, and threw herself down before him; and, in the presence of all the people, she told him her reason for touching him, and that she had been cured instantly.

'Daughter,' he said, 'your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you.'

Before he had finished speaking, someone came from the house of the synagogue leader and said: 'Your daughter is dead! Do not trouble the teacher further.' But Jesus, hearing this,

51 spoke to the leader: 'Do not be afraid; only have faith, and she  
will yet be delivered.' When he reached the house, he did not  
52 allow anyone to go in with him, except Peter, John, and James,  
and the child's father and mother. And everyone was weeping  
and mourning for her.

'Do not weep,' Jesus said, 'she is not dead; she is asleep.' They  
53 began to laugh at him, for they knew that she was dead. But,  
54 taking her by the hand, Jesus said in a loud voice: 'Child, rise!'  
55 The child's spirit returned to her, and she instantly stood up; and  
56 Jesus ordered them to give her something to eat. Her parents  
were amazed, but Jesus impressed on them that they were not to  
tell anyone what had happened.

9 Jesus called the Twelve together, and gave them power and au-  
2 thority over all demons, as well as to cure diseases. He sent them  
out as his messengers, to proclaim the kingdom of God, and to  
3 work cures. 'Do not,' he said to them, 'take anything for your  
journey; not even a staff, or a bag, or bread, or any silver, or a  
4 change of clothes with you. Whatever house you go to stay in, re-  
5 main there, and leave from that place. If people do not welcome  
you, as you leave that town, shake even the dust off your feet, as  
6 a protest against them.' Then they set out and went from village  
to village, telling the good news and curing people everywhere.

7 Prince Herod heard of all that was happening, and was per-  
plexed, because it was said by some that John must be risen from  
8 the dead. Some again said that Elijah had appeared, and others  
9 that one of the old prophets had risen again. But Herod him-  
self said: 'John I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear such  
things?' And he endeavoured to see him.

10 When the apostles returned, they related to Jesus all that they  
had done. Then Jesus went privately to a town called Bethsaida,  
11 taking the apostles with him. But the people recognised him and  
followed him in crowds; and Jesus welcomed them and spoke to  
them about the kingdom of God, while he cured those who were  
12 in need of help. The day was drawing to a close, when the twelve  
came up to him, and said: 'Send the crowd away, so that they may  
make their way to the villages and farms round about, and find

themselves lodgings and provisions, for we are in a lonely spot here.' But Jesus said: 'It is for you to give them something to eat.' 13

'We have not more than five loaves and two fish,' they answered; 'unless indeed we are to go and buy food for all these people.' (For the men among them were about five thousand.) 14  
 'Get them seated in companies,' was his reply, 'about fifty in each.' This they did, and got all the people seated. Taking the 15  
 five loaves and the two fish, Jesus looked up to heaven and said the blessing over them. Then he broke them in pieces, and gave 16  
 them to his disciples to set before the people. Everyone had 17  
 sufficient to eat, and what was left of the broken pieces was picked up — twelve baskets.

Afterwards, when Jesus was alone, praying, his disciples 18  
 joined him, and he asked them this question — 'Who do the people say that I am?'

'John the Baptist,' was their answer; 'others, however, say that 19  
 you are Elijah, while others say that one of the old prophets has risen again.'

'But you,' he went on, 'who do you say that I am?' And to this 20  
 Peter answered: 'The Christ of God.'

Jesus, however, strictly charged them not to say this to anyone; 21  
 he told them that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, 22  
 and be rejected by the elders, and chief priests, and teachers of the Law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. And to 23  
 all present he said: 'If any one wishes to walk in my steps, they must renounce self, and take up their cross daily, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their life will lose it, and whoever, for 24  
 my sake, loses his life — that person will save it. What good does 25  
 it do someone if, when they have gained the whole world, they has lost or forfeited themselves? Whoever is ashamed of me and 26  
 of my teaching, the Son of Man will be ashamed of them, when he comes in his glory and the glory of the father and of the holy angels. Indeed, I tell you, some who are standing before me will 27  
 not know death, until they have seen the kingdom of God.'

About eight days after speaking these words, Jesus went up the 28  
 mountain to pray, taking with him Peter, John, and James. As he 29  
 was praying, the aspect of his face was changed, and his clothing

30 became of a glittering whiteness. And all at once two men were  
31 talking with Jesus; they were Moses and Elijah, who appeared in  
a glorified state, and spoke of his departure, which was destined  
32 to take place at Jerusalem. Peter and his companions had been  
overpowered by sleep but, suddenly becoming wide awake, they  
saw Jesus glorified and the two men who were standing beside  
him.  
33 And, as Moses and Elijah were passing away from Jesus, Peter  
exclaimed: 'Sir, it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one  
for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.' He did not know  
34 what he was saying; and, while he was speaking, a cloud came  
down and enveloped them; and they were afraid, as they passed  
35 into the cloud; and from the cloud came a voice which said —  
36 'This is my Son, the Chosen One; him you must hear.' And, as  
the voice ceased, Jesus was found alone. The apostles kept silence,  
and told no one about any of the things that they had seen.

37 The next day, when they had come down from the mountain, a  
38 great crowd met Jesus. And just then a man in the crowd shouted  
out: 'Teacher, I entreat you to look at my son, for he is my only  
39 child; all at once a spirit will seize him, suddenly shriek out, and  
throw him into convulsions until he foams, and will leave him  
40 only when he is utterly exhausted. I entreated your disciples to  
drive the spirit out, but they could not.'  
41 'Faithless and perverse generation!' Jesus exclaimed; 'how long  
must I be with you and have patience with you? Lead your son  
42 here.' While the boy was coming up to Jesus, the demon dashed  
him down and threw him into convulsions. But Jesus rebuked the  
foul spirit, and cured the boy, and gave him back to his father. And  
43 all present were struck with awe at the majesty of God.

In the midst of the general astonishment at all that Jesus was  
44 doing, he said to his disciples: 'Listen carefully to my words. For  
the Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into the hands of his  
45 fellow men.' But the disciples did not understand the meaning  
of this; it had been concealed from them so that they did not see  
it, and they were afraid to question him as to what he meant.



A discussion arose among the disciples as to which of them was the greatest; and Jesus, knowing of the discussion that was occupying their thoughts, took hold of a little child, and placed it beside him, and then said to them: 'Anyone who, for the sake of my name, welcomes even this little child is welcoming me; and anyone who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his messenger. For whoever is least among you all — that person is great.'

John said: 'Sir, we saw a man driving out demons by using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he does not follow you with us.'

'None of you must prevent him,' Jesus said to John; 'whoever's not against you is for you.'

### *The Journey to Jerusalem*

AS THE DAYS BEFORE HIS BEING TAKEN UP TO HEAVEN WERE growing few, Jesus set his face resolutely in the direction of Jerusalem; and he sent on messengers in advance. On their way, they went into a Samaritan village to make preparations for him, but the people there did not welcome him, because his face was set in the direction of Jerusalem. When James and John saw this, they said: 'Master, do you wish us to call for fire to come down from the heavens and consume them?' But Jesus turned and rebuked them. And they made their way to another village.

And, while they were on their way, a man said to Jesus: 'I will follow you wherever you go.'

'Foxes have holes,' he replied, 'and wild birds their nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay his head.' To another man Jesus said: 'Follow me.'

'Let me first go and bury my father,' said the man. But Jesus said: 'Leave the dead to bury their dead; but go yourself and carry far and wide the news of the kingdom of God.'

'Master,' said another, 'I will follow you; but first let me say goodbye to my family.' But Jesus answered: 'No one who looks back, after putting their hand to the plough, is fitted for the kingdom of God.'

- 10 After this, the Master appointed seventy-two other disciples, and sent them on as his messengers, two and two, in advance, to every town and place that he was himself intending to visit.
- 2 'The harvest,' he said, 'is abundant, but the labourers are few. Therefore pray to the owner of the harvest to send labourers to
- 3 gather in his harvest. Now, go. Remember, I am sending you out
- 4 as my messengers like lambs among wolves. Do not take a purse with you, or a bag, or sandals; and do not stop to greet anyone on
- 5 your journey. Whatever house you go to stay at, begin by praying
- 6 for a blessing on it. Then, if anyone there is deserving of a blessing, your blessing will rest on him; but if not, it will come back on
- 7 yourselves. Remain at that same house, and eat and drink whatever they offer you; for the worker is worth their wages. Do not
- 8 keep changing from one house to another. Whatever town you visit, if the people welcome you, eat what is set before you; cure
- 9 the sick there, and tell people "The kingdom of God is close at
- 10 hand. But, whatever town you go to visit, if the people do not welcome you, go out into its streets and say "We wipe off the dust of your town which has clung to Our feet; still, be assured that
- 11 the kingdom of God is close at Hand." I tell you that the doom of Sodom will be more bearable on "that day" than the doom of
- 12 that town. Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the Miracles which have been done in you had been done in
- 13 Tyre and Sidon, they would have sat in sackcloth and ashes and repented long ago. Yet the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more
- 14 bearable at the judgment than yours. And you, Capernaum! Will you "exalt yourself to heaven"? "You will go down to the place of
- 15 death." Anyone who listens to you is listening to me, and anyone who rejects you is rejecting me; while the person who rejects me is rejecting him who sent me as his messenger.'
- 17 When the seventy-two returned, they exclaimed joyfully: 'Master, even the demons submit to us when we use your name.'
- 18 And Jesus replied: 'I have had visions of Satan, fallen, like lightning from the heavens. Remember, I have given you the
- 19 power to "trample on snakes and scorpions," and to meet all the strength of the Enemy. Nothing will ever harm you in any way.
- 20 Yet do not rejoice in the fact that the spirits submit to you, but rejoice that your names have been enrolled in heaven.'

At that same time, moved to exultation by the Holy Spirit, Jesus 21  
said:

‘I thank you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that, though  
you have hidden these things from the wise and learned,  
you have revealed them to the childlike! Yes, Father, I thank  
you that this has seemed good to you.

Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor 22  
does anyone know who the Son is, except the Father, or  
who the Father is, except the Son and those to whom the  
Son may choose to reveal him.’

Then, turning to his disciples, Jesus said to them alone: ‘Blessed 23  
are the eyes that see what you are seeing; for, I tell you, many 24  
prophets and kings wished for the sight of the things which you  
are seeing, yet never heard them.’

Just then a Student of the Law came forward to test Jesus fur- 25  
ther. ‘Teacher,’ he said, ‘what must I do if I am to “gain eternal  
life”?’

‘What is said in the Law?’ answered Jesus. ‘What do you read 26  
there?’ His reply was — 27

“‘You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, and  
with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all  
your mind; and your neighbour as you love yourself.”

‘You have answered right,’ said Jesus; ‘do that, and you will live.’ 28  
But the man, wanting to justify himself, said to Jesus: ‘And who 29  
is my neighbour?’

To which Jesus replied: ‘A man was once going down from 30  
Jerusalem to Jericho when he fell into the hands of robbers, who  
stripped him of everything, and beat him, and went away leaving  
him half dead. As it chanced, a priest was going down by that 31  
road. He saw the man, but passed by on the opposite side. A 32  
Levite, too, did the same; he came up to the spot, but, when he  
saw the man, passed by on the opposite side. But a Samaritan, 33  
traveling that way, came upon the man, and, when he saw him,  
he was moved with compassion. He went to him and bound up 34  
his wounds, dressing them with oil and wine, and then put him  
on his own mule, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 The next day he took out two silver coins and gave them to the  
 innkeeper. "Take care of him," he said, "and whatever more you  
 36 may spend I will myself repay you on my way back." Now which,  
 do you think, of these three men,' asked Jesus, 'proved himself a  
 neighbour to the man who fell into the robbers' hands?'  
 37 'The one that took pity on him,' was the answer; at which Jesus  
 said: 'Go and do the same yourself.'

38 As they continued their journey, Jesus came to a village, where  
 39 a woman named Martha welcomed him to her house. She had  
 a sister called Mary, who seated herself at the Master's feet, and  
 40 listened to his teaching; but Martha was distracted by the many  
 preparations that she was making. So she went up to Jesus and  
 said: 'Master, do you approve of my sister's leaving me to make  
 preparations alone? Tell her to help me.'

41 'Martha, Martha,' replied the Master, 'you are anxious and  
 42 trouble yourself about many things; but only a few are neces-  
 sary, or rather one. Mary has chosen the good part, and it will not  
 be taken away from her.'

11 One day Jesus was at a certain place praying, and, when he  
 had finished, one of his disciples said to him: 'Master, teach us to  
 pray, as John taught his disciples.'

2 'When you pray,' Jesus answered, 'say —

"Father,

May your name be held holy,  
 your kingdom come.

3 Give us each day the bread that we will need;

4 and forgive us our sins,

for we ourselves forgive everyone who wrongs us;

and take us not into temptation."

5 Jesus also said to them: 'Suppose that one of you who has a friend  
 were to go to him in the middle of the night and say "Friend, lend  
 6 me three loaves, for a friend of mine has arrived at my house after  
 7 a journey, and I have nothing to offer him;" And suppose that the  
 other should answer from inside "Do not trouble me; the door is  
 already fastened, and my children and I are in bed; I cannot get up  
 8 and give you anything"; I tell you that, even though he will not

get up and give him anything because he is a friend, yet because of his persistence he will rouse himself and give him what he wants.

And so I say to you — Ask, and your prayer will be granted: 9  
search, and you will find; knock, and the door will be opened to 10  
you. For the person who asks receives, everyone who searches 11  
finds, and to the person who knocks the door will be opened. 12  
What father among you, if his son asks him for a fish, will give 13  
him a snake instead, or, if he asks for an egg, will give him a  
scorpion? If you, then, naturally wicked though you are, know  
how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will the  
Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!

Once Jesus was driving out a dumb demon, and, when the 14  
demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke. The people were 15  
amazed at this; but some of them said: 'He drives out demons 16  
by the help of Beelzebul, the chief of the demons'; while others, 17  
to test him, asked him for some sign from the heavens. Jesus 18  
himself, however, was aware of what they were thinking, and 19  
said to them: 'Any kingdom wholly divided against itself 20  
becomes a desolation; and a divided house falls. So, too, if Satan 21  
is wholly divided against himself, how can his kingdom last? Yet 22  
you say that I drive out demons by the help of Beelzebul. But, if 23  
it is by Beelzebul's help that I drive out demons, by whose help 24  
is it that your own sons drive them out? Therefore they will 25  
themselves be your judges. But, if it is by the hand of God that I 26  
drive out demons, then the kingdom of God must already be  
upon you. When a strong man is keeping guard, fully armed,  
over his own mansion, his property is in safety; but, when one  
still stronger has attacked and overpowered him, he takes away  
all the weapons on which the other had relied, and divides his  
spoil. Whoever who is not with me is against me, and the  
person who does not help me to gather is scattering. No sooner  
does a foul spirit leave someone, than it passes through places  
where there is no water, in search of rest; and finding none, it  
says "I will go back to the home which I left"; but, on coming  
there, it finds it unoccupied, swept, and put in order. Then it  
goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than  
itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last

27 state of that person proves to be worse than the first.' As Jesus  
was saying this, a woman in the crowd, raising her voice,  
exclaimed: 'Happy was the mother who bore you and nursed  
28 you!' But Jesus replied: 'Rather, happy are those who listen to  
God's message and keep it.'

29 As the crowds increased, Jesus began to speak: 'This genera-  
tion is a wicked generation. It is asking a sign, but no sign will be  
30 given it except the sign of Jonah. For, as Jonah became a sign to  
the people of Nineveh, so will the Son of Man be to this genera-  
31 tion. At the judgment the Queen of the South will rise up with  
the people of this generation, and will condemn them, because  
she came from the ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of  
32 Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! At the judgment the  
men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will con-  
demn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here  
33 is more than a Jonah! No one sets light to a lamp, and then puts  
it in the cellar or under a basket, but he puts it on the lamp-stand,  
34 so that anyone who comes in may see the light. The lamp of the  
body is your eye. When your eye is unclouded, your whole body,  
also, is lit up; but, as soon as your eye is diseased, your body,  
35 also, is darkened. Take care, therefore, that the inner light is not  
darkness. If, then, your whole body is lit up, and no corner of it  
36 darkened, the whole will be lit up, just as when a lamp gives you  
light by its brilliance.'

37 As Jesus finished speaking, a Pharisee asked him to breakfast  
with him, and Jesus went in and took his place at the table. The  
38 Pharisee noticed, to his astonishment, that Jesus omitted the cer-  
emonial washing before breakfast. But the Master said to him:  
39 'You Pharisees do, it is true, clean the outside of the cup and of the  
plate, but inside you yourselves are filled with greed and wicked-  
40 ness. Fools! Did not the maker of the outside make the inside too?  
41 Only give away what is in them in charity, and at once you have  
the whole clean. But alas for you Pharisees! You pay tithes on  
42 the whole clean. But alas for you Pharisees! You pay tithes on  
mint, rue, and herbs of all kinds, and pass over justice and love  
to God. These last you ought to have put into practice without

neglecting the first. Alas for you Pharisees! You delight to have 43  
the front seat in the synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets  
with respect. Alas for you! You are like unsuspected graves, over 44  
which men walk unawares.'

Here one of the students of the Law interrupted him by saying: 45  
'Teacher, when you say this, you are insulting us also.' But Jesus 46  
went on: 'Alas for you, too, you students of the Law! You load peo-  
ple with loads that are too heavy to carry, but do not, yourselves,  
touch them with one of your fingers. Alas for you! You build the 47  
monuments of the prophets whom your ancestors killed. You are 48  
actually witnesses to your ancestors' acts and show your approval  
of them, because, while they killed the prophets, you build tombs  
for them. That is why the wisdom of God said — 'I will send to 49  
them prophets and apostles, some of whom they will persecute 50  
and kill, in order that the "blood" of all the prophets "that has  
been spilt" since the creation of the world may be exacted from  
this generation — From the blood of Abel down to the blood of 51  
Zechariah, who was slain between the altar and the house of  
God.' Yes, I tell you, it will be exacted from this generation. Alas 52  
for you students of the Law! You have taken away the key of the  
door of knowledge. You have not gone in yourselves and you have  
hindered those who try to go in.'

When Jesus left the house, the teachers of the Law and the 53  
Pharisees began to press him hard and question him closely on  
many subjects, laying traps for him, so as to seize on anything 54  
that he might say.

Meanwhile the people had gathered in thousands, so that they 12  
trod on one another, when Jesus, addressing himself to his dis-  
ciples, began by saying to them: 'Be on your guard against the  
leaven — that is, the hypocrisy — of the Pharisees. There is noth- 2  
ing, however covered up, which will not be uncovered, nor any-  
thing kept secret which will not become known. So all that you 3  
have said in the dark will be heard in the light, and what you have  
spoken in the ear, within closed doors, will be proclaimed on the  
housetops. To you who are my friends I say, Do not be afraid 4  
of those who kill the body, but after that can do no more. I will 5  
show you of whom you should be afraid. Be afraid of him who,

6 after killing you, has the power to fling you into Gehenna. Yes, I  
7 say, be afraid of him. Are not five sparrows sold for two copper  
8 coins? Yet not one of them has escaped God's notice. No, even the  
9 hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not be afraid; you are of  
10 more value than many sparrows. Everyone, I tell you, who pub-  
11 licly acknowledges me, the Son of Man, also, will acknowledge  
12 me before God's angels; but the person who publicly disowns me  
13 will be altogether disowned before God's angels. Everyone who  
14 will say anything against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but for  
15 the person who slanders the Holy Spirit there will be no forgive-  
16 ness. Whenever they take you before the synagogue Courts or the  
17 magistrates or other authorities, do not be anxious as to how you  
18 will defend yourselves, or what your defence will be, or what you  
19 will say; for the Holy Spirit will show you at the moment what  
20 you ought to say.'

21 'Teacher,' a man in the crowd said to Jesus, 'tell my brother  
22 to share the property with me.' But Jesus said to him: 'Man, who  
23 made me a judge or an arbiter between you?' And then he added:  
24 'Take care to keep yourselves free from every form of covetous-  
25 ness; for even in the height of their prosperity a person's true life  
26 does not depend on what they have.'

27 Then Jesus told them this parable — 'There was once a rich  
28 man whose land was very fertile; and he began to ask himself  
29 "What will I do, for I have nowhere to store my crops? This is  
30 what I will do," he said; "I will pull down my barns and build  
31 larger ones, and store all my grain and my goods in them; and  
32 I will say to myself, Now you have plenty of good things put by  
33 for many years; take your ease, eat, drink, and enjoy yourself."  
34 But God said to the man "Fool! This very night your life is being  
35 demanded; and as for all you have prepared — who will have it?"  
36 So it is with those who lay by wealth for themselves and are not  
37 rich to the glory of God.'

38 And Jesus said to his disciples: 'That is why I say to you, Do  
39 not be anxious about the life here — what you can get to eat; or  
40 about your body — what you can get to wear. For life is more than  
41 food, and the body than its clothes. Think of the ravens — they  
42 neither sow nor reap; they have neither storehouse nor barn; and  
43 yet God feeds them! And how much more precious are you than  
44 birds! But which of you, by being anxious, can prolong your life  
45 a moment? And, if you cannot do even the smallest thing, why



be anxious about other things? Think of the lilies, and how they 27  
grow. They neither toil nor spin; yet, I tell you, even Solomon in  
all his splendour was not robed like one of these. If, even in the 28  
field, God so clothes the grass which is living today and tomorrow  
will be thrown into the oven, how much more will he clothe you,  
you of little faith! And you — do not be always seeking what you 29  
can get to eat or what you can get to drink; and do not waver.  
These are the things for which all the nations of the world are 30  
seeking, and your Father knows that you need them. No, seek 31  
his kingdom, and these things will be added for you. So do not 32  
be afraid, my little flock, for your Father has been pleased to give  
you the kingdom.

Sell what belongs to you, and give in charity. Make yourselves 33  
purses that will not wear out — an inexhaustible treasure in  
heaven, where no thief comes near, or moth works ruin. For 34  
where your treasure is, there also will your heart be. Make 35  
yourselves ready, with your lamps alight; and be like servants 36  
who are waiting for their Master's return from his wedding, so  
that, when he comes and knocks, they may open the door for  
him at once. Happy are those servants whom, on his return, the 37  
Master will find watching. I tell you that he will make himself  
ready, and have them take their places at the table, and will 38  
come and serve them. Whether it is late at night, or in the early 39  
morning that he comes, if he finds all as it should be, then happy  
are they. This you do know, that, had the owner of the house 40  
known at what time the thief was coming, he would have been  
on the watch, and would not have let his house be broken into.  
You must also prepare, for when you are least expecting him the 41  
Son of Man will come.'

'Master,' said Peter, 'are you telling this parable with reference 41  
to us or to everyone?'

'Who, then,' replied the Master, 'is that trustworthy steward, 42  
the careful man, who will be placed by his master over his estab-  
lishment, to give them their rations at the proper time? Happy 43  
will that servant be whom his master, when he comes home, will  
find doing this. His master, I tell you, will put him in charge of 44  
the whole of his property. But should that servant say to himself 45  
"My master is a long time coming," and begin to beat the menserv-  
ants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink and get drunk,

46 that servant's master will come on a day when he does not expect him, and at an hour of which he is unaware, and will flog him severely and assign him his place among the untrustworthy.  
47 The servant who knows his master's wishes and yet does not  
48 prepare and act accordingly will receive many lashes; while one who does not know his master's wishes, but acts so as to deserve a flogging, will receive but few. From everyone to whom much has been given much will be expected, and from the man to whom  
49 much has been entrusted the more will be demanded. I came to cast fire on the earth; and what more can I wish, if it is already  
50 kindled? There is a baptism that I must undergo, and how great  
51 is my distress until it is over! Do you think that I am here to give  
52 peace on earth? No, I tell you, but to cause division. For from this time, if there are five people in a house, they will be divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 "Father will be opposed to son and son to father, mother to daughter and daughter to mother, mother-in-law to her daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law to her mother-in-law."

54 And to the people Jesus said: 'When you see a cloud rising in the west, you say at once "There is a storm coming," and come it does. And when you see that the wind is in the south, you say  
55 "It will be burning hot," and so it proves. Hypocrites! You know  
56 how to judge of the earth and the sky; how is it, then, that you  
57 cannot judge of this time? Why don't you yourselves decide what  
58 is right? When, for instance, you are going with your opponent before a magistrate, on your way to the court do your best to be quit of him; otherwise he might drag you before the judge, then the judge will hand you over to the bailiff of the court, and the  
59 bailiff throw you into prison. You will not, I tell you, come out until you have paid the very last cent.'

13 Just at that time some people had come to tell Jesus about the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with the blood of their  
2 sacrifices. 'Do you suppose,' replied Jesus, 'that, because these Galileans have suffered in this way, they were worse sinners than  
3 any other Galileans? No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you  
4 will all perish as they did. Or those eighteen men at Siloam on

whom the tower fell, killing them all, do you suppose that they were worse offenders than any other inhabitants of Jerusalem? No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish in the same manner.' 5

And Jesus told them this parable — 'A man, who had a fig tree growing in his vineyard, came to look for fruit on it, but could not find any. So he said to his gardener "Three years now I have come to look for fruit on this fig tree, without finding any! Cut it down. Why should it rob the soil?" "Leave it this one year more, Sir," the man answered, "until I have dug round it and manured it. Then, if it bears in future, well and good; but if not, you can have it cut down.'" 6 7 8 9

Jesus was teaching on a Sabbath in one of the synagogues, and he saw before him a woman who for eighteen years had suffered from weakness owing to her having an evil spirit in her. She was bent double, and was wholly unable to raise herself. When Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said: 'Woman, you are released from your weakness.' He placed his hands on her, and she was instantly made straight, and began to praise God. But the synagogue leader, indignant that Jesus had worked the cure on the Sabbath, intervened and said to the people: 'There are six days on which work ought to be done; come to be cured on one of those, and not on the Sabbath.'

'You hypocrites!' the Master answered him. 'Does not every-one of you let your ox or your ass loose from its manger, and take it out to drink, on the Sabbath? But this woman, a daughter of Abraham, who has been kept in bondage by Satan for now eighteen years, ought not she to have been released from her bondage on the Sabbath?' As he said this, his opponents all felt ashamed; but all the people rejoiced to see all the wonderful things that he was doing. 15 16 17

So Jesus said: 'What is the kingdom of God like? And to what can I liken it? It is like a mustard seed which a man took and put in his garden. The seed grew and became a tree, and "the wild birds roosted in its branches.'" And again Jesus said: 'To what can I liken the kingdom of God? It is like some yeast which a 18 19 20 21

woman took and covered in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen.'

22 Jesus went through towns and villages, teaching as he went,  
 23 and making his way towards Jerusalem. 'Master,' someone asked,  
 'are there but few in the path of salvation?' And Jesus answered:  
 24 'Strive to go in by the small door. Many, I tell you, will seek to go  
 25 in, but they will not be able, when once the master of the house  
 has got up and shut the door, while you begin to say, as you stand  
 outside and knock, "Sir, open the door for us." His answer will  
 26 be — "I do not know where you come from." Then you will be-  
 gin to say "We have eaten and drunk in your presence, and you  
 27 have taught in our streets," and his reply will be — "I do not  
 know where you come from. Leave my presence, all you who are  
 28 living in wickedness." There, there will be weeping and grind-  
 ing of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and all the  
 prophets, in the kingdom of God, while you yourselves are being  
 29 driven outside. People will come from East and West, and from  
 North and South, and take their places at the banquet in the king-  
 30 dom of God. there are some who are last now who will then be  
 first, and some who are first now who will then be last!'  
 31 Just then some Pharisees came up to Jesus and said: 'Go away  
 32 and leave this place, for Herod wants to kill you.' But Jesus  
 answered: 'Go and say to that fox "Look you, I am driving out  
 33 demons and will be completing cures today and tomorrow, and  
 on the third day I will have done." But today and tomorrow and  
 the day after I must go on my way, because it cannot be that a  
 34 prophet should meet his end outside Jerusalem. Jerusalem!  
 Jerusalem! You who slays the prophets and stones the  
 messengers sent to you — Oh, how often have I wished to gather  
 your children round me, as a hen takes her brood under her  
 35 wings, and you would not come! Verily your house is left to you  
 desolate! And never, I tell you, will you see me, until you say —

"Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord."

14 On one occasion, as Jesus was going, on a Sabbath into the  
 house of one of the leading Pharisees to dine, they were watching  
 2 him closely. There he saw before him a man who was suffering  
 3 from dropsy. 'Is it allowable,' said Jesus, addressing the students

of the Law and the Pharisees, 'to work a cure on the Sabbath, or is it not?' They remained silent. Jesus took hold of the man and 4  
cured him, and sent him away. And he said to them: 'Which of 5  
you, finding that your son or your ox has fallen into a well, will  
not immediately pull them out on the Sabbath day?' And they 6  
could not make any answer to that.

Observing that the guests were choosing the best places for them- 7  
selves, Jesus told them this parable — 'When you are invited by 8  
anyone to a wedding banquet, do not seat yourself in the best  
place. Someone of higher rank might have been invited by your 9  
host; and the host who invited you both will come and say to you  
"Make room for this person," and then you will begin in confu- 10  
sion to take the lowest place. No, when you are invited, go and  
take the lowest place, so that, when the host who has invited you  
comes, he may say to you "Friend, come higher up"; and then you 11  
will be honoured in the eyes of all your fellow guests. For every-  
one who exalts themselves will be humbled, and everyone who  
humbles themselves will be exalted.'

Then Jesus went on to say to the man who had invited him: 12  
'When you give a breakfast or a dinner, do not ask your friends,  
or your brothers or sisters, or your relatives, or rich neighbours,  
because they might invite you in return, and so you should be 13  
repaid. No, when you entertain, invite the poor, the crippled, the  
lame, the blind; and then you will be happy indeed, since they 14  
cannot reward you; for you will be rewarded at the resurrection  
of the good.'

One of the guests heard what he said and exclaimed: 'Happy 15  
will be the person who will eat bread in the kingdom of God!'  
But Jesus said to him: 'A man was once giving a great dinner. 16  
He invited many people, and sent his servant, when it was time 17  
for the dinner, to say to those who had been invited "Come, for  
everything is now ready." They all with one accord began to ask 18  
to be excused. The first said to the servant "I have bought a field  
and am obliged to go and look at it. I must ask you to consider  
me excused." The next said "I have bought five pairs of bullocks, 19  
and I am on my way to try them. I must ask you to consider me  
excused"; while the next said "I am just married, and for that 20  
reason I am unable to come." On his return the servant told his  
master all these answers. Then in anger the owner of the house 21  
said to his servant "Go out at once into the streets and alleys of

22 the town, and bring in here the poor, and the crippled, and the  
23 blind, and the lame." Presently the servant said "Sir, your order  
24 has been carried out, and still there is room." "Go out," the master  
25 said, "into the roads and hedgerows, and make people come in,  
26 so that my house may be filled; for I tell you all that not one of  
27 those people who were invited will taste my dinner."

28 One day, when great crowds of people were walking with Je-  
29 sus, he turned and said to them: 'If any one comes to me and  
30 does not hate their father, and mother, and wife, and children,  
31 and brothers, and sisters, yes and even their life, he can be no dis-  
32 ciple of mine. Whoever does not carry their own cross, and walk  
33 in my steps, can be no disciple of mine. Why, which of you, when  
34 you want to build a tower, does not first sit down and reckon the  
35 cost, to see if you have enough to complete it? — Otherwise, if  
you have laid the foundation and are not able to finish it, every-  
one who sees it will laugh at you, and say "Here is a person who  
began to build and was not able to finish!" Or what king, when  
he is setting out to fight another king, does not first sit down and  
consider if with ten thousand men he is able to meet one who  
is coming against him with twenty thousand? And if he cannot,  
then, while the other is still at a distance, he sends envoys and asks  
for terms of peace. And so with everyone of you who does not bid  
farewell to all you have — you cannot be a disciple of mine. Yes,  
salt is good; but, if the salt itself should lose its strength, what  
will be used to season it? It is not fit either for the land or for the  
manure heap. People throw it away. Let those who have ears to  
hear with hear!'

15 The tax-gatherers and the outcasts were all drawing near to Jesus  
2 to listen to him; but the Pharisees and the teachers of the Law  
found fault.

'This man always welcomes outcasts, and takes meals with  
them!' they complained.

3 So Jesus told them this parable — 'Who among you who has  
4 a hundred sheep, and has lost one of them, does not leave the  
5 ninety-nine out in the open country, and go after the lost sheep  
6 until he finds it? And, when he has found it, he puts in on his  
shoulders rejoicing; and, on reaching home, he calls his friends

and his neighbours together, and says "Come and rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost." So, I tell you, 7  
there will be more rejoicing in heaven over one outcast who repents, than over ninety-nine religious people, who have no need to repent. Or again, what woman who has ten silver coins, if she loses one of them, does not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and search carefully until she finds it? And, when she has found it, she calls her friends and neighbours together, and says "Come and rejoice with me, for I have found the coin which I lost." So, I tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of God's angels over one outcast who repents.'

Then Jesus continued: 'A man had two sons; and the younger of them said to his father "Father, give me my share of the inheritance." So the father divided the property between them. A few days later the younger son got together all that he had, and went away into a distant land; and there he squandered his inheritance by leading a dissolute life. After he has spent all that he had, there was a severe famine through all that country, and he began to be in actual want. So he went and engaged himself to one of the people of that country, who sent him into his fields to tend pigs. He even longed to satisfy his hunger with the bean-pods on which the pigs were feeding; and no one gave him anything. But, when he came to himself, he said "How many of my father's hired servants have more bread than they can eat, while here am I starving to death! I will get up and go to my father, and say to him 'Father, I sinned against heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make me one of your hired servants.'" And he got up and went to his father. But, while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was deeply moved; he ran and threw his arms round his neck and kissed him. "Father," the son said, "I sinned against heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make me one of your hired servants." But the father turned to his servants and said "Be quick and fetch a robe — the very best — and put it on him; give him a ring for his finger and sandals for his feet; and bring the fattened calf and kill it, and let us eat and make merry; for here is my son who was dead, and is alive again, was lost, and is found." So they began making merry. Meanwhile the elder son was out in the fields; but, on coming home, when he got near the house, he heard music and dancing, and he called one of the servants and asked what it all 26

- 27 meant. "Your brother has come back," the servant told him, "and  
28 your father has killed the fattened calf, because he has him back  
29 safe and sound." This made him angry, and he would not go in.  
30 But his father came out and begged him to do so. "No," he said to  
31 his father, "look at all the years I have been serving you, without  
32 ever once disobeying you, and yet you have never given me even a  
young goat, so that I might have a merrymaking with my friends.  
30 But, no sooner has this son of yours come, who has eaten up your  
property in the company of prostitutes, than you have killed the  
31 fattened calf for him." "Child," the father answered, "you are al-  
32 ways with me, and everything that I have is yours. We could but  
make merry and rejoice, for here is your brother who was dead,  
and is alive; who was lost, and is found."
- 16 Jesus said to his disciples: "There was a rich man who had  
a steward; and this steward was maliciously accused to him of  
2 wasting his estate. So the master called him and said "What is this  
that I hear about you? Give in your accounts, for you cannot act as  
3 steward any longer." "What am I to do," the steward asked him-  
self, "now that my master is taking the steward's place away from  
4 me? I have not strength to dig, and I am ashamed to beg. I know  
what I will do, so that, as soon as I am turned out of my steward-  
5 ship, people may welcome me into their homes." One by one he  
called up his master's debtors. "How much do you owe my mas-  
6 ter?" he asked of the first. "Four hundred and forty gallons of oil,"  
answered the man. "Here is your agreement," he said; "sit down  
7 at once and make it two hundred and twenty." And you, the stew-  
ard said to the next, "how much do you owe?" "Seventy quar-  
8 ters of wheat," he replied. "Here is your agreement," the steward  
said; "make it fifty-six." His master complimented this dishonest  
steward on the shrewdness of his action. And indeed men of the  
world are shrewder in dealing with their fellow men than those  
9 who have the light. And I say to you "Win friends for yourselves  
with your dishonest money," so that, when it comes to an end,  
10 there may be a welcome for you into the Eternal Home. The per-  
son who is trustworthy in the smallest matter is trustworthy in a  
great one also; and the person who is dishonest in the smallest  
11 matter is dishonest in a great one also. So, if you have proved  
untrustworthy with the "dishonest money," who will trust you  
12 with the true? And, if you have proved untrustworthy with what  
does not belong to us, who will give you what is really our own?



No servant can serve two masters, for, either they will hate one and love the other, or else they will attach themselves to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money.' 13

All this was said within hearing of the Pharisees, who were lovers of money, and they began to sneer at Jesus. 14

'You,' said Jesus, 'are the ones who justify themselves before the world, but God can read your hearts; and what is highly esteemed among people may be an abomination in the sight of God. The Law and the prophets sufficed until the time of John. Since then the good news of the kingdom of God has been told, and everybody has been forcing their way into it. It would be easier for the heavens and the earth to disappear than for one stroke of a letter in the Law to be lost. Everyone who divorces his wife and marries another woman is an adulterer, and the man who marries a divorced woman is an adulterer. There was once a rich man, who dressed in purple robes and fine linen, and feasted every day in great splendour. Near his gateway there had been laid a beggar named Lazarus, who was covered with sores, and who longed to satisfy his hunger with what fell from the rich man's table. Even the dogs came and licked his sores. After a time the beggar died, and was taken by the angels to be with Abraham. The rich man also died and was buried. In the place of death he looked up in his torment, and saw Abraham at a distance and Lazarus at his side. So he called out "Pity me, Father Abraham, and send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am suffering agony in this flame." "Child," answered Abraham, "remember that you in your lifetime received what you thought desirable, just as Lazarus received what was not desirable; but now he has his consolation here, while you are suffering agony. And not only that, but between you and us there lies a great chasm, so that those who wish to pass from here to you cannot, nor can they cross from there to us." "Then, Father," he said, "I beg you to send Lazarus to my father's house — For I have five brothers to warn them, so that they may not come to this place of torture also." "They have the writings of Moses and the prophets," replied Abraham; "let them listen to them." "But, Father Abraham," he urged, "if someone from the dead were to go to them, they would repent." "If they do not listen to Moses and the prophets," answered Abraham, "they will not be persuaded, even if someone were to rise from the dead." 15 16 17 18 19 20 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28 29 30 31

17 Jesus said to his disciples: 'It is inevitable that there should be temptations but sorrow awaits the person who does the tempting!  
2 It would be good for them if they had been flung into the sea with a millstone round their neck, rather than that they should  
3 prove a trap even one of these little ones. Be on your guard! If your brother or sister does wrong, rebuke them; but if they repent,  
4 forgive them. Even if they wrong you seven times a day, but turns to you every time and says "I am sorry," you must forgive them.'  
5 'Give us more faith,' said the apostles to the Master; but the Master said: 'If your faith were only like a mustard seed, you could say to this mulberry tree "Be uprooted and planted in the sea," and it  
6 would obey you. Which of you, if he had a servant ploughing, or tending the sheep, would say to him, when he came in from the  
7 fields, "Come at once and take your place at the table," Instead of saying "Prepare my dinner, and then make yourself ready and serve me while I am eating and drinking, and after that you will  
8 eat and drink yourself"? Does he feel grateful to his servant for doing what he is told? And so with you — when you have done  
9 all that you have been told, still say "We are but useless servants; we have done no more than we ought to have done.'"

11 On the way to Jerusalem Jesus passed between Samaria and  
12 Galilee. As he was entering a village, ten lepers met him.  
13 Standing still, some distance off, they called out loudly: 'Jesus! Sir! Pity us!' When Jesus saw them, he said: 'Go and show yourselves to the priest.' And, as they were on their way, they  
14 were made clean. One of them, finding he was cured, came back, praising God loudly, and threw himself on his face at  
15 Jesus' feet, thanking him for what he had done; and this man was a Samaritan. 'Were not all the ten made clean? exclaimed  
16 Jesus. But the nine — where are they? Were there none to come back and praise God except this foreigner? Get up,' he said to  
17 him, 'and go on your way. Your faith has delivered you.'

Being once asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God was 20  
to come, Jesus answered: "The kingdom of God does not come in  
a way that can be seen, nor will people say "Look, here it is!" 21  
or "There it is!"; for the kingdom of God is within you! The day 22  
will come,' he said to his disciples, 'when you will long to see but  
one of the days of the Son of Man, and will not see it. People will 23  
say to you "There he is! Or "Here he is!" Do not go and follow  
them. For, just as lightning will lighten and flare from one side 24  
of the heavens to the other, so will it be with the Son of Man. But  
first he must undergo much suffering, and he must be rejected 25  
by the present generation. As it was in the days of Noah, so will 26  
it be again in the days of the Son of Man. They were eating and 27  
drinking and marrying and being married, up to the very day  
on which Noah entered the ark, and then the flood came and de- 28  
stroyed them all. So, too, in the days of Lot. People were eating, 29  
drinking, buying, selling, planting, building; but, on the very day  
on which Lot came out of Sodom, it rained fire and sulphur from 30  
the skies and destroyed them all. It will be the same on the day 31  
on which the Son of Man reveals himself. On that day, if a person  
is on their house-top and their goods in the house, they must not  
go down to get them; nor again must one who is on the farm turn 32  
back. Remember Lot's wife. Whoever is eager to get the most out  
of their life will lose it; but whoever will lose it will preserve it. On 33  
that night, I tell you, of two people on the same bed, one will be 34  
taken and the other left; of two women grinding grain together, 35  
one will be taken and the other left.'

'Where will it be, Master?' asked the disciples. 'Where there is 37  
a body,' said Jesus, "'there will the vultures flock.'"

Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should 18  
always pray and never despair. 'There was,' he said, 'in a cer- 2  
tain town a judge, who had no fear of God nor regard for people.  
In the same town there was a widow who went to him again 3  
and again, and said "Grant me justice against my opponent." For  
a time the judge refused, but afterwards he said to himself "Al- 4  
though I am without fear of God or regard for people, yet, as this 5  
widow is so troublesome, I will grant her justice, to stop her from

6 plaguing me with her endless visits.” Then the Master added:  
7 ‘Listen to what this iniquitous judge says! And God — won’t he  
8 see that his own people, who cry to him night and day, have justice  
9 done them — though he holds his hand? He will, I tell you,  
10 give them justice soon enough! Yet, when the Son of Man comes,  
11 will he find faith on earth?’

9 Another time, speaking to people who were satisfied that they  
10 were religious, and who regarded everyone else with scorn, Jesus  
11 told this parable — ‘Two men went up into the Temple Courts to  
12 pray. One was a Pharisee and the other a tax-gatherer. The Pharisee  
13 stood forward and began praying to himself in this way —  
14 “God, I thank you that I am not like other men — thieves, rogues,  
15 adulterers — or even like this tax-gatherer. I fast twice a week,  
16 and give a tenth of everything I get to God.” Meanwhile the  
17 tax-gatherer stood at a distance, not venturing even “to raise his  
18 eyes to heaven”; but he kept striking his breast and saying “God,  
19 have mercy on me, a sinner.” This man, I tell you, went home  
20 pardoned, rather than the other; for everyone who exalts himself  
21 will be humbled, while everyone who humbles himself will be  
22 exalted.’

15 Some of the people were bringing even their babies to Jesus, for  
16 him to touch them; but, when the disciples saw it, they began  
17 to find fault with those who had brought them. Jesus, however,  
18 called the little children to him. ‘Let the little children come to  
19 me,’ he said, ‘and do not hinder them; for it is to the childlike that  
20 the kingdom of God belongs. I tell you, unless a man receives the  
21 kingdom of God like a child, he will not enter it at all.’

18 And one of the leaders asked Jesus this question — ‘Good  
19 teacher, what must I do if I am to gain eternal life?’  
20 ‘Why do you call me good?’ answered Jesus. ‘No one is good but  
21 God. You know the commandments — “Do not commit adultery,  
22 Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not say what is false about others,  
23 Honour your father and your mother.”’

'I have observed all these,' he replied, 'from childhood.' Hearing this, Jesus said to him: 'There is one thing still lacking in you; sell everything that you have, and distribute to the poor, and you will have wealth in heaven; then come and follow me.' But the man became greatly distressed on hearing this, for he was extremely rich. Seeing this, Jesus said to his disciples: 'How hard it is for the wealthy to enter the kingdom of God! It is easier, indeed, for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich person to enter the kingdom of God!'

'Then who can be saved?' asked those who heard this. But Jesus said: 'What is impossible with people is possible with God.'

'But we,' said Peter, 'we left what belonged to us and followed you.'

'I tell you,' he answered, 'that there is no one who has left house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children, for the sake of the kingdom of God, who will not receive many times as much in the present, and in the age that is coming eternal life.'

Gathering the Twelve round him, Jesus said to them: 'Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem; and there everything that is written in the prophets will be done to the Son of Man. For he will be given up to the Gentiles, mocked, insulted and spat on; they will scourge him, and then put him to death; and on the third day he will rise again.' The apostles did not comprehend any of this; his meaning was unintelligible to them, and they did not understand what he was saying.

As Jesus was getting near Jericho, a blind man was sitting by the roadside, begging. Hearing a crowd going by, the man asked what was the matter; and, when people told him that Jesus of Nazareth was passing, he shouted out: 'Jesus, Son of David, take pity on me!' Those who were in front kept telling him to be quiet, but he continued to call out the louder: 'Son of David, take pity on me!' Then Jesus stopped and ordered the man to be brought to him. And, when he had come close up to him, Jesus asked him: 'What do you want me to do for you?'

42 'Master,' he said, 'I want to recover my sight.' And Jesus said:  
43 'Recover your sight, your faith has delivered you.' Instantly he  
recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus, praising God. And  
all the people, on seeing it, gave glory to God.

19 Jesus entered Jericho and made his way through the town. There  
2 was a man there, known by the name of Zacchaeus, who was a  
3 commissioner of taxes and a rich man. He tried to see what Jesus  
was like; but, being short, he was unable to do so because of the  
4 crowd. So he ran on ahead and climbed into a mulberry tree, to  
5 see Jesus, for he knew that he must pass that way. When Jesus  
came to the place, he looked up and said to him: 'Zacchaeus, be  
quick and come down, for I must stop at your house today.' So  
6 Zacchaeus got down quickly, and joyfully welcomed him. On  
7 seeing this, everyone began to complain: 'He has gone to stay with  
8 a man who is an outcast.' But Zacchaeus stood forward and said  
to the Master: 'Listen, Master! I will give half my property to the  
poor, and, if I have defrauded anyone of anything, I will give him  
back four times as much.'

9 'Salvation has come to this house today,' answered Jesus, 'for  
10 even this man is a son of Abraham. The Son of Man has come to  
"search for those who are lost" and to save them.'

11 As the people were listening to this, Jesus went on to tell  
them a parable. He did so because he was near Jerusalem, and  
because they thought that the kingdom of God was going to be  
12 proclaimed at once. He said: 'A nobleman once went to a distant  
country to receive his appointment to a kingdom and then  
13 return. He called ten of his servants and gave them ten pounds  
of silver each, and told them to trade with them during his  
14 absence. But his subjects hated him and sent envoys after him to  
15 say "We will not have this man as our king." On his return, after  
having been appointed king, he directed that the servants to  
whom he had given his money should be summoned, so that he  
16 might learn what amount of trade they had done. The first came  
up, and said "Sir, your ten pounds have made a hundred." "Well  
17 done, good servant!" exclaimed the master. "As you have  
proved trustworthy in a very small matter, I appoint you  
18 governor over ten towns." When the second came, he said "Your

ten pounds, Sir, have produced fifty." So the master said to him 19  
 "And you I appoint over five towns." Another servant also came 20  
 and said "Sir, here are your ten pounds; I have kept them put  
 away in a handkerchief. For I was afraid of you, because you are 21  
 a stern man. You take what you have not planted, and reap what  
 you have not sown." The master answered "Out of your own 22  
 mouth I judge you, you worthless servant. You knew that I am a  
 stern man, that I take what I have not planted, and reap what I  
 have not sown? Then why didn't you put my money into a 23  
 bank? And I, on my return, could have claimed it with interest.  
 Take away from him the ten pounds," he said to those standing 24  
 by, "and give them to the one who has the hundred." "But, Sir," 25  
 they said, "he has a hundred pounds already!" "I tell you," he 26  
 answered, "that, to him who has, more will be given, but, from  
 him who has nothing, even what he has will be taken away. But 27  
 as for my enemies, these men who would not have me as their  
 king, bring them here and put them to death in my presence."  
 After saying this, Jesus went on in front, going up to Jerusalem. 28

### *The Last Days*

IT WAS WHEN JESUS HAD ALMOST REACHED BETHPHAGE and Bethany, 29  
 near the Mount of Olives, that he sent on two of the disciples.  
 'Go to the village facing us,' he said, 'and, when you get there, 30  
 you will find a foal tethered, which no one has yet ridden; untie it  
 and lead it here. And, if anybody asks you "Why are you untying 31  
 it?," you are to say this — "The Master wants it."' So the two who 32  
 were sent went and found it as Jesus had told them. While they 33  
 were untying the foal, the owners asked them — 'Why are you  
 untying the foal?' And the two disciples answered — 'The Master 34  
 wants it.' Then they led it back to Jesus, and threw their cloaks 35  
 on the foal and put Jesus on it. As he went along, the people kept 36  
 spreading their cloaks in the road. When he had almost reached 37  
 the place where the road led down the Mount of Olives, everyone  
 of the many disciples began in their joy to praise God loudly for  
 all the miracles that they had seen:

'Blessed is He who comes — 38  
 Our king — in the name of the Lord!  
 Peace in heaven,

And glory on high.'

39 Some of the Pharisees in the crowd said to him: 'Teacher, restrain  
40 your disciples.' But Jesus answered: 'I tell you that if they are  
silent, the stones will call out.'

41 When he drew near, on seeing the city, he wept over it, and said:  
42 'If only you had known, while yet there was time — even you —  
the things that make for peace! But now they have been hidden  
43 from your sight. For a time is coming when your enemies will  
surround you with earthworks, and encircle you, and hem you  
44 in on all sides; they will trample you down and your children  
within you, and they will not leave in you one stone on another,  
because you did not know "the time of your visitation."' "

45 Jesus went into the Temple Courts and began to drive out those  
46 who were selling, saying as he did so: 'Scripture says — "My  
house will be a house of prayer"; but you have made it "a den of  
robbers."' "

47 Jesus continued to teach each day in the Temple Courts; but the  
chief priests and teachers of the Law were eager to take his life,  
48 and so also were the leaders of the people. Yet they could not see  
what to do, for the people all hung on his words.

20 On one of these days, when Jesus was teaching the people in the  
Temple Courts and telling the good news, the chief priests and  
the teachers of the Law, joined by the elders, confronted him, and  
2 addressing him, said: 'Tell us what authority you have to do these  
things. Who is it who has given you this authority?'

3 'I, too,' said Jesus in reply, 'will ask you one question. Give  
4 me an answer to it. It is about John's baptism — was it of divine  
5 or of human origin?' But they began arguing together: 'If we say  
6 "divine," he will say "Why didn't you believe him?" But, if we say  
"human," the people will all stone us, for they are persuaded that  
7 John was a prophet.' So they answered that they did not know  
8 its origin. 'Then I,' said Jesus, 'refuse to tell you what authority I  
have to do these things.'



But Jesus began to tell the people this parable — ‘A man once  
 planted a vineyard, and then let it out to tenants, and went abroad  
 for a long while. At the proper time he sent a servant to the  
 tenants, so that they could give him a share of the produce of  
 the vineyard. The tenants, however, beat him and sent him away  
 empty-handed. The owner afterwards sent another servant; but  
 the tenants beat and insulted this man too, and sent him away  
 empty-handed. He sent a third; but they wounded this man also,  
 and threw him outside. “What should I do?” said the owner of  
 the vineyard. “I will send my son, who is very dear to me. Perhaps  
 they will respect him.” But, on seeing him, the tenants consulted  
 with one another. “Here is the heir!” they said. “Let us kill him,  
 and then the inheritance will become ours.” So they threw him  
 outside the vineyard and killed him. Now what will the owner of  
 the vineyard do to them? He will come and put those tenants to  
 death, and will let the vineyard to others.’

‘heaven forbid!’ they exclaimed when they heard it. But Jesus  
 looked at them and said: ‘What then is the meaning of this pas-  
 sage? —

“The stone which the builders despised has now itself be-  
 come the corner-stone.”

Everyone who falls on that stone will be dashed to pieces, while  
 anyone on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust.’

After this the teachers of the Law and the chief priest were  
 eager to lay hands on Jesus then and there, but they were afraid  
 of the people; for they saw that it was at them that he had aimed  
 this parable. Having watched their opportunity, they afterwards  
 sent some spies, who pretended to be good men, to catch Jesus  
 in the course of conversation, and so enable them to give him up  
 to the Governor’s jurisdiction and authority. These spies asked  
 Jesus a question. They said: ‘Teacher, we know that you are right  
 in what you say and teach, and that you do not take any account  
 of a person’s position, but teach the way of God honestly; are we  
 right in paying tribute to the Emperor or not?’ Seeing through  
 their deceitfulness, Jesus said to them: ‘Show me a coin. Whose  
 head and title are on it?’

‘The Emperor’s,’ they said; and Jesus replied: ‘Well then, pay  
 to the Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what

26 belongs to God.' They could not lay hold of this answer before the people; and, in their wonder at his reply, they held their tongues.

27 Presently there came up some Sadducees, who maintain that  
28 there is no resurrection. Their question was this — 'Teacher, Moses laid down for us in his writings that —

"Should a man's married brother die, and should he be childless, the man should take the widow as his wife, and raise up a family for his brother."

29 Well, there were once seven brothers; of whom the eldest, after  
30 taking a wife, died childless. The second and third brothers both  
31 took her as their wife; and so, too, did all seven — dying with-  
32 out children. The woman herself was the last to die. About the  
33 woman, then — at the resurrection, whose wife is she to be, all seven brothers having had her as their wife?' —

34 'The men and women of this world,' said Jesus, 'marry and are  
35 given in marriage; but, for those who are thought worthy to attain to that other world and the resurrection from the dead, there is  
36 no marrying or being married, nor indeed can they die again, for they are like angels and, having shared in the resurrection, they  
37 are God's children. As to the fact that the dead rise, even Moses indicated that, in the passage about the Bush, when he calls the Lord —

"The God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob."

38 Now he is not God of dead people, but of living. For in his sight all are alive.'

39 'Well said, teacher!' exclaimed some of the teachers of the Law,  
40 for they did not venture to question him any further. But Jesus said to them: 'How is it that people say that the Christ is to be  
41 David's son? For David, in the book of Psalms, says himself —

"The Lord said to my lord: 'Sit at my right hand,  
43 until I put your enemies as a stool for your feet.'"

44 David, then, calls him "lord," so how is he David's son?' —

45 While all the people were listening, Jesus said to the disciples:  
46 'Be on your guard against the teachers of the Law, who delight

to walk about in long robes, and like to be greeted in the streets with respect, and to have the best seats in the synagogues, and places of honour at dinner. These are the men who rob widows 47  
of their houses, and make a pretence of saying long prayers. Their sentence will be all the heavier.'

Looking up, Jesus saw the rich people putting their gifts into 21  
the chests for the Temple offerings. He saw, too, a widow in poor 2  
circumstances putting two small coins into them. 'I tell you', he 3  
said 'that this poor widow has put in more than all the others; for 4  
everyone else here put in something from what he had to spare, 4  
while she, in her need, has put in all she had to live on.'

When some of them spoke about the Temple being decorated 5  
with beautiful stones and offerings, Jesus said: 'As for these 6  
things that you are looking at, a time is coming when not one  
stone will be left on another here, which will not be thrown  
down.' So the disciples questioned Jesus: 'But, teacher, when 7  
will this be? And what sign will there be when this is near?'

And Jesus said: 'See that you are not led astray; for many will 8  
take my name, and come saying "I am He," and "The time is close  
at hand." Do not follow them. And, when you hear of wars and 9  
disturbances, do not be terrified, for these things must occur first;  
but the end will not be at once.' Then he said to them: "'Nation 10  
will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom," And  
there will be great earthquakes, and plagues and famines in var- 11  
ious places, and there will be terrible appearances and signs in  
the heavens. Before all this, they will lay hands on you and per- 12  
secute you, and they will betray you to synagogues and put you in  
prison, when you will be brought before kings and governors for  
the sake of my name. Then will be your opportunity of witness- 13  
ing for me. Make up your minds, therefore, not to prepare your  
defence; for I will myself give you words, and a wisdom which 14  
all your opponents together will be unable to resist or defy. You 15  
will be betrayed even by your parents and brothers and sisters 16  
and sisters and relatives and friends, and they will cause some of  
you to be put to death, and you will be hated by everyone be- 17  
cause of me my name. Yet not a single hair of your heads will 18  
be lost! By your endurance you will win yourselves life. As soon, 19  
20

however, as you see Jerusalem surrounded by armed camps, then  
21 you may know that the hour of her desecration is at hand. Then  
those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains,  
those who are in Jerusalem must leave at once, and those who are  
22 in the country places must not go into it. For these are to be the  
days of vengeance, when all that scripture says will be fulfilled.  
23 Alas for pregnant women, and for those who are nursing infants  
in those days! For there will be great suffering in the land, and  
24 anger against this people. They will fall by the edge of the sword,  
and will be taken prisoners to every land, and "Jerusalem will be  
under the heel of the Gentiles," until their day is over — as it will  
25 be. There will be signs, too, in the sun and moon and stars, and on  
the earth despair among the nations, in their dismay at the roar  
26 of the sea and the surge. People's hearts will fail them through  
dread of what is coming upon the world; for "the forces of the  
27 heavens will be convulsed." Then will be seen the "Son of Man  
28 coming in a cloud" with power and great glory. And, when these  
things begin to occur, look upwards and lift your heads, for your  
deliverance will be at hand.'

29 Then he taught them a lesson, saying — 'Look at the fig tree  
30 and all the other trees. As soon as they shoot, you know, as you  
31 look at them, without being told, that summer is near. And so  
may you, as soon as you see these things happening, know that  
32 the kingdom of God is near. I tell you that even the present gener-  
33 ation will not pass away until all has taken place. The heavens and  
the earth will pass away, but my words will never pass away. Be  
34 on your guard or your minds will become dulled by debauches  
or drunkenness or the anxieties of life, and 'that day' will close on  
35 you suddenly like a trap. For come it will on all who are living  
36 upon the face of the whole earth. Be on the watch at all times,  
and pray that you may have strength to escape all that is destined  
to happen, and to stand in the presence of the Son of Man.'

37 During the days, Jesus continued to teach in the Temple Courts,  
but he went out and spent the nights on the hill called the "Mount  
38 of Olives." And all the people would get up early in the morning  
and come to listen to him in the Temple Courts.

The feast of the unleavened bread, known as the Passover, was near. The chief priest and the teachers of the Law were looking for an opportunity of destroying Jesus, for they were afraid of the people. 22

Now Satan took possession of Judas, who was known as Iscariot, and who belonged to the Twelve; and he went and discussed with the chief priests and officers in charge at the Temple the best way of betraying Jesus to them. They were glad of this, and agreed to pay him. So Judas assented, and looked for an opportunity to betray Jesus to them, in the absence of a crowd. 2

When the day of the Festival of the unleavened bread came, on which the Passover lambs had to be killed, Jesus sent forward Peter and John, saying to them: 'Go and make preparations for our eating the Passover.' 3

'Where do you wish us to make preparations?' they asked. 'Listen,' he answered, 'when you have got into the city, a man carrying a pitcher of water will meet you; follow him into whatever house he enters; and you will say to the owner of the house "The teacher says to you — Where is the room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?" The man will show you a large upstairs room, set out; there make preparations.' 4

So Peter and John went on, and found everything just as Jesus had told them, and they prepared the Passover. 5

When the time came, Jesus took his place at the table, and the apostles with him. 'I have most earnestly wished,' he said, 'to eat this Passover with you before I suffer. For I tell you that I will not eat it again, until it has had its fulfilment in the kingdom of God.' Then, on receiving a cup, after saying the thanksgiving, he said: 'Take this and share it among you. For I tell you that I will not, after today, drink of the juice of the grape, until the kingdom of God has come.' Then Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and gave to them, with the words: 'This is my body.<sup>2</sup> Yet see! The hand of the man who is betraying me is beside me on the table! True, the Son of Man is passing, by the way ordained for him, yet alas for that man by whom he is being 6

<sup>2</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *which is now to be given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me. And in the same way with the cup, after supper, saying: "This cup is the New Covenant made by my blood which is being poured out on your behalf."*

23 betrayed!’ Then they began questioning one another which of them it could be who was going to do this.

24 And a dispute arose among them as to which of them was to be regarded as the greatest. Jesus, however, said: ‘The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their oppressors are styled “Benefactors.” But with you it must not be so. No, let the greatest among you become like the youngest, and him who leads like him who serves. Which is the greater — the master at the table or his servant? Is not it the master at the table? Yet I myself am among you as one who serves. You are the men who have stood by me in my trials; and, just as my Father has assigned me a kingdom, I assign you places, so that you may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and be seated on twelve thrones as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon! Simon! listen. Satan demanded leave to sift you all like wheat, but I prayed for you, Simon, that your faith should not fail. And you, when you have returned to me, are to strengthen the others.’

33 ‘Master,’ said Peter, ‘with you I am ready to go both to prison and to death.’

34 ‘I tell you, Peter,’ replied Jesus, ‘the cock will not crow today until you have disowned all knowledge of me three times.’ Then he said to them all: ‘When I sent you out as my messengers, without either purse, or bag, or sandals, were you in need of anything?’

36 ‘No; nothing,’ they answered. ‘Now, however,’ he said, ‘he who has a purse must take it and his bag as well; and he who has not must sell his cloak and buy a sword. For, I tell you, that passage of scripture must be fulfilled in me, which says — “He was counted among the godless”; indeed all that refers to me is finding its fulfilment.’

38 ‘Master,’ they exclaimed, ‘look, here are two swords!’

‘Enough!’ said Jesus.

39 Jesus then went out, and made his way as usual to the Mount of Olives, followed by his disciples. And, when he reached the spot, he said to them: ‘Pray that you may not fall into temptation.’ Then he withdrew about a stone’s throw, and knelt down and began to pray. ‘Father,’ he said, ‘if it is your pleasure, spare me this cup; only, not my will but your be done.’ Presently there appeared to

him an angel from heaven, who strengthened him.<sup>3</sup> And, as his anguish became intense, he prayed still more earnestly, while his sweat was like great drops of blood falling on the ground. Then he rose from praying, and came to the disciples and found them sleeping for sorrow. 'Why are you asleep?' he asked them. 'Rise and pray so that you don't fall into temptation.' While he was still speaking, a crowd appeared in sight, led by the man called Judas, who was one of the Twelve. Judas approached Jesus, to kiss him; at which Jesus said to him: 'Judas, is it by a kiss that you betray the Son of Man?' But when those who were round Jesus saw what was going to happen, they exclaimed: 'Master, should we use our swords?' And one of them struck the high priest's servant and cut off his right ear; at which Jesus said: 'Let me at least do this'; and, touching his ear, he healed the wound. Then, turning to the chief priests and officers in charge at the Temple and the elders, who had come for him, he said: 'Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs? When I was with you day after day in the Temple Courts, you did not lay hands on me; but now your time has come, and the power of darkness.'

Those who had taken Jesus prisoner took him away into the house of the high priest. Peter followed at a distance. But, when they had lit a fire in the centre of the courtyard and had all sat down there, Peter seated himself in the middle of them. Presently a maidservant saw him sitting near the blaze of the fire. She looked carefully at him and said: 'Why, this man was one of his companions!' But Peter denied it. 'I do not know him,' he replied. A little while afterwards someone else — a man — saw him and said: 'Why, you are one of them!' 'No,' Peter said, 'I am not.' About an hour later another man declared positively: 'This man also was certainly with him. Why, he is a Galilean!' But Peter said: 'I do not know what you are speaking about.' Instantly, while he was still speaking, a cock crowed. And the Master turned and looked at Peter; and Peter remembered the words that the Master had said to him — 'Before a cock

---

<sup>3</sup> Some early manuscripts do not contain verses 43 or 44.

62 has crowed today, you will disown me three times'; and he went  
outside and wept bitterly.

63 The men who held Jesus kept making sport of him and beating  
64 him. They blindfolded him and then questioned him. 'Now play  
65 the prophet,' they said; 'who was it that struck you?' And they  
heaped many other insults on him.

66 At daybreak the the assembly of the elders of the people met —  
both the chief priests and the teachers of the Law — and took  
67 Jesus before their High Council. 'If you are the Christ,' they said,  
'tell us so.'

68 'If I tell you,' replied Jesus, 'you will not believe me; and, if I  
69 question you, you will not answer. But from this hour "the Son  
of Man will be seated on the right hand of God Almighty."'

70 'Are you, then, the Son of God?' they all asked. 'It is true,' an-  
71 swered Jesus, 'I am.' At this they exclaimed: 'Why do we want any  
more evidence? We have heard it ourselves from his own lips!'

23 Then they all rose in a body and led Jesus before Pilate. And  
2 they began to accuse him: 'This is a man whom we found mis-  
leading our people, preventing them from paying taxes to the Em-  
peror, and giving out that he himself is "Christ, a king."'

3 'Are you the king of the Jews?' Pilate asked him. 'It is true,'  
4 replied Jesus. But Pilate, turning to the chief priests and the peo-  
ple, said: 'I do not see anything to find fault with in this man.'  
5 But they insisted: 'He is stirring up the people by his teaching all  
through Judea; he began with Galilee and has now come here.'

6 Hearing this, Pilate asked if the man was a Galilean; and, having  
7 satisfied himself that Jesus came under Herod's jurisdiction, he  
sent him to Herod, who also was at Jerusalem at the time. When

8 Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly pleased, for he had been  
wanting to see him for a long time, having heard a great deal  
about him; and he was hoping to see some sign given by him.

9 So he questioned him at some length, but Jesus made no reply.  
10 Meanwhile the chief priests and the teachers of the Law stood



by and vehemently accused him. And Herod, with his soldiers, 11  
treated Jesus with scorn; he mocked him by throwing a gorgeous 12  
robe round him, and then sent him back to Pilate. And Herod  
and Pilate became friends that very day, for before that there had  
been ill-will between them.

So Pilate summoned the chief priests, and the leading men, and 13  
the people, and said to them: 'You brought this man before me 14  
charged with misleading the people; and yet, for my part, though  
I examined him before you, I did not find this man to blame for 15  
any of the things of which you accuse him; nor did Herod either;  
for he has sent him back to us. And, as a fact, he has not done 16  
anything deserving death; so I will have him scourged, and then  
release him.' But they began to shout as one man: 'Kill this fellow, 18  
but release Barabbas for us.' (Barabbas was a man who had been 19  
put in prison for a riot that had broken out in the city and for  
murder.) Pilate, however, wanting to release Jesus, called to them 20  
again; but they kept calling out: 'Crucify, crucify him!' 21

'Why, what harm has this man done?' Pilate said to them for 22  
the third time. 'I have found nothing in him for which he could  
be condemned to death. So I will have him scourged, and then  
release him.' But they persisted in loudly demanding his cruci- 23  
fixion; and their clamour gained the day. Pilate decided that their 24  
demand should be granted. He released the man who had been 25  
put in prison for riot and murder, as they demanded, and gave  
Jesus up to be dealt with as they pleased.

And, as they were leading Jesus away, they laid hold of Simon 26  
from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, and they  
put the cross on his shoulders, for him to carry it behind Jesus.  
There was a great crowd of people following him, many being 27  
women who were beating their breasts and wailing for him. So  
Jesus turned and said to them: 'Women of Jerusalem, do not 28  
weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. A  
time, I tell you, is coming, when it will be said — "Happy are the 29  
women who are barren, and those who have never borne chil-  
dren or nursed them!" At that time people will begin to say to 30  
the mountains "Fall on us," and to the hills "Cover us." If what 31  
you see is done while the tree is green, what will happen when it

32 is dry?' There were two others also, criminals, led out to be executed with Jesus. When they had reached the place called "The Skull," there they crucified Jesus and the criminals, one on the right, and one on the left. Then Jesus said: 'Father, forgive them; they do not know what they are doing.' His clothes they divided among them by casting lots. Meanwhile the people stood looking on. Even the leading men said with a sneer: 'He saved others, let him save himself, if he is God's Christ, his chosen one.' The soldiers, too, came up in mockery, bringing him common wine, and saying as they did so: 'If you are the king of the Jews, save yourself.' Above him were the words —

"THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS."

39 One of the criminals who were hanging beside Jesus railed at him. 'Aren't you the Christ? Save yourself and us,' he said. But the other rebuked him. 'Haven't you,' he said, 'any fear of God, now that you are under the same sentence? And we justly so, for we are only reaping our deserts, but this man has not done anything wrong. Jesus,' he went on, 'do not forget me when you have come to your kingdom.' And Jesus answered: 'I tell you, this very day you will be with me in Paradise.'

44 It was nearly midday, when a darkness came over the whole country, lasting until three in the afternoon, the sun being eclipsed; and the Temple curtain was torn down the middle. Then Jesus, with a loud cry, said: 'Father, into your hands I commit my spirit.' And with these words he expired. The Roman captain, on seeing what had happened, praised God, exclaiming: 'This must have been a good man!' All the people who had collected to see the sight watched what occurred, and then went home beating their breasts. All the friends of Jesus had been standing at a distance, with the women who accompanied him from Galilee, watching all this.

50 Now there was a man of the name of Joseph, who was a member of the Council, and who bore a good and upright character. (This man had not assented to the decision and action of the Council.) He belonged to Ramah, a town in Judea, and lived in expectation of the kingdom of God. He now went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus; and, when he had taken it down, he wrapped it

in a linen sheet, and laid him in a tomb cut out of stone, in which  
 no one had yet been buried. It was the Preparation day, and just 54  
 before the Sabbath began. The women who had accompanied 55  
 Jesus from Galilee followed, and saw the tomb and how the body  
 of Jesus was laid, and then went home, and prepared spices and 56  
 perfumes.

*The Risen Life*

DURING THE SABBATH THEY RESTED, as directed by the command-  
 ment.

But very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, 24  
 taking with them the spices that they had prepared. They found 2  
 that the stone had been rolled away from the tomb; and, on go- 3  
 ing into it, they could not find the body<sup>4</sup>. While they were at a 4  
 loss to account for this, all at once two men stood beside them, in  
 dazzling clothing. But, when in their fear the women bowed their 5  
 faces to the ground, the men said to them: 'Why are you looking  
 among the dead for him who is living?'<sup>5</sup> Remember how he spoke 6  
 to you before he left Galilee — How he said that the Son of Man 7  
 must be betrayed into the hands of wicked men, and be cruci-  
 fied, and rise again on the third day.' Then they remembered the 8  
 words of Jesus, and, on returning from the tomb, they told all this 9  
 to the Eleven and to all the rest. There were Mary of Magdala, 10  
 and Joanna, and Mary, the mother of James. The other women,  
 too, spoke about this to the apostles. What they said seemed to 11  
 the apostles mere nonsense, and they did not believe them.<sup>6</sup>

It happened that very day that two of the disciples were going 13  
 to a village called Emmaus, which was about seven miles from  
 Jerusalem, talking together, as they went, about all that had just 14

<sup>4</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *of the Lord Jesus*

<sup>5</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *He is not here; but he has risen.*

<sup>6</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *Peter got up and ran to the tomb. Stooping down he saw nothing but the linen wrappings, and he went away, wondering to himself at what had taken place.*

15 taken place. While they were talking about these things and discussing them, Jesus himself came up and went on their way with  
16 them; but their eyes were blinded so that they could not recognise him. 'What is this that you are saying to each other as you  
17 walk along?' Jesus asked. They stopped, with sad looks on their  
18 faces, and then one of them, whose name was Cleopas, said to Jesus: 'Are you staying by yourself at Jerusalem, that you have not heard of the things that have happened there within the last few days?'

19 'What things do you mean?' asked Jesus. 'Why, about Jesus of Nazareth,' they answered, 'who, in the eyes of God and all the people, was a prophet, whose power was felt in both his words  
20 and actions; and how the chief priests and our leading men gave him up to be sentenced to death, and afterwards crucified him.  
21 But we were hoping that he was the Destined Deliverer of Israel; yes, and besides all this, it is now three days since these things  
22 occurred. And what is more, some of the women among us have greatly astonished us. They went to the tomb at daybreak And,  
23 not finding the body of Jesus there, came and told us that they had seen a vision of angels who told them that he was alive. So  
24 some of our number went to the tomb and found everything just as the women had said; but they did not see Jesus.'

25 Then Jesus said to them: 'Foolish men, slow to accept all that  
26 the prophets have said! Was not the Christ bound to undergo this suffering before entering into his glory?' Then, beginning with  
27 Moses and all the prophets, he explained to them all through the scriptures the passages that referred to himself. When they got  
28 near the village to which they were walking, Jesus appeared to be going further; but they pressed him not to do so. 'Stay with  
29 us,' they said, 'for it is getting towards evening, and the sun in already low.' So Jesus went in to stay with them. After he had taken  
30 his place at the table with them, he took the bread and said the blessing, and broke it, and gave it to them. Then their eyes were  
31 opened and they recognised him; but he disappeared from their sight. 'How our hearts glowed,' the disciples said to each other,  
32 'while he was talking to us on the road, and when he explained the scriptures to us!'

33 Then they immediately got up and returned to Jerusalem, where they found the Eleven and their companions all together,  
34 who told them that the Master had really risen, and had

appeared to Simon. So they also related what had happened 35  
during their walk, and how they had recognised Jesus at the 36  
breaking of the bread. While they were still talking about these 37  
things, Jesus himself stood among them.<sup>7</sup> In their terror and 38  
alarm they thought they saw a spirit, but Jesus said to them: 39  
'Why are you so startled? And why do doubts arise in your 40  
minds? Look at my hands and my feet, and you will know that it 41  
is I. Feel me, and look at me, for a spirit has not flesh and bones, 42  
as you see that I have.'<sup>8</sup> While they were still unable to believe it 43  
all, overcome with joy, and were wondering if it were true, Jesus 44  
said to them: 'Have you anything here to eat?' They handed him 45  
a piece of broiled fish, and he took it and ate it before their eyes. 46  
'This is what I told you,' he said, 'when I was still with you — 47  
that everything that had been written about me in the Law of 48  
Moses, the prophets, and the Psalms, must be fulfilled.'

Then he enabled them to understand the meaning of the scrip- 45  
tures, saying to them: 'Scripture says that the Christ should suffer, 46  
and that he should rise again from the dead on the third day, and 47  
that repentance for forgiveness of sins should be proclaimed on 48  
his authority to all the nations — beginning at Jerusalem. You 49  
yourselves are to be witnesses to all this. And now I am myself  
about to send you that which my Father has promised. But you  
must remain in the city until you have been invested with power  
from above.'

After this, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and there raised 50  
his hands and blessed them. As he was in the act of blessing them, 51  
he left them.<sup>9</sup> They returned<sup>10</sup> to Jerusalem full of joy; and they 52  
were constantly in the Temple Courts, blessing God. 53

---

<sup>7</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *and said, 'Peace be with you.'*

<sup>8</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *After saying this he showed them his hands and his feet.*

<sup>9</sup> Some early manuscripts add: *and was carried up into heaven*

<sup>10</sup> Some early manuscripts read: *They bowed to the ground before him and returned*



THE  
GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO  
JOHN

*Introduction*

IN THE BEGINNING THE WORD WAS; and the Word was with God; and the Word was God.	1
He was in the beginning with God; through him all things came into being, and nothing came into being apart from him.	2 3
That which came into being in him was life; and the life was the light of humanity; and the light shines in the darkness, and the darkness never overpowered it.	4 5
There appeared a man sent from God, whose name was John;	6
he came as a witness — to bear witness to the light so that through him everyone might believe.	7
He was not the light, but he came to bear witness to the light.	8
That was the true light which enlightens everyone coming into the world.	9
He was in the world; and through him the world came into being — yet the world did not know him.	10
He came to his own — yet his own did not receive him.	11
But to all who did receive him he gave power to become children of God — to those who believe in his name.	12

- 13 For not to natural conception, nor to human instincts, nor  
to human will did they owe the new life,  
but to God.
- 14 And the Word became human, and lived among us,  
(We saw his glory — the glory of the Only Son sent  
from the Father),  
full of love and truth.
- 15 (John bears witness to him; he cried aloud — for it was he  
who spoke —  
“He who is coming” after me is now before me,  
for he was ever first’);
- 16 out of his fullness we have all received some gift,  
gift after gift of love;
- 17 for the Law was given through Moses,  
love and truth came through Jesus Christ.
- 18 No one has ever yet seen God;  
God the Only Son, who is ever with the Father —  
He has revealed him.

*The Preparation*

- 19 WHEN THE RELIGIOUS AUTHORITIES IN JERUSALEM SENT SOME Priests  
and Levites to ask John — ‘Who are you?’, he told them clearly  
and simply: ‘I am not the Christ.’
- 21 ‘What then?’ they asked. ‘Are you Elijah?’  
‘No,’ he said, ‘I am not.’  
‘Are you “the prophet”?’ He answered, ‘No.’
- 22 ‘Who then are you?’ they continued; ‘tell us so that we have an  
answer to give to those who have sent us. What do you say about  
yourself?’
- 23 ‘I,’ he answered, ‘am —  
“The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness — ‘make  
a straight road for the Lord’”,  
as the prophet Isaiah said.’
- 24 These men had been sent from the Pharisees; and their next  
question was: ‘Why then do you baptize, if you are not the Christ  
or Elijah or “the prophet”?’ John’s answer was — ‘I baptize with  
27 water, but among you stands one whom you do not know; he is



coming after me, yet I am not worthy even to unfasten his sandal.' This happened at Bethany, across the Jordan, where John was baptizing. 28

The next day John saw Jesus coming towards him, and exclaimed: 'Here is the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world! I was taking about him when I said "After me there is coming a man who ranks ahead of me, because before I was born he already was." I did not know who he was, but I have come baptizing with water to make him known to Israel.' John also said: 32

'I saw the Spirit come down from heaven like a dove and rest on him. I myself did not know him, but he who sent me to baptize with water, he said to me "He on whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him — he it is who baptizes with the Holy Spirit." This I have seen myself, and I have declared my belief that he is the Son of God.' 34

The next day, when John was standing with two of his disciples, he looked at Jesus as he passed and exclaimed: 'There is the Lamb of God!' The two disciples heard him say this, and followed Jesus. But Jesus turned round, and saw them following. 'What are you looking for?' he asked. 'Rabbi,' they answered (or, as we should say, "teacher"), 'where are you staying?' 35 36 37 38

'Come, and you will see,' he replied. So they went, and saw where he was staying, and spent that day with him. 39

It was then about four in the afternoon. One of the two, who heard what John said and followed Jesus, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. He first found his own brother Simon, and said to him: 'We have found the Messiah!' (a word which means "Christ," or "Consecrated".) Then he brought him to Jesus. Looking straight at him, Jesus said: 'You are Simon, the son of John; you will be called Cephas' (which means "Peter," or "Rock"). The following day Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. He found Philip, and said to him: 'Follow me.' Philip was from Bethsaida, the same town as Andrew and Peter. He found Nathanael and said to him: 'We have found him of whom Moses wrote in the Law, and of whom the prophets also wrote — Jesus of Nazareth, Joseph's son!' 40 41 42 43 44 45

- 46 'Can anything good come out of Nazareth?' asked Nathanael.  
 47 'Come and see,' replied Philip. When Jesus saw Nathanael coming towards him, he said: 'Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is no deceit!'  
 48 'How do you know me?' asked Nathanael. 'Even before Philip called you,' replied Jesus, 'when you were under the fig tree, I saw you.'  
 49 'Rabbi,' Nathanael exclaimed, 'you are the Son of God, you are king of Israel!'  
 50 'Do you believe in me,' asked Jesus, 'because I told you that I saw you under the fig tree? You will see greater things than those! In truth I tell you,' he added, 'you will all see heaven open, and "the angels of God ascending and descending" on the Son of Man.'

*The Work in Judaea, Galilee and Samaria*

- 2 TWO DAYS AFTER THIS THERE WAS A WEDDING AT CANA IN Galilee, and  
 2 Jesus' mother was there. Jesus himself, too, with his disciples,  
 3 was invited to the wedding. And, when the wine ran short, his mother said to him: 'They have no wine left.'  
 4 'What do you want with me?' answered Jesus. 'My time has  
 5 not come yet.' His mother said to the servants: 'Do whatever he  
 6 tells you.' There were standing there six stone water-jars, in accordance with the Jewish rule of "purification," each holding twenty or thirty gallons.  
 7 Jesus said to the servants: 'Fill the water-jars with water.' And,  
 8 when they had filled them to the brim, he added: 'Now take some out, and carry it to the Master of the feast.' The servants did so.  
 9 And, when the Master of the feast had tasted the water which had now become wine, not knowing where it had come from —  
 10 although the servants who had taken out the water knew — He called the groom and said to him: 'Everyone puts good wine on the table first, and inferior wine afterwards, when his guests have drunk freely; but you have kept back the good wine till now!' This,  
 11 the first sign of his mission, Jesus gave at Cana in Galilee, and by it revealed his glory; and his disciples believed in him.

After this, Jesus went down to Capernaum — he, his mother, his brothers, and his disciples; but they stayed there only a few days. 12

Then, as the Jewish Passover was near, Jesus went up to Jerusalem. In the Temple Courts he found people who were selling bullocks, sheep, and pigeons, and the money changers at their counters. So he made a whip of cords, and drove them all out of the Temple Courts, and the sheep and bullocks as well; he scattered the money of the money changers, and overturned their tables, and said to the pigeon-dealers: 'Take these things away. Do not turn my Father's house into a market house.' His disciples remembered that scripture said — "Passion for your house will consume me." 13 14 15 16 17

Then some of the religious authorities asked Jesus: 'What sign are you going to show us, since you act in this way?' 18

'Destroy this temple,' was his answer, 'and I will raise it in three days.' 19

'This Temple,' the authorities replied, 'has been forty-six years in building, and are you going to "raise it in three days"?' But Jesus was speaking of his body as a temple. Afterwards, when he had risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this; and they believed the passage of scripture, and the words which Jesus had spoken. 20 21 22

While Jesus was in Jerusalem, during the Passover Festival, many came to trust in him, when they saw the signs of his mission that he was giving. But Jesus did not put himself in their power because he knew what was in their hearts. He did not need anyone to tell him about people because he could read what was in them.. 23 24 25

Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, who was a leading man among his people. This man came to Jesus by night, and said to him: 'Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God; 3 2

for no one could give such signs as you are giving, unless God were with him.'

3 'In truth I tell you,' exclaimed Jesus, 'unless a person is reborn, they cannot see the kingdom of God.'

4 'How can a person,' asked Nicodemus, 'be born when they are old? Can they be born a second time?'

5 'In truth I tell you,' answered Jesus, 'unless a person owes their birth to water and Spirit, they cannot enter the kingdom of God.

6 All that owes its birth to human nature is human, and all that

7 owes its birth to the Spirit is spiritual. Do not wonder at my telling

8 you that you all need to be reborn. The wind blows wherever it

wants, and you can hear the sound it makes, but you do not know where it comes from, or where it goes; it is the same with everyone who owes his birth to the Spirit.'

9 'How can that be?' asked Nicodemus. 'What! You a teacher of

10 Israel,' exclaimed Jesus, 'and yet do not understand this! In truth

I tell you that we speak of what we know, and state what we have

12 seen; and yet you do not accept our statements. If, when I tell

you earthly things, you do not believe me, how will you believe

13 me when I tell you of heavenly things? No one has ascended to

heaven, except him who descended from heaven — the Son of

14 Man himself. And, as Moses lifted up the snake in the desert, so

15 must the Son of Man be lifted up; so that everyone who believes

in him may have eternal life.'

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only Son, so that

everyone who believes in him may not be lost, but have eternal

17 life. For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the

18 world, but so that the world might be saved through him. The

person who believes in him escapes condemnation, while the per-

19 son who does not believe in him is already condemned, because

they have not believed in the only Son of God. The ground of

their condemnation is this, that though the light has come into the

20 world, people preferred the darkness to the light, because their

actions were wicked. For the person who lives an evil life hates

21 the light, and will not come to it, fearing that their actions will be

exposed; but the person who lives by the truth comes into the

light, so it can be clearly seen that God is in all they do.

After this, Jesus went with his disciples into the country parts of 22  
Judea; and there he stayed with them, and baptized. John, also, 23  
was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because there were many  
streams there; and people were constantly coming and being bap-  
tized. (For John had not yet been imprisoned). Now a discus- 24  
sion arose between some of John's disciples and a fellow Jew on 25  
the subject of "purification;" and the disciples came to John and 26  
said: 'Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side of the  
Jordan, and to whom you have yourself borne testimony — he,  
also, is baptizing, and everybody is going to him.' John's answer 27  
was — 'A person can gain nothing but what is given them from 28  
heaven. You are yourselves witnesses that I said "I am not the 29  
Christ," but "I have been sent before him as a messenger." It is  
the groom who has the bride; but the groom's friend, who stands  
by and listens to him, is filled with joy when he hears the groom's  
voice. This joy I have felt to the full. He must become greater, and 30  
I less.'

He who comes from above is above all others; but a child of 31  
earth is earthly, and his teaching is earthly, too. He who comes  
from heaven is above all others. He states what he has seen and 32  
what he heard, and yet no one accepts his statement. They who 33  
did accept his statement confirm the fact that God is true. For he 34  
whom God sent as his messenger gives us God's own teaching, for  
God does not limit the gift of the Spirit. The Father loves his Son, 35  
and has put everything in his hands. The person who believes in 36  
the Son has eternal life, while a person who rejects the Son will  
not even see that life, but remains under "God's displeasure."

Now, when the Master heard that the Pharisees had been told 4  
that he was making and baptizing more disciples than John 4  
(Though it was not Jesus himself, but his disciples, who 2  
baptized), he left Judea, and set out again for Galilee. He had to 3  
pass through Samaria, and, on his way, he came to a Samaritan 3  
town called Shechem, near the plot of land that Jacob gave to his 3  
son Joseph. Jacob's Spring was there, and Jesus, being tired after 6  
his journey, sat down beside the spring, just as he was. It was 6  
then about midday. A woman of Samaria came to draw water; 7  
and Jesus said to her — 'Give me some to drink,' For his 8

- 9 disciples had gone into the town to buy food. 'How is it,'  
replied the Samaritan woman, 'that you who are a Jew ask for  
water from a Samaritan woman like me?' (For Jews do not  
10 associate with Samaritans). 'If you knew of the gift of God,'  
replied Jesus, 'and who it is that is saying to you "Give me some  
water," you would have asked him, and he would have given  
you "living water".'
- 11 'You have no bucket, Sir, and the well is deep,' she said; 'where  
12 did you get that "living water?" Surely you are not greater than  
our ancestor Jacob who gave us the well, and used to drink from  
it himself, and his sons, and his cattle!'
- 13 'All who drink of this water,' replied Jesus, 'will be thirsty  
14 again; but whoever once drinks of the water that I will give him  
will never thirst any more; but the water that I will give him will  
become a spring welling up within him — a source of eternal  
life.'
- 15 'Give me this water, Sir,' said the woman, 'so that I may not be  
thirsty, nor have to come all the way here to draw water.'
- 16 'Go and call your husband,' said Jesus, 'and then come back.'
- 17 'I have no husband,' answered the woman. 'You are right in  
18 saying "I have no husband,"' replied Jesus, 'For you have had  
five husbands, and the man with whom you are now living is not  
your husband; in saying that, you have spoken the truth.'
- 19 'I see, Sir, that you are a prophet!' exclaimed the woman. 'It  
20 was on this mountain that our ancestors worshiped; and yet you  
Jews say that the proper place for worship is in Jerusalem.'
- 21 'Believe me,' replied Jesus, 'a time is coming when it will be  
neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem that you will worship  
22 the Father. You Samaritans do not know what you worship; we  
know what we worship, for salvation comes from the Jews. But  
23 a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the true wor-  
shippers will worship the Father spiritually and truly; for such are  
24 the worshippers that the Father desires. God is Spirit; and those  
who worship him must worship spiritually and truly.'
- 25 'I know,' answered the woman, 'that the Messiah, who is  
called the Christ, is coming; when once he has come, he will tell  
us everything.'
- 26 'I am he,' Jesus said to her, 'I who am speaking to you.' At  
27 this moment his disciples came up, and were surprised to find  
him talking with a woman; but none of them asked "What do

you want?" or "Why are you talking with her?" So the woman, 28  
leaving her pitcher, went back to the town, and said to the people:  
'Come and see someone who has told me everything that I have 29  
done. Can he be the Christ?' And the people left the town and 30  
went to see Jesus.

Meanwhile the disciples kept saying to him: 'Take something 31  
to eat, Rabbi.'

'I have food to eat,' he answered, 'of which you know nothing.' 32

'Can anyone have brought him anything to eat?' the disciples 33  
said to one another. 'My food,' replied Jesus, 'is to do the will of 34  
him who sent me, and to complete his work. Don't you say that 35  
it still wants four months to harvest? Why, look up, and see how  
white the fields are for harvest! Already the reaper is receiving 36  
wages and gathering in sheaves for eternal life, so that sower and  
reaper rejoice together. For here the proverb holds good — "One 37  
sows, another reaps." I have sent you to reap that on which you 38  
have spent no labour; others have laboured, and you have reaped  
the results of their labour.'

Many from that town came to believe in Jesus — Samaritans 39  
though they were — because the woman had said: "He has told  
me everything that I have done." And, when these Samaritans 40  
had come to Jesus, they begged him to stay with them, and he  
stayed there two days. But far more came to believe in him be- 41  
cause of what he said himself, and they said to the woman: 'It is 42  
no longer because of what you say that we believe in him, for we  
have heard him ourselves and know that he really is the Saviour  
of the world.'

After these two days Jesus went on to Galilee; for he himself de- 43  
clared that "a prophet is not honoured in his own country." When 44  
he entered Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him, for they had seen  
all that he did at Jerusalem during the Festival, at which they  
also had been present. So Jesus came again to Cana in Galilee, 46  
where he had turned the water into wine. Now there was one of  
the king's officers whose son was lying ill at Capernaum. When 47  
this man heard that Jesus had returned from Judaea to Galilee, he  
went to him, and begged him to come down and cure his son; for

48 he was at the point of death. Jesus answered: 'Unless you all see signs and wonders, you will not believe.'

49 'Sir,' said the officer, 'come down before my child dies.' And  
50 Jesus answered: 'Go, your son is living.' The man believed what  
51 Jesus said to him, and went; and, while he was on his way down,  
his servants met him, and told him that his child was living. So  
52 he asked them at what time the boy began to get better. 'It was  
yesterday, about one o'clock,' they said, 'that the fever left him.'  
53 By this the father knew that it was at the very time when Jesus  
had said to him "Your son is living"; and he himself, with all his  
54 household, believed in Jesus. This was the second occasion on  
which Jesus gave a sign of his mission on coming from Judaea to  
Galilee.

5 Sometime after this there was a Jewish Festival; and Jesus went  
2 up to Jerusalem. There is in Jerusalem, near the sheep-gate, a bath  
with five colonnades round it. It is called in Hebrew "Bethesda."

3 In these colonnades a large number of sick people were lying  
5 — blind, lame, and crippled. One man who was there had been  
6 crippled for thirty-eight years. Jesus saw the man lying there,  
and, finding that he had been in this state a long time, said to  
him: 'Do you wish to be cured?'

7 'I have no one, Sir,' the sick man answered, 'to put me into  
the bath when there is a troubling of the water, and, while I am  
getting to it, someone else steps down before me.'

8 'Stand up,' said Jesus, 'take up your mat, and walk.' The man  
9 was cured immediately, and took up his mat and began walking.  
10 Now it was the Sabbath. So the religious authorities said to the  
man who had been cured: 'This is the Sabbath; you must not carry  
your mat.'

11 'The man who cured me,' he answered, 'said to me "Take up  
your mat and walk."'

12 'Who was it,' they asked, 'that said to you "Take up your mat  
13 and walk"?' But the man who had been restored did not know  
who it was; for Jesus had moved away, because there was a crowd  
14 there. Afterwards Jesus found the man in the Temple Courts, and  
said to him: 'You are cured now; do not sin again, or something  
worse may happen to you.'



The man went away, and told the authorities that it was Jesus who had cured him. And that was why they began to persecute Jesus — because he did things of this kind on the Sabbath. But Jesus replied: 'My Father works to this very hour, and I work also.' This made the authorities all the more eager to kill him, because not only was he doing away with the Sabbath, but he actually called God his own Father — putting himself on an equality with God. So Jesus made this further reply: 'In truth I tell you, the Son can do nothing of himself; he does only what he sees the Father doing; whatever the Father does, the Son does also. For the Father loves his Son, and shows him everything that he is doing; and he will show him still greater things — so that you will be filled with wonder. For, just as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, so also the Son gives life to whom he pleases. The Father himself does not judge any one, but has "entrusted the work of judging entirely to his Son," So that everyone may honour the Son, just as they honour the Father. The person who does not honour the Son fails to honour the Father who sent him. In truth I tell you that the person who listens to my message and believes him who sent me, has eternal life, and does not come under condemnation, but has already passed out of death into life. In truth I tell you that a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the dead will listen to the voice of the Son of God, and when those who listen will live. For, just as the Father has inherent life within him, so also he has granted to the Son to have inherent life within him; and, because he is Son of Man, he has also given him authority to act as judge. Do not wonder at this; for the time is coming when all who are in their graves will hear his voice, and will come out — those who have done good rising to life, and those who have lived evil lives rising for condemnation. I can do nothing of myself; I judge as I am taught; and the judgment that I give is just, because my aim is not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me.

If I bear testimony to myself, my testimony is not trustworthy; it is another who bears testimony to me, and I know that the testimony which he bears to me is trustworthy. You have yourselves sent to John, and he has testified to the truth. But the testimony which I receive is not from people; I am saying this for your salvation. He was the "Lamp that was burning" and shining, and you were ready to rejoice, for a time, in his light. But the testimony which I have is of greater weight than John's; for the work that

the Father has given me to carry out — the work that I am doing — is in itself proof that the Father has sent me as his messenger.

37 The Father who has sent me has himself borne testimony to me.  
38 You have neither listened to his voice, not seen his form; and you have not taken his message home to your hearts, because you do  
39 not believe him whom he sent as his messenger. You search the scriptures, because you think that you find in them immortal life;  
40 and, though it is those scriptures that bear testimony to me, you refuse to come to me to have life.

41 I do not receive honour from people, but I know this of you,  
42 that you have not the love of God in your hearts. I have come in my Father's name, and you do not receive me; if another comes  
44 in his own name, you will receive him. How can you believe in me, when you receive honour from one another and do not desire  
45 the honour which comes from the only God? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father; your accuser is Moses, on whom  
46 you have been resting your hopes. For, had you believed Moses, you would have believed me, for it was of me that Moses wrote;  
47 but, if you do not believe his writings, how will you believe my teaching?'

6 After this, Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee — otherwise called  
2 the Lake of Tiberias. A great crowd of people, however, followed him, because they saw the signs of his mission in his work among  
3 those who were sick. Jesus went up the hill, and sat down there  
4 with his disciples. It was near the time of the Jewish Festival of the Passover. Looking up, and noticing that a great crowd was  
5 coming towards him, Jesus said to Philip: 'Where are we to buy  
6 bread for these people to eat?' He said this to test him, for he  
7 himself knew what he meant to do. 'Even if we spent a years' wages on bread,' answered Philip, 'it would not be enough for  
each of them to have a little.'

8 'There is a boy here,' said Andrew, another of his disciples,  
9 Simon Peter's brother, 'Who has five barley loaves and two fish; but what is that for so many?'

10 'Make the people sit down,' said Jesus. It was a grassy spot; so the people, who numbered about five thousand, sat down, and  
11 then Jesus took the loaves, and, after saying the thanksgiving,

distributed them to those who were sitting down; and the same  
with the fish, giving the people as much as they wanted. When 12  
they were satisfied, Jesus said to his disciples: 'Collect the broken 13  
pieces that are left, so that nothing may be wasted.' The disciples  
did so, and filled twelve baskets with the pieces of the five barley  
loaves, which were left after all had eaten.

When the people saw the signs which Jesus gave, they said: 14  
'This is certainly "the prophet who was to come" into the world.'  
But Jesus, having discovered that they were intending to come 15  
and carry him off to make him king, went again up the hill, quite  
alone.

When evening fell, his disciples went down to the sea, and, 16  
getting into a boat, began to cross to Capernaum. By this time 17  
darkness had set in, and Jesus had not yet come back to them;  
the sea, too, was getting rough, for a strong wind was blowing. 18  
When they had rowed three or four miles, they caught sight of 19  
him walking on the water and approaching the boat, and they  
were frightened. But Jesus said to them: 'It is I; do not be afraid!'  
And after this they were glad to take him into the boat; and the 20  
boat at once arrived off the shore, for which they had been mak- 21  
ing.

The people who remained on the further side of the sea had seen 22  
that only one boat had been there, and that Jesus had not gone  
into it with his disciples, but that they had left without him. Some 23  
boats, however, had come from Tiberias, from near the spot where  
they had eaten the bread after the Master had said the thanksgiv-  
ing. So, on the next day, when the people saw that Jesus was not 24  
there, or his disciples either, they themselves got into the boats,  
and went to Capernaum to look for him. And, when they found 25  
him on the other side of the sea, they said: 'When did you get  
here, Rabbi?'

'In truth I tell you,' answered Jesus, 'it is not because of the 26  
signs which you saw that you are looking for me, but because you  
had the bread to eat and were satisfied. Work, not for the food that 27  
perishes, but for the food that lasts for eternal life, which the Son  
of Man will give you; for on him the Father — God himself — has  
set the seal of his approval.'

- 28 'How,' they asked, 'are we to do the work that God wants us to do?'
- 29 'The work that God wants you to do,' answered Jesus, 'is to believe in him whom God sent as his messenger.'
- 30 'What sign, then,' they asked, 'are you giving, which we may see, and so believe you? What is the work that you are doing? Our ancestors had the manna to eat in the desert; as scripture says — "He gave them bread from heaven to eat."'
- 32 'In truth I tell you,' replied Jesus, 'Moses did not give you the bread from heaven, but my Father does give you the true bread from heaven; for the bread that God gives is that which comes down from heaven, and gives life to the world.'
- 34 'Master,' they exclaimed, 'give us that bread always!'
- 35 'I am the life-giving bread,' Jesus said to them; 'whoever comes to me will never be hungry, and whoever believes in me will never thirst again. But, as I have said already, you have seen me, and yet you do not believe in me. All those whom the Father gives me will come to me; and no one who comes to me will I ever turn away. For I have come down from heaven, to do, not my own will, but the will of him who sent me; and his will is this — that I should not lose one of all those whom he has given me, but should raise them up at the Last day. For it is the will of my Father that everyone who sees the Son, and believes in him, should have immortal life; and I myself will raise him up at the Last day.'
- 41 The people began murmuring against Jesus for saying — "I am the bread which came down from heaven." 'Is not this Jesus, Joseph's son,' they asked, 'whose father and mother we know? How is it that he now says that he has come down from heaven?'
- 43 'Do not murmur among yourselves,' said Jesus in reply. 'No one can come to me, unless the Father who sent me draws him to me; and I will raise him up at the Last day. It is said in the prophets — "And they will all be taught by God." Everyone who is taught by the Father and learns from him comes to me. Not that anyone has seen the Father, except him who is from God — he has seen the Father. In truth I tell you, the person who believes in me has eternal life. I am the life-giving bread. Your ancestors ate the manna in the desert, and yet died. The bread that comes down from heaven is such that whoever eats of it will never die. I am the living bread that has come down from heaven. If anyone

eats of this bread, they will live for ever; and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.'

They began disputing with one another: 'How is it possible for this man to give us his flesh to eat?' 52

'In truth I tell you,' answered Jesus, 'unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and drink his blood, you have not life within you. Everyone who takes my flesh for their food, and drinks my blood, has eternal life; and I will raise them up at the Last day. For my flesh is true food, and my blood true drink. Everyone who takes my flesh for their food, and drinks my blood, remains united to me, and I to them. As the living Father sent me as his messenger, and as I live because the Father lives, so the person who takes me for their food will live because I live. That is the bread which has come down from heaven — not such as your ancestors ate, and yet died; the person who takes this bread for their food will live for ever.'

All this Jesus said in a synagogue, when he was teaching in Capernaum. On hearing it, many of his disciples said: 'This is harsh doctrine! Who can bear to listen to it?' But Jesus, aware that his disciples were murmuring about it, said to them: 'Is this a hindrance to you? What, then, if you should see the Son of Man ascending where he was before? It is the Spirit that gives life; human strength achieves nothing. In the teaching that I have been giving you there is Spirit and there is life. Yet there are some of you who do not believe in me.' For Jesus knew from the first who they were that did not believe in him, and who it was that would betray him; and he added: 'This is why I told you that no one can come to me, unless enabled by the Father.' After this many of his disciples drew back, and did not go about with him any longer. So Jesus said to the Twelve: 'Do you also wish to leave me?' But Simon Peter answered: 'Master, to whom would we go? Eternal life is in your teaching; and we have learned to believe and to know that you are the Holy One of God.'

'Didn't I myself choose you to be the Twelve?' replied Jesus; 'and yet, even of you, one is playing the "devil's" part.' He meant Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, who was about to betray him, though he was one of the Twelve. 70  
71

7 After this, Jesus went about in Galilee, for he would not do so in  
Judea, because the religious authorities (in Jerusalem) were eager  
2 to put him to death. When the Jewish Festival of Tabernacles was  
3 near, his brothers said to him: 'Leave this part of the country, and  
go into Judea, so that your disciples, as well as we, may see the  
4 work that you are doing. For no one does a thing privately, if they  
are seeking to be widely known. Since you do these things, you  
5 should show yourself publicly to the world.' For even his brothers  
did not believe in him.

6 'My time,' answered Jesus, 'is not come yet, but your time is  
7 always here. The world cannot hate you, but it does hate me,  
8 because I testify that its ways are evil. Go yourselves up to the  
Festival; I am not going to this Festival yet, because my time has  
9 not yet come.' After telling them this, he stayed on in Galilee.

10 But, when his brothers had gone up to the Festival, Jesus also  
11 went up — not publicly, but privately. The authorities were look-  
12 ing for him at the Festival and asking "Where is he?"; and there  
were many whispers about him among the people, some saying  
"He is a good man;" others: "No! He is leading the people astray."  
13 No one, however, spoke freely about him, because they were  
afraid of the authorities.

14 About the middle of the Festival week, Jesus went up into the  
15 Temple Courts, and began teaching. The authorities were aston-  
ished. 'How has this man got his learning,' they asked, 'when he  
16 has never studied?' So, in reply, Jesus said: 'My teaching is not my  
17 own; it is his who sent me. If anyone has the will to do God's will,  
they will find out whether my teaching is from God, or whether I  
18 speak on my own authority. The person who speaks on their own  
authority seeks honour for themselves; but the person who seeks  
the honour of him that sent him is sincere, and there is nothing  
19 false in him. Was not it Moses who gave you the Law? Yet not one  
of you obeys it! Why are you seeking to put me to death?'

20 'You must be possessed by a demon!' the people exclaimed.  
'Who is seeking to put you to death?'

21 'There was one thing I did,' replied Jesus, 'at which you are  
22 all still wondering. But that is why Moses has instituted circum-  
cision among you not, indeed, that it began with him, but with

our ancestors and that is why you circumcise even on a Sabbath. When a man receives circumcision on a Sabbath to prevent the Law of Moses from being broken, how can you be angry with me for making a man sound and well on a Sabbath? Do not judge by appearances; judge justly.' At this some of the people of Jerusalem exclaimed: 'Is not this the man who they are seeking to put to death? Yet here he is, speaking out boldly, and they say nothing to him! Is it possible that our leading men have really discovered that he is the Christ? Yet we know where this man is from; but, when the Christ comes, no one will be able to tell where he is from.' Therefore, Jesus, as he was teaching in the Temple Courts, raised his voice and said: 'Yes; you know me and you know where I am from. Yet I have not come on my own authority, but he who sent me may be trusted; and him you do not know. I do know him, for it is from him that I have come, and he sent me as his messenger.' So they sought to arrest him; but no one touched him, for his time was not come yet. Many of the people, however, believed in him. 'When the Christ comes,' they said, 'will he give more signs of his mission than this man has given?' The Pharisees heard the people whispering about him in this way, and so the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to arrest him; at which Jesus said: 'I will be with you but a little longer, and then I am going to him who sent me. You will look for me, and you will not find me; and you will not be able to come where I will be.'

'Where is this man going,' the people asked one another, 'that we would not find him? Will he go to our countrymen abroad, and teach foreigners? What does he mean by saying "You will look for me, and you will not find me; and you will not be able to come where I will be"?''

On the last and greatest day of the Festival, Jesus, who was standing by, exclaimed: 'If anyone thirsts, they should come to me, and drink. I tell you what I have myself seen in the presence of my Father; and you, in the same way, do what you have learned from your father.' (By this he meant the Spirit, which those who had believed in him were to receive; for the Spirit had not yet come, because Jesus had not yet been exalted.) Some of the people, when they heard these words, said: 'This is certainly

41 the Prophet!'; others said: 'the Christ!'; but some asked: 'What!  
 42 Does the Christ come from Galilee? Is not it said in scripture  
 that it is of the descendents of David, and from Bethlehem, the  
 43 village to which David belonged, that the Christ is to come?' So  
 there was a sharp division among the people because of Jesus.  
 44 Some of them wanted to arrest him, and yet no one touched  
 45 him. When the officers returned to the chief priests and  
 Pharisees, they were asked: 'Why have you not brought him?'  
 46 'No one ever spoke as he speaks!' they answered. 'What! Have  
 48 you been led astray too?' the Pharisees replied. 'Have any of our  
 49 leading men believed in him, or any of the Pharisees? As for these  
 50 people who do not know the Law — they are cursed! But one of  
 their number, Nicodemus, who before this had been to see Jesus,  
 51 said to them: 'Does our Law pass judgment on a person without  
 first giving them a hearing, and finding out what they have been  
 doing?'  
 52 'Are you also from Galilee?' they retorted. 'Search, and you will  
 find that no prophet is to arise in Galilee!'

53 And everyone went home except Jesus, who went to the Mount  
 8 of Olives<sup>11</sup>. But he went again into the Temple Courts early in  
 the morning, and all the people came to him; and he sat down  
 3 and taught them. Presently, however, the Teachers of the Law and  
 the Pharisees brought a woman who had been caught in adultery,  
 4 and placed her in the middle of the Court, and said to Jesus:  
 'Teacher, this woman was found in the act of adultery. Now  
 Moses, in the Law, commanded us to stone such women to death;  
 what do you say?'  
 6 They said this to test him, in order to have a charge to bring  
 against him. But Jesus stooped down, and wrote on the ground  
 7 with his finger. However, as they continued asking him, he raised  
 himself, and said:  
 'Let the person among you who has never done wrong throw  
 the first stone at her.'

---

<sup>11</sup> This passage is inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source, and found either after John 7:53 or after Luke 21.38 or elsewhere.



And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. When they heard that, they went out one by one, beginning with the eldest; and Jesus was left alone with the woman in the middle of the Court. Raising himself, Jesus said to her:  
‘Woman, where are they? Did no one condemn you?’  
‘No one, Sir,’ she answered.  
‘Neither do I condemn you,’ said Jesus ‘go, and do not sin again.’

Jesus again addressed the people. ‘I am the light of the world,’ he said. ‘The person who follows me will not walk in darkness, but will have the light of life.’

‘You are bearing testimony to yourself!’ exclaimed the Pharisees, ‘your testimony is not trustworthy.’

‘Even if I bear testimony to myself,’ answered Jesus, ‘my testimony is trustworthy; for I know where I came from, and where I am going; but you do not know where I come from, nor where I am going. You judge by appearances; I judge no one. Yet, even if I were to judge, my judgment would be trustworthy; because I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. Why, in your own Law it is said that the testimony of two persons is trustworthy. I, who bear testimony to myself, am one, and the Father who sent me also bears testimony to me.’ ‘Where is your father, then?’ they asked. ‘You know neither me nor my Father,’ replied Jesus. ‘If you had known me, you would have also known my Father.’ These statements Jesus made in the Treasury, while teaching in the Temple Courts. Yet no one arrested him, for his time had not then come.

Jesus again spoke to the people. ‘I am going away,’ he said, ‘and you will look for me, but you will die in your sin; you cannot come where I am going.’

‘Is he going to kill himself,’ the people exclaimed, ‘that he says — “You cannot go where I am going”?’ ‘You,’ added Jesus, ‘are from below, I am from above; you are of this present world, I am not; and so I told you that you would die in your sins, for, unless you believe that I am what I am, you will die in your sins.’

25 'Who are you?' they asked. 'Why ask exactly what I have been  
26 telling you?' said Jesus. 'I have still much that concerns you to  
speak of and to pass judgment on; yet he who sent me may be  
trusted, and I speak to the world only of the things which I have  
27 heard from him.' They did not understand that he meant the Fa-  
28 ther. So Jesus added: 'When you have lifted up the Son of Man,  
then you will understand that I am what I am, and that I do noth-  
ing of myself, but that I say just what the Father has taught me.  
29 Moreover, he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone;  
30 for I always do what pleases him.' While he was speaking in this  
31 way, many came to believe in him. So Jesus went on to say to  
those who had believed him: 'If you remain constant to my mes-  
32 sage, you are truly my disciples; and you find out the truth, and  
the truth will set you free.'

33 'We are descendants of Abraham,' was their answer, 'and have  
never yet been in slavery to anyone. What do you mean by saying  
34 "you will be set free"?' 'In truth I tell you,' replied Jesus, 'every-  
35 one who sins is a slave to sin. And a slave does not remain in the  
home always; but a son remains always. If, then, the Son sets you  
36 free, you will be free indeed! I know that you are descendants  
of Abraham; yet you are seeking to put me to death, because my  
37 message finds no place in your hearts. I tell you what I have my-  
self seen in the presence of my Father; and you, in the same way,  
38 do what you have learned from your father.'

39 'Our father is Abraham,' was their answer. 'If you are Abra-  
40 ham's children,' replied Jesus, 'do what Abraham did. But, as it  
is, you are seeking to put me to death — a man who has told you  
the truth as he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that  
41 way. You are doing what your own father does.'

'We are not bastards,' they said, 'we have one Father — God  
himself.'

42 'If God were your Father,' Jesus replied, 'you would have loved  
me, for I came out from God, and now am here; and I have not  
43 come of myself, but he sent me as his messenger. How is it that  
you do not understand what I say? It is because you cannot bear to  
44 listen to my message. As for you, you are children of your Father  
the devil, and you are determined to do what your father loves  
to do. He was a murderer from the first, and did not stand by the  
truth, because there is no truth in him. Whenever he lies, he does  
what is natural to him; because he is a liar, and the father of lying.

But, as for me, it is because I speak the truth to you that you do not believe me. Which of you can convict me of sin? Why then don't you believe me, if I am speaking truth? The person who comes from God listens to God's teaching; the reason why you do not listen is because you do not come from God.'

'Aren't we right, after all,' replied the people, 'in saying that you are a Samaritan, and are possessed by a demon?'

'I am not possessed by a demon,' Jesus answered, 'but I am honouring my Father; and yet you dishonour me. Not that I am seeking honour for myself; there is one who is seeking my honour, and he decides. In truth I tell you, if anyone lays my message to heart, he will never really die.'

'Now we are sure that you are possessed by a demon,' the people replied. 'Abraham died, and so did the prophets; and yet you say "If anyone lays my message to heart, they will never know death." Are you greater than our ancestor Abraham, who died? And the prophets died too. Whom do you make yourself out to be?'

'If I do honour to myself,' answered Jesus, 'such honour counts for nothing. It is my Father who does me honour — and you say that he is your God; and yet you have not learned to know him; but I know him; and, if I were to say that I do not know him, I should be a liar like you; but I do know him, and I lay his message to heart. Your ancestor Abraham rejoiced that he would see my day; and he did see it, and was glad.'

'You are not fifty years old yet,' the people exclaimed, 'and have you seen Abraham?'

'In truth I tell you,' replied Jesus, 'before Abraham existed I was.' At this they took up stones to throw at him; but Jesus hid himself, and left the Temple Courts.

As Jesus passed by, he saw a man who had been blind from his birth. 'Rabbi,' asked his disciples, 'who was it that sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?'

'Neither the man nor the parents,' replied Jesus; 'but he was born blind so that the work of God should be made plain in him. We must do the work of him who sent me, while it is day; night is coming, when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I

6 am the light of the world.' Saying this, Jesus spat on the ground,  
7 made clay with the saliva, and put it on the man's eyes. 'Go,' he  
said, 'and wash your eyes in the Bath of Siloam' (a word which  
means "messenger"). So the man went and washed his eyes, and  
8 returned able to see. His neighbours, and those who had formerly  
known him by sight as a beggar, exclaimed: 'Is not this the man  
who used to sit and beg?'

9 'Yes,' some said, 'it is'; while others said: 'No, but he is like  
him.' The man himself said: 'I am he.'

10 'How did you get your sight, then?' they asked. 'The man  
11 whom they call Jesus,' he answered, 'made clay, and anointed my  
eyes, and said to me "Go to Siloam and wash your eyes." So I went  
and washed my eyes, and gained my sight.'

12 'Where is he?' they asked. I do not know,' he answered. They  
13 took the man, who had been blind, to the Pharisees. Now it was  
15 a Sabbath when Jesus made the clay and gave him his sight. So  
the Pharisees also questioned the man as to how he had gained  
his sight. 'He put clay on my eyes,' he answered, 'and I washed  
them, and I can see.'

16 'The man cannot be from God,' said some of the Pharisees, 'for  
he does not keep the Sabbath.'

'How is it possible,' retorted others, 'for a bad man to give signs  
17 like this?' So there was a difference of opinion among them, and  
they again questioned the man; 'What do you yourself say about  
18 him, for it is to you that he has given sight?' The religious author-  
ities, however, refused to believe that he had been blind and had  
gained his sight, until they had called his parents and questioned  
19 them. 'Is this your son,' they asked, 'who you say was born blind?  
If so, how is it that he can see now?'

20 'We know that this is our son,' answered the parents, 'and that  
21 he was born blind; but how it is that he can see now we do not  
know; nor do we know who it was that gave him his sight. Ask  
22 him — he is old enough — he will tell you about himself.' His  
parents spoke in this way because they were afraid of the author-  
ities; for the authorities had already agreed that, if anyone should  
acknowledge Jesus as the Christ, he should be expelled from their  
23 synagogues. This was why his parents said "He is old enough;  
24 ask him." So the authorities again called the man who had been  
blind, and said to him: 'Give God the praise; we know that this is  
a bad man.'

'I know nothing about his being a bad man,' he replied; 'one 25  
thing I do know, that although I was blind, now I can see.'

'What did he do to you?' they asked. 'How did he give you 26  
your sight?'

'I told you just now,' he answered, 'and you did not listen. Why 27  
do you want to hear it again? Surely you also do not want to be-  
come his disciples?'

'You are his disciple,' they retorted scornfully; 'but we are dis- 28  
ciples of Moses. We know that God spoke to Moses; but, as for 29  
this man, we do not know where he comes from.'

'Well,' the man replied, 'this is very strange; you do not know 30  
where he comes from, and yet he has given me my sight! We 31  
know that God never listens to bad people, but, when a person is  
god-fearing and does God's will, God listens to them. Since the 32  
world began, such a thing was never heard of as anyone's giving  
sight to a person born blind. If this man had not been from God, 33  
he could not have done anything at all.'

'You,' they retorted, 'were born totally depraved; and are you 34  
trying to teach us?' So they expelled him. Jesus heard of their 35  
having put him out; and, when he had found the man, he asked:  
'Do you believe in the Son of Man?'

'Tell me who he is, Sir,' he replied, 'so that I may believe in 36  
him.'

'Not only have you seen him,' said Jesus; 'but it is he who is 37  
now speaking to you.'

'Then, Sir, I do believe,' said the man, bowing to the ground 38  
before him; and Jesus added: 'It was to put people to the test that 39  
I came into this world, in order that those that cannot see should  
see, and that those that can see should become blind.' Hearing 40  
this, some of the Pharisees who were with him said: 'Then are we  
blind too?'

'If you had been blind,' replied Jesus, 'you would have had no 41  
sin to answer for; but, as it is, you say "We can see," and so your 10  
sin remains. In truth I tell you, whoever does not go into the  
sheepfold through the door, but climbs up at some other place, 2  
that person is a thief and a robber; but the person who goes in  
through the door is shepherd to the sheep. For him the watchman 3  
opens the door; and the sheep listen to his voice; and he calls his  
own sheep by name, and leads them out. When he has brought 4  
them all out, he walks in front of them, and his sheep follow him,

5 because they know his voice. They will not follow a stranger, but  
will run away from him; because they do not know a stranger's  
6 voice.' This was the allegory that Jesus told them, but they did  
7 not understand of what he was speaking. So he continued: 'In  
8 truth I tell you, I am the door for the sheep. All who came before  
me were thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not listen to them.  
9 I am the door; he who goes in through me will be safe, and he  
10 will go in and out and find pasture. The thief comes only to steal,  
to kill, and to destroy; I have come so that they may have life,  
11 and may have it in greater fullness. I am the good shepherd. The  
12 good shepherd lays down his life for his sheep. The hired man  
who is not a shepherd, and who does not own the sheep, when  
he sees a wolf coming, leaves them and runs away; then the wolf  
13 seizes them, and scatters the flock. He does this because he is only  
14 a hired man and does not care about the sheep. I am the good  
15 shepherd; and I know my sheep, and my sheep know me — Just  
as the Father knows me and I know the Father — and I lay down  
16 my life for the sheep. I have other sheep besides, which do not  
belong to this fold; I must lead them also, and they will listen to  
my voice; and they will become one flock under "one shepherd."  
17 This is why the Father loves me, because I lay down my life —  
18 to receive it again. No one took it from me, but I lay it down of  
myself. I have authority to lay it down, and I have authority to  
receive it again. This is the command which I received from my  
Father.'

19 In consequence of these words a difference of opinion again  
20 arose among the people. Many of them said: 'He is possessed  
21 by a demon and is mad; why do you listen to him?' Others said:  
'This is not the teaching of one who is possessed by a demon. Can  
a demon give sight to the blind?'

22 Soon after this the Festival of the Rededication was held at  
23 Jerusalem. It was winter; and Jesus was walking in the Temple  
24 Courts, in the Colonnade of Solomon, when the people  
gathered round him, and said: 'How long are you going to keep  
us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us so frankly.'

25 'I have told you so,' replied Jesus, 'and you do not believe me.  
The work that I am doing in my Father's name bears testimony to

me. But you do not believe me, because you are not of my flock. 26  
My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me; 27  
and I give them eternal life, and they will not be lost; nor will any- 28  
one snatch them out of my hands. What my Father has entrusted 29  
to me is more than all else; and no one can snatch anything out of  
the Father's hands. The Father and I are one.' 30

Some of the people again brought stones to throw at him; and 31  
seeing this, Jesus said: 'I have done before your eyes many good 32  
actions, inspired by the Father; for which of them would you stone  
me?'

'It is not for any good action that we would stone you,' they 33  
answered, 'but for blasphemy; and because you, who are only a  
man, make yourself out to be God.'

'Are there not,' replied Jesus, 'these words in your Law — "I 34  
said "You are gods""? If those to whom God's word were ad- 35  
dressed were said to be "gods" — and scripture cannot be set  
aside — Do you say of one whom the Father has consecrated and 36  
sent as his messenger to the world "You are blaspheming," be-  
cause I said "I am God's Son"? If I am not doing the work that my 37  
Father is doing, do not believe me; if I am doing it, even though 38  
you do not believe me, believe what that work shows; so that you  
may understand, and understand more and more clearly, that the  
Father is in union with me, and I with the Father.' The authorities 39  
again sought to arrest him; but he escaped their hands.

Then Jesus again crossed the Jordan to the place where John used 40  
to baptize at first, and stayed there some time, during which many  
people came to see him. 'John gave no sign of his mission,' they 41  
said; 'but everything that he said about this man was true.' And 42  
many learned to believe in Jesus there.

Now a man named Lazarus, of Bethany, was lying ill; he be- 11  
longed to the same village as Mary and her sister Martha. This 2  
Mary, whose brother Lazarus was ill, was the Mary who anointed  
the Master with perfume, and wiped his feet with her hair. The  
sisters, therefore, sent this message to Jesus — "Master, your 3

4 friend is ill"; and, when Jesus heard it, he said: 'This illness is  
5 not to end in death, but is to redound to the honour of God, in  
6 order that the Son of God may be honoured through it.' Jesus  
7 loved Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. Yet, when he heard of  
8 the illness of Lazarus, he still stayed two days in the place where  
9 he was. Then, after that, he said to his disciples: 'Let us go to  
10 Judea again.'

11 'Rabbi,' they replied, 'the authorities there were but just now  
12 seeking to stone you; and are you going there again?'

13 'Are not there twelve hours in the day?' answered Jesus. 'If  
14 someone walks about in the daytime, they do not stumble, be-  
15 cause they can see the light of the sun; but, if they walk about at  
16 night, they stumble, because they have not the light.' And, when  
17 he had said this, he added: 'Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep;  
18 but I am going so that I may wake him.'

19 'If he has fallen asleep, Master, he will get well,' said the dis-  
20 ciples. But Jesus meant that he was dead; they, however, sup-  
21 posed that he was speaking of natural sleep. Then he said to them  
22 plainly: 'Lazarus is dead; and I am glad for your sakes that I was  
23 not there, so that you may learn to believe in me. But let us go to  
24 him.' At this, Thomas, who was called "The Twin," said to his fel-  
25 low disciples: 'Let us go too, so that we may die with him.' When  
26 Jesus reached the place, he found that Lazarus had been four  
27 days in the tomb already. Bethany being only about two miles  
28 from Jerusalem, a number of the people had come there to com-  
29 fort Martha and Mary because of brother's death. When Martha  
30 heard that Jesus was coming, she went to meet him; but Mary sat  
31 quietly at home. 'Master,' Martha said to Jesus, 'if you had been  
32 here, my brother would not have died. Even now, I know that  
33 God will grant you whatever you ask him.'

34 'Your brother will rise to life,' said Jesus. 'I know that he will,'  
35 replied Martha, 'in the resurrection at the Last day.'

36 'I am the resurrection and the life,' said Jesus. 'He who believes  
37 in me will live, though he die; and he who lives and believes in  
38 me will never die. Do you believe this?'

39 'Yes Master,' she answered; 'I have learned to believe that you  
40 are the Christ, the Son of God, "who was to come" into the world.'  
41 After saying this, Martha went and called her sister Mary, and  
42 whispered: 'The teacher is here, and is asking for you.' As soon  
43 as Mary heard that, she got up quickly, and went to meet him.



Jesus had not then come into the village, but was still at the place 30  
where Martha had met him. So the people, who were in the house 31  
with Mary, comforting her, when they saw her get up quickly and  
go out, followed her, thinking that she was going to the tomb to  
weep there. When Mary came where Jesus was and saw him, 32  
she threw herself at his feet. 'Master,' she exclaimed, 'if you had  
been here, my brother would not have died!' When Jesus saw her 33  
weeping, and the people who had come with her weeping also,  
he groaned deeply, and was greatly distressed. 'Where have you 34  
buried him?' he asked. 'Come and see, Master,' they answered.  
Jesus burst into tears. 'How he must have loved him!' the people 35  
exclaimed; but some of them said: 'Could not this man, who gave 36  
sight to the blind man, have also prevented Lazarus from dying?'  
Again groaning inwardly, Jesus came to the tomb. It was a cave, 38  
and a stone lay against the mouth of it. 'Move the stone away,' 39  
said Jesus. 'Master,' said Martha, the sister of the dead man, 'by  
this time the smell must be offensive, for this is the fourth day  
since his death.'

'Didn't I tell you,' replied Jesus, 'that, if you would believe in me, you should see the glory of God?' So they moved the stone away; and Jesus, with uplifted eyes, said:

'Father, I thank you that you have heard my prayer; I know 42  
that you always hear me; but I say this for the sake of the  
people standing near, so that they may believe that you has  
sent me as your messenger.'

Then, after saying this, Jesus called in a loud voice: 'Lazarus! 43  
Come out!' The dead man came out, wrapped hand and foot in 44  
a winding-sheet; his face, too, had been wrapped in a cloth. 'Set  
him free,' said Jesus, 'and let him go.'

In consequence of this, many of the people, who had come to 45  
visit Mary and had seen what Jesus did, learned to believe in him.  
Some of them, however, went to the Pharisees, and told them 46  
what he had done. The chief priests and the Pharisees called a 47  
meeting of the High Council, and said: 'What are we to do, now  
that this man is giving so many signs? If we allow him to continue 48  
as we are doing, everyone will believe in him; and the Romans

will come and will take from us both our city and our Nationality.’  
 49 One of them, however, Caiaphas, who was high priest that year,  
 50 said to them: ‘You are utterly mistaken. You do not consider that  
 it is better for you that one person should die for the people, rather  
 51 than the whole nation should be destroyed.’ Now he did not say  
 this of his own accord; but, as high priest that year, he prophesied  
 52 that Jesus was to die for the nation — And not for the nation only,  
 but also that he might unite in one body the children of God now  
 53 scattered far and wide. So from that day they plotted to put Jesus  
 to death.

54 In consequence of this, Jesus did not go about publicly among the  
 people any more, but left and went into the country bordering on  
 the wilderness, to a town called Ephraim, where he stayed with  
 55 his disciples. But the Jewish Festival of the Passover was near;  
 and many people had gone up from the country to Jerusalem, for  
 56 their “purification,” before the Festival began. So they looked for  
 Jesus there, and said to one another, as they stood in the Temple  
 Courts: ‘What do you think? Do you think he will come to the  
 57 Festival?’ The chief priests and the Pharisees had already issued  
 orders that, if anyone learned where Jesus was, he should give  
 information, so that they might arrest him.

### *The Last Days*

**12** SIX DAYS BEFORE THE PASSOVER JESUS CAME TO BETHANY, where  
 2 Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead, was living. There  
 a supper was given in honour at which Martha waited, while  
 3 Lazarus was one of those present at the table. So Mary took a  
 pound of choice spikenard perfume of great value, and anointed  
 the feet of Jesus with it, and then wiped them with her hair. The  
 4 whole house was filled with the scent of the perfume. One of  
 the disciples, Judas Iscariot, who was about to betray Jesus,  
 5 asked: ‘Why was not this perfume sold for a year’s wages, and  
 the money given to poor people?’ He said this, not because he  
 6 cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and, being in  
 7 charge of the purse, used to take what was put in it. ‘Leave her

alone,' said Jesus, 'so that she may keep it until the day when my body is being prepared for burial. The poor you always have with you, but you will not always have me.'

Now great numbers of people found out that Jesus was at Bethany; and they came there, not only because of him, but also to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. The chief priests, however, plotted to put Lazarus, as well as Jesus, to death, because it was owing to him that many of the people had left them, and were becoming believers in Jesus. On the following day great numbers of people who had come to the Festival, hearing that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem, took palm branches, and went out to meet him, shouting as they went: "'God save Him! Blessed is He who Comes in the name of the Lord' — The king of Israel!' Having found a young ass, Jesus seated himself on it, in accordance with the passage of scripture — "Fear not, people of Zion; Your king is coming to you, Sitting on the foal of an ass." His disciples did not understand all this at first; but, when Jesus had been exalted, then they remembered that these things had been said of him in scripture, and that they had done these things for him. Meanwhile the people who were with him, when he called Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead, were telling what they had seen. This, indeed, was why the crowd met him — because people had heard that he had given this sign of his mission. So the Pharisees said to one another: 'You see that you are gaining nothing! Why, all the world has run after him!'

Among those who were going up to worship at the Festival were some Greeks, who went to Philip of Bethsaida in Galilee, and said: 'Sir, we wish to see Jesus.' Philip went and told Andrew, and then together they went and told Jesus. This was his reply — "The time has come for the Son of Man to be exalted. In truth I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls into the ground and dies, it remains solitary; but, if it dies, it becomes fruitful. A person who loves their life loses it; while someone who hates their life in the present world will preserve it for eternal life. If someone is ready to serve me, let them follow me; and where I am, there my servant will be also. If a person is ready to serve me, my Father

27 will honour them. Now I am distressed at heart and what can  
I say? Father, bring me safe through this hour — yet it was for  
28 this reason that I came to this hour — Father, honour your own  
name.’ At this there came a voice from heaven, which said: ‘I have  
29 already honoured it, and I will honour it again.’ The crowd of  
bystanders, who heard the sound, said that it was thundering.  
Others said: ‘An angel has been speaking to him.’  
30 ‘It was not for my sake that the voice came,’ said Jesus, ‘but  
31 for yours. Now this world is on its trial. Now the Spirit that is  
32 ruling this world will be driven out; and I, when I am lifted up  
33 from the earth, will draw all people to myself.’ By these words  
34 he indicated what death he was destined to die. ‘We,’ replied the  
people, ‘have learned from the Law that the “Christ is to remain  
for ever”; how is it, then, that you say that the Son of Man must  
be “lifted up” Who is this “Son of Man”?’  
35 ‘Only a little while longer,’ answered Jesus, ‘will you have the  
light among you. Travel on while you have the light, so that dark-  
ness may not overtake you; he who travels in the darkness does  
36 not know where he is going. While you still have the light, be-  
lieve in the light, so that you may be “children of light.”’ After he  
37 had said this, Jesus went away, and hid himself from them. But,  
though Jesus had given so many signs of his mission before their  
38 eyes, they still did not believe in him, in fulfilment of the words  
of the prophet Isaiah, where he says — “Lord, who has believed  
our teaching? And to whom has the might of the Lord been re-  
39 vealed?” The reason why they were unable to believe is given by  
40 Isaiah elsewhere, in these words — “He has blinded their eyes,  
and blunted their mind, so that they should not see with their  
eyes, and perceive with their mind, and turn — And I should heal  
41 them.” Isaiah said this, because he saw Christ’s glory; and it was  
42 of him that he spoke. Yet for all this, even among the leading men  
there were many who came to believe in Jesus; but, because of the  
Pharisees, they did not acknowledge it, because they were afraid  
43 that they should be expelled from their synagogues; for they val-  
44 ued honour from people more than honour from God. But Jesus  
had proclaimed: ‘He who believes in me believes, not in me, but  
45 in him who sent me; and he who sees me sees him who sent me.  
46 I have come as a light into the world, so that no one who believes  
47 in me should remain in the darkness. When anyone hears my  
teaching and pays no heed to it, I am not his judge; for I came

not to judge the world, but to save the world. He who rejects me, 48  
 and disregards my teaching, has a judge already — the message  
 which I have delivered will itself be his judge at the Last day. For  
 I have not delivered it on my own authority; but the Father, who 49  
 sent me, has himself given me his command as to what I should  
 say, and what message I should deliver. And I know that eternal 50  
 life lies in keeping his command. Therefore, whatever I say, I say  
 only what the Father has taught me.'

Before the Passover Festival began, Jesus knew that the time 13  
 had come for him to leave the world and go to the Father. He had  
 loved those who were his own in the world, and he loved them  
 to the last. The devil had already put the thought of betraying 2  
 Jesus into the mind of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; and at 3  
 supper, Jesus — although knowing that the Father had put every-  
 thing into his hands, and that he had come from God, and was to  
 return to God — Rose from his place, and, taking off his upper 4  
 garments, tied a towel round his waist. He then poured some 5  
 water into the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to  
 wipe them with the towel which was tied round him. When he 6  
 came to Simon Peter, Peter said: 'You, Master! Are you going to  
 wash my feet?'  
 'You do not understand now what I am doing,' replied Jesus, 'but 7  
 you will learn by and by.'

'You will never wash my feet!' exclaimed Peter. 'Unless I wash 8  
 you,' answered Jesus, 'you have nothing in common with me.'

'Then, Master, not my feet only,' exclaimed Simon Peter, 'but 9  
 also my hands and my head.'

'He who has bathed,' replied Jesus, 'has no need to wash, un- 10  
 less it be his feet, but is altogether clean; and you,' he said to the  
 disciples, 'are clean, yet not all of you.' For he knew who was 11  
 going to betray him, and that was why he said "You are not all  
 clean." When he had washed their feet, and had put on his up- 12  
 per garments and taken his place, he spoke to them again. 'Do  
 you understand what I have been doing to you?' he asked. 'You 13  
 yourselves call me "the teacher" and "the Master", and you are  
 right, for I am both. If I, then — "the Master" and "the teacher" 14  
 — have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one another's

15 feet; for I have given you an example, so that you may do just  
16 as I have done to you. In truth I tell you, a servant is not greater  
than their master, neither is a messenger greater than the one who  
17 sends them. Now that you know these things, happy are you if  
18 you do them. I am not speaking about all of you. I know whom I  
have chosen; but this is in fulfilment of the words of scripture —  
19 “He that is eating my bread has lifted his heel against me.” For  
the future I will tell you of things before they take place, so that,  
20 when they take place, you may believe that I am what I am. In  
truth I tell you, the one who receives anyone that I send receives  
me; and the person who receives me receives him who sent me.’  
21 After saying this, Jesus was much troubled, and said solemnly:  
22 ‘In truth I tell you that it is one of you who will betray me.’ The  
disciples looked at one another, wondering whom he meant. Next  
23 to Jesus, in the place on his right hand, was one of his disciples,  
24 whom he loved. So Simon Peter made signs to that disciple, and  
25 whispered: ‘Tell me who it is that he means.’ Being in this posi-  
tion, that disciple leant back on Jesus’ shoulder, and asked him:  
‘Who is it, Master?’  
26 ‘It is the one,’ answered Jesus, ‘to whom I will give a piece of  
bread after dipping it in the dish.’ And, when Jesus had dipped  
the bread, he took it and gave it to Judas, the son of Simon Is-  
27 cariot; and it was then, after he had received it, that Satan took  
possession of him. So Jesus said to him: ‘Do at once what you are  
28 going to do.’ But no one at the table understood why he said this  
29 to Judas. Some thought that, as Judas kept the purse, Jesus meant  
that he was to buy some things needed for the Festival, or to give  
30 something to the poor. After taking the piece of bread, Judas went  
out immediately; and it was night.

31 When Judas had gone out, Jesus said: ‘Now the Son of Man has  
32 been exalted, and God has been exalted through him; and God  
will exalt him with himself — yes, he will exalt him forthwith.  
33 My children, I am to be with you but a little while longer. You  
will look for me; and what I said to the people — “You cannot  
34 come where I am going” — I now say to you. I give you a new  
commandment — love one another; love one another as I have

loved you. It is by this that everyone will recognise you as my 35  
disciples — by your loving one another.'

'Where are you going, Master?' asked Peter. 'I am going where 36  
you cannot now follow me,' answered Jesus, 'but you will follow  
me later.'

'Why cannot I follow you now, Master?' asked Peter. 'I will lay 37  
down my life for you.'

'Will you lay down your life for me?' replied Jesus. 'In truth I 38  
tell you, the cock will not crow until you have disowned me three  
times. Do not let your hearts be troubled. Believe in God; believe 14  
also in me. In my Father's Home there are many dwellings. If it 2  
had not been so, I should have told you, for I am going to prepare  
a place for you. And, since I go and prepare a place for you, I will 3  
return and take you to be with me, so that you may be where I  
am; and you know the way to the place where I am going.' 4

'We do not know where you are going, Master,' said Thomas; 5  
'so how can we know the way?' Jesus answered: 'I am the way, 6  
and the truth, and the life; no one ever comes to the Father except  
through me. If you had recognised me, you would have known 7  
my Father also; for the future you will recognise him, indeed you  
have already seen him.'

'Master, show us the Father,' said Philip, 'and we will be satis- 8  
fied.'

'Have I been all this time among you,' said Jesus, 'and yet you, 9  
Philip, have not recognised me? The person who has seen me has  
seen the Father, how can you say, then, "Show us the Father"? 10  
Don't you believe that I am in union with the Father, and the  
Father with me? In giving you my teaching I am not speaking on  
my own authority; but the Father himself, always in union with 11  
me, does his own work. Believe me,' he said to them all, 'when  
I say that I am in union with the Father and the Father with me, 12  
or else believe me because of the work itself. In truth I tell you,  
the person who believes in me will themselves do the work that I  
am doing; and they will do greater work still, because I am going  
to the Father. Whatever you ask, in my name, I will do, so that 13  
the Father may be honoured in the Son. If you ask anything, in  
my name, I will do it. If you love me, you will lay my commands 14  
to heart, and I will ask the Father, and he will give you another  
helper, to be with you always — the Spirit of truth. The world 15  
cannot receive this Spirit, because it does not see him or recognise 16  
17

18 him, but you recognise him, because he is always with you, and  
 19 is within you. I will not leave you bereaved; I will come to you. In  
 20 a little while the world will see me no more, but you will still see  
 21 me; because I am living, you will be living also. At that time you  
 will recognise that I am in union with the Father, and you with  
 me, and I with you. It is they who have my commands and lays  
 them to heart that loves me; and the person who loves me will be  
 loved by my Father, and I will love them, and will reveal myself  
 to them.'

22 'What has happened, Master,' said Judas (not Judas Iscariot),  
 'that you are going to reveal yourself to us, and not to the world?'

23 'Whoever loves me,' Jesus answered, 'will lay my message to  
 24 heart; and my Father will love him, and we will come to him and  
 make our home with him. The person who does not love me will  
 not lay my message to heart; and the message to which you are  
 listening is not my own, but comes from the Father who sent me.  
 25 I have told you all this while still with you, but the helper — the  
 26 Holy Spirit whom the Father will send in my name — will teach  
 you all things, and will recall to your minds all that I have said to  
 27 you. Peace be with you! My own peace I give you. I do not give  
 to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled, or  
 28 dismayed. You heard me say that I was going away and would  
 return to you. Had you loved me, you would have been glad that  
 I was going to the Father, because the Father is greater than I.  
 29 And this I have told you now before it happens, so that, when  
 30 it does happen, you may still believe in me. I will not talk with  
 you much more, for the Spirit that is ruling the world is coming.  
 31 He has nothing in common with me; but he is coming so that the  
 world may see that I love the Father, and that I do as the Father  
 commanded me. Come, let us be going.

15 I am the True Vine, and my Father is the Vine-grower. Any un-  
 2 fruitful branch in me he takes away, and he cleanses every fruitful  
 3 branch, so that it may bear more fruit. You are already clean be-  
 4 cause of the message that I have given you. Remain united to me,  
 and I will remain united to you. As a branch cannot bear fruit by  
 itself, unless it remains united to the vine; no more can you, un-  
 5 less you remain united to me. I am the Vine, you are the branches.



If you remains united to me, while I remain united to you — you bear fruit plentifully; for you can do nothing apart from me. If anyone does not remain united to me, they are thrown away, as a branch would be, and withers up. Such branches are collected and thrown into the fire, and are burnt. If you remain united to me, and my teaching remains in your hearts, ask whatever you wish, and it will be yours. It is by your bearing fruit plentifully, and so showing yourselves my disciples, that my Father is honoured. As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you; remain in my love. If you lay my commands to heart, you will remain in my love; just as I have laid the Father's commands to heart and remain in his love. I have told you all this so that my own joy may be yours, and that your joy may be complete. This is my command — love one another, as I have loved you. No one can give greater proof of love than by laying down their life for their friends. And you are my friends, if you do what I command you. I no longer call you "servants," because a servant does not know what their master is doing; but I have given you the name of "friends," because I made known to you everything that I learned from my Father. It wasn't you who chose me, but I who chose you, and I appointed you to go and bear fruit — fruit that should remain, so that the Father might grant you whatever you ask in my name. I am giving you these commands that you may love one another. If the world hates you, you know that it has first hated me. If you belonged to the world, the world would love its own. Because you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world — that is why the world hates you. Remember what I said to you — "A servant is not greater than their master." If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have laid my message to heart, they will lay yours to heart also. But they will do all this to you, because you believe in my name, for they do not know him who sent me. If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have had no sin to answer for; but as it is, they have no excuse for their sin. The person who hates me hates my Father also. If I had not done among them such work as no one else ever did, they would have had no sin to answer for; but, as it is, they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. And so is fulfilled what is said in their Law — "They hated me without cause." But, when the helper comes, whom I will send to you from the Father — the Spirit of truth, who comes from the Father — will

27 bear testimony to me; yes, and you also are to bear testimony,  
 16 because you have been with me from the first. I have spoken to  
 2 you in this way so that you may not falter. They will expel you  
 from their synagogues; indeed the time is coming when anyone  
 who kills you will think that they are making an offering to God.  
 3 They will do this, because they have not learned to know the Fa-  
 4 ther, or even me. But I have spoken to you of these things so that,  
 when the time for them comes, you may remember that I told you  
 5 about them myself. I did not tell you all this at first, because I was  
 with you. But now I am to return to him who sent me; and yet not  
 6 one of you asks me — “Where are you going?” Although your  
 hearts are full of sorrow at all that I have been saying to you. Yet  
 7 I am only telling you the truth; it is for your good that I should  
 go away. For otherwise the helper will never come to you, but, if  
 8 I leave you, I will send him to you. And he, when he comes, will  
 bring conviction to the world as to sin, and as to righteousness,  
 9 and as to judgment; as to sin, for people do not believe in me; as  
 10 to righteousness, for I am going to the Father, and you will see me  
 no longer; as to judgment, for the Spirit that is ruling this world  
 11 has been condemned. I have still much to say to you, but you can-  
 12 not bear it now. Yet when he — The Spirit of truth — comes, he  
 13 will guide you into all truth; for he will not speak on his own au-  
 thority, but he will speak of all that he hears; and he will tell you  
 14 of the things that are to come. He will honour me; because he  
 15 will take of what is mine, and will tell it to you. Everything that  
 the Father has is mine; that is why I said that he takes of what is  
 16 mine, and will tell it to you. In a little while you will no longer  
 17 see me; and then in a little while you will see me indeed.’ At  
 some of his disciples said to one another: ‘What does he mean by  
 saying to us “In a little while you will not see me, and then in a  
 little while you will see me indeed”; and by saying “Because I am  
 18 going to the Father”? What does he mean by “In a little while”?’  
 19 they said; ‘we do not know what he is speaking about.’ Jesus saw  
 that they were wanting to ask him a question, and said: ‘Are you  
 trying to find out from one another what I meant by saying “In  
 a little while you will not see me; and then in a little while you  
 20 will see me indeed”? In truth I tell you that you will weep and  
 mourn, but the world will rejoice; you will suffer pain, but your  
 21 pain will turn to joy. A woman in labour is in pain because her  
 time has come; but no sooner is the child born, than she forgets

her trouble in her joy that a child has been born into the world. You, in the same way, are sorry now; but I will see you again, and your hearts will rejoice, and no one will rob you of your joy. And at that time you will not ask me anything; in truth I tell you, if you ask the Father for anything, he will grant it to you in my name. So far you have not asked for anything, in my name; ask, and you will receive, so that your joy may be complete. I have spoken to you of all this in figures; a time is coming, however, when I will not speak any longer to you in figures, but will tell you about the Father plainly. You will ask, at that time, in my name; and I do not say that I will intercede with the Father for you; for the Father himself loves you, because you have loved me, and have believed that I came from the Father. I came out from the Father, and have come into the world; and now I am to leave the world, and go to the Father.'

'At last,' exclaimed the disciples, 'you are using plain words and not speaking in figures at all. Now we are sure that you know everything, and need not wait for anyone to question you. This makes us believe that you did come from God.'

'Do you believe that already?' Jesus answered. 'Listen! A time is coming — indeed it has already come — when you are to be scattered, each going his own way, and to leave me alone; and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. I have spoken to you in this way, so that in me you may find peace. In the world you will find trouble; yet, take courage! I have conquered the world.'

After saying this, Jesus raised his eyes heaven-wards, and said: 17

Father, the hour has come; honour your Son, so that your Son may honour you; even as you gave him power over all humanity, so that he should give eternal life to all those whom you has given him. And the eternal life is this — to know you the one true God, and Jesus Christ whom you has sent as your messenger. I have honoured you on earth by completing the work which you has given me to do; and now do you honour me, Father, at your own side, with the honour which I had at your side before the world began. I have revealed you to those whom you gave me from the world; they were your own, and you gave them to me; and

7 they have laid your message to heart. They recognise now  
8 that everything that you gave me was from you; for I have  
given them the teaching which you gave me, and they re-  
ceived it, and clearly understood that I came from you, and  
9 they believed that you has sent me as your messenger. I in-  
tercede for them; I am not interceding for the world, but for  
those whom you has given me, for they are your own —  
10 All that is mine is yours, and all that is yours is mine —  
11 and I am honoured in them. Now I am to be in this world  
no longer, but they are still to be in the world, and I am to  
come to you. Holy Father, keep them by that revelation of  
your name which you has given me, so that they may be  
12 one, as we are. Whilst I was with them, I kept them by that  
revelation, and I have guarded them; and not one of them  
has been lost, except that lost soul — in fulfilment of scrip-  
13 ture. But now I am to come to you; and I am speaking like  
this, while still in the world, so that they may have my own  
14 joy, in all its fullness, in their hearts. I have given them your  
message; and the world hated them, because they do not  
belong to the world, even as I do not belong to the world. I  
15 do not ask you to take them out of the world, but to keep  
them from evil. They do not belong to the world, even as I  
16 do not belong to the world. Consecrate them by the truth;  
17 your message is truth. Just as you has sent me as your mes-  
senger to the world, so I send them as my messengers to the  
18 world. And it is for their sakes that I am consecrating my-  
self, so that they also may be truly consecrated. But it is not  
19 only for them that I am interceding, but also for those who  
believe in me through their message, that they all may be  
20 one — that as you, Father, are in union with us — and so  
the world may believe that you have sent me as your mes-  
21 senger. I have given them the honour which you has given  
me, so that they may be one as we are one — I in union  
22 with them and you with me — that so they may be per-  
fected in their union, and so that the world may know that  
23 you have sent me as your messenger, and that you have  
loved them as you have loved me. Father, my desire for all  
24 those whom you have given me is that they may be with  
me where I am, so that they may see the honour which you  
have given me; for thou did love me before the beginning

of the world. Righteous Father, though the world did not 25  
 know you, I knew you; and these people knew that you  
 have sent me as your messenger. I have made you known 26  
 to them, and will do so still; that the love that you have  
 had for me may be in their hearts, and that I may be in  
 them also.'

When Jesus had said this, he went out with his disciples and 18  
 crossed the brook Kedron to a place where there was a garden,  
 into which he and his disciples went. The place was well known 2  
 to Judas, the betrayer, for Jesus and his disciples had often met  
 there. So Judas, who had obtained the soldiers of the Roman 3  
 garrison, and some police officers from the chief priests and the  
 Pharisees, came there with lanterns, torches, and weapons. Jesus,  
 aware of all that was coming upon him, went to meet them, and 4  
 said to them: 'For whom are you looking?'

'Jesus of Nazareth,' was their answer. 'I am he,' said Jesus. (Ju- 5  
 das, the betrayer, was also standing with them.) When Jesus said 6  
 "I am he," they drew back and fell to the ground. So he again 7  
 asked for whom they were looking, and they answered: 'Jesus of  
 Nazareth.'

'I have already told you that I am he,' replied Jesus, 'so, if it 8  
 is for me that you are looking, let these people go.' This was in 9  
 fulfilment of his words — "Of those whom you have given me I  
 have not lost one." At this, Simon Peter, who had a sword with 10  
 him, drew it, and struck the high priest's servant, and cut off his  
 right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. But Jesus said to Pe- 11  
 ter: 'Sheathe your sword. Should I not drink the cup which the  
 Father has given me?'

So the soldiers of the garrison, with their commanding officer 12  
 and the Jewish police, arrested Jesus and bound him, and took 13  
 him first of all to Annas. Annas was the father-in-law of Caiaphas,  
 who was high priest that year. It was Caiaphas who had coun- 14  
 selled the religious authorities, that it was best that one person

15 should die for the people. Meanwhile Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple, being well-known to the high priest, went with Jesus into the high priest's courtyard, while Peter stood outside by the door. Presently the other  
16 disciple — the one well-known to the high priest — went out and  
17 spoke to the portress, and brought Peter in. So the maidservant said to Peter: 'Aren't you also one of this man's disciples?'  
18 'No, I am not,' he said. The servants and police officers were standing round a charcoal fire (which they had made because it was cold), and were warming themselves. Peter, too, was with  
19 them, standing and warming himself. The high priest questioned  
20 Jesus about his disciples and about his teaching. 'For my part,' answered Jesus, 'I have spoken to all the world openly. I always taught in some synagogues, or in the Temple Courts, places where everyone assembles, and I never spoke of anything in secret. Why  
21 question me? Question those who have listened to me as to what I have spoken about to them. They must know what I said.' When  
22 Jesus said this, one of the police officers, who was standing near, gave him a blow with his hand. 'Do you answer the high priest like that?' he exclaimed. 'If I said anything wrong, give evidence  
23 about it,' replied Jesus; 'but if not, why do you strike me?' Annas  
24 sent him bound to Caiaphas the high priest. Meanwhile Simon  
25 Peter was standing there, warming himself; so they said to him: 'Aren't you also one of his disciples?' Peter denied it. 'No, I am  
26 not,' he said. One of the high priest's servants, a relation of the man whose ear Peter had cut off, exclaimed: 'Didn't I myself see  
27 you with him in the garden?' Peter again denied it; and at that moment a cock crowed.

28 From Caiaphas they took Jesus to the Government house. It was early in the morning. But they did not enter the Government house themselves, otherwise they might become "defiled," and  
29 so be unable to eat the Passover. Therefore Pilate came outside to speak to them. 'What charge do you bring against this man?'  
30 he asked. 'If he had not been a criminal, we should not have given him up to you,' they answered. 'Take him yourselves,'  
31 said Pilate, 'and try him by your own Law.'

'We have no power to put anyone to death,' the authorities replied — In fulfilment of what Jesus had said when indicating the death that he was destined to die. After that, Pilate went into the Government house again, and calling Jesus up, asked him: 'Are you the king of the Jews?' 32 33

'Do you ask me that yourself?' replied Jesus, 'or did others say it to you about me?' 34

'Do you take me for a Jew?' was Pilate's answer. 'It is your own nation and the chief priests who have given you up to me. What have you done?' 35

'My kingly power,' replied Jesus, 'is not due to this world. If it had been so, my servants would be doing their utmost to prevent my being given up to the authorities; but my kingly power is not from the world.' 36

'So you are a king after all!' exclaimed Pilate. 'Yes, it is true I am a king,' answered Jesus. 'I was born for this, I have come into the world for this — to bear testimony to the truth. Everyone who is on the side of truth listens to my voice.' 37

'What is truth?' exclaimed Pilate. After saying this, he went out to the crowd again, and said: 'For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged. It is, however, the custom for me to grant you the release of one man at the Passover Festival. Do you wish for the release of the king of the Jews?' 38 39

'No, not this man,' they shouted again, 'but Barabbas!' This Barabbas was a robber. 40

After that, Pilate had Jesus scourged. The soldiers made a crown with some thorns and put it on his head and threw a purple robe round him. They kept coming up to him and saying: 'Long live the king of the Jews!' and they gave him blow after blow with their hands. Pilate again came outside, and said to the people: 'Look! I am bringing him out to you, so that you may know that I find nothing with which he can be charged.' Then Jesus came outside, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe; and Pilate said to them: 'Here is the man!' When the chief priests and the police officers saw him, they shouted: 'Crucify him! Crucify him!' 19 2 3 4 5 6

“Take him yourselves and crucify him,” said Pilate. “For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged.”

7 “But we,” replied the crowd, “have a Law, under which he deserves death for making himself out to be the Son of God.” When  
8 Pilate heard what they said, he became still more alarmed; and,  
9 going into the Government house again, he said to Jesus: “Where  
10 do you come from?” But Jesus made no reply. So Pilate said to him: “Do you refuse to speak to me? Don’t you know that I have power to release you, and have power to crucify you?”

11 “You would have no power over me at all,” answered Jesus, “if it had not been given you from above; and, therefore, the man who  
12 betrayed me to you is guilty of the greater sin.” This made Pilate anxious to release him; but the crowd shouted: “If you release that man, you are no friend of the Emperor! Anyone who makes himself out to be a king is setting himself against the Emperor!”  
13 On hearing what they said, Pilate brought Jesus out, and took his seat on the Bench at a place called “The Stone Pavement” —  
14 in Hebrew “Gabbatha.” It was the Passover Preparation day, and about noon. Then he said to the crowd: “Here is your king!” At that the people shouted: “Kill him! Kill him! Crucify him!”

15 “What! Should I crucify your king?” exclaimed Pilate. “We have  
16 no king but the Emperor,” replied the chief priests; so Pilate gave Jesus up to them to be crucified.

17 So they took Jesus; and he went out, carrying his cross himself, to the place which is named from a scull, or, in Hebrew, Golgotha.  
18 There they crucified him, and two others with him — one on each side, and Jesus between them. Pilate also had these words written and put up over the cross — “JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.” These words were read by many people, because  
20 the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and they were written in Hebrew, Latin and Greek. The chief priests said  
21 to Pilate: “Do not write “The king of the Jews”, but write what the man said — “I am the king of the Jews.”” But Pilate answered:  
22 “What I have written, I have written.”



When the soldiers had crucified Jesus, they took his clothes and divided them into four shares — a share for each soldier — and they took the coat also. The coat had no seam, being woven in one piece from top to bottom. So they said to one another: ‘Do not let us tear it, but let us cast lots for it, to see who will have it.’ This was in fulfilment of the words of scripture —

“They shared my clothes among them,  
And over my clothing they cast lots.”

That was what the soldiers did. Meanwhile near the cross of Jesus were standing his mother and his mother’s sister, as well as Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary of Magdala. When Jesus saw his mother, and the disciple whom he loved, standing near, he said to his mother: ‘There is your son.’ Then he said to that disciple: ‘There is your mother.’ And from that very hour the disciple took her to live in his house.

Afterwards, knowing that everything was now finished, Jesus said, in fulfilment of the words of scripture: ‘I am thirsty.’ There was a bowl standing there full of common wine; so they put a sponge soaked in the wine on the end of a hyssop-stalk, and held it up to his mouth. When Jesus had received the wine, he exclaimed: ‘All is finished!’ Then, bowing his head, he resigned his spirit to God. It was the Preparation day, and so, to prevent the bodies from remaining on the crosses during the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a great day), the Jews asked Pilate to have the legs broken and the bodies removed. Accordingly the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first man, and then those of the other who had been crucified with Jesus; but, on coming to him, when they saw that he was already dead, they did not break his legs. One of the soldiers, however, pierced his side with a spear, and blood and water immediately flowed from it. This is the statement of one who actually saw it — and his statement may be relied on, and he knows that he is speaking the truth — and it is given in order that you also may be convinced. For all this happened in fulfilment of the words of scripture — “Not one of its bones will be broken.” And there is another passage which says — “They will look on him whom they pierced.” After this,

Joseph of Ramah, a disciple of Jesus — but a secret one, owing to his fear of the religious authorities — begged Pilate’s permission to remove the body of Jesus. Pilate gave him leave; so Joseph  
 39 went and removed the body. Nicodemus, too — the man who had formerly visited Jesus by night — came with a roll of myrrh and  
 40 aloes, weighing nearly a hundred pounds. They took the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen with the spices, according to the  
 41 Jewish mode of burial. At the place where Jesus had been crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a newly made tomb  
 42 in which no one had ever been laid. And so, because of its being the Preparation day, and as the tomb was close at hand, they laid Jesus there.

### *The Risen Life*

20 ON THE FIRST DAY OF THE WEEK, early in the morning, while it was still dark, Mary of Magdala went to the tomb, and saw that the  
 2 stone had been removed. So she came running to Simon Peter, and to that other disciple who was Jesus’ friend, and said to them: ‘They have taken away the Master out of the tomb, and we do not  
 3 know where they have laid him!’ So, Peter started off with that  
 4 other disciple, and they went to the tomb. The two began running together; but the other disciple ran faster than Peter, and reached  
 5 the tomb first. Stooping down, he saw the linen wrappings lying there, but did not go in. Presently Simon Peter came following  
 6 behind him, and went into the tomb; and he looked at the linen  
 7 wrappings lying there, and the cloth which had been on Jesus’ head, not lying with the wrappings, but rolled up on one side,  
 8 separately. Then the other disciple, who had reached the tomb first, went inside too, and he saw for himself and was convinced.  
 9 For they did not then understand the passage of scripture which  
 10 says that Jesus must rise again from the dead. The disciples then returned to their companions.

11 Meanwhile Mary was standing close outside the tomb, weeping. Still weeping, she leant forward into the tomb, and perceived  
 12 two angels clothed in white sitting there, where the body of Jesus had been lying, one where the head and the other where the  
 13 feet had been. ‘Why are you weeping?’ asked the angels. ‘They have taken my Master away,’ she answered, ‘and I do not know

where they have laid him.' After saying this, she turned round, 14  
and looked at Jesus standing there, but she did not know that it  
was Jesus. 'Why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?' he 15  
asked. Supposing him to be the gardener, Mary answered: 'If it  
was you, Sir, who carried him away, tell me where you have laid  
him, and I will take him away myself.'

'Mary!' said Jesus. She turned round, and exclaimed in He- 16  
brew: 'Rabboni!' (or, as we should say, "teacher"). 'Do not hold 17  
me,' Jesus said; 'for I have not yet ascended to the Father. But go to  
my brothers, and tell them that I am ascending to him who is my  
Father and their Father, my God and their God.' Mary of Mag- 18  
dala went and told the disciples that she had seen the Master, and  
that he had said this to her.

In the evening of the same day — the first day of the week — 19  
after the doors of the room, in which the disciples were, had been  
shut because they were afraid of the religious authorities, Jesus  
came and stood among them and said: 'Peace be with you'; af- 20  
ter which he showed them his hands and his side. The disciples  
were filled with joy when they saw the Master. Again Jesus said to 21  
them: 'Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me as his mes-  
senger, so I am sending you.' After saying this, he breathed on 22  
them, and said: 'Receive the Holy Spirit; if you remit anyone's 23  
sins, they have been remitted; and, if you retain them, they have  
been retained.'

But Thomas, one of the Twelve, called "The Twin," was not with 24  
them when Jesus came; so the rest of the disciples said to him: 25  
'We have seen the Master!'

'Unless I see the marks of the nails in his hands,' he exclaimed,  
'and put my finger into the marks, and put my hand into his side,  
I will not believe it.' A week later the disciples were again in the 26  
house, and Thomas with them. After the doors had been shut,  
Jesus came and stood among them, and said: 'Peace be with you.'  
Then he said to Thomas: 'Place your finger here, and look at my 27  
hands; and place your hand here, and put it into my side; and do

- 28 not refuse to believe, but believe.’ And Thomas exclaimed: ‘My Master, and my God!’
- 29 ‘Is it because you have seen me that you have believed?’ said Jesus. ‘Blessed are they who have not seen, and yet have believed!’
- 30 There were many other signs of his mission that Jesus gave in presence of the disciples, which are not recorded in this book;
- 31 but these have been recorded so that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God — and that, through your belief in his name, you may have life.
- 21 Later on, Jesus showed himself again to the disciples by the Sea of Tiberias. It was in this way: — Simon Peter, Thomas, who was called “The Twin,” Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, Zebedee’s sons, and two other disciples of Jesus, were together, when Simon Peter
- 3 said: ‘I am going fishing.’
- ‘We will come with you,’ said the others. They went out and
- 4 got into the boat, but caught nothing that night. Just as day was breaking, Jesus came and stood on the beach; but the disciples
- 5 did not know that it was he. ‘My children,’ he said, ‘have you anything to eat?’
- 6 ‘No,’ they answered. ‘Cast your net to the right of the boat,’ he said, ‘and you will find fish.’ So they cast the net, and now they
- 7 could not haul it in because of the quantity of fish. The disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: ‘It is the Master!’ When Simon Peter heard that it was the Master, he fastened his coat round him
- 8 (for he had taken it off), and threw himself into the sea. But the rest of the disciples came in the boat (for they were only about a
- 9 hundred yards from shore), dragging the net full of fish. When they had come ashore, they found a charcoal fire ready, with some
- 10 fish already on it, and some bread as well. ‘Bring some of the fish which you have just caught,’ said Jesus. So Simon Peter got into the boat and hauled the net ashore full of large fish, a hundred and fifty-three of them; and yet, although there were so many, the
- 11 net had not been torn. ‘Come and have breakfast.’, Jesus said. None of the disciples dared ask him who he was, because they

knew it was the Master.. Jesus went and took the bread and gave 13  
it to them, and the fish too. This was the third time that Jesus 14  
showed himself to the disciples after he had risen from the dead.

When breakfast was over, Jesus said to Simon Peter: 'Simon, son 15  
of John, do you love me more than the others?'

'Yes, Master,' he answered, 'you know that I am your friend.'

'Feed my lambs,' said Jesus. Then, a second time, Jesus asked: 16  
'Simon, son of John, do you love me?'

'Yes, Master,' he answered, 'you know that I am your friend.'

'Tend my sheep,' said Jesus. The third time, Jesus said to him: 17  
'Simon, son of John, are you my friend?' Peter was hurt at his third  
question being "Are you my friend?"; and exclaimed: 'Master, you  
know everything! You can tell that I am your friend.'

'Feed my sheep,' said Jesus. 'In truth I tell you,' he continued, 18  
'when you were young, you used to put on your own clothes, and  
walk wherever you wished; but, when you have grown old, you  
will have to stretch out your hands, while someone else puts on  
your clothes, and takes you where you do not wish.' Jesus said 19  
this to show the death by which Peter was to honour God, and  
then he added: 'Follow me.' Peter turned round, and saw the dis- 20  
ciple whom Jesus loved following — the one who at the supper  
leant back on the Master's shoulder, and asked him who it was  
who would betray him. Seeing him, Peter said to Jesus: 'Master, 21  
what about this man?'

'If it is my will that he should wait until I come,' answered 22  
Jesus, 'what has that to do with you? Follow me yourself.' So the 23  
report spread among his followers that that disciple was not to  
die; yet Jesus did not say that he was not to die, but said 'If it is  
my will that he should wait until I come, what has that to do with  
you?'

It is this disciple who states these things, and who recorded them; 24  
and we know that his statement is true.

- 25 There are many other things which Jesus did; but, if every one of them were to be recorded in detail, I suppose that even the world itself would not hold the books that would be written.

THE  
ACTS  
OF THE APOSTLES

*The Church and the Jews*

*The Doings of the Apostles Peter and John*

THE FIRST ACCOUNT WHICH I DREW UP, Theophilus, dealt with all 1  
that Jesus did and taught from the very first, down to that day 2  
on which he was taken up to heaven, after he had, by the help of  
the Holy Spirit, given instructions to the apostles whom he had  
chosen. With abundant proofs, he showed himself to them, still 3  
living, after his death; appearing to them from time to time during  
forty days, and speaking of all that related to the kingdom of God.  
And once, when he had gathered them together, he charged them 4  
not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait there for the fulfilment of the  
Father's promise — 'that promise,' he said, 'of which you have  
heard me speak; for, while John baptized with water, you will be 5  
baptized with the Holy Spirit before many days have passed.'

So, when the apostles had met together, they asked Jesus this 6  
question — 'Master, is this the time when you intend to re-estab-  
lish the kingdom for Israel?' His answer was: 'It is not for you to 7  
know times or hours, for the Father has reserved these for his own  
decision; but you will receive power, when the Holy Spirit will 8  
have descended on you, and will be witnesses for me not only in  
Jerusalem, but throughout Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of  
the earth.'

No sooner had Jesus said this than he was caught up before 9  
their eyes, and a cloud received him from their sight. While they  
were still gazing up into the heavens, as he went, suddenly two 10  
men, clothed in white, stood beside them, and said: 'People of  
Galilee, why are you standing here looking up into the heavens? 11  
This same Jesus, who has been taken from you into the heavens,

will come in the same way in which you have seen him go into the heavens.'

- 12 Then the apostles returned to Jerusalem from the hill called  
 Olivet, which is about three quarters of a mile from the city. When  
 13 they reached Jerusalem, they went to the upstairs room, where  
 they were staying. There were there Peter, John, James, and An-  
 drew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the  
 son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the son of James.  
 14 They all united in devoting themselves to prayer, and so did some  
 women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and his brothers.

- 15 About this time, at a meeting of the Lord's followers, when there  
 were about a hundred and twenty present, Peter rose to speak.  
 16 'Friends,' he said, 'it was necessary who the prediction of scrip-  
 ture should be fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit made by the lips of  
 David about Judas, who acted as guide to the men that arrested  
 17 Jesus, for he was one of our number and had his part allotted  
 18 him in this work of ours.' (This man had bought a piece of land  
 with the price of his treachery; and, falling heavily, his body had  
 19 burst open, and all his bowels protruded. This became known to  
 everyone living in Jerusalem, so that the field came to be called, in  
 their language, "Akeldama," which means the "Field of Blood.")  
 20 'For in the book of Psalms,' Peter continued, 'it is said —

"Let his home,  
 And let no one live in it";

and also —

"His office let another take."

- 21 Therefore, from among the men who have been with us all the  
 time that Jesus, our Master, went in and out among us — From  
 his baptism by John down to that day on which he was taken from  
 us — someone must be found to join us as a witness of his resur-  
 23 rection.' So they put forward two men, Joseph called Barsabas,  
 24 whose other name was Justus, and Matthias; and they offered  
 this prayer —

- 25 'Lord, who reads all hearts, show which of these two men  
 you have chosen To take the place in this apostolic work,  
 which Judas has abandoned, to go to his proper place.'



Then they drew lots between them; and, the lot having fallen on Matthias, he was added to the number of the eleven apostles. 26

In the course of the Festival at the close of the Harvest the disciples had all met together, when suddenly there came from the heavens a noise like a strong wind rushing by; it filled the whole house in which they were sitting. Then there appeared tongues of what seemed to be flame, separating, so that one settled on each of them; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to speak with strange "tongues" as the Spirit prompted their utterances. 2

Now there were then staying in Jerusalem religious Jews from every country in the world; and, when this sound was heard, numbers of people collected, in the greatest excitement, because each of them heard the disciples speaking in his own language. They were utterly amazed, and kept asking in astonishment: 5

'What! Are not all these people who are speaking Galileans? Then how is it that we each of us hear them in our own language? Some of us are Parthians, some Medes, some Elamites; and some of us live in Mesopotamia, in Judea and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Roman Asia, in Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt and the districts of Libya adjoining Cyrene; some of us are visitors from Rome, either Jews by birth or converts, and some are Cretans and Arabians — yet we all alike hear them speaking in our own tongues of the great things that God has done.' They were all utterly amazed and bewildered. 10

'What does it mean?' they asked one another. But there were some who said with a sneer: 'They have had too much new wine.' 13

Then Peter, surrounded by the eleven other apostles, stood up, and, raising his voice, addressed the crowd. 'People of Judea,' he began, 'and all you who are staying in Jerusalem, let me tell you what this means. Mark well my words. These people are not drunk, as you suppose; for it is only now nine in the morning! No! This is what is spoken of in the prophet Joel — 14

"It will come about in the last days," God says, 17  
"That I will pour out my Spirit on all humanity;  
Your sons and your daughters will become prophets,

- Your young men will see visions,  
 And your old men dream dreams;
- 18 Yes, even on the slaves — for they are mine — both  
 men and women,  
 I will in those days pour out my Spirit,  
 And they will become prophets;
- 19 And I will show wonders in the heavens above,  
 And signs on the earth below —  
 Blood and fire and mist of smoke;
- 20 The sun will become darkness,  
 And the moon blood-red,  
 Before the day of the Lord comes — that great and aw-  
 ful day.
- 21 Then will everyone who invokes the name of the  
 Lord be saved.”
- 22 People of Israel, listen to what I am saying. Jesus of Nazareth,  
 a man whose mission from God to you was proved by miracles,  
 wonders, and signs, which God showed among you through him,  
 23 as you know full well — He, I say, in accordance with God’s defi-  
 nite plan and with his previous knowledge, was betrayed, and  
 you, by the hands of lawless men, nailed him to a cross and put  
 24 him to death. But God released him from the pangs of death and  
 raised him to life, it being impossible for death to retain its hold  
 25 on him. Indeed he was the one David was referring to when he  
 said —
- “I have had the Lord ever before my eyes,  
 For he stands at my right hand, so that I should not be  
 disquieted.
- 26 Therefore my heart was cheered, and my tongue told its  
 delight;  
 Yes, even my body, too, will rest in hope;
- 27 For you will not abandon my soul to the place of death,  
 Nor surrender me, your holy one, to undergo corrup-  
 tion.
- 28 You have shown me the path to life,  
 You will fill me with gladness in your presence.”
- 29 Friends, I can speak to you the more confidently about the pa-  
 triarch David, because he is dead and buried, and his tomb is  
 30 here among us to this very day. David, then, prophet as he was,

knowing that God "had solemnly sworn to him to set one of his descendants on his throne," looked into the future, and referred 31  
to the resurrection of the Christ when he said that "he had not  
been abandoned to the place of death, nor had his body under- 32  
gone corruption." It was this Jesus, whom God raised to life; and 33  
of that we are ourselves all witnesses. And now that he has been  
exalted to the right hand of God, and has received from the Father  
the promised gift of the Holy Spirit, he has begun to pour out that 34  
gift, as you yourselves now see and hear. It was not David who  
went up into heaven; for he himself says —

"The Lord said to my master: 'Sit on my right hand,  
Until I put your enemies as a footstool under your feet.'" 35

So let the whole nation of Israel know beyond all doubt, that God 36  
has made him both Lord and Christ — this Jesus whom you cru-  
cified.'

When the people heard this, they were conscience-smitten, and 37  
said to Peter and the rest of the apostles: 'Friends, what can we  
do?'

'Repent,' answered Peter, 'and be baptized every one of you in 38  
the faith of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and then  
you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is for 39  
you and for your children, and also for all those now far away,  
who may be called by the Lord our God.'

Peter spoke to them for a long time using many other argu- 40  
ments and pleaded with them — 'Save yourselves from the per-  
verse spirit of this age.' So those who accepted his teaching were 41  
baptized, and about three thousand people joined the disciples  
on that day alone. They devoted themselves to the teaching of 42  
the apostles and to the Common life of the church, to the break-  
ing of the bread and to the Prayers.

A deep impression was made on everyone, and many won- 43  
ders and signs were done at the hands of the apostles. All who 44  
became believers in Christ held everything for the common use;  
they sold their property and their goods, and shared the pro- 45  
ceeds among them all, according to their individual needs. Every  
day they devoted themselves to meeting together in the Temple 46  
Courts, and to the breaking of bread at their homes, while they  
partook of their food in simple-hearted gladness, praising God,

47 and winning the goodwill of all the people. And the Lord daily added to their company those who were in the path of salvation.

3 One day, as Peter and John were going up into the Temple Courts for the three o'clock Prayers, a man, who had been lame from his birth, was being carried by. This man used to be set down every day at the gate of the Temple called "the Beautiful Gate," to beg of those who went in. Seeing Peter and John on the point of entering, he asked them to give him something. Peter fixed his eyes on him, and so did John, and then Peter said: 'Look at us.'

5 The man was all attention, expecting to get something from them; but Peter added: 'I have no gold or silver, but I give you what I have. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, get up and walk.' Grasping the lame man by the right hand, Peter lifted him up. Instantly the man's feet and ankles became strong, and, leaping up, he stood and began to walk about, and then went with them into the Temple Courts, walking, and leaping, and praising God. All the people saw him walking about and praising God; and, when they recognised him as the man who used to sit begging at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple, they were utterly astonished and amazed at what had happened to him. While the man still clung to Peter and John, the people all quickly gathered round them in the Colonnade named after Solomon, in the greatest astonishment.

12 On seeing this, Peter said to the people: 'People of Israel, why are you surprised at this? And why do you stare at us, as though we, by any power or piety of our own, had enabled this man to walk? The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our ancestors, has done honour to his servant Jesus — him whom you gave up and disowned before Pilate, when he had decided to set him free. You, I say, disowned the holy and righteous one, and asked for the release of a murderer! The guide to life you put to death! But God raised him from the dead — and of that we are ourselves witnesses. And it is by faith in the name of Jesus, that this man, whom you all see and know, has — by his name — been made strong. Yes, it is the faith inspired by Jesus that has made this complete cure of the man, before the eyes of you all. And yet, my friends, I know that you acted as you did from ignorance,

and your rulers also. But it was in this way that God fulfilled all that he had long ago foretold, as to the sufferings of his Christ, by the lips of all the prophets. Therefore, repent and turn so that your sins may be wiped away; so that happier times may come from the Lord himself, and so that he may send you, in Jesus, your long-appointed Christ. But heaven must be his home, until the days of the Universal Restoration, of which God has spoken by the lips of his holy prophets from the very first. Moses himself said —

“The Lord your God will raise up from among yourselves a prophet, as he raised me. To him you will listen whenever he speaks to you. And it will be that should anyone among the people not listen to that prophet, he will be utterly destroyed.”

Yes, and all the prophets from Samuel onwards, and all their successors who had a message to deliver, told of these days. You yourselves are the heirs of the prophets, and heirs, too, of the covenant which God made with your ancestors, when he said to Abraham —

“In your descendants will all the nations of the earth be blessed.”

For you, first, God raised up his servant, and sent him to bless you, by turning each one of you from his wicked ways. While Peter and John were still speaking to the people, the chief priest, with the officer in charge at the Temple and the Sadducees, came up to them, much annoyed because they were teaching the people, and because, through Jesus, they were preaching the resurrection from the dead. They arrested the apostles and, as it was already evening, had them placed in custody until the next day. Many, however, of those who had heard the apostles’ message became believers in Christ, the number of the men alone amounting to about five thousand.

The next day, a meeting of the leaders of the people, the elders, and the teachers of the Law was held in Jerusalem. There were present Annas the high priest, Caiaphas, John, Alexander, and all

7 who were of High-Priestly rank. They had Peter and John brought  
before them, and questioned them.

‘By what power,’ they asked, ‘Or in whose name have men like  
you done this thing?’

8 Then, Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said: ‘Leaders of the  
9 people and elders, since we are on our trial today for a kind act  
done to a helpless man, and are asked in what way the man here  
10 before you has been cured, let me tell you all and all the people  
of Israel, that it is by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom  
you crucified and whom God raised from the dead — it is, I say,  
by his name that this man stands here before you lame no longer.  
11 Jesus is “the stone which, scorned by you the builders, has yet  
12 become the corner stone.” And salvation is in him alone; for there  
is no other name in the whole world, given to people, to which we  
must look for our salvation.’

13 When the Council saw how boldly Peter and John spoke, and  
found that they were uneducated men of humble station, they  
were surprised, and realised that they had been companions of  
14 Jesus. But, when they looked at the man who had been healed,  
15 standing there with them, they had nothing to say. So they or-  
dered them out of court, and then began consulting together.

16 ‘What are we to do to these men?’ they asked one another.  
‘That a remarkable sign has been given through them is obvious  
17 to everyone living in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. But, to  
prevent this thing from spreading further among the people, let  
us warn them not to speak in this name any more to anyone what-  
ever.’

18 So they called the apostles in, and ordered them not to speak  
or teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John replied: ‘Whether it is right, in the sight of  
20 God, to listen to you rather than to him — judge for yourselves,  
for we cannot help speaking of what we have seen and heard.’  
21 However, after further warnings, the Council set them at liberty,  
not seeing any safe way of punishing them, because of the people,  
22 for they were all praising God for what had occurred; for the man  
who was the subject of this miraculous cure was more than forty  
years old.

After they had been set at liberty, the apostles went to their friends and told them what the chief priests and the elders had said to them. All who heard their story, moved by a common impulse, raised their voices to God in prayer:

‘Sovereign Lord, it is you who has “made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything that is in them,” And who, by the lips of our ancestor, your servant David, who spoke under the influence of the Holy Spirit, have said —

“Why did the nations rage,  
And the peoples form vain designs?  
The kings of the earth set their array,  
And its rulers gathered together,  
Against the Lord and against his Christ.”

There have indeed gathered together in this city against your holy servant Jesus, whom you has consecrated the Christ, not Herod and Pontius Pilate only, but the nations and the people of Israel besides — Yet only to do what you, by your power and of your own will, did long ago destine to be done. Now, therefore, Lord, mark their threats, and enable your servants, with all fearlessness, to tell your message, while you stretch out your hand to heal, and cause signs and wonders to take place through the name of your holy servant Jesus.’

When their prayer was ended, the place in which they were assembled was shaken; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to tell God’s message fearlessly.

The whole body of those who had become believers in Christ were of one heart and mind. Not one of them claimed any of his goods as his own, but everything was held for the common use. The apostles continued with great power to bear their testimony to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God’s blessing rested on them all abundantly. Nor was there anyone in need among them, for all who were owners of land or houses sold them, and brought the proceeds of the sales And laid them at the apostles’ feet; and then everyone received a share in proportion to his

36 wants. A Levite of Cyprian birth, named Joseph, (who had received from the apostles the additional name of "Barnabas" —  
37 which means "The Consoler,") Sold a farm that belonged to him, and brought the money and laid it at the apostles' feet.

5 There was, however, a man named Ananias, who, with his wife  
2 Sapphira, sold some property, and, with her connivance, kept back some of the proceeds. He brought only a part and laid it at the apostles' feet.

3 'Ananias,' Peter exclaimed, 'how is it that Satan has so taken possession of your heart that you have lied to the Holy Spirit, and  
4 kept back a part of the money paid for the land? While it was unsold, was not it your own? And after it was sold, was not the money at your own disposal? How did you come to think of such a thing? You have lied, not to people, but to God!'

5 As Ananias heard these words, he fell down and expired; and  
6 everyone who heard of it was appalled. The young men got up, and, winding the body in a sheet, carried it out and buried it.

7 After an interval of about three hours his wife came in, not  
8 knowing what had happened. 'Is it true,' Peter asked, addressing her, 'that you sold your land for such a sum?'

9 'Yes,' she answered, 'we did.' Then Peter said: 'How did you come to agree to provoke the Spirit of the Lord? Listen! The footsteps of those who have buried your husband are at the door; and they will carry you out too.'

10 Instantly Sapphira fell down at Peter's feet and expired. On coming in, the young men found her dead; so they carried her out and buried her by her husband's side. The whole church and  
11 all who heard of these events were appalled.

12 Many signs and wonders continued to occur among the people, through the instrumentality of the apostles, whose custom it was  
13 to meet all together in the Colonnade of Solomon; but of the rest no one ventured to join them. On the other hand, the people were  
14 full of their praise, and still larger numbers, both of men and women, as they became believers in the Lord, were added to their



number. The consequence was that people would bring out their sick even into the streets, and lay them on mattresses and mats, in the hope that, as Peter came by, at least his shadow might fall on someone of them. Besides this, the inhabitants of the towns round Jerusalem flocked into the city, bringing with them their sick and those who were troubled by foul spirits; and they were cured everyone. 15  
16

At this the high priest was roused to action, and he and all his supporters (who formed the party of the Sadducees), moved by jealousy, arrested the apostles, and had them placed in custody. An angel of the Lord, however, opened the prison doors at night and led them out. 'Go,' he said, 'and stand in the Temple Courts, and tell the people the whole message of this new life.' When they heard this, they went at daybreak into the Temple Courts, and began to teach. The high priest and his party, on their arrival, summoned the High Council, including all the leaders of the people among the Israelites, and sent to the jail to fetch the apostles. But, when the officers got there, they did not find them in the prison; so they returned and reported that, while they had found the goal barred securely and the guards posted at the doors, yet, on opening them, they had not found anyone inside. When the officer in charge at the Temple and the chief priests heard their story, they were perplexed about the apostles and as to what all this would lead to. Presently, however, someone came and told them, that the men whom they had put in prison were actually standing in the Temple Courts, teaching the people. Then, the officer went with his men and fetched the apostles — without using violence, for they were afraid of being stoned by the people — And then brought them before the Council. The high priest demanded an explanation from them. 17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27

'We gave you strict orders,' he said, 'not to teach in this name. Yet you have actually flooded Jerusalem with your teaching, and you want to make us responsible for the death of this man.' 28

To this Peter and the apostles replied: 'We must obey God rather than people. The God of our ancestors raised Jesus, whom you put to death by hanging him on a cross. It is this Jesus whom 29  
30  
31

32 God has exalted to his right hand, to be a guide and a Saviour, to  
give Israel repentance and forgiveness of sins. And we are wit-  
ness to the truth of this, and so is the Holy Spirit — the gift of God  
to those who obey him.'

33 The members of the Council became frantic with rage on hear-  
34 ing this, and were for putting the apostles to death. But Gamaliel,  
a Pharisee, who was a Doctor of the Law and who was held in  
universal respect, rose in the Council, and directed that the men  
should be taken out of court for a little while.

35 He then said: 'People of Israel, take care as to what you intend  
36 to do with these men. For not long ago Theudas appeared, pro-  
fessing to be somebody, and was joined by a body of some four  
hundred men. But he was killed; and all his followers scattered  
37 and dwindled away. After him, Judas the Galilean appeared at  
the time of the census, and induced people to follow him; Yet he,  
38 too, perished and all his followers were dispersed. And, in this  
present case, my advice to you is not to interfere with these men,  
but to leave them alone, for, if their designs and their work are  
39 merely of human origin, they will come to an end; but, if they  
are of divine origin, you will be powerless to put an end to them  
— or else you may find yourselves fighting against God!'

40 The Council followed his advice, and, calling the apostles in,  
had them flogged, and then, after cautioning them not to speak in  
41 the name of Jesus, set them free. But the apostles left the Council,  
rejoicing that they had been thought worthy to suffer disgrace for  
42 that name; and never for a single day, either in the Temple Courts  
or in private houses, did they cease to teach, or to tell the good  
news of Jesus, the Christ.

6 About this time, when the number of the disciples was constantly  
increasing, complaints were made by the Greek speaking Jews  
against the Aramaic speaking Jews, that their widows were being  
2 overlooked in the daily distribution. The Twelve, therefore, called  
together the general body of the disciples and said to them: 'It is  
not well for us to see to the distribution at the tables and neglect  
3 God's message. Therefore, friends, look for seven men of repu-  
tation among yourselves, wise and spiritually-minded men, and  
4 we will appoint them to attend to this matter; while we, for our

part, will devote ourselves to prayer, and to the delivery of the message.'

This proposal was unanimously agreed to; and the disciples 5  
chose Stephen — a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit —  
and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicholas 6  
of Antioch, a former convert to Judaism; and they brought these  
men to the apostles, who, after praying, placed their hands on  
them.

So God's message spread, and the number of the disciples con- 7  
tinued to increase rapidly in Jerusalem, and a large body of the  
priests accepted the faith.

Meanwhile Stephen, divinely helped and strengthened, was 8  
showing great wonders and signs among the people. But some 9  
members of the Synagogue of the Freed Slaves (as it was called),  
Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and Visitors from Cilicia and Roman  
Asia, were roused to action and began disputing with Stephen;  
yet they were quite unable to withstand the wisdom and the 10  
inspiration with which he spoke. Then they induced some men 11  
to assert that they had heard Stephen saying blasphemous  
things against Moses, and against God; and they stirred up the 12  
people, as well as the elders and the teachers of the Law, and set  
on Stephen, and arrested him, and brought him before the High  
Council. There they produced witnesses who gave false 13  
evidence.

'This man,' they said, 'is incessantly saying things against this  
Holy place and the Law; indeed, we have heard him declare that 14  
this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place, and change the cus-  
toms handed down to us by Moses.' The eyes of all the members 15  
of the Council were riveted on Stephen, and they saw his face  
looking like the face of an angel.

Then the high priest asked: 'Is this true?' Stephen replied: 7  
'Brothers and fathers, hear what I have to say. God, who manifests 2  
himself in the glory, appeared to our ancestor Abraham when he  
was in Mesopotamia, and before he settled in Haran, and said to

3 him — “Leave your country and your kindred, and come into the  
4 country that I will show you.” And so Abraham left the country of the Chaldaeans and settled in Haran; and from there, after his father’s death, God caused him to migrate into this country, in which you are now living. God did not at that time give him any part of it, not even a foot of ground. But he promised to “give him possession of it and his descendants after him, though  
6 at that time he had no child. God’s words were these — “Abraham’s descendants will live in a foreign country, where they will  
7 be enslaved and ill-treated for four hundred years. But I myself will judge the nation, to which they will be enslaved,” God said, “and after that they will leave the country and worship me in  
8 this place.” Then God made with Abraham the covenant of circumcision; and under it Abraham became the father of Isaac, and circumcised him when he was eight days old; and Isaac became  
9 the father of Jacob; and Jacob of the Twelve Patriarchs. The Patriarchs, out of jealousy, sold Joseph into slavery in Egypt; but God  
10 was with him, and delivered him out of all his troubles, and enabled him to win favour and show wisdom before Pharaoh, king of Egypt, who appointed him Governor of Egypt and of his whole  
11 household. Then a famine spread over the whole of Egypt and Canaan, causing great distress, and our ancestors could find no  
12 food. Hearing, however, that there was corn in Egypt, Jacob sent  
13 our ancestors there on their first visit. In the course of their second visit, Joseph revealed himself to his brothers, and his family  
14 became known to Pharaoh. Then Joseph sent an urgent invitation to his father Jacob and to his relatives, seventy-five persons  
15 in all; and so Jacob went down into Egypt. There he died, and our  
16 ancestors also, and their bodies were removed to Shechem, and laid in the tomb which Abraham had bought for a sum of money  
17 from the sons of Hamor in Shechem. As the time drew near for the fulfilment of the promise which God had made to Abraham,  
18 the people increased largely in numbers in Egypt, until a new  
19 king, who knew nothing of Joseph, came to the throne. This king acted deceitfully towards our people and ill-treated our ancestors, making them abandon their own infants, so that they should not  
20 be reared. It was just at this time that Moses was born. He was an exceedingly beautiful child, and for three months was brought  
21 up in his own father’s house; and, when he was abandoned, the daughter of Pharaoh found him and brought him up as her own

son. So Moses was educated in all the learning of the Egyptians, 22  
and proved his ability both by his words and actions. When he 23  
was in his fortieth year, he resolved to visit his fellow Israelites;  
and, seeing an Israelite ill-treated, he defended him, and avenged 24  
the man, who was being wronged, by striking down the Egyptian.  
He thought his own people would understand that God was 25  
using him to save them; but they failed to do so. The next day 26  
he again appeared on the scene, when some of them were fighting,  
and tried to make peace between them. "Men," he said, "you 27  
are brothers; how is it that you are ill-treating one another?" But  
the man who was ill-treating his fellow workman pushed Moses 28  
aside saying — "Who made you a ruler and judge over us? Do  
you mean to make away with me as you did yesterday with that 29  
Egyptian?" At these words Moses took to flight, and became an  
exile in Midian; and there he had two sons born to him. Forty 30  
years had passed when there appeared to him, in the desert of  
Mount Sinai, an angel in a flame of fire in a bush. When Moses 31  
saw it, he was astonished at the vision; but on his going nearer to  
look at it more closely, the voice of the Lord was heard to say —  
"I am the God of your ancestors, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and 32  
Jacob." Moses trembled, and did not dare to look. Then the Lord 33  
said to him — "Take your sandals off your feet, for the spot where  
you are standing is holy ground. I have seen the oppression of my 34  
people who are in Egypt, and heard their groans, and I have come  
down to deliver them. Come now and I will send you into Egypt."  
This same Moses, whom they had disowned with the words — 35  
"Who made you a ruler and a judge?" was the man whom God  
sent to be both a ruler and a deliverer, under the guidance of the  
angel that had appeared to him in the bush. He it was who led 36  
them out, after he had shown wonders and signs in Egypt, in the  
Red Sea, and in the desert during forty years. This was the Moses 37  
who said to the people of Israel — "God will raise up for you,  
from among yourselves, a prophet, as he raised up me." He, too, 38  
it was who was present at the assembly in the desert, with the  
angel who talked to him on Mount Sinai, and with our ancestors,  
and who received living truths to impart to you. Yet our ancestors 39  
refused him obedience; more than that, they rejected him, and in  
their hearts turned back to Egypt, while they said to Aaron — 40  
"Make us Gods who will lead the way for us, since, as for this  
Moses who has brought us out of Egypt, we do not know what

41 has become of him." That was the time when they made the calf  
 42 and offered sacrifice to their idol, and held festivities in honour  
 of their own handiwork! So God turned from them and left them  
 to the worship of the Starry Host, as is written in the book of the  
 prophets —

"Did you offer victims and sacrifices to me, house of Israel,  
 All those forty years in the desert?

43 You took with you the tent where Moloch is worshipped  
 And the star of the god Rephan —  
 The images which you had made to worship.  
 Therefore I will exile you beyond Babylon."

44 Our ancestors had the tent where they worshipped God in the  
 desert, constructed, just as he who spoke to Moses had directed  
 45 him to make it, after the model which he had seen. This tent,  
 which was handed down to them, was brought into this country  
 by our ancestors who accompanied Joshua (at the conquest of the  
 nations that God drove out before their advance), and remained  
 46 here until the time of David. David found favour with God, and  
 prayed that he might provide the God of Jacob with a place to  
 47 reside. But it was Solomon who built a house for God. Yet it is  
 48 not in buildings made by hands that the Most High dwells. As  
 the prophet says —

"The heavens are a throne for me,  
 And the earth a stool for my feet.  
 What manner of house will you build me, saith the Lord,  
 Or what place is there where I may rest?

50 Was it not my hand that made all these things?"

51 Stubborn people, heathen in heart and ears, you are for ever re-  
 sisting the Holy Spirit; your ancestors did it, and you are doing it  
 52 still. Which of the prophets escaped persecution at their hands?  
 They killed those who foretold the coming of the righteous one;  
 of whom you, in your turn, have now become the betrayers and  
 53 murderers — You who received the Law as transmitted by angels  
 and yet failed to keep it.'

54 As they listened to this, the Council grew frantic with rage, and  
 55 gnashed their teeth at Stephen. He, filled as he was with the Holy  
 Spirit, fixed his eyes intently on the heavens, and saw the glory of  
 God and Jesus standing at God's right hand.

'Look,' he exclaimed, 'I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at God's right hand!' At this, with a loud shout, they stopped their ears and all rushed on him, forced him outside the city, and began to stone him, the witnesses laying their clothes at the feet of a young man named Saul. And they stoned Stephen, while he cried to the Lord: 'Lord Jesus! Receive my spirit!' Falling on his knees, he called out loudly: 'Lord! Do not charge them with this sin;' and with these words he fell asleep.

Saul approved of his being put to death. 8

On that very day a great persecution broke out against the church which was in Jerusalem; and its members, with the exception of the apostles, were all scattered over the districts of Judea and Samaria. Some religious men buried Stephen, with loud lamentations for him. But Saul began to devastate the church; he entered house after house, dragged out men and women alike, and threw them into prison.

Now those who were scattered in different directions went from place to place proclaiming the good news. Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and there began to preach the Christ. The people, one and all, listened attentively to what Philip told them, when they heard of, and saw, the miracles which he was working. For there were many instances of people with foul spirits, where the spirits, with loud screams, came out of them; and many who were paralysed or lame were cured, so that there was great rejoicing throughout that city. There was staying in the city a man named Simon, who had been practicing magic there and mystifying the Samaritan people, giving himself out to be some great being. Everyone, high and low, paid attention to him. "This man," they used to say, "must be that power of God which people call 'The Great Power.'" And they paid attention to him because they had for a long time been mystified by his magic arts. However, when they came to believe Philip, as he told them the good news about the kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Even Simon believed, and after his baptism attached himself to Philip, and was in his turn mystified at seeing signs and great miracles constantly occurring.

When the apostles at Jerusalem heard that the Samaritans had welcomed God's message, they sent Peter and John to them; and they, on their arrival, prayed that the Samaritans might receive the

16 Holy Spirit. (As yet the Spirit had not descended on any of them; they had only been baptized into the faith of the Lord Jesus). Then  
 17 Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit.

18 When Simon saw that it was through the placing of the apostles' hands on them that the Spirit was given, he brought them a sum of money and said: 'Give me also this power of yours, so that, if I place my hands on anyone, he may receive the Holy Spirit.'

20 'A curse on you and on your money,' Peter exclaimed, 'for thinking that God's free gift can be bought with gold! You have no share or part in our message, for your "heart is not right with God." Therefore repent of this wickedness of yours, and pray to the Lord, that, if possible, you may be forgiven for such a thought; for I see that you have fallen into the "bitterness of envy" and the "fetters of sin."'

24 'Pray to the Lord for me, all of you,' Simon answered, 'so that none of the things you have spoken of may happen to me.'

25 Peter and John, having borne their testimony and delivered the Lord's message, returned to Jerusalem, telling the good news, as they went, in many Samaritan villages.

26 Meanwhile an angel of the Lord had said to Philip: 'Set out on a journey southwards, along the road that runs down from Jerusalem to Gaza.' (It is now deserted). So Philip set out on a journey; and on his way he came on an official of high rank, in the service of Candace, Queen of the Abyssinians. He was her treasurer, and had been to Jerusalem to worship, and was now on his way home, sitting in his carriage and reading the prophet Isaiah.

29 The Spirit said to Philip: 'Go up to the carriage over there and keep close to it.' So Philip ran up, and he heard the Abyssinian reading the prophet Isaiah.

31 'Do you understand what you are reading?' he asked. 'How can I,' the other answered, 'unless someone will explain it to me?'  
 32 and he invited Philip to get up and sit by his side. The passage of scripture which he was reading was this —

"Like a sheep, he was led away to slaughter,  
 And as a lamb is dumb in the hands of its shearer,  
 So he refrains from opening his lips.

33 He was humiliated and justice was denied him.



Who will tell the story of his generation?  
For his life is cut off from earth."

'Now,' said the Treasurer, addressing Philip, 'tell me, of whom 34  
is the prophet speaking? Of himself, or of someone else?' Then 35  
Philip began, and, taking this passage as his text, told him the  
good news about Jesus.

Presently, as they were going along the road, they came to some 36  
water, and the Treasurer exclaimed: 'Look! Here is water; what 38  
is to prevent my being baptized?' So he ordered the carriage to  
stop, and they went down into the water — both Philip and the 39  
Treasurer — and Philip baptized him. But, when they came up  
out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught Philip away, and 40  
the Treasurer saw no more of him; for he continued his journey  
with a joyful heart. But Philip was found at Ashdod, and, as he  
went on his way, he told the good news in all the towns through  
which he passed, until he came to Caesarea.

Meanwhile Saul, still breathing murderous threats against the 9  
disciples of the Lord, went to the high priest, and asked him to 2  
give him letters to the Jewish congregations at Damascus,  
authorising him, if he found there any supporters of the Way,  
whether men or women, to have them put in chains and brought  
to Jerusalem.

While on his journey, as he was nearing Damascus, suddenly a 3  
light from the heavens flashed around him. He fell to the ground 4  
and heard a voice saying to him — 'Saul, Saul, why are you per-  
secuting me?'

'Who are you, Lord?' he asked. 5

'I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting,' the voice answered;  
'Yet stand up and go into the city, and you will be told what you 6  
must do.'

The men traveling with Saul were meanwhile standing speech- 7  
less; they heard the sound of the voice, but saw no one. When Saul 8  
got up from the ground, though his eyes were open, he could see  
nothing. So his men led him by the hand, and brought him into 9  
Damascus; and for three days he was unable to see, and took  
nothing either to eat or to drink.

- 10 Now there was at Damascus a disciple named Ananias, to whom, in a vision, the Lord said: 'Ananias.'
- 11 'Yes, Lord,' he answered. 'Go at once,' said the Lord, 'to the "Straight Street", and ask at Judas's house for a man named Saul, from Tarsus. He is at this moment praying, and he has seen, in a vision, a man named Ananias coming in and placing his hands on him, so that he may recover his sight.'
- 12
- 13 'Lord,' exclaimed Ananias, 'I have heard from many people about this man — how much harm he has done at Jerusalem to your people there. And, here, too, he holds authority from the chief priests to put in chains all those who invoke your name.' But
- 14
- 15 the Lord said to him: 'Go, for this man is my chosen instrument to uphold my name before the Gentiles and their kings, and the people of Israel. I will myself show him all that he has to suffer for my name.'
- 16
- 17 So Ananias went, entered the house, and, placing his hands on Saul, said: 'Saul, my brother, I have been sent by the Lord — by Jesus, who appeared to you on your way here — so that you may recover your sight and be filled with the Holy Spirit.' Instantly it seemed as if a film fell from Saul's eyes, and his sight was restored.
- 18
- 19 Then he got up and was baptized, and, after he had taken food, he felt his strength return.

Saul stayed for some days with the disciples who were at Damascus, and at once began in the synagogues to proclaim Jesus as the Son of God. All who heard him were amazed.

20

21 'Is not this,' they asked, 'the man who worked havoc in Jerusalem among those that invoke this name, and who had also come here for the express purpose of having such persons put in chains and taken before the chief priests?' Saul's influence, however, kept steadily increasing, and he confounded the Jewish people who lived in Damascus by the proofs that he gave that Jesus was the Christ.

22

23 After some time some of them laid a plot to kill Saul, but it became known to him. They even watched the gates day and night, to kill him; but his disciples let him down by night through an opening in the wall, lowering him in a basket.

24

25

On his arrival in Jerusalem, Saul attempted to join the disciples, 26  
but they were all afraid of him, as they did not believe that he  
was really a disciple. Barnabas, however, taking him by the hand, 27  
brought him to the apostles, and told them the whole story of  
how Saul on his journey had seen the Lord, and how the Lord had  
talked to him, and how in Damascus he had spoken out fearlessly  
in the name of Jesus. After that, Saul remained in Jerusalem, in 28  
close intercourse with the apostles; and he spoke fearlessly in the  
name of the Lord, talking and arguing with the Jews of foreign 29  
birth, who, however, made attempts to kill him. But, when the 30  
followers found this out, they took him down to Caesarea, and  
sent him on his way to Tarsus.

And so it came about that the church, throughout Judea, Galilee, 31  
and Samaria, enjoyed peace and became firmly established; and,  
ordering its life by respect for the Lord and the help of the Holy  
Spirit, it increased in numbers.

Peter, while traveling from place to place throughout the country, 32  
went down to visit the people of Christ living at Lydda. There he 33  
found a man named Aeneas, who had been bedridden for eight  
years with paralysis. 'Aeneas,' Peter said to him, 'Jesus Christ 34  
cures you. Get up, and make your bed.' Aeneas got up at once;  
and all the inhabitants of Lydda and of the Plain of Sharon saw 35  
him, and came over to the Lord's side.

At Jaffa there lived a disciple whose name was Tabitha, which 36  
is in Greek "Dorcas" — a Gazelle. Her life was spent in doing kind  
and charitable actions. Just at that time she was taken ill, and 37  
died; and they had washed her body and laid it out in an upstairs  
room. Jaffa was near Lydda, and the disciples, having heard that 38  
Peter was at Lydda, sent two men with the request that he come  
to them without delay. Peter returned with them at once. On his 39  
arrival, he was taken upstairs, and all the widows came round

him in tears, showing the coats and other clothing which Dorcas  
40 had made while she was among them. But Peter sent everybody  
out of the room, and knelt down and prayed. Then, turning to the  
body, he said: 'Tabitha! Stand up.'  
41 She opened her eyes, and, seeing Peter, sat up. Giving her his  
hand, Peter raised her up, and, calling in the widows and others of  
42 Christ's people, presented her to them alive. This became known  
all through Jaffa, and numbers of people came to believe in the  
43 Lord. And Peter stayed some days at Jaffa with a tanner named  
Simon.

10 At Caesarea there was a man named Cornelius, a captain in the  
2 regiment known as the "Italian Regiment," A religious man and  
one who revered God, with all his household. He was liberal  
in his charities to the people, and prayed to God constantly. One  
3 afternoon, about three o'clock, he distinctly saw in a vision an  
4 angel from God come to him, and call him by name. Cornelius  
fixed his eyes on him and, in great alarm, said: 'What is it, Lord?'  
'Your prayers and your charities,' the angel answered, 'have  
5 been an acceptable offering to God. And now, send messengers  
to Jaffa and fetch a man called Simon, who is also known as Peter.  
6 He is lodging with a tanner named Simon, who has a house near  
the sea.'  
7 When the angel, who had spoken to him, had gone, Cornelius  
called two servants and a religious soldier, who was one of his  
8 constant attendants, and, after telling them the whole story, sent  
them to Jaffa.  
9 On the next day, while these men were on their way, just as  
they were nearing the town, Peter went up on the housetop about  
10 midday to pray. He became hungry and wanted something to eat;  
11 but while it was being prepared, he fell into a trance, and saw that  
the heavens were open, and that something like a great sail was  
12 descending, let down by its four corners towards the earth. In it  
13 were all kinds of quadrupeds, reptiles, and birds. Then he was  
aware of a voice which said — 'Stand up, Peter, kill something,  
and eat.'

'No, Lord, I cannot,' answered Peter, 'for I have never eaten 14  
anything "defiled" and "unclean".' Again he was aware of a voice 15  
which said — 'What God has pronounced "clean", do not regard  
as "defiled".' This happened three times, and then suddenly it 16  
was all taken up into the heavens.

While Peter was still perplexed as to the meaning of the vision 17  
that he had seen, the men sent by Cornelius, having enquired the  
way to Simon's house, came up to the gate, and called out and 18  
asked if the Simon, who was also known as Peter, was lodging  
there. Peter was still pondering over the vision, when the Spirit 19  
said to him: 'There are two men looking for you at this moment.  
Go down at once and do not hesitate to go with them, for I have 20  
sent them.'

Peter went down to the men and said: 'I am the person you are 21  
looking for. What is your reason for coming?'

The men replied: 'Our captain, Cornelius, a pious man who 22  
reverences God and is well spoken of by the whole Jewish nation,  
has been instructed by a holy angel to send for you to his house,  
and to listen to what you have to say.' So Peter invited them in 23  
and entertained them.

The next day he lost no time in setting out with them, accompa- 24  
nied by some of the Lord's followers from Jaffa; and the day fol-  
lowing he entered Caesarea. Cornelius was expecting them, and  
had invited his relatives and intimate friends to meet them. So,  
when Peter entered the city, Cornelius met him, and, throwing 25  
himself at Peter's feet, bowed to the ground. Peter, however, lifted 26  
him up, saying as he did so: 'Stand up, I am only human like your-  
self.'

Talking with him as he went, Peter entered the house, where 27  
he found a large gathering of people, to whom he said: 'You are 28  
doubtless aware that it is forbidden for a Jew to be intimate with  
a foreigner, or even to enter his house; and yet God has shown me  
that I ought not to call anyone "defiled" or "unclean." That was 29  
why I came, when I was sent for, without raising any objection.  
And now I ask your reason for sending for me.'

'Just three days ago this very hour,' Cornelius said, 'I was in 30  
my house, saying the Afternoon Prayers, when a man in dazzling  
clothing suddenly stood before me. "Cornelius," he said, "your 31  
prayer has been heard, and your charities have been accepted, by  
God. Therefore send to Jaffa, and invite the Simon, who is also 32

33 known as Peter, to come here. He is lodging in the house of Simon  
the tanner, near the sea." Accordingly I sent to you at once, and  
you have been so good as to come. And now we are all here in the  
presence of God, to listen to all that you have been instructed by  
34 the Lord to say.' Then Peter began.

'I see, beyond all doubt,' he said, 'that "God does not show partiality," But that in every nation he who reverences him and does  
35 what is right is acceptable to him. God has sent his message to the  
36 Israelites and told them, through Jesus Christ, the good news of  
37 peace — and Jesus is Lord of all! You yourselves know the story  
which spread through all Judea, how, beginning from Galilee, after  
38 the baptism which John proclaimed — The story, I mean, of  
Jesus of Nazareth, and how God consecrated him his Christ by  
enduing him with the Holy Spirit and with power; and how he  
went about doing good and curing all who were under the power  
39 of the devil, because God was with him. We are ourselves, too,  
witnesses to all that he did in Judea and in Jerusalem; yet they put  
40 him to death by hanging him on a cross! This Jesus God raised  
41 on the third day, and enabled him to appear, not indeed to every-  
one, but to witnesses chosen beforehand by God — to us, who ate  
and drank with him after his resurrection from the dead. Further,  
42 God charged us to proclaim to the people, and solemnly affirm,  
that it is Jesus who has been appointed by God judge of the living  
43 and the dead. To him it is that all the prophets bear witness, when  
they say that everyone who believes in him receives through his  
name forgiveness of sins.'

44 Before Peter had finished saying these words, the Holy Spirit  
45 fell on all who were listening to the message. Those converts from  
Judaism, who had come with Peter, were amazed that the gift of  
46 the Holy Spirit had been bestowed even on the Gentiles; for they  
heard them speaking with "tongues" and extolling God. At this  
47 Peter asked: 'Can anyone refuse the water for the baptism of these  
people, now that they have received the Holy Spirit as we did  
48 ourselves?' And he directed that they should be baptized in the  
faith of Jesus Christ; after which they asked him to stay there a  
few days longer.

The apostles and the followers throughout Judea heard that even 11  
 the Gentiles had welcomed God's message. But, when Peter went 2  
 up to Jerusalem, those who were converts from Judaism began to 3  
 attack him, on the ground that he had visited people who were 4  
 not circumcised, and had taken meals with them. So Peter began 5  
 to relate the facts to them as they had occurred. 'I was in the town 6  
 of Jaffa,' he said, 'and was praying; and, while in a trance, I saw a 7  
 vision. There was something like a great sail descending, let down 8  
 by its four corners out of the heavens; and it came right down to 9  
 me. Looking intently at it, I began to distinguish quadrupeds, 10  
 wild beasts, reptiles, and birds; and I also heard a voice saying 11  
 to me — "Stand up, Peter, kill something and eat." "No, Lord, I 12  
 cannot," I answered, "for nothing "defiled" or "unclean" has ever 13  
 passed my lips." Then a second time there came a voice from the 14  
 heavens. 'What God has pronounced "clean";' it said, 'you must 15  
 not call "defiled".' This happened three times, and then all was 16  
 drawn up again into the heavens. At that moment three men, who 17  
 had been sent from Caesarea to see me, came up to the house in 18  
 which we were. The Spirit told me to go with them without hes-  
 itation. These six companions also went with me. And, when we  
 came into the man's house, he told us how he had seen the an-  
 gel standing in his house, and how the angel had said to him —  
 "Send to Jaffa and fetch the Simon, who is also known as Peter; for  
 he will tell you truths, which will prove the means of salvation to  
 you and all your household." I had but just begun to speak,' con-  
 tinued Peter, 'when the Holy Spirit fell on them, exactly as on us  
 at the first; and I recalled the saying of the Master — "John bap-  
 tized with water, but you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit."  
 Since then, God had given them the very same gift as he gave us  
 when we became believers in Jesus Christ the Master — who was  
 I that I could thwart God?'

On hearing this statement, they said no more, but broke out 18  
 into praise of God. 'So even to the Gentiles,' they exclaimed, 'God  
 has granted the repentance which leads to life!'

Now those who had been scattered in different directions, in con- 19  
 sequence of the persecution that followed the death of Stephen,

20 went as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch, telling the mes-  
21 sage — but only to Jews. Some of them, however, who were men  
22 of Cyprus and Cyrene, on coming to Antioch, addressed them-  
23 selves also to the Jews of foreign birth, telling them the good news  
24 about that Lord Jesus. The power of the Lord was with them, so  
25 that a great number who had learned to believe came over to the  
26 Lord's side. The news about them reached the ears of the church  
at Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch. On coming there  
he saw to his great joy these tokens of the loving kindness of God,  
and encouraged them all to make up their minds to be faithful to  
the Lord — For Barnabas was a good man and full of the Holy  
Spirit and of faith — and a large number of people took their stand  
on the Lord's side. Afterwards Barnabas left for Tarsus to look  
for Saul; and, when he had found him, he brought him to Anti-  
och. And so it came about that, for a whole year, they attended  
the meetings of the church there, and taught a large number of  
people; and it was in Antioch that the disciples were first called  
"Christians."

27 During this time, some prophets came to Antioch from  
28 Jerusalem. One of them, named Agabus, came forward and,  
under the influence of the Spirit, foretold a great famine that  
was to spread over all the world — a famine which occurred in  
29 the reign of Claudius. So the disciples, without exception,  
determined, in proportion to their means, to send something to  
30 help the followers living in Judea. And this they did, sending it  
to the church elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

12 It was at that time that King Herod began to ill-treat some of the  
2 members of the church. He had James, the brother of John, be-  
3 headed; and, when he saw that the Jews were pleased with this,  
he proceeded to arrest Peter also. (This was during the Festival  
4 of the unleavened bread.) After seizing Peter, Herod put him in  
prison, and entrusted him to the keeping of four Guards of four



soldiers each, intending, after the Passover, to bring him up before the people. So Peter was kept in prison, but meanwhile the prayers of the church were being earnestly offered to God on his behalf. Just when Herod was intending to bring him before the people, on that very night Peter was asleep between two soldiers, chained to them both, while there were sentries in front of the door, guarding the prison. Suddenly an angel of the Lord stood by him, and a light shone in the cell. The angel struck Peter on the side, and roused him with the words: 'Get up quickly.' The chains dropped from his wrists, and then the angel said: 'Put on your belt and sandals.' When Peter had done so, the angel added: 'Throw your cloak round you and follow me.'

Peter followed him out, not knowing that what was happening under the angel's guidance was real, but thinking that he was seeing a vision. Passing the first Guard, and then the second, they came to the iron gate leading into the city, which opened to them of itself; and, when they had passed through that, and had walked along one street, all at once the angel left him.

Then Peter came to himself and said: 'Now I know beyond all doubt that the Lord has sent his angel, and has rescued me from Herod's hands and from all that the Jewish people have been expecting.' As soon as he realized what had happened, he went to the house of Mary, the mother of John who was also known as Mark, where a number of people were gathered together, praying. On his knocking at the door in the gate, a maidservant, named Rhoda, came to answer it. She recognized Peter's voice, but in her joy left the gate unopened, and ran in, and told them that Peter was standing outside.

'You are mad!' they exclaimed. But, when she persisted that it was so, they said: 'It must be his spirit!'

Meanwhile Peter went on knocking, and, when they opened the gate and saw him, they were amazed. Peter signed to them with his hand to be silent, and then told them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison, adding: 'Tell James and the others all this.' Then he left the house, and went away to another place.

In the morning there was a great stir among the soldiers — what could have become of Peter! And, when Herod had made further search for him and failed to find him, he closely questioned the Guard, and ordered them away to execution. Then he went down from Judea to stay at Caesarea.

- 20 It happened that Herod was deeply offended with the people of Tyre and Sidon, but they went in a body to him, and, having succeeded in winning over Blastus, the Chamberlain, they begged Herod for a reconciliation, because their country was dependent
- 21 on the king's for its food supply. On an appointed day Herod, wearing his state robes, seated himself on his throne, and delivered an oration. The people kept shouting: 'It is the voice of God, and not of a person!'
- 22
- 23 Instantly an angel of the Lord struck him, because he did not give God the glory; and he was attacked with worms, and died.
- 24 Meanwhile the Lord's message kept extending, and spreading far and wide.

- 25 When Barnabas and Saul had carried out their mission, they returned to Jerusalem, and took with them John, who was also known as Mark.

### *The Church and the Gentiles*

#### *Doings of the Apostle Paul*

- 13 AMONG THE MEMBERS OF THE CHURCH AT ANTIOCH THERE WERE several prophets and teachers — Barnabas, Simeon who was known by the name of "Black", Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen,
- 2 foster-brother of Prince Herod, and Saul. While they were engaged in the worship of the Lord and were fasting, the Holy Spirit said: 'Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul, for the work to
- 3 which I have called them.' Accordingly, after fasting and prayer, they placed their hands on them and dismissed them.
- 4 Barnabas and Saul, sent on this mission, as they were, by the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia, and from there sailed to Cyprus.
- 5 On reaching Salamis, they began to tell the message of God in the Jewish synagogues; and they had John with them as an assistant.
- 6 After passing through the whole island, they reached Paphos, where they found an astrologer who pretended to be a prophet
- 7 — a Jew by birth, whose name was Barjoshua. He was at the

court of the Governor, Sergius Paulus, a man of intelligence, who sent for Barnabas and Saul and asked to be told God's message. But Elymas, the astrologer (for that is the meaning of the word), 8 opposed them, eager to divert the Governor's attention from the faith. However, Saul (who is the same as Paul), full of the Holy Spirit, fixed his eyes on him and said: 'You incarnation of deceit and all fraud! You son of the devil! You opponent of all that is good! Will you never cease to divert "the straight paths of the Lord"? Listen! The hand of the Lord is on you even now, and you will be blind for a time and unable to see the sun.' Immediately a mist and darkness fell on him, and he went feeling about for someone to guide him. When the Governor saw what had happened, he became a believer in Christ, being greatly impressed by the teaching about the Lord. 11 12

After this, Paul and his companions set sail from Paphos and went to Perga in Pamphylia, where John left them and returned to Jerusalem. The others went on from Perga and arrived at Antioch in Pisidia. There they went into the synagogue on the Sabbath and took their seats. After the reading of the Law and the prophets, the synagogue leader sent them this message — 'Friends, if you have any helpful words to address to the people, now is the time to speak.' So Paul rose and, motioning with his hand, said: 13 14 15 16

'People of Israel and all here who worship God, hear what I have to say. The God of this people Israel chose our ancestors, and during their stay in Egypt increased the prosperity of the people, and then "with uplifted arm brought them out from that land." For about forty years "he bore with them in the desert"; then, after destroying seven heathen nations in Canaan, he allotted their land to this people — For about four hundred and fifty years. In later times he gave them Judges, of whom the prophet Samuel was the last. And, when they demanded a king, God gave them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, who reigned for forty years. After removing him, he raised David to the throne, and bore this testimony to him — "In David, the son of Jesse, I have found a man after my own heart, who will carry out all my purposes." It was from this man's descendants that God, in 17 18 19 20 21 22 23

24 accordance with his promise, gave Israel a Saviour — Jesus; John  
 25 having first proclaimed, before the appearance of Jesus, a baptism  
 on repentance for all the people of Israel. As John was drawing  
 towards the end of his career, he said what do you suppose that I  
 am? I am not the Christ. But there is ‘one coming’ after me, whose  
 26 sandal I am not worthy to untie.” Brothers and sisters, descen-  
 dants of Abraham, and all those among you who worship God,  
 27 it was to us that the message of this salvation was sent. The peo-  
 ple of Jerusalem and their leaders, failing to recognise Jesus, and  
 not understanding the utterances of the prophets that are read  
 28 every Sabbath, fulfilled them by condemning him. They found  
 no ground at all for putting him to death, and yet demanded his  
 29 execution from Pilate; and, after carrying out everything written  
 about him, they took Jesus down from the cross, and laid him in  
 30 a tomb. But God raised him from the dead; and he appeared for  
 31 many days to those who had gone up with him from Galilee to  
 Jerusalem, and who are now witnesses for him to the people. We  
 32 also have good news to tell you, about the promise made to our  
 33 ancestors — That our children have had this promise completely  
 fulfilled to them by God, by his raising Jesus. That is just what is  
 said in the second Psalm —

“You are my Son; this day I have become your Father.”

34 As to his raising Jesus from the dead, never again to return to  
 corruption, this is what is said —

“I will give to you the sacred promises made to David;”

35 And, therefore, in another Psalm it is said —

“You will not give up the Holy One to undergo corrup-  
 tion.”

36 David, after obediently doing God’s will in his own time, “fell  
 asleep and was laid by the side of his ancestors, and did undergo  
 37 corruption; but Jesus, whom God raised from the dead, did not  
 38 undergo corruption. I would, therefore, like you to know, friends,  
 that through Jesus forgiveness of sins is being proclaimed to you,  
 39 and that, in union with him, everyone who believes in him is  
 absolved from every sin from which under the Law of Moses you  
 40 could not be absolved. Beware, therefore, that what is said in the  
 prophets does not come true of you —

“Look, you despisers, and wonder, and perish; 41  
 For I am doing a deed in your days —  
 A deed which, though told you in full, you will never  
 believe”.’

As Paul and Barnabas were leaving the synagogue, the people 42  
 begged for a repetition of this teaching on the next Sabbath. Af- 43  
 ter the congregation had dispersed, many of the Jews, and of the  
 converts who joined in their worship, followed Paul and Barn-  
 abas, who talked with them and urged them to continue to rely  
 on the loving kindness of God.

On the following Sabbath, almost all the city gathered to hear 44  
 God’s message. But the sight of the crowds of people filled the 45  
 minds of the Jews with jealousy, and they kept contradicting  
 Paul’s statements in violent language. Then Paul and Barnabas 46  
 spoke out fearlessly, and said:

‘It was necessary that the message of God should be told to you 47  
 first; but, since you reject it and reckon yourselves not worthy of  
 the eternal life — we turn to the Gentiles! For this is the Lord’s  
 command to us —

“I have destined you for a light to the Gentiles,  
 A means of salvation to the ends of the earth”.’

On hearing this, the Gentiles were glad and extolled God’s mes- 48  
 sage; and all those who had been enrolled for eternal life became  
 believers in Christ; and the Lord’s message was carried through- 49  
 out that district. But the Jews incited the women of high social 50  
 standing who worshiped with them, and the leading men of the  
 town, and started a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and  
 drove them out of their region. They, however, shook the dust off 51  
 their feet in protest, and went to Iconium, leaving the disciples 52  
 full of joy and of the Holy Spirit.

The same thing occurred in Iconium, where Paul and Barnabas 14  
 went into the Jewish synagogue, and spoke in such a way that  
 a great number of both Jews and Greeks believed in Christ. But 2  
 the Jews who refused to believe stirred up the Gentiles, and poi-  
 soned their minds against the Lord’s followers. Therefore Paul 3

and Barnabas spent a long time there, and spoke out fearlessly, relying on the Lord, who confirmed the message of his love by  
4 permitting signs and wonders to take place at their hands. But  
5 the townspeople were divided, some siding with the Jews, some  
6 with the apostles; and, when there was an attempt on the part  
7 of both Gentiles and Jews, with their leaders, to resort to violence  
8 and to stone them, the apostles heard of it, and took refuge in  
9 Lystra and Derbe, towns in Lycaonia, and in the district round,  
10 and there they continued to tell the good news.

11 In the streets of Lystra there used to sit a man who had no  
12 power in his feet; he had been lame from his birth, and had never  
13 walked. This man was listening to Paul speaking, when Paul,  
14 looking intently at him, and seeing that he had the faith to be  
15 healed, said loudly: 'Stand upright on your feet.'

16 The man leaped up, and began walking about, and the crowd,  
17 seeing what Paul had done, called out in the Lycaonian language:  
18 'The Gods have come down to us in human form.' So they called  
19 Barnabas "Zeus," and Paul "Hermes," because he took the lead in  
20 speaking; and the priest of Zeus-beyond-the-Walls, accompanied  
21 by the crowd, brought bullocks and garlands to the gates, with the  
22 intention of offering sacrifices. But, when the apostles Barnabas  
23 and Paul heard of it, they tore their clothes and rushed out into  
24 the crowd.

25 'Friends, why are you doing this?' they shouted. 'We are only  
26 people like yourselves, and we have come with the good news  
27 that you should turn away from these follies to a living God,  
28 "who made the heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything that  
29 is in them." In bygone times he permitted all the nations to go  
30 their own ways. Yet he has not failed to give you, in the good he  
31 does, some revelation of himself — sending you from heaven  
32 rain and fruitful seasons, and gladdening your hearts with  
33 plenty and good cheer.' Even with this appeal they could hardly  
34 restrain the people from offering sacrifice to them.

35 Presently, however, there came some Jews from Antioch, and  
36 Iconium who, after they had won over the people, stoned Paul,  
37 and dragged him out of the town, thinking him to be dead. But,  
38 when the disciples had gathered round him, he got up and went  
39 back into the town; the next day he went with Barnabas to Derbe.  
40 After telling the good news throughout that town, and making  
41

a number of converts, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch, reassuring the minds of the disciples, urging them to remain true to the faith, and showing that it is only through many troubles that we can enter the kingdom of God. They also appointed elders for them in every church, and, after prayer and fasting, commended them to the Lord in whom they had learned to believe. Paul and Barnabas then went through Pisidia, and came into Pamphylia, and, after telling the message at Perga, went down to Attaleia. From there they sailed to Antioch — the place where they had been committed to the gracious care of God for the work which they had now finished. After their arrival, they gathered the church together, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do, and especially how he had opened to the Gentiles the door of faith; and at Antioch they stayed with the disciples for a considerable time.

But certain persons came down from Judea, and began to teach the Lord's followers that, unless they were circumcised, in accordance with the custom required by Moses, they could not be saved. This gave rise to a serious dispute, and much discussion, between Paul and Barnabas and these people, and it was therefore settled that Paul and Barnabas and others of their number should go up to Jerusalem, to consult the apostles and church elders about the matter under discussion.

The church, therefore, sent them on their journey, and they made their way through Phoenicia and Samaria, telling the story of the conversion of the Gentiles, to the great joy of all the followers. On their arrival at Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the church, as well as by the apostles and the elders, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do. Some of the Pharisees' party, however, who had become believers in Christ, came forward and declared that they were bound to circumcise converts and to direct them to observe the Law of Moses. The apostles and the church elders held a meeting to consider this question. After much discussion, Peter rose and said:

'You, my friends, know well that long ago God singled me out — that through my lips the Gentiles should hear the message of the good news, and become believers in Christ. Now God, who

- reads all hearts, declared his acceptance of the Gentiles, by giving  
 9 them the Holy Spirit, just as he did to us. He made no distinction  
 between them and us, when he purified their hearts by their faith.  
 10 Why, then, do you now provoke God, by putting on the necks of  
 these disciples a yoke which neither our ancestors nor we were  
 11 able to bear? No, it is through the loving kindness of the Lord  
 Jesus that we, just as they do, believe that we have been saved.’  
 12 Every voice in the assembly was hushed, as they listened to  
 Barnabas and Paul, while they gave an account of all the signs  
 and wonders which God had shown among the Gentiles through  
 13 them. After they had finished speaking, James addressed the  
 Council.  
 14 ‘Friends,’ he began, ‘hear what I have to say. Simon has de-  
 scribed the manner in which God first visited the Gentiles, in or-  
 15 der to take from among them a people to bear his name. And that  
 is in harmony with the words of the prophets, where they say —  
 16 “After this I will return;  
 And I will rebuild the house of David which has fallen —  
 Its ruins I will rebuild,  
 And will set it up once more;  
 17 That so the rest of mankind may earnestly seek the Lord  
 —  
 Even all the Gentiles on whom my name has been  
 bestowed.  
 18 Says the Lord, as he does these things, foreknown from  
 of old.”  
 19 In my judgment, therefore, we should not add to the difficulties  
 20 of those Gentiles who are turning to God, but we should write  
 to them to abstain from food that has been polluted by being sac-  
 rificed to idols, from impurity, from eating the flesh of strangled  
 21 animals, and from blood. For in every town, for generations past,  
 there have been those who preach Moses, read as he is in the syn-  
 agogues every Sabbath.’  
 22 It was then decided by the apostles and the elders, with the  
 assent of the whole church, to choose some of their number, and  
 send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. Those chosen were  
 Judas (called Barsabas) and Silas, who were leaders among the  
 23 community. They were bearers of the following letter —



“The apostles, and the followers who are the church elders,  
 send their greetings to the followers of the Lord of Gentile  
 birth in Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia. As we had heard that  
 some of our number had upset you by their assertions, and  
 unsettled your minds — without instructions from us —  
 We met and decided to choose certain men and send them  
 to you with our dear friends Barnabas and Paul, who have  
 risked their lives for the name of our Lord, Jesus Christ.  
 We are accordingly sending Judas and Silas, and they will  
 tell you by word of mouth what we are now writing. We  
 have, therefore, decided, under the guidance of the Holy  
 Spirit, to lay no further burden on you beyond these nec-  
 essary conditions — That you abstain from food offered  
 to idols, from blood, from eating the flesh of strangled an-  
 imals, and from impurity. If you guard yourselves against  
 such things, it will be well with you. Farewell.”

So the bearers of this letter were sent on their way, and went down  
 to Antioch. There they called a meeting of all the followers, and  
 delivered the letter, the reading of which caused great rejoicing by  
 its encouraging contents. Judas and Silas, who were themselves  
 prophets, further encouraged the them by many an address, and  
 strengthened their faith. After some stay, they were dismissed  
 with kind farewells from the followers, and returned to those who  
 had sent them.

Paul and Barnabas, however, remained in Antioch, where they  
 taught and, with the help of many others, told the good news of  
 the Lord’s message. Some time after this, Paul said to Barnabas:  
 ‘Let us go back and visit the Lord’s followers in every town in  
 which we have told the Lord’s message, and see how they are  
 prospering.’ Barnabas wished to take with them John, whose  
 other name was Mark; but Paul felt that they ought not to take  
 with them the man who had deserted them in Pamphylia, and  
 had not gone on with them to their work. This caused such un-  
 pleasant feeling between them that they parted ways, Barnabas  
 taking Mark and sailing for Cyprus, while Paul chose Silas for  
 his companion and, after he had been committed by the followers  
 to the gracious care of the Lord, started on his journey and went  
 through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the churches in the faith.

16 Among other places Paul went to Derbe and Lystra. At the latter place they found a disciple, named Timothy, whose mother was a Jewish woman who was a believer, while his father was a  
2 Greek, and who was well spoken of by the followers of the Lord  
3 in Lystra and Iconium. Wishing to take this man with him on his journey, Paul caused him to be circumcised out of consideration for the Jews in that region, for they all knew that his father had  
4 been a Greek. As they traveled from town to town, they gave the followers the decisions which had been reached by the apostles and church elders at Jerusalem, for them to observe.

5 So the churches grew stronger in the faith, and increased in numbers from day to day.

6 They next went through the Phrygian district of Galatia, but were restrained by the Holy Spirit from delivering the message  
7 in Roman Asia. When they reached the borders of Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia, but the Spirit of Jesus did not permit them. Passing through Mysia, they went down to Troas; and  
8 there one night Paul saw a vision. A Macedonian was standing and appealing to him — “Come over to Macedonia and help us.”  
9 So, immediately after Paul had seen the vision, we looked for an opportunity to cross over to Macedonia, concluding that God had summoned us to tell the good news to the people there.

11 Accordingly we set sail from Troas, and ran before the wind to  
12 Samothrace, reaching Neapolis the next day. From there we made our way to Philippi, which is the principal city of that part of Macedonia, and also a Roman Settlement.

13 In that city we spent several days. On the Sabbath we went outside the gate to the riverside, where we supposed there would be a place of prayer; and we sat down and talked to the women  
14 who were gathered there. Among them was a woman, named Lydia, belonging to Thyatira, a dealer in purple cloth, who was accustomed to join in the worship of God. The Lord touched this woman’s heart, so that she gave attention to the message delivered by Paul, and,  
15 when she and her household had been baptized, she urged us to become her guests.

‘Since you have shown your conviction,’ she said, ‘that I really am a believer in the Lord, come and stay in my house.’ And she insisted on our doing so.

One day, as we were on our way to the place of prayer, we were met by a girl possessed by a divining spirit, who made large profits for her masters by fortune-telling. This girl followed Paul and the rest of us, calling: ‘These men are servants of the most high God, and they are bringing you news of a way to salvation.’ She had been doing this for several days, when Paul, much vexed, turned and said to the spirit within her: ‘In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to leave her.’ That very moment the spirit left her.

When her masters saw that there was no hope of further profit from her, they seized Paul and Silas, dragged them into the public square to the authorities, and took them before the Magistrates.

‘These men are causing a great disturbance in our town,’ they complained; ‘They are Jews, and they are teaching customs which it is not right for us, as Romans, to sanction or adopt.’

The mob rose as one person against them, and the Magistrates stripped them of their clothing and ordered them to be beaten with rods. After beating them severely, the Magistrates put them in prison, with orders to the jailer to keep them in safe custody. On receiving so strict an order, the Governor put them into the inner cell, and secured their feet in the stocks. About midnight, while Paul and Silas were praying and singing hymns to God, and while the prisoners were listening to them, suddenly there was an earthquake of such violence that the jail was shaken to its foundations; all the doors flew open, and all the prisoners’ chains were loosened. Roused from his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, the Governor drew his sword intending to kill himself, in the belief that the prisoners had escaped. But Paul called our loudly: ‘Do not harm yourself; we are all here.’

Calling for a light, the Governor rushed in, and flung himself trembling at the feet of Paul and Silas. Then he led them out, and said: ‘What must I do to be saved?’

‘Believe in Jesus, our Lord,’ they replied, ‘and you will be saved, you and your household too.’ Then they spoke to him of God’s message, and to all his household as well. And that very hour of the night he took them and washed their wounds, and he himself and everyone belonging to him were baptized

- 34 without delay. Afterwards he took them up to his house and set before them something to eat, rejoicing that he, with all his household, had come to believe in God.
- 35 In the morning the Magistrates sent the police with an order for  
36 the men to be discharged. The jailer told Paul of his instructions. 'The Magistrates have sent an order for your discharge,' he said, 'so you had better leave the place at once and go quietly away.'
- 37 But Paul's answer to them was: 'They have flogged us in public without trial, though we are Roman citizens, and they have put us in prison, and now they are for sending us out secretly! No, indeed! Let them come and take us out themselves.' The police reported his words to the Magistrates, who, on hearing that Paul  
38 and Silas were Roman citizens, were alarmed, and went to the prison, and did their best to conciliate them. Then they took them  
39 out, and begged them to leave the city. When Paul and Silas left the prison, they went to Lydia's house, and, after they had seen the Lord's followers, and encouraged them, they left the place.
- 17 After passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, Paul and Silas  
2 came to Thessalonica. Here the Jews had a synagogue; and, following his usual custom, Paul joined them, and for three Sabbaths addressed them, drawing his arguments from the scriptures. He  
3 laid before them and explained that the Christ must undergo suffering and rise from the dead; and 'It is this man,' he declared, 'who is the Christ — this Jesus about whom I am telling you.'
- 4 Some of the people were convinced, and threw in their lot with Paul and Silas, as did also a large body of Greeks who were accustomed to join in the Jewish services, and a great number of leading women. But the Jewish leaders, becoming jealous, engaged  
5 some worthless fellows from the streets, and, getting a mob together, kept the city in an uproar. They attacked Jason's house, with the intention of bringing Paul and Silas before the Popular  
6 Assembly; and, not finding them there, they proceeded to drag Jason and some of the Lord's followers before the city magistrates, shouting out:
- 7 'These men, who have turned the world upside down, have now come here, and have been harboured by Jason! They are all

defying the decrees of the Emperor. They say that someone else is king — a man called Jesus!

On hearing this, the people and the city magistrates were much 8  
concerned; and, before letting them go, they took bail from Jason 9  
and the others. That very night the followers sent Paul and Silas 10  
off to Beroea; and on reaching that place, they went to the Jew- 11  
ish synagogue. These Jews of Beroea were better disposed than 12  
those in Thessalonica, for they welcomed the message with great 13  
readiness, and daily examined the scriptures to see if what was 14  
said was true. As a consequence, many of them became believ- 15  
ers in Christ, besides a considerable number of Greek women of  
position, and of men also. But, when the Jewish leaders in Thessa-  
lonica found out that God's message had been delivered by Paul  
at Beroea, they came there too, exciting and disturbing the minds  
of the people. The followers immediately arranged for Paul to go  
away to the coast, but both Silas and Timothy stayed behind in  
Beroea. The friends who escorted Paul took him as far as Athens,  
and, after receiving a message for Silas and Timothy to join him  
as quickly as possible, they started on their return.

While Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his heart was stirred 16  
at seeing the whole city full of idols. So he argued in the syna- 17  
gogue with the Jews and with those who joined in their worship,  
as well as daily in the public Square with those who happened to  
be there. Among others, some Epicurean and Stoic Philosophers 18  
joined issue with him. Some asked 'What is this prater wanting  
to make out?'; while others said 'He seems to be a preacher of  
foreign Deities.' (This was because he was telling the good news  
about Jesus and the resurrection). So they laid hold of him and 19  
took him to the Court of Areopagus.

'May we hear,' they asked, 'what new teaching this is which you  
are giving? For you are bringing some strange things to our no- 20  
tice, and we should like to know what they mean.' (All Athenians 21  
and the foreigners staying in the city found no time for anything  
else but telling, or listening to, the last new thing.)

So Paul took his stand in the middle of the Court, and said — 22  
'People of Athens, on every hand I see signs of your being very 23  
devout. For as I was going about, looking at your sacred shrines,

I came upon an altar with this inscription — “To an Unknown God.” What, therefore, you worship in ignorance, that I am now  
 24 proclaiming to you. The God who made the world and all things  
 25 that are in it — he, Lord as he is of heaven and Earth, does not live  
 26 in temples made by hands, neither do human hands minister to  
 his wants, as though he needed anything, since he himself gives,  
 27 to all, life, and breath, and all things. He made all races of the  
 earth’s surface — fixing a time for their rise and fall, and the limits  
 28 of their settlements — That they might search for God, if by any  
 means they might feel their way to him and find him. And yet he  
 is not really far from any one of us; for in him we live and move  
 and are. To use the words of some of your own poets —

“His offspring, too, are we.”

29 Therefore, as the offspring of God, we must not think that the  
 Deity has any resemblance to anything made of gold, or silver, or  
 30 stone — a work of human art and imagination. True, God looked  
 with indulgence on the days of people’s ignorance, but now he  
 is announcing to everyone everywhere the need for repentance,  
 31 because he has fixed a day on which he intends to “judge the  
 world with justice,” by a man whom he has appointed — and of  
 this he has given all people a pledge by raising this man from the  
 dead.’

32 On hearing of a resurrection of the dead, some began jeer-  
 ing, but others said that they wanted to hear what he had to say  
 33 about that another time. And so Paul left the Court. There were,  
 34 however, some people who joined him, and became believers in  
 Christ. Among them were Dionysius, a member of the Court of  
 Areopagus, a woman named Damaris, and several others.

18 On leaving Athens, Paul next went to Corinth. There he met  
 2 a Jew of the name of Aquila, from Pontus, who, with his wife  
 Priscilla, had lately come from Italy, in consequence of the order  
 which had been issued by the Emperor Claudius for all Jews to  
 3 leave Rome. Paul paid them a visit, and, since their trade was  
 the same as his, he stayed and worked with them — their trade  
 4 was tent-making. Every Sabbath Paul gave addresses in the syn-  
 agogue, trying to convince both Jews and Greeks.

5 But, when Silas and Timothy had come down from Macedonia,  
 Paul devoted himself entirely to delivering the message, earnestly  
 maintaining before the Jews that Jesus was the Christ. However,

as they set themselves against him and became abusive, Paul 6  
shook his clothes in protest and said to them: 'Your blood be on  
your own heads. My conscience is clear. From this time forward I  
will go to the Gentiles.'

So he left, and went to the house of a certain Titius Justus, who 7  
had been accustomed to join in the worship of God, and whose  
house was next door to the synagogue. Crispus, the synagogue 8  
leader, came to believe in the Lord, and so did all his household;  
and many of the Corinthians, as they listened to Paul, became  
believers in Christ and were baptized. One night the Lord said to 9  
Paul, in a vision: 'Have no fear, but continue to speak, and refuse  
to be silenced; for I am with you, and no one will do you harm,  
for I have many people in this city.' So he settled there for a year 10  
and a half, and taught God's message among the people. 11

While Gallio was governor of Greece, some of the Jewish lead- 12  
ers made a combined attack on Paul, and brought him before the  
Governor's Bench, charging him with persuading people to wor- 13  
ship God in a way forbidden by the Law. Just as Paul was on the  
point of speaking, Gallio said to them: 14

'If this were a case of misdemeanour or some serious crime,  
there would be some reason for my listening patiently to you; but,  
since it is a dispute about words, and names, and your own Law, 15  
you must see to it yourselves. I do not choose to be a judge in such  
matters.'

Saying this, he drove them back from the Bench. Then they all 16  
set on Sosthenes, the synagogue leader, and beat him in front of  
the Bench, but Gallio did not trouble himself about any of these 17  
things.

Paul remained there some time after this, and then took leave 18  
of the followers, and sailed to Syria with Priscilla and Aquila, but  
not before his head had been shaved at Cenchreae, because he  
was under a vow. They put into Ephesus, and there Paul, leav- 19  
ing his companions, went into the synagogue and addressed the  
Jews. When they asked him to prolong his stay, he declined, say- 20  
ing however, as he took his leave, 'I will come back again to you,  
please God,' and then set sail from Ephesus. On reaching Cae- 22  
sarea, he went up to Jerusalem and exchanged greetings with the  
church, and then went down to Antioch. After making some stay 23  
in Antioch, he set out on a tour through the Phrygian district of  
Galatia, strengthening the faith of all the disciples as he went.

24 Meanwhile there had come to Ephesus an Alexandrian Jew,  
25 named Apollos, an eloquent man, who was well-versed in the  
26 scriptures. He had been well-instructed in the Way of the Lord,  
27 and with burning zeal he spoke of, and taught carefully, the  
28 facts about Jesus, though he knew of no baptism but John's. This  
29 man began to speak out fearlessly in the synagogue; and when  
30 Priscilla and Aquila heard him, they took him home and  
31 explained the Way of God to him more carefully still. When he  
32 wanted to cross to Greece, the followers furthered his plans, and  
33 wrote to the disciples there to welcome him. On his arrival he  
34 proved of great assistance to those who had, through the loving  
35 kindness of God, become believers in Christ, for he vigorously  
36 confuted the Jews, publicly proving by the scriptures that Jesus  
37 was the Christ.

19 While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul passed through the inland  
20 districts of Roman Asia, and went to Ephesus. There he found  
21 some disciples, of whom he asked: 'Did you, when you became  
22 believers in Christ, receive the Holy Spirit?'

'No,' they answered, 'we did not even hear that there was a  
23 Holy Spirit.'

24 'What then was your baptism?' Paul asked. 'John's baptism  
25 was a baptism on repentance,' rejoined Paul, 'and John told the  
26 people (speaking of the "one coming" after him) that they should  
27 believe in him — that is in Jesus.'

28 On hearing this, they were baptized into the faith of the Lord  
29 Jesus, and, after Paul had placed his hands on them, the Holy  
30 Spirit descended on them, and they began to speak with  
31 "tongues" and to preach. There were about twelve of them in all.

32 Paul went to the synagogue there, and for three months spoke  
33 out fearlessly, giving addresses and trying to convince his hear-  
34 ers, about the kingdom of God. Some of them, however, hard-  
35 ened their hearts and refused to believe, denouncing the Way be-  
36 fore the people. So Paul left them and withdrew his disciples, and  
37 gave daily addresses in the lecture-hall of Tyrannus. This went  
38 on for two years, so that all who lived in Roman Asia, Jews and  
39 Greeks alike, heard the Lord's message.

11 God did miracles of no ordinary kind by Paul's hands; so that  
12 people would carry home to the sick handkerchiefs or aprons that



had touched his body, and their diseases would leave them and the wicked spirits go out of them. An attempt was made by some itinerant Jews, who were exorcists, to use the name of the Lord Jesus over those who had wicked spirits in them. 13

'I order you,' they would say, 'by the Jesus, whom Paul preaches.' The seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish chief priest, were doing this; but the wicked spirit answered them: 'Jesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know, but you — who are you?' 14 15

Then the man, in whom this wicked spirit was, sprang on them, mastered both of them, and so completely overpowered them, that they fled out of the house, stripped of their clothes, and wounded. This incident came to the knowledge of all the Jews and Greeks living at Ephesus; they were all awe-struck, and the name of the Lord Jesus was held in the highest honour. Many, too, of those who had become believers in Christ came with a full confession of their practices; while a number of people, who had practiced magic, collected their books and burnt them publicly; and on reckoning up the price of these, they found it amounted to fifty thousand silver coins. So irresistibly did the Lord's message spread and prevail. 16 17 18 19 20

Sometime after these events Paul resolved to go through Macedonia and Greece, and then make his way to Jerusalem. 'And after I have been there,' he said, 'I must visit Rome also.' So he sent to Macedonia two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, while he himself stayed for some time longer in Roman Asia. 21 22

Just about that time a great disturbance arose about the Way. A silversmith named Demetrius, who made silver models of the shrine of Artemis, and so gave a great deal of work to the artisans, got these men together, as well as the workmen engaged in similar occupations, and said: 23 24 25

'Men, you know that our prosperity depends on this work, and you see and hear that not only at Ephesus, but in almost the whole of Roman Asia, this Paul has convinced and won over great numbers of people, by his assertion that those Gods which are made by hands are not Gods at all. So that not only is this business of ours likely to fall into discredit, but there is the further danger that the Temple of the great Goddess Artemis will be thought 26 27

nothing of, and that she herself will be deprived of her splendour — though all Roman Asia and the whole world worship her.’

- 28 When they heard this, the men were greatly enraged, and began shouting — ‘Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!’ The commotion spread through the whole city, and the people rushed together into the amphitheater, dragging with them Gaius and Aristarchus, two Macedonians who were Paul’s traveling companions. Paul wished to go into the amphitheater and face the people, but the disciples would not let him, while some of the chief religious officials of the province, who were friendly to him, sent repeated entreaties to him not to trust himself inside. Meanwhile some were shouting one thing and some another, for the Assembly was all in confusion, most of those present not even knowing why they had met. But some of the crowd prompted Alexander, whom several of the Jewish leaders had pushed to the front, and he waved his hand to show that he wanted to speak in their defence to the people. However, when they recognised him as a Jew, one cry broke from them all, and they continued shouting for two hours — ‘Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!’
- 35 When the Recorder had succeeded in quieting the crowd, he said: ‘People of Ephesus, who is there, I ask you, who needs to be told that this city of Ephesus is the Warden of the Temple of the great Artemis, and of the statue which fell down from Zeus? As these are undeniable facts, you ought to keep calm and do nothing rash; for you have brought these men here, though they are neither robbers of Temples nor blasphemers of our Goddess. If, however, Demetrius and the artisans who are acting with him have a charge to make against anyone, there are court days and there are Magistrates; let both parties take legal proceedings. But if you want anything more, it will have to be settled in the regular Assembly. For I tell you that we are in danger of being proceeded against for today’s riot, there being nothing to account for it; and in that case we will be at a loss to give any reason for this disorderly gathering.’
- 41 With these words he dismissed the Assembly.

- 20 When the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples, and, with encouraging words, bade them goodbye, and started on his

journey to Macedonia. After going through those districts and speaking many encouraging words to the disciples, he went into Greece, where he stayed three months. He was about to sail to Syria, when he learned that a plot had been laid against him by several of the Jewish leaders; so he decided to return by way of Macedonia. He was accompanied by Sopater the son of Pyrrhus, of Beroea, Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy, as well as by Tychicus and Trophimus of Roman Asia. These people went to Troas and waited for us there; while we ourselves sailed from Philippi after the Passover, and joined them five days later at Troas, where we stayed for a week.

On the first day of the week, when we had met for the breaking of bread, Paul, who was intending to leave the next day, began to address those who were present, and prolonged his address until midnight. There were a good many lamps in the upstairs room, where we had met; and a young man named Eutychus, sitting at the window, was gradually overcome with great drowsiness, as Paul continued his address. At last, quite overpowered by his drowsiness, he fell from the third story to the ground, and was picked up for dead. But Paul went down, threw himself on him, and put his arms round him.

'Do not be alarmed,' he said, 'he is still alive.' Then he went upstairs; and, after breaking and partaking of the bread, he talked with them at great length until daybreak, and then left. Meanwhile they had taken the lad away alive, and were greatly comforted.

We started first, went on board ship, and sailed for Assos, intending to take Paul on board there. This was by his own arrangement, as he intended to go by land himself. So, when he met us at Assos, we took him on board and went on to Mitylene. The day after we had sailed from there, we arrived off Chios, touched at Samos the following day, and the next day reached Miletus; for Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, so as to avoid spending much time in Roman Asia. He was making haste to reach Jerusalem, if possible, by the Festival at the close of the Harvest.

From Miletus, however, he sent to Ephesus and invited the church elders to meet him; and, when they came, he said to

19 them: 'You know well the life that I always led among you from  
the very first day that I set foot in Roman Asia, serving the Lord,  
20 as I did, in all humility, amid the tears and trials which fell to my  
lot through the plots of some of the Jewish leaders. I never  
shrank from telling you anything that could be helpful to you, or  
21 from teaching you both in public and in private. I earnestly  
pointed both Jews and Greeks to the repentance that leads to  
22 God, and to faith in Jesus, our Lord. And now, under spiritual  
constraint, I am here on my way to Jerusalem, not knowing what  
23 will happen to me there, except that in town after town the  
Holy Spirit plainly declares to me that imprisonment and  
24 troubles await me. But I count my life of no value to myself, if  
only I may complete the course marked out for me, and the task  
that was allotted me by the Lord Jesus — which was to declare  
25 the good news of the love of God. And now, I tell you, I know  
that none of you will ever see my face again — you among  
26 whom I have gone about proclaiming the kingdom. Therefore I  
declare to you this day, that my conscience is clear in regard to  
27 the fate of any of you, for I have not shrunk from announcing  
the whole purpose of God regarding you. Be watchful over  
28 yourselves, and over the whole flock, of which the Holy Spirit  
has placed you in charge, to shepherd the church of God, which  
29 he won for himself at the cost of his life. I know that, after my  
departure, merciless wolves will get in among you, who will not  
30 spare the flock; and from among yourselves, too, people will  
arise, who will teach perversions of truth, so as to draw away the  
31 disciples after them. Therefore, be on your guard, remembering  
how for three years, night and day, I never ceased, even with  
32 tears, to warn each one of you. And now I commend you to the  
Lord and to the message of his love — a message which has the  
power to build up your characters, and to give you your place  
33 among all those who have become Christ's people. I have never  
34 coveted anyone's gold or silver or clothing. You, yourselves,  
know that these hands of mine provided not only for my own  
35 wants, but for my companions also. I left nothing undone to  
show you that, labouring as I laboured, you ought to help the  
weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said  
36 himself — "It is more blessed to give than to receive." When  
Paul had finished speaking, he knelt down and prayed with  
37 them all. All were in tears; and throwing their arms round

Paul's neck, they kissed him again and again, grieving most of 38  
all over what he had said — that they would never see his face  
again. Then they escorted him to the ship.

When we had torn ourselves away and had set sail, we ran before 21  
the wind to Cos; the next day we came to Rhodes, and from there  
to Patara, where we found a ship crossing to Phoenicia, and went 2  
on board and set sail. After sighting Cyprus and leaving it on the 3  
left, we sailed to Syria, and put into Tyre, where the ship was to  
discharge her cargo. There we found the disciples and stayed a 4  
week with them. Speaking under the influence of the Spirit, they  
warned Paul not to set foot in Jerusalem. However, when we had 5  
come to the end of our visit, we went on our way, all the disciples  
with their wives and children escorting us out of the city. We knelt 6  
down on the beach, and prayed, and then said goodbye to one  
another; after which we went on board, and they returned home.

After we had made the run from Tyre, we landed at 7  
Ptolemais, and exchanged greetings with the followers there,  
and spent a day with them. The next day we left, and reached 8  
Caesarea, where we went to the house of Philip, the missionary,  
who was one of "the Seven," and stayed with him. He had four 9  
unmarried daughters, who had the gift of prophecy. During our  
visit, which lasted several days, a prophet, named Agabus, came 10  
down from Judea. He came to see us, and, taking Paul's belt,  
and binding his own feet and hands with it, said: "This is what 11  
the Holy Spirit says — "The man to whom this belt belongs will  
be bound like this by the religious authorities in Jerusalem, and  
they will give him up to the Gentiles".' When we heard that, we 12  
and the people of the place began to entreat Paul not to go up to  
Jerusalem.

It was then that Paul made the reply: 'Why are you weeping 13  
and breaking my heart like this? For my part, I am ready not only  
to be bound, but even to suffer death at Jerusalem for the name  
of the Lord Jesus.' So, as he would not be persuaded, we said no 14  
more to him, only adding — 'The Lord's will be done.'

15 At the end of our visit, we made our preparations, and started  
16 on our way up to Jerusalem. Some of the disciples from Caesarea  
went with us, and brought Mnason with them, a Cypriot disciple  
17 of long standing, with whom we were to stay. On our arrival at  
Jerusalem, the followers of the Lord there gave us a hearty wel-  
18 come; and the next day Paul went with us to see James, and all  
the church elders were present. After greeting them, Paul related  
19 in detail all that God had done among the Gentiles through his  
efforts; and, when they had heard it, they began praising God,  
20 and said to Paul:

‘You see, brother, that those of our people who have become  
believers in Christ may be numbered by tens of thousands, and  
they are all naturally earnest in upholding the Jewish Law. Now  
21 they have heard it said about you, that you teach all of our peo-  
ple in foreign countries to forsake Moses, for you tell them not to  
circumcise their children or even to observe Jewish customs. Well  
22 now, as they are certain to hear of your arrival, do what we are  
going to suggest. We have four men here, who have of their own  
23 accord put themselves under a vow. Join these men, share their  
purification, and bear their expenses, so that they may shave their  
24 heads; and then all will see that there is no truth in what they have  
been told about you, but that, on the contrary, you yourself rule  
25 your life in obedience to the Jewish Law. As to the Gentiles who  
have become believers in Christ, we have sent our decision that  
they should avoid food offered to idols, and blood, and the flesh  
of strangled animals, and impurity.’

26 Paul joined the men, and the next day shared their purification,  
and went into the Temple, and gave notice of the expiration of the  
period of purification when the usual offering should have been  
made on behalf of each of them.

27 But, just as the seven days were drawing to a close, some of the  
Jewish people from Roman Asia caught sight of Paul in the Tem-  
ple, and caused great excitement among all the people present,  
28 by seizing Paul and shouting: ‘People of Israel! Help! This is the  
man who teaches everyone everywhere against our people, our  
Law, and this place; and, what is more, he has actually brought  
29 Greeks into the Temple and defiled this sacred place.’ (For they

had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian in Paul's company in the city, and were under the belief that Paul had taken him into the Temple.)

The whole city was stirred, and the people quickly collected, seized Paul, and dragged him out of the Temple, when the doors were immediately shut. They were bent on killing him, when it was reported to the officer commanding the garrison, that all Jerusalem was in commotion. He instantly got together some officers and soldiers, and charged down on the crowd, who, when they saw the commanding officer and his soldiers, stopped beating Paul. Then he went up to Paul, arrested him, ordered him to be doubly chained, and proceeded to inquire who he was, and what he had been doing. Some of the crowd said one thing, and some another; and, as he could get no definite reply because of the uproar, he ordered Paul to be taken into the barracks. When Paul reached the steps, he was actually being carried by the soldiers, owing to the violence of the mob; for the people were following in a mass, shouting out: 'Kill him!'

Just as he was about to be taken into the Fort, Paul said to the commanding officer: 'May I speak to you?'

'Do you know Greek?' asked the commanding officer. 'Aren't you, then, the Egyptian who some time ago raised an insurrection and led the four thousand Bandits out into the wilderness?'

'No,' said Paul, 'I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of a city of some note; and I beg you to give me permission to speak to the people.'

The commanding officer gave his permission, and Paul, standing on the steps, made signs with his hand to the people, and, when comparative silence had been obtained, he said to them in Hebrew: 'Brothers and fathers, listen to the defence which I am about to make.' When they heard that he was speaking to them in Hebrew, they were still more quiet; and Paul went on:

'I am a Jew, from Tarsus in Cilicia, but I was brought up in this city under the teaching of Gamaliel, and educated in accordance with the strict system of our ancestral Law. I was as zealous in God's service as any of you who are here today. In my persecution of this Way I did not stop even at the taking of life. I put in chains, and imprisoned, men and women alike — And to that the high priest himself and all the council of elders can testify. For I had letters of introduction from them to our fellow

Jews at Damascus, and I was on my way to that place, to bring those whom I might find there prisoners to Jerusalem for punishment. While I was still on my way, just as I was getting close to Damascus, about midday, suddenly there flashed from the heavens a great light all round me. I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me "Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?" "Who are you, Lord?" I replied. Then the voice said "I am Jesus of Nazareth whom you are persecuting." The men with me saw the light, but did not hear the speaker's voice. Then I said "What am I to do, Lord?" "Get up and go into Damascus," The Lord said to me, "and there you will be told all that you have been appointed to do." In consequence of that dazzling light I could not see, but my companions held me by the hand, until I reached Damascus. There a man named Ananias, a strict observer of our Law, well spoken of by all the Jewish inhabitants, came to see me. Standing close to me, he said "Saul, my brother, recover your sight." And then and there I recovered my sight and looked up at him. Then he said "The God of our ancestors has appointed you to learn his will, and to see the righteous one, and to hear words from his lips; for you will be a witness for him to all the world of what you have just seen and heard. And now why wait any longer: Be baptized at once, wash away your sins, and invoke his name. After my return to Jerusalem, while I was praying one day in the Temple, I fell into a trance, and saw Jesus saying to me "Make haste and leave Jerusalem at once, because they will not accept your testimony about me." "Lord," I answered, "these people know that I used to imprison and scourge, in synagogue after synagogue, those who believed in you; and, when the blood of your martyr, Stephen, was being shed, I was myself standing by, approving of his death, and took charge of the clothes of those who were murdering him. But Jesus said to me "Go; for I will send you to the Gentiles far away".'

Up to this point the people had been listening to Paul, but at these words they called out: 'Kill him! A fellow like this ought not to have been allowed to live!' As they were shouting, tearing off their clothes, and throwing dust in the air, the commanding officer ordered Paul to be taken into the Fort, and directed that he should be examined under the lash so that he might find out the reason for their outcry against him.



But just as they had tied him up to be scourged, Paul said to the captain standing near: 'Is it legal for you to scourge a Roman citizen, unconvicted?' On hearing this, the captain went and reported it to the commanding officer. 'Do you know what you are doing?' he said. 'This man is a Roman citizen.' So the commanding officer went up to Paul and said: 'Tell me, are you a Roman citizen?'

'Yes,' replied Paul. 'I had to pay a heavy price for my position as citizen,' said the officer. 'I am one by birth,' rejoined Paul.

The men who were to have examined Paul immediately drew back, and the officer, finding that Paul was a Roman citizen, was alarmed at having put him in chains.

On the next day the commanding officer, wishing to find out the real reason why Paul was denounced by the Jewish leaders, had his chains taken off, and directed the chief priests and the whole of the High Council to assemble, and then took Paul down and brought him before them. Paul fixed his eyes on the Council, and began:

'Brothers, for my part, I have always ordered my life before God, with a clear conscience, up to this very day.' At this, the high priest Ananias ordered the men standing near to strike him on the mouth; Paul turned to him and said:

'God will strike you, you whitewashed wall! Are you sitting there to try me in accordance with law, and yet, in defiance of law, order me to be struck?' The people standing near said to Paul: 'Do you know that you are insulting God's high priest?'

'I did not know, brothers, that it was the high priest,' said Paul, 'for scripture says —

"Of the Ruler of your people you should speak no ill".'

Noticing that some of those present were Sadducees and others Pharisees, Paul called out in the Council: 'Brothers, I am a Pharisee and a son of Pharisees. It is on the question of hope for the dead and of their resurrection that I am on my trial.'

As soon as he said this, a dispute arose between the Pharisees and the Sadducees; and there was a sharp division of opinion among those present. (For Sadducees say there is no such thing as a resurrection, and that there is neither angel nor spirit, while

9 Pharisees believe in both.) So a great uproar ensued, and some  
of the Teachers of the Law belonging to the Pharisees' party stood  
up and hotly protested: 'We find nothing whatever wrong in this  
10 man. Suppose a spirit did speak to him, or an angel...' The dis-  
pute was becoming so violent, that the commanding officer, fear-  
ing that Paul would be torn in pieces between them, ordered the  
Guard to go down and rescue him from them, and take him into  
the Fort.

11 That night the Lord came and stood by Paul, and said:  
'Courage! You have borne witness for me in Jerusalem and you  
12 must bear witness in Rome also.' In the morning some Jewish  
men combined together, and took an oath that they would not  
13 eat or drink until they had killed Paul. There were more than  
14 forty in the plot; and they went to the chief priests and the  
elders, and said: 'We have taken a solemn oath not to touch food  
15 until we have killed Paul. So we want you now, with the consent  
of the Council, to suggest to the commanding officer that he  
should bring Paul down before you, as though you intended to  
go more fully into his case; but, before he comes here, we will be  
ready to make away with him.'

16 However, the son of Paul's sister, hearing of the plot, went to  
17 the Fort, and on being admitted, told Paul about it. Paul called  
one of the Captains of the garrison and asked him to take the lad  
to the commanding officer, as he had something to tell him. The  
18 captain went with the lad to the commanding officer, and said:  
'The prisoner Paul called me and asked me to bring this lad to  
you, as he has something to tell you.'

19 The commanding officer took the lad by the hand, and, step-  
20 ping aside, asked what it was he had to tell him. 'Some men have  
agreed,' answered the lad, 'to ask you to bring Paul down before  
the Council tomorrow, on the plea of your making further inquiry  
21 into his case. But do not let them persuade you, for more than  
forty of them are lying in wait for him, who have taken an oath  
that they will not eat or drink, until they have made away with  
him; and they are at this very moment in readiness, counting on  
22 your promise.' The commanding officer then dismissed the lad,  
cautioning him not to mention to anybody that he had given him  
23 that information. Then he called two Captains, and ordered them  
to have two hundred soldiers ready to go to Caesarea, as well as  
seventy troopers and two hundred lancers, by nine o'clock that

night, and to have horses ready for Paul to ride, so that they might  
take him safely to Felix, the Governor. He also wrote a letter along  
these lines: 24 25

“Claudius Lysias sends his compliments to His Excellency 26  
Felix the Governor. The man whom I send with this had 27  
been seized by some Jews, and was on the point of being  
killed by them, when I came upon them with the force un-  
der my command, and rescued him, as I learned that he  
was a Roman citizen. Wanting to know exactly the ground 28  
of the charges they made against him, I brought him before  
their Council, when I found that their charges were con- 29  
nected with questions of their own Law, and that there was  
nothing alleged involving either death or imprisonment.  
Having, however, information of a plot against the man, 30  
which was about to be put into execution, I am sending  
him to you at once, and I have also directed his accusers to  
prosecute him before you.”

The soldiers, in accordance with their orders, took charge of Paul 31  
and conducted him by night to Antipatris; and on the next day, 32  
leaving the troopers to go on with him, they returned to the Fort.  
On arriving at Caesarea, the troopers delivered the letter to the 33  
Governor, and brought Paul before him. As soon as Felix had 34  
read the letter, he enquired to what province Paul belonged, and,  
learning that he came from Cilicia, he said: ‘I will hear all you 35  
have to say as soon as your accusers have arrived.’ And he ordered  
Paul to be kept under guard in Herod’s Government house.

Five days afterwards the high priest Ananias came down with 24  
some of the elders and a barrister named Tertullus. They laid an  
information with the Governor against Paul; and, when the hear- 2  
ing came on, Tertullus began his speech for the prosecution. ‘We 3  
owe it to your Excellency,’ he said, ‘that we are enjoying profound  
peace, and we owe it to your foresight that this nation is constantly  
securing reforms — advantages which we very gratefully accept  
at all times and places. But — not to be tedious — I beg you, with 4  
your accustomed fairness, to listen to a brief statement of our case.

5 We have found this man a public pest; he is one who stirs up disputes among our people all the world over, and is a ringleader of  
6 the Nazarene heretics. He even attempted to desecrate the Temple  
8 itself, but we caught him; and you will be able, by examining him on all these points, to satisfy yourself as to the charges which we are bringing against him.'

9 The Jewish crowd also joined in the attack and bore out his statements. On a sign from the Governor, Paul made this reply:

10 'Knowing, as I do, for how many years you have acted as judge to this nation, it is with confidence that I undertake my own defence. For you can easily verify that it is not more than twelve days  
11 ago that I went up to worship at Jerusalem, where my prosecutors never found me holding discussions with anyone, or causing a crowd to collect — either in the Temple, or in the synagogues, or  
12 about the city; and they cannot establish the charges which they are now making against me. This, however, I do acknowledge to you, that it is as a believer in the Way which they call heretical, that I worship the God of my ancestors. At the same time, I believe everything that is in accordance with the Law and that is  
13 written in the prophets; and I have a hope that rests in God — a hope which they also cherish — that there will one day be a  
14 resurrection of good and bad alike. This being so, I strive at all times to keep my conscience clear before both God and people.  
15 After some years' absence I had come to bring charitable gifts to my nation, and to make offerings; and it was while engaged  
16 in this that they found me in the Temple, after completing a period of purification, but not with any crowd or disorder. There  
17 were, however, some Jews from Roman Asia who ought to have been here before you, and to have made any charge that they may  
18 have against me — Or else let my opponents here say what they found wrong in me when I was before the Council, except as to  
19 the one sentence that I shouted out as I stood among them — "It is about the resurrection of the dead that I am on my trial before you today".'

22 Felix, however, adjourned the case — though he had a fairly accurate knowledge of all that concerned the Way — with the promise: 'When Lysias, the commanding officer, comes down, I

will give my decision in your case.' So he gave orders to the captain in charge of Paul to keep him in custody, but to relax the regulations, and not to prevent any of his personal friends from attending to his wants. 23

Some days later Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was Jewish, and, sending for Paul, listened to what he had to say about faith in Christ Jesus. But, while Paul was speaking at length about righteousness, self-control, and the coming judgment, Felix became terrified, and interrupted him — 'Go for the present, but, when I find an opportunity, I will send for you again.' He was hoping, too, for a bribe from Paul, and so he used to send for him frequently and talk with him. But, after the lapse of two years, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus; and, wishing to gain popularity with the Jewish leaders, he left Paul a prisoner. 24 25 26 27

Three days after Festus had arrived in his province, he left 25  
Caesarea and went up to Jerusalem. There the chief priests and 2  
the leading men among the Jews laid an information before him  
against Paul, and asked a favour of him, to Paul's injury — to 3  
have Paul brought to Jerusalem. All the while they were plotting  
to make away with him on the road. But Festus answered that 4  
Paul was in prison at Caesarea, and that he himself would be  
leaving for that place shortly.

'So let the influential men among you,' he said, 'go down with me, and if there is anything amiss in the man, charge him formally with it.' After staying among them some eight or ten days, Festus went down to Caesarea. The next day he took his seat on the Bench, and ordered Paul to be brought before him. On Paul's appearance, the Jewish leaders who had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and made many serious charges, which they failed to establish. Paul's answer to the charge was — "I have not committed any offence against the Jewish Law, or the Temple, or the Emperor." But, as Festus wished to gain popularity with the Jews, he interrupted Paul with the question: 5 6 7 8 9

'Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and be tried on these charges before me there?'

'No,' replied Paul, 'I am standing at the Emperor's court, where I ought to be tried. I have not wronged the Jews, as you yourself 10

- 11 are well aware. If, however, I am breaking the law and have committed any offence deserving death, I do not ask to escape the penalty; but, if there is nothing in the accusations of these people, no one has the power to give me up to them. I appeal to the Emperor.'
- 12 Festus, after conferring with his Council, answered: 'You have appealed to the Emperor; to the Emperor you will go.'
- 13 Some days later King Agrippa and Bernice came down to Caesarea, and paid a visit of congratulation to Festus; and, as they were staying there for several days, Festus laid Paul's case before the king. 'There is a man here,' he said, 'left a prisoner by Felix, about whom, when I came to Jerusalem, the Jewish chief priest and the elders laid an information, demanding judgment against him. My answer to them was, that it was not the practice of Romans to give up anyone to their accusers until the accused had met them face to face, and had also had an opportunity of answering the charges brought against them. So they met here, and without loss of time I took my seat on the Bench the very next day, and ordered the man to be brought before me. But, when his accusers came forward, they brought no charge of wrong-doing such as I had expected; but I found that there were certain questions in dispute between them about their own religion, and about some dead man called Jesus, whom Paul declared to be alive. And, as I was at a loss how to enquire into questions of this kind, I asked Paul if he were willing to go up to Jerusalem, and be put on trial there. Paul, however, appealed to have his case reserved for the consideration of his August Majesty, so I ordered him to be detained in custody, until I could send him to the Emperor.'
- 22 'I should like to hear this man myself,' Agrippa said to Festus. 'You will hear him tomorrow,' Festus answered.
- 23 So the next day, when Agrippa and Bernice had come in full state and had entered the Audience Chamber, with the superior officers and the principal people of the city, by the order of Festus Paul was brought before them. Then Festus said: 'King Agrippa, and all here present, you see before you the man about whom the whole Jewish people have applied to me, both at Jerusalem and here, loudly asserting that he ought not to be allowed to live. I found, however, that he had not done anything deserving death; so, as he had himself appealed to his August Majesty, I decided to

send him. But I have nothing definite to write about him to my Imperial Master; and for that reason I have brought him before you all, and especially before you, King Agrippa, that, after examining him, I may have something to write. For it seems to me absurd to send a prisoner, without at the same time stating the charges made against him.' 26 27

Turning to Paul, Agrippa said: 'You are at liberty to speak for yourself.' Then Paul stretched out his hand and began his defence. 'I have been congratulating myself, King Agrippa,' he said, 'that it is before you that I have to make my defence today, with regard to all the charges brought against me by my own people, especially as you are so well-versed in all the customs and questions of the Jewish world. I beg you therefore to give me a patient hearing. My life, then, from youth upwards, was passed, from the very first, among my own nation, and in Jerusalem, and is within the knowledge of all Jews; and they have always known — if they choose to give evidence — that, in accordance with the very strictest form of our religion, I lived a true Pharisee. Even now, it is because of my hope in the promise given by God to our ancestors that I stand here on my trial — A promise which our twelve tribes, by earnest service night and day, hope to see fulfilled. It is for this hope, your Majesty, that I am accused — and by Jews themselves! Why do you all hold it incredible that God should raise the dead? I myself, it is true, once thought it my duty to oppose in every way the name of Jesus of Nazareth; and I actually did so at Jerusalem. Acting on the authority of the chief priests, I myself threw many of the people of Christ into prison, and, when it was proposed to put them to death, I gave my vote for it. Time after time, in every synagogue, I tried by punishments to force them to blaspheme. So frantic was I against them, that I pursued them even to towns beyond our borders. It was while I was traveling to Damascus on an errand of this kind, entrusted with full powers by the chief priests, that at midday, your Majesty, I saw right in my path, coming from the heavens, a light brighter than the glare of the sun, which shone all round me and those traveling with me. We all fell to the ground, and then I heard a voice saying to me in Hebrew — "Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? By kicking against the goad you are punishing yourself." "Who are you, Lord?" I asked. And the Lord said: 'I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting; but get up and stand upright; for I have appeared to you in 26 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14 15 16

order to appoint you a servant and a witness of those revelations of me which you have already had, and of those in which I will yet appear to you, since I am choosing you out from your own people and from the Gentiles, to whom I now send you, to open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God; so that they may receive pardon for their sins, and a place among those who have become God's people, by faith in me." After that, King Agrippa, I did not fail to obey the heavenly vision; on the contrary, first to those at Damascus and Jerusalem, and then through the whole of Judea, and to the Gentiles as well, I began to preach repentance and conversion to God, and a life befitting that repentance. This is why some men seized me in the Temple, and made attempts on my life. However I have received help from God to this very day, and so stand here, and bear my testimony to high and low alike — without adding a word to what the prophets, as well as Moses, declared should happen — That the Christ must suffer, and that, by rising from the dead, he was destined to be the first to bring news of light, not only to our nation, but also to the Gentiles.'

24 While Paul was making this defence, Festus called out loudly: 'You are mad, Paul; your great learning is driving you mad.'

25 'I am not mad, your Excellency,' he replied; 'on the contrary, 26 the statements that I am making are true and sober. Indeed, the king knows about these matters, so I speak before him without constraint. I am sure that there is nothing whatever of what I have been telling him that has escaped his attention; for all this 27 has not been done in a corner. King Agrippa, do you believe the prophets? I know you do.'

28 But Agrippa said to Paul: 'You are soon trying to make a Christian of me!'

29 'Whether it is soon or late,' answered Paul, 'I pray to God that not only you, but all who are listening to me, might today become just what I am myself — except for these chains!' Then the king rose, with the Governor and Bernice and those who had been sitting with them, and, after retiring, discussed the case among themselves. 'There is nothing,' they said, 'deserving death or imprisonment in this man's conduct'; and, speaking to Festus, Agrippa added: 'The man might have been discharged, if he had not appealed to the Emperor.'



As it was decided that we were to sail to Italy, Paul and some 27  
 other prisoners were put in charge of a captain of the Augustan  
 Guard, named Julius. We went on board a ship from Adramyt- 2  
 tium, which was on the point of sailing to the ports along the coast  
 of Roman Asia, and put to sea. Aristarchus, a Macedonian from  
 Thessalonica, went with us. The next day we put in to Sidon, 3  
 where Julius treated Paul in a friendly manner, and allowed him  
 to go to see his friends and receive their hospitality. Putting to 4  
 sea again, we sailed under the lee of Cyprus, because the wind  
 was against us; and, after crossing the sea of Cilicia and Pam- 5  
 phylia, we reached Myra in Lycia. There the Roman officer found  
 an Alexandrian ship on her way to Italy, and put us on board of 6  
 her. For several days our progress was slow, and it was only with  
 difficulty that we arrived off Cnidus. As the wind was still un- 7  
 favourable when we came off Cape Salmone, we sailed under the  
 lee of Crete, and with difficulty, by keeping close in shore, we 8  
 reached a place called "Fair Havens," near which was the town of  
 Lasea.

This had taken a considerable time, and sailing was already 9  
 dangerous, for the Fast was already over; and so Paul gave this  
 warning. 'My friends,' he said, 'I see that this voyage will be 10  
 attended with injury and much damage, not only to the cargo and  
 the ship, but to our own lives also.'

The Roman officer, however, was more influenced by the cap- 11  
 tain and the owner than by what was said by Paul. And, as the 12  
 harbour was not a suitable one to winter in, the majority were in  
 favour of continuing the voyage, in hope of being able to reach  
 Phoenix, and winter there. Phoenix was a Cretan harbour, open  
 to the north-east and south-east. So, when a light wind sprang up 13  
 from the south, thinking that they had found their opportunity,  
 they weighed anchor and kept along the coast of Crete, close in  
 shore. But shortly afterwards a hurricane came down on us off 14  
 the land — a north-easter, as it is called. The ship was caught by 15  
 it and was unable to keep her head to the wind, so we had to give  
 way and let her drive before it. Running under the lee of a small 16  
 island called Cauda, we only just managed to secure the ship's  
 boat, and, after hoisting it on board, the men frapped the ship. 17  
 But, afraid of being driven on to the Syrtis Sands, they lowered

18 the yard, and then drifted. So violently were we tossed about by  
the storm, that the next day they began throwing the cargo over-  
19 board, and, on the following day, threw out the ship's tackle with  
20 their own hands. As neither sun nor stars were visible for several  
days, and, as the gale still continued severe, all hope of our being  
saved was at last abandoned.

21 It was then, when they had gone a long time without food,  
that Paul came forward, and said: 'My friends, you should have  
listened to me, and not have sailed from Crete and so incurred  
22 this injury and damage. Yet, even as things are, I beg you not to  
lose courage, for there will not be a single life lost among you —  
23 only the ship. For last night an angel of the God to whom I belong,  
and whom I serve, stood by me, and said — "Have no fear, Paul;  
24 you must appear before the Emperor, and God himself has given  
25 you the lives of all your fellow voyagers." Therefore, courage, my  
friends! For I believe God, that everything will happen exactly as  
26 I have been told. We will, however, have to be driven on some  
island.'

27 It was now the fourteenth night of the storm, and we were  
drifting about in the Adriatic Sea, when, about midnight, the  
28 sailors began to suspect that they were drawing near land. So  
they took soundings, and found twenty fathoms of water. After  
waiting a little, they took soundings again, and found fifteen  
29 fathoms. Then, as they were afraid of our being driven on some  
rocky coast, they let go four anchors from the stern, and longed  
30 for daylight. The sailors wanted to leave the ship, and had  
lowered the boat, on pretence of running out anchors from the  
31 bows, when Paul said to the Roman officer and his men: 'Unless  
32 the sailors remain on board, you cannot be saved.' So the  
soldiers cut the ropes which held the boat, and let her drift away.  
33 In the interval before daybreak Paul kept urging them all to take  
something to eat.

'It is a fortnight today,' he said, 'that, owing to your anxiety,  
34 you have gone without food, taking nothing. So I beg you to take  
something to eat; your safety depends on it, for not one of you  
35 will lose even a hair of his head.' With these words he took some  
bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving to God before them all,  
36 broke it in pieces, and began to eat; and the men all felt cheered  
37 and had something to eat themselves. There were about sev-  
38 enty-six of us on board, all told. After satisfying their hunger,

they further lightened the ship by throwing the grain into the sea. When daylight came, they could not make out what land it was, but, observing a creek in which there was a beach, they consulted as to whether they could run the ship safely into it. Then they cast off, and abandoned the anchors, and at the same time unlashed the gear of the steering oars, hoisted the foresail to the wind, and made for the beach. They got, however, into a kind of channel, and there ran the ship aground. The bows stuck fast and could not be moved, while the stern began breaking up under the strain. The advice of the soldiers was that the prisoners should be killed, so that none of them could swim away and make their escape. But the Roman officer, anxious to save Paul, prevented their carrying out their intention, and ordered that those who could swim should be the first to jump into the sea and try to reach the shore; and that the rest should follow, some on planks, and others on different pieces of the ship. In these various ways everyone managed to get safely ashore.

When we were all safe, we found that the island was called Malta. The island's people showed us marked kindness, for they lit a fire and took us all under shelter, because it had come on to rain and was cold. Paul had gathered a quantity of dry sticks and laid them on the fire, when a poisonous snake, driven out by the heat, fastened on his hand. When the islanders saw the creature hanging from his hand, they said to one another: 'Evidently this man is a murderer, for though he has been saved from the sea, Justice has not allowed him to live.' However, Paul shook the creature off into the fire and took no harm. The islanders were expecting inflammation to set in, or that he would suddenly fall dead; but, after waiting for a long time, and seeing that there was nothing amiss with him, they changed their minds and said that he was a God.

In that region there was an estate belonging to the Governor of the island, whose name was Publius. He took us up to his house, and for three days entertained us most courteously. It happened that the father of Publius was lying ill of fever and dysentery. So Paul went to see him; and, after praying, he placed his hands on him and cured him. After this, all the people in the island who

10 had any illness came to Paul, and were cured. They also presented us with many gifts, and when we set sail they put supplies of necessaries on board.

11 After three months, we set sail in a ship that had wintered in the island. She was an Alexandrian vessel, and had the Twin sons of Zeus for her figure-head. We put in at Syracuse and stayed there  
12 three days, and from there we worked to windward and so got  
13 to Rhegium. A day later a south wind sprang up and took us to  
14 Puteoli in two days. There we found some of the Lord's followers, and were urged to stay a week with them; after which we went on  
15 to Rome. The followers there had heard about us, and came out as far as the Market of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us. At sight of them Paul thanked God and was much cheered. On  
16 our reaching Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, except for the soldier who was in charge of him.

17 Three days after our arrival, Paul invited the leading Jews to meet him; and, when they came, he said: 'Brothers, although I had done nothing hostile to the interests of our nation or to our ancestral customs, yet I was sent from Jerusalem as a prisoner, and handed  
18 over to the Romans. The Romans, when they had examined me, were ready to release me, because there was nothing in my conduct deserving death. But, as the Jewish leaders opposed my release, I was compelled to appeal to the Emperor — not, indeed,  
19 that I had any charge to make against my own nation. This, then, is my reason for urging you to come to see me and talk with me; because it is for the sake of the hope of Israel that I am here in chains.'

21 'We,' was their reply, 'have not had any letter about you from Judea, nor have any of our fellow Jews come and reported or said  
22 anything bad about you. But we will be glad to hear from you what your views are, for, with regard to this sect, we are well aware that it is spoken against on all sides.'

23 They then fixed a day with him, and came to the place where he was staying, in even larger numbers, when Paul proceeded to lay

the subject before them. He bore his testimony to the kingdom of God, and tried to convince them about Jesus, by arguments drawn from the Law of Moses and from the prophets — speaking from morning until evening. Some were inclined to accept what he said; others, however, rejected it. So, as they disagreed among themselves, they began to disperse, Paul adding only —

‘True, indeed, was the declaration made by the Holy Spirit, through the prophet Isaiah to your ancestors —

“Go to this nation and say — 26

‘You will hear with your ears without ever understanding,

And, though you have eyes, you will see without ever perceiving.’

For the mind of this nation has grown dense, 27

And their ears are dull of hearing,

Their eyes also have they closed;

Otherwise some day they might see with their eyes,

And with their ears they might hear,

And in their mind they might understand, and might turn —

And I might heal them.”

Understand, then, that this salvation of God was sent for the Gentiles; and they will listen.’ 28

For two whole years Paul stayed in a house which he rented for himself, welcoming all who came to see him, proclaiming the kingdom of God, and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ, with perfect fearlessness, unhindered. 30 31



# PAUL'S LETTER TO THE ROMANS

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ, who has been called to be- 1  
 come an apostle, and has been set apart to tell God's good news. 2  
 This good news God promised long ago through his prophets in 3  
 the sacred scriptures, concerning his Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord; 4  
 who, as to his human nature, was descended from David, but, as 5  
 to the spirit of holiness within him, was miraculously designated 6  
 Son of God by his resurrection from the dead. Through him we 7  
 received the gift of the apostolic office, to win submission to the 8  
 faith among all nations for the glory of his name. And among 9  
 these nations are you — you who have been called to belong to 10  
 Jesus Christ. 11

To all in Rome who are dear to God and have been called to 12  
 become Christ's people, may God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus 13  
 Christ bless you and give you peace.

First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, because 14  
 the report of your faith is spreading throughout the world. God, 15  
 to whom I offer the worship of my soul as I tell the goodness of 16  
 his Son, is my witness how constantly I mention you when I pray, 17  
 asking that, if he be willing, I may some day at last find the way 18  
 open to visit you. For I long to see you, in order to impart to you 19  
 some spiritual gift and so give you fresh strength — or rather that 20  
 both you and I may find encouragement in each other's faith. I 21  
 want you to know, my friends, that I have many times intended 22  
 coming to see you — but until now I have been prevented — that I 23  
 might find among you some fruit of my labours, as I have already 24  
 among the other nations.

*Faith the Ground of Acceptance*

14 I HAVE A DUTY TO BOTH THE GREEK and the barbarian, to both the  
15 cultured and the ignorant. And so, for my part, I am ready to tell  
the good news to you also who are in Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the good news; it is the power of God  
which brings salvation to everyone who believes, to the Jew first,  
17 but also to the Greek. For in it there is a revelation of the di-  
vine righteousness resulting from faith and leading on to faith;  
as scripture says — “Through faith the righteous will find life.”

18 So, too, there is a revelation from heaven of the divine wrath  
against every form of ungodliness and wickedness on the part of  
those people who, by their wicked lives, are stifling the truth. This  
19 is so, because what can be known about God is plain to them; for  
20 God himself has made it plain. For ever since the creation of the  
universe God’s invisible attributes — his everlasting power and  
divinity — are to be seen and studied in his works, so that people  
21 have no excuse; because, although they learned to know God,  
yet they did not offer him as God either praise or thanksgiving.  
Their speculations about him proved futile, and their undiscern-  
22 ing minds were darkened. Professing to be wise, they showed  
23 themselves fools; and they transformed the glory of the immortal  
God into the likeness of mortal humans, and of birds, and beasts,  
and reptiles.

24 Therefore God abandoned them to impurity, letting them fol-  
low the cravings of their hearts, until they dishonoured their own  
25 bodies; for they had substituted a lie for the truth about God,  
and had revered and worshiped created things more than the  
26 Creator, who is to be praised for ever. Amen. That, I say, is why  
God abandoned them to degrading passions. Even the women  
among them perverted the natural use of their bodies to the un-  
27 natural; while the men, disregarding that for which women were  
intended by nature, were consumed with passion for one another.  
Men indulged in vile practices with men, and incurred in their  
own persons the inevitable penalty for their perverseness.

28 Then, as they would not keep God before their minds, God  
abandoned them to depraved thoughts, so that they did all kinds  
29 of shameful things. They revelled in every form of wickedness,  
evil, greed, vice. Their lives were full of envy, murder, quarrelling,  
30 treachery, malice. They became back-biters, slanderers, impious,



insolent, boastful. They devised new sins. They disobeyed their  
 parents. They were undiscerning, untrustworthy, without nat- 31  
 ural affection or pity. Well aware of God's decree, that those who 32  
 do such things deserve to die, not only are they guilty of them  
 themselves, but they even applaud those who do them.

Therefore you have nothing to say in your own defence, who- 2  
 ever you are who set yourself up as a judge. In judging others you  
 condemn yourself, for you who set yourself up as a judge do the  
 very same things. And we know that God's judgment falls unerr- 2  
 ingly on those who do them. You who judge those that do such 3  
 things and yet are yourself guilty of them — do you suppose that  
 you of all people will escape God's judgment? Or do you think 4  
 lightly of his abundant kindness, patience, and forbearance, not  
 realising that his kindness is meant to lead you to repentance?  
 Hard-hearted and impenitent as you are, you are storing up for 5  
 yourself wrath on the "day of wrath," when God's justice as a  
 judge will be revealed; for "he will give to everyone what their 6  
 actions deserve." To those who, by perseverance in doing good, 7  
 aim at glory, honour, and all that is imperishable, he will give im- 8  
 mortal life; while as to those who are factious, and disobedient to  
 truth but obedient to evil, wrath and anger, distress and despair,  
 will fall on every human being who persists in wrong-doing — 9  
 on the Jew first, but also on the Greek. But there will be glory, 10  
 honour, and peace for everyone who does right — for the Jew  
 first, but also for the Greek, since God shows no partiality. All 11  
 who, when they sin, are without Law will also perish without 12  
 Law; while all who, when they sin, are under Law, will be judged  
 as being under Law. It is not those who hear the words of a Law 13  
 that are righteous before God, but it is those who obey it that will  
 be pronounced righteous. When Gentiles, who have no Law, do 14  
 instinctively what the Law requires, they, though they have no  
 Law, are a Law to themselves; for they show the demands of the 15  
 Law written on their hearts; their consciences corroborating it,  
 while in their thoughts they argue either in self-accusation or, it  
 may be, in self-defence — on the day when God passes judgment 16  
 on people's inmost lives, as the good news that I tell declares that  
 he will do through Christ Jesus.

But, perhaps, you bear the name of "Jew," and are relying on 17  
 Law, and boast of belonging to God, and understand his will, and,  
 having been carefully instructed from the Law, have learned to 18

19 appreciate the finer moral distinctions. Perhaps you are confident that you are a guide to the blind, a light to those who are in  
 20 the dark, an instructor of the unintelligent, and a teacher of the childish, because in the Law you possess the outline of all knowledge and truth. Why, then, you teacher of others, don't you teach  
 21 yourself? Do you preach against stealing, and yet steal? Do you forbid adultery, and yet commit adultery? Do you loathe idols, and yet plunder temples? Boasting, as you do, of your Law, do  
 22 you dishonour God by breaking the Law? For, as scripture says —  
 23 "The Gentiles insult God's name because of you"! Circumcision has its value, if you are obeying the Law. But, if you are a breaker of the Law, your circumcision is no better than uncircumcision.  
 24 If, then, an uncircumcised man pays regard to the requirements of the Law, won't he, although not circumcised, be regarded by  
 25 God as if he were? Indeed, the person who, owing to his birth, remains uncircumcised, and yet scrupulously obeys the Law, will condemn you, who, for all your written Law and your circumcision, are yet a breaker of the Law. For a man who is only a Jew outwardly is not a real Jew; nor is outward bodily circumcision real circumcision. The real Jew is the person who is a Jew in soul;  
 26 and the real circumcision is the circumcision of the heart, a spiritual and not a literal thing. Such a person wins praise from God, though not from people.

3 What is the advantage, then, of being a Jew? Or what is the good of circumcision? Great in every way. First of all, because the  
 2 Jews were entrusted with God's utterances. What follows then? Some, no doubt, showed a want of faith; but will their want of  
 3 faith make God break faith? Heaven forbid! God must prove true, though everyone prove a liar! As scripture says of God — "That you may be pronounced righteous in what you say, and gain your cause when people would judge you."  
 4

5 But what if our wrong-doing makes God's righteousness all the clearer? Will God be wrong in inflicting punishment? (I can  
 6 but speak as a person.) Heaven forbid! Otherwise how can God judge the world?

7 But, if my falsehood redounds to the glory of God, by making his truthfulness more apparent, why am I like others, still condemned as a sinner? Why should we not say — as some people slanderously assert that we do say — "Let us do evil that good may come"? The condemnation of such people is indeed just!  
 8

What follows, then? Are we Jews in any way superior to others? 9  
 Not at all. Our indictment against both Jews and Greeks was that  
 all alike were in subjection to sin. As scripture says — 10  
     *“There is not even one who is righteous,*  
         *not one who understands,* 11  
         *not one who is searching for God!*  
 They have all gone astray; 12  
     *they have one and all become depraved;*  
         *there is no one who is doing good — no, not one!”*  
*“Their throats are like opened graves;* 13  
     *they deceive with their tongues.”*  
*“The venom of snakes lies behind their lips,”*  
     *“And their mouths are full of bitter curses.”* 14  
*“Swift are their feet to shed blood.* 15  
 Distress and trouble dog their steps, 16  
     *and the path of peace they do not know.”* 17  
     *“The fear of God is not before their eyes.”* 18

Now we know that everything said in the Law is addressed to 19  
 those who are under its authority, in order that every mouth may  
 be closed, and to bring the whole world under God’s judgment.  
 For “no human being will be pronounced righteous before God” 20  
 as the result of obedience to Law; for it is Law that shows what  
 sin is.

But now, quite apart from Law, the divine righteousness stands 21  
 revealed, and to it the Law and the prophets bear witness — the  
 divine righteousness which is bestowed, through faith in Jesus 22  
 Christ, on all, without distinction, who believe in him. For all 23  
 have sinned, and all fall short of God’s glorious ideal, but, in his 24  
 loving kindness, are being freely pronounced righteous through  
 the deliverance found in Christ Jesus. For God set him before 25  
 the world, to be, by the shedding of his blood, a means of recon-  
 ciliation through faith. And this God did to prove his righteous-  
 ness, and because, in his forbearance, he had passed over the sins  
 that people had previously committed; as a proof, I repeat, at the 26

present time, of his own righteousness, that he might be righteous in our eyes, and might pronounce righteous the person who takes their stand on faith in Jesus.

27 What, then, becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what sort of Law? A Law requiring obedience? No, a Law requiring faith.

28 For we conclude that a person is pronounced righteous on the  
29 ground of faith, quite apart from obedience to Law. Or can it be that God is the God only of the Jews? Isn't he also the God of the  
30 Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also, since there is only one God, and he will pronounce those who are circumcised righteous as the result of faith, and also those who are uncircumcised on their showing the same faith.

31 Do we, then, use this faith to abolish Law? Heaven forbid! No, we establish Law.

4 What then, it may be asked, are we to say about Abraham, the  
2 ancestor of our nation? If he was pronounced righteous as the result of obedience, then he has something to boast of. Yes, but not  
3 before God. For what are the words of scripture? "Abraham had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness."  
4 Now wages are regarded as due to the person who works, not as  
5 a favour, but as a debt; while, as for the person who does not rely on their obedience, but has faith in him who can pronounce the  
godless righteous, their faith is regarded by God as righteousness.

6 In precisely the same way David speaks of the blessing pronounced on the person who is regarded by God as righteous apart  
7 from actions — "Blessed are those whose wrong-doings have  
8 been forgiven and over whose sins a veil has been drawn! Blessed  
9 the man whom the Lord will never regard as sinful!" Is this blessing, then, pronounced on the circumcised only or on the uncircumcised as well? We say that — "Abraham's faith was regarded  
10 by God as righteousness." Under what circumstances, then, did  
11 this take place? After his circumcision or before it? Not after, but before. And it was as a sign of this that he received the rite of  
circumcision — to show the righteousness due to the faith of an uncircumcised man — in order that he might be the father of all  
who have faith in God even when uncircumcised, so that they also  
12 may be regarded by God as righteous; as well as father of the circumcised — to those who are not only circumcised, but who also follow our father Abraham in that faith which he had while still

uncircumcised. For the promise that he should inherit the world 13  
 did not come to Abraham or his descendants through Law, but 14  
 through the righteousness due to faith. If those who take their 14  
 stand on Law are to inherit the world, then faith is robbed of its 15  
 meaning and the promise comes to nothing! Law entails punish- 15  
 ment; but, where no Law exists, no breach of it is possible. That 16  
 is why everything is made to depend on faith: so that everything 16  
 may be God's gift, and in order that the fulfilment of the promise 17  
 may be made certain for all Abraham's descendants — not only 17  
 for those who take their stand on the Law, but also for those who 18  
 take their stand on the faith of Abraham. (He is the Father of us 18  
 all; as scripture says — "I have made you the Father of many na- 17  
 tions.") And this they do in the sight of that God in whom Abra- 18  
 ham had faith, and who gives life to the dead, and speaks of what 18  
 does not yet exist as if it did. With no ground for hope, Abraham, 18  
 sustained by hope, put faith in God; in order that, in fulfilment 19  
 of the words — "So many will your descendants be," he might 19  
 become "the Father of many nations." Though he was nearly a 19  
 hundred years old, yet his faith did not fail him, even when he 20  
 thought of his own body, then utterly worn out, and remembered 20  
 that Sarah was past bearing children. He was not led by want of 20  
 faith to doubt God's promise. On the contrary, his faith gave him 21  
 strength; and he praised God, in the firm conviction that what 21  
 God has promised he is also able to carry out. And therefore his 22  
 faith "was regarded as righteousness." Now these words — "it 23  
 was regarded as righteousness" — were not written with refer- 23  
 ence to Abraham only; but also with reference to us. Our faith, 24  
 too, will be regarded by God in the same light, if we have faith 24  
 in him who raised Jesus, our Lord, from the dead; for Jesus "was 25  
 given up to death to atone for our offences," and was raised to life 25  
 that we might be pronounced righteous.

Therefore, having been pronounced righteous as the result of 5  
 faith, let us enjoy peace with God through Jesus Christ, our Lord. 5  
 It is through him that, by reason of our faith, we have obtained 2  
 admission to that place in God's favour in which we now stand. 2  
 So let us exult in our hope of attaining God's glorious ideal. And 3  
 not only that, but let us also exult in our troubles; for we know 3  
 that trouble develops endurance, and endurance strength of char- 4  
 acter, and strength of character hope, and that "hope never disap- 4  
 points." For the love of God has filled our hearts through the Holy 5

6 Spirit which was given us; seeing that, while we were still powerless, Christ, in God's good time, died on behalf of the godless.

7 Even for an upright person scarcely anyone will die. For a really

8 good person perhaps someone might even dare to die. But God puts his love for us beyond all doubt by the fact that Christ died on

9 our behalf while we were still sinners. Much more, then, now that we have been pronounced righteous by virtue of the shedding of his blood, will we be saved through him from the wrath of God.

10 For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have become reconciled, will we be saved by virtue of Christ's life. And not only that, but we exult in God, through Jesus Christ, our Lord, through whom we have now obtained this reconciliation.

12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and through sin came death; so, also, death spread to all humanity, because every person has sinned. Even before the time of the Law there was sin in the world; but sin cannot be charged against

13 someone where no Law exists. Yet, from Adam to Moses, death reigned even over those whose sin was not a breach of a law, as Adam's was. And Adam foreshadows the One to come. But there is a contrast between Adam's offence and God's gracious gift. For, if by reason of the offence of the one man the whole human race died, far more were the loving kindness of God, and the gift given in the loving kindness of the one man, Jesus Christ, lavished on

14 the whole human race. There is a contrast, too, between the gift and the results of the one man's sin. The judgment, which followed on the one man's sin, resulted in condemnation, but God's gracious gift, which followed on many offences, resulted in a decree of righteousness. For if, by reason of the offence of the one man, death reigned through that one man, far more will those, on whom God's loving kindness and his gift of righteousness are lavished, find life, and reign through the one man, Jesus Christ.

15 Briefly then, just as a single offence resulted for all humanity in condemnation, so, too, a single decree of righteousness resulted for all humanity in that declaration of righteousness which brings

16 life. For, as through the disobedience of the one man the whole human race was rendered sinful, so, too, through the obedience of the one, the whole human race will be rendered righteous. Law

17 was introduced in order that offences might be multiplied. But,

18

19

20

where sins were multiplied, the loving kindness of God was lavished the more, in order than, just as sin had reigned in the realm of death, so, too, might Loving-kindness reign through righteousness, and result in eternal life, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. 21

*Difficulties arising from this Teaching*

WHAT ARE WE TO SAY, then? Are we to continue to sin, in order that God's loving kindness may be multiplied? Heaven forbid! We became dead to sin, and how can we go on living in it? Or can it be that you do not know that all of us, who were baptized into union with Christ Jesus, in our baptism shared his death? Consequently, through sharing his death in our baptism, we were buried with him; that, just as Christ was raised from the dead by a manifestation of the Father's power, so we also may live a new life. If we have become united with him by the act symbolic of his death, surely we will also become united with him by the act symbolic of his resurrection. We recognise the truth that our old self was crucified with Christ, in order that the body, the stronghold of sin, might be rendered powerless, so that we should no longer be slaves to sin. For the man who has so died has been pronounced righteous and released from sin. And our belief is, that, as we have shared Christ's death, we will also share his life. We know, indeed, that Christ, having once risen from the dead, will not die again. Death has power over him no longer. For the death that he died was a death to sin, once and for all. But the life that he now lives, he lives for God. So let it be with you — regard yourselves as dead to sin, but as living for God, through union with Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let sin reign in your mortal bodies and compel you to obey its cravings. Do not offer any part of your bodies to sin, in the cause of unrighteousness, but once for all offer yourselves to God (as those who, though once dead, now have life), and devote every part of your bodies to the cause of righteousness. For sin will not lord it over you. You are living under the reign, not of Law, but of love. 6 2 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14

What follows, then? Are we to sin because we are living under the reign of love and not of Law? Heaven forbid! Surely you know that, when you offer yourselves as servants, to obey anyone, you are the servants of the person whom you obey, whether 15 16

17 the service be a service sin which leads to death, or a service Duty  
 which leads to righteousness. God be thanked that, though you  
 were once servants of sin, yet you learned to give hearty obedi-  
 18 ence to that form of doctrine under which you were placed. Set  
 free from the control of sin, you became servants to righteous-  
 19 ness. I can but speak as people do because of the weakness of  
 your earthly nature. Once you offered every part of your bodies  
 to the service of impurity, and of wickedness, which leads to fur-  
 20 ther wickedness. Now, in the same way, offer them to the service  
 of righteousness, which leads to holiness. While you were still  
 21 servants of sin, you were free as regards righteousness. But what  
 were the fruits that you reaped from those things of which you  
 22 are now ashamed? For the end of such things is death. But now  
 that you have been set free from the control of sin, and have be-  
 come servants to God, the fruit that you reap is an ever increasing  
 23 holiness, and the end eternal life. The wages of sin are death, but  
 the gift of God is eternal life, through union with Christ Jesus, our  
 Lord.

7 Surely, friends, you know (for I am speaking to people who  
 know what Law means) that Law has power over a person only  
 2 as long as they lives. For example, by law a married woman is  
 bound to her husband while he is living; but, if her husband dies,  
 3 she is set free from the law that bound her to him. If, then, during  
 her husband's lifetime, she unites herself to another man, she will  
 be called an adulteress; but, if her husband dies, the law has no  
 further hold on her, nor, if she unites herself to another man, is  
 4 she an adulteress. And so with you, my friends; as far as the Law  
 was concerned, you underwent death in the crucified body of the  
 Christ, so that you might be united to another, to him who was  
 raised from the dead, in order that our lives might bear fruit for  
 5 God. When we were living merely earthly lives, our sinful pas-  
 sions, aroused by the Law, were active in every part of our bodies,  
 6 with the result that our lives bore fruit for death. But now we are  
 set free from the Law, because we are dead to that which once  
 kept us under restraint; and so we serve under new, spiritual con-  
 ditions, and not under old, written regulations.

7 What are we to say, then? That Law and sin are the same thing?  
 Heaven forbid! On the contrary, I should not have learned what  
 sin is, had not it been for Law. If the Law did not say "You must



not covet," I should not know what it is to covet. But sin took advantage of the Commandment to arouse in me every form of covetousness, for where there is no consciousness of Law sin shows no sign of life. There was a time when I myself, unconscious of Law, was alive; but when the Commandment was brought home to me, sin sprang into life, while I died! The Commandment that should have meant life I found to result in death! sin took advantage of the Commandment to deceive me, and used it to bring about my death. And so the Law is holy, and each Commandment is also holy, and just, and good. Did, then, a thing, which in itself was good, involve death in my case? Heaven forbid! It was sin that involved death; so that, by its use of what I regarded as good to bring about my death, its true nature might appear; and in this way the Commandment showed how intensely sinful sin is. We know that the Law is spiritual, but I am earthly — sold into slavery to sin. I do not understand my own actions. For I am so far from habitually doing what I want to do, that I find myself doing the thing that I hate. But when I do what I want not to do, I am admitting that the Law is right. This being so, the action is no longer my own, but is done by the sin which is within me. I know that there is nothing good in me — I mean in my earthly nature. For, although it is easy for me to want to do right, to act rightly is not easy. I fail to do the good thing that I want to do, but the bad thing that I want not to do — that I habitually do. But, when I do the thing that I want not to do, the action is no longer my own, but is done by the sin which is within me. This, then, is the law that I find — when I want to do right, wrong presents itself! At heart I delight in the Law of God; but throughout my body I see a different law, one which is in conflict with the law accepted by my reason, and which endeavours to make me a prisoner to that law of sin which exists throughout my body. Miserable man that I am! Who will deliver me from the body that is bringing me to this death? Thank God, there is deliverance through Jesus Christ, our Lord! Well then, for myself, with my reason I serve the Law of God, but with my earthly nature the Law of sin.

There is, therefore, now no condemnation for those who are in union with Christ Jesus; for through your union with Christ Jesus, the Law of the life-giving Spirit has set you free from the Law of sin and death. What Law could not do, in so far as our earthly nature weakened its action, God did, by sending his own

Son, with a nature resembling our sinful nature, to atone for sin.  
4 He condemned sin in that earthly nature, so that the require-  
5 ments of the Law might be satisfied in us who live now in obedi-  
6 ence, not to our earthly nature, but to the Spirit. They who follow  
7 their earthly nature are earthly-minded, while they who follow  
8 the Spirit are spiritually minded. To be earthly-minded means  
9 death, to be spiritually minded means life and peace; because to  
10 be earthly-minded is to be an enemy to God, for such a mind does  
11 not submit to the Law of God, nor indeed can it do so. They who  
12 are earthly cannot please God. You, however, are not earthly but  
13 spiritual, since the Spirit of God lives within you. Unless a person  
14 has the Spirit of Christ, they do not belong to Christ; but, if Christ  
15 is within you, then, though the body is dead as a consequence of  
16 sin, the spirit is life as a consequence of righteousness. And, if the  
17 Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives within you, he  
18 who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will give life even to your  
19 mortal bodies, through his Spirit living within you.  
20 So then, friends, we owe nothing to our earthly nature, that  
21 we should live in obedience to it. If you live in obedience to your  
22 earthly nature, you will inevitably die; but if, by the power of the  
23 Spirit, you put an end to the evil habits of the body, you will live.  
24 All who are guided by the Spirit of God are sons of God. For you  
25 did not receive the spirit of a slave, to fill you once more with fear,  
26 but the spirit of a son which leads us to cry "Abba, Our Father."  
27 The Spirit himself unites with our spirits in bearing witness to  
28 our being God's children, and if children, then heirs — heirs of  
29 God, and joint heirs with Christ, since we share Christ's sufferings  
30 in order that we may also share his glory.  
31 I do not count the sufferings of our present life worthy of men-  
32 tion when compared with the glory that is to be revealed and  
33 bestowed on us. All Nature awaits with eager expectation the  
34 appearing of the sons of God. For Nature was made subject to  
35 imperfection — not by its own choice, but owing to him who  
36 made it so — yet not without the hope that some day Nature,  
37 also, will be set free from enslavement to decay, and will attain  
38 to the freedom which will mark the glory of the children of God.  
39 We know, indeed, that all Nature alike has been groaning in the  
40 pains of labour to this very hour. And not Nature only; but we  
41 ourselves also, though we have already a first gift of the Spirit —  
42 we ourselves are inwardly groaning, while we eagerly await our

full adoption as sons — the redemption of our bodies. By our hope we were saved. But the thing hoped for is no longer an object of hope when it is before our eyes; for who hopes for what is before his eyes? But when we hope for what is not before our eyes, then we wait for it with patience.

So, also, the Spirit supports us in our weakness. We do not even know how to pray as we should; but the Spirit himself pleads for us in sighs that can find no utterance. Yet he who searches all our hearts knows what the Spirit’s meaning is, because the pleadings of the Spirit for Christ’s people are in accordance with his will. But we do know that God causes all things to work together for the good of those who love him — those who have received the call in accordance with his purpose. For those whom God chose from the first he also destined from the first to be transformed into likeness to his Son, so that his Son might be the eldest among many brothers and sisters. And those whom God destined for this he also called; and those whom he called he also pronounced righteous; and those whom he pronounced righteous he also brought to glory.

What are we to say, then, in the light of all this? 31

If God is on our side, who can there be against us?  
 God did not withhold his own Son, but gave him up on behalf of us all; will he not, then, with him, freely give us all things? 32

Who will bring a charge against any of God’s people? He who pronounces them righteous is God! 33

Who is there to condemn them? He who died for us is Christ Jesus! — or, rather, it was he who was raised from the dead, and who is now at God’s right hand and is even pleading on our behalf! 34

Who is there to separate us from the love of the Christ? Will trouble, or difficulty, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or danger, or the sword? 35

scripture says — “For your sake we are being killed all the day long, We are regarded as sheep to be slaughtered.” Yet amid all these things we more than conquer through him who loved us! For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor archangels, nor the present, nor the future, nor any powers, nor 36  
 37  
 38  
 39

height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, will be able to separate us from the love of God revealed in Christ Jesus, our Lord!

### *Gentiles and Jews*

9 I AM SPEAKING THE TRUTH AS ONE IN UNION WITH CHRIST; it is no lie;  
 2 and my conscience, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, bears me out  
 3 when I say that there is a great weight of sorrow on me and that  
 4 my heart is never free from pain. I could wish that I were myself  
 5 accursed and severed from the Christ, for the sake of my people  
 6 — my own flesh and blood. For they are Israelites, and theirs  
 7 are the adoption as sons, the visible presence, the Covenants, the  
 8 revealed Law, the Temple worship, and the Promises. They are  
 9 descended from the Patriarchs; and, as far as his human nature  
 10 was concerned, from them came the Christ — he who is supreme  
 11 over all things, God for ever blessed. Amen.

12 Not that God's Word has failed. For it is not all who are de-  
 13 scended from Israel who are true Israelites; nor, because they  
 14 are Abraham's descendants, are they all his children; but — "It  
 15 is Isaac's children who will be called your descendants." This  
 16 means that it is not the children born in the course of nature who  
 17 are God's children, but it is the children born in fulfilment of the  
 18 Promise who are to be regarded as Abraham's descendants. For  
 19 these words are the words of a promise — "About this time I  
 20 will come, and Sarah will have a son." Nor is that all. There is  
 21 also the case of Rebecca, when she was about to bear children to  
 22 our ancestor Isaac. For in order that the purpose of God, work-  
 23 ing through selection, might not fail — a selection depending, not  
 24 on obedience, but on his call — Rebecca was told, before her chil-  
 25 dren were born and before they had done anything either right or  
 26 wrong, that "the elder would be a servant to the younger." The  
 27 words of scripture are — "I loved Jacob, but I hated Esau."

28 What are we to say, then? Is God guilty of injustice? Heaven  
 29 forbid! For his words to Moses are — "I will take pity on whom  
 30 I take pity, and be merciful to whom I am merciful." So, then, all  
 31 depends, not on human wishes or human efforts, but on God's  
 32 mercy. In scripture, again, it is said to Pharaoh — "It was for this  
 33 purpose that I raised you to the throne, to show my power by  
 34 my dealings with you, and to make my name known throughout

the world." So, then, where God wills, he takes pity, and where 18  
 he wills, he hardens the heart. Perhaps you will say to me — 19  
 "How can anyone still be blamed? For who withstands his pur-  
 pose?" I might rather ask "Who are you who are arguing with 20  
 God?" Does a thing which a person has moulded say to the per-  
 son who has moulded it "Why did you make me like this?" Has 21  
 not the potter absolute power over their clay, so that out of the  
 same lump they make one thing for better, and another for com- 22  
 mon, use? And what if God, intending to reveal his displeasure  
 and make his power known, bore most patiently with the objects  
 of his displeasure, though they were fit only to be destroyed, so 23  
 as to make known his surpassing glory in dealing with the ob-  
 jects of his mercy, whom he prepared beforehand for glory, and 24  
 whom he called — even us — Not only from among the Jews but  
 from among the Gentiles also! This, indeed, is what he says in 25  
 the book of Hosea — "Those who were not my people, I will call  
 my people, and those who were unloved I will love. And in the 26  
 place where it was said to them — 'You are not my people', they  
 will be called sons of the living God." And Isaiah cries aloud over 27  
 Israel — "Though the sons of Israel are like the sand of the sea in  
 number, only a remnant of them will escape! For the Lord will 28  
 execute his sentence on the world, fully and without delay." It is 29  
 as Isaiah foretold — "Had not the Lord of Hosts spared some few  
 of our people to us, we should have become like Sodom and been  
 made to resemble Gomorrah."

What are we to say, then? Why, that Gentiles, who were not 30  
 in search of righteousness, secured it — a righteousness which  
 was the result of faith; while Israel, which was in search of a Law 31  
 which would ensure righteousness, failed to discover one. And 32  
 why? Because they looked to obedience, and not to faith, to secure  
 it. They stumbled over "the Stumbling-block." As scripture says 33  
 — "See, I place a Stumbling-block in Zion — a Rock which will  
 prove a hindrance; and he who believes in him will have no cause  
 for shame."

My friends, my heart's desire and prayer to God for my peo- 10  
 ple is for their salvation. I can testify that they are zealous for 2  
 the honour of God; but they are not guided by true insight, for, 3  
 in their ignorance of the divine righteousness, and in their eager-  
 ness to set up a righteousness of their own, they refused to accept  
 with submission the divine righteousness. For Christ has brought 4

Law to an end, so that righteousness may be obtained by everyone  
 5 who believes in him. For Moses writes that, as for the righteous-  
 6 ness which results from Law, "those who practice it will find life  
 through it." But the righteousness which results from faith finds  
 expression in these words — "Do not say to yourself 'Who will  
 7 go up into heaven?'" — which means to bring Christ down — "or  
 8 'Who will go down into the depths below?'" — which means to  
 8 bring Christ up from the dead. No, but what does it say? "The  
 9 message of faith" which we proclaim. For, if with your lips you  
 acknowledge the truth of the message that JESUS IS LORD, and  
 believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you will  
 10 be saved. For with their hearts people believe and so attain to  
 righteousness, while with their lips they make their Profession  
 11 of faith and so find salvation. As the passage of scripture says  
 — "No one who believes in him will have any cause for shame."  
 12 For no distinction is made between the Jew and the Greek, for all  
 have the same Lord, and he is bountiful to all who invoke him. For  
 13 "everyone who invokes the name of the Lord will be saved." But  
 14 how, it may be asked, are they to invoke one in whom they have  
 not learned to believe? And how are they to believe in one whose  
 words they have not heard? And how are they to hear his words  
 15 unless someone proclaims him? And how is anyone to proclaim  
 him unless they are sent as his messengers? As scripture says —  
 "How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!"  
 16 Still, it may be said, everyone did not give heed to the good  
 news. No, for Isaiah asks — "Lord, who has believed our teach-  
 17 ing?" And so we gather, faith is a result of teaching, and the teach-  
 18 ing comes in the message of Christ. But I ask "Is it possible that  
 people have never heard?" No, indeed, for — "Their voices spread  
 through all the earth, and their message to the ends of the world."  
 19 But again I ask "Did not the people of Israel understand? First  
 there is Moses, who says — "I, the Lord, will stir you to rivalry  
 with a nation which is no nation; Against an undiscerning nation  
 20 I will arouse your anger." And Isaiah says boldly — "I was found  
 by those who were not seeking me; I made myself known to those  
 21 who were not inquiring of me. But of the people of Israel he says  
 — "All day long I have stretched out my hands to a people who  
 disobey and contradict."  
 11 I ask, then, "Has God rejected his people?" Heaven forbid! For  
 I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, of the tribe of

Benjamin. God has not rejected his people, whom he chose from 2  
 the first. Have you forgotten the words of scripture in the story of  
 Elijah — how he appeals to God against Israel? “Lord, they have 3  
 killed your prophets, they have pulled down your altars, and I  
 only am left; and now they are eager to take my life.” But what 4  
 was the divine response? “I have kept for myself seven thousand  
 who have never bowed the knee to Baal.” And so in our own time, 5  
 too, there is to be found a remnant of our nation selected by God  
 in love. But if in love, then no longer as a result of obedience. Oth- 6  
 erwise love would cease to be love. What follows from this? Why, 7  
 that Israel as a nation failed to secure what it was seeking, while  
 those whom God selected did secure it. The rest grew callous; 8  
 as scripture says — “God has given them a deadness of mind —  
 eyes that are not to see and ears that are not to hear — and it is  
 so to this very day.” David, too, says — “May their feasts prove 9  
 a snare and a trap to them — a hindrance and a retribution; may  
 their eyes be darkened, so that they cannot see; and do you always 10  
 make their backs to bend.” I ask then — “Was their stumbling to  
 result in their fall?” Heaven forbid! On the contrary, through their 11  
 falling away salvation has reached the Gentiles, to stir the rivalry  
 of Israel. And, if their falling away has enriched the world, and 12  
 their failure has enriched the Gentiles, how much more will result  
 from their full restoration!

But I am speaking to you who were Gentiles. Being myself an 13  
 apostle to the Gentiles, I exalt my office, in the hope that I may 14  
 stir my countrymen to rivalry, and so save some of them. For, if 15  
 their being cast aside has meant the reconciliation of the world,  
 what will their reception mean, but life from the dead? If the first 16  
 handful of dough in holy, so is the whole mass; and if the root is  
 holy, so are the branches. Some, however, of the branches were 17  
 broken off, and you, who were only a wild olive, were grafted in  
 among them, and came to share with them the root which is the  
 source of the richness of the cultivated olive. Yet do not exult over 18  
 the other branches. But, if you do exult over them, remember that  
 you do not support the root, but that the root supports you. But 19  
 branches, you will say, were broken off, so that I might be grafted  
 in. True; it was because of their want of faith that they were bro- 20  
 ken off, and it is because of your faith that you are standing. Do  
 not think too highly of yourself, but beware. For, if God did not 21  
 spare the natural branches, neither will he spare you. See, then, 22

both the goodness and the severity of God — his severity towards those who fell, and his goodness towards you, provided that you continue to confide in that goodness; otherwise you, also, will be cut off. And they, too, if they do not continue in their unbelief, will be grafted in; for God has it in his power to graft them in again. If you were cut off from your natural stock — a wild olive — and were grafted, contrary to the course of nature, on a good olive, much more will they — the natural branches — be grafted back into their parent tree.

My friends, so that you don't think too highly of yourselves, I want you to recognise the truth, hitherto hidden, that the callousness which has come over Israel is only partial, and will continue only until the whole Gentile world has been gathered in. And then all Israel will be saved. As scripture says — "From Zion will come the Deliverer; he will banish ungodliness from Jacob. And they will see the fulfilment of my covenant, when I have taken away their sins." From the standpoint of the good news, the Jews are God's enemies for your sake; but from the standpoint of God's selection, they are dear to him for the sake of the Patriarchs. For God never regrets his gifts or his call. Just as you at one time were disobedient to him, but have now found mercy in the day of their disobedience; so, too, they have now become disobedient in your day of mercy, in order that they also in their turn may now find mercy. For God has given all alike over to disobedience, that to all alike he may show mercy. Oh! The unfathomable wisdom and knowledge of God! How inscrutable are his judgments, how untraceable his ways! Yes — "Who has ever comprehended the mind of the Lord? Who has ever become his counsellor? Or who has first given to him, so that he may claim a reward?" For all things are from him, through him, and for him. And to him be all glory for ever and ever! Amen.

### *Advice on Daily Life*

**12** I ENTREAT YOU, then, friends, by the mercies of God, to offer your bodies as a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, for this is your rational worship. Do not conform to the fashion of this world; but be transformed by the complete change that has come



over your minds, so that you may discern what God's will is — all that is good, acceptable, and perfect.

In fulfilment of the charge with which I have been entrusted, I tell every one of you not to think more highly of himself than he ought to think, but to think until he learns to think soberly — in accordance with the measure of faith that God has allotted to each. For, just as in the human body there is a union of many parts, and each part has its own function, so we, by our union in Christ, many though we are, form but one body, and individually we are related one to another as its parts. Since our gifts differ in accordance with the particular charge entrusted to us, if our gift is to preach, let our preaching correspond to our faith; if it is to minister to others, let us devote ourselves to our ministry; the teacher to their teaching, the counselor to their counsel. Let the person who gives in charity do so with a generous heart; let the person who is in authority exercise due diligence; let the person who shows kindness do so in a cheerful spirit. Let your love be sincere. Hate the wrong; cling to the right. In the love of the community of the Lord's followers, be affectionate to one another; in showing respect, set an example of deference to one another; never flagging in zeal; fervent in spirit; serving the Master; rejoicing in your hope; steadfast under persecution; persevering in prayer; relieving the wants of Christ's people; devoted to hospitality. Bless your persecutors — bless and never curse. Rejoice with those who are rejoicing, and weep with those who are weeping. Let the same spirit of sympathy animate you all, not a spirit of pride; enjoy the company of ordinary people. Do not think too highly of yourselves. Never return injury for injury. Aim at doing what everyone will recognise as honourable. If it is possible, as far as rests with you, live peaceably with everyone. Never avenge yourselves, dear friends, but make way for the wrath of God; for scripture declares — "It is for me to avenge, I will requite," says the Lord." Rather — "If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him to drink. By doing this you will heap coals of fire on his head." Never be conquered by evil, but conquer evil with good.

Let everyone obey the supreme Authorities. For no Authority exists except by the will of God, and the existing Authorities have been appointed by God. Therefore he who sets himself against

- the authorities is resisting God's appointment, and those who resist will bring a judgment on themselves. A good action has nothing to fear from Rulers; a bad action has. Do you want to have no reason to fear the Authorities? Then do what is good, and you will win their praise. For they are God's servants appointed for your good. But, if you do what is wrong, you may well be afraid; for the sword they carry is not without meaning! They are God's servants to inflict his punishments on those who do wrong. You are bound, therefore, to obey, not only through fear of God's punishments, but also as a matter of conscience. This, too, is the reason for your paying taxes; for the officials are God's officers, devoting themselves to this special work. In all cases pay what is due from you — tribute where tribute is due, taxes where taxes are due, respect where respect is due, and honour where honour is due.
- Owe nothing to anyone except love; for they who love their neighbour have satisfied the Law. The commandments, "You must not commit adultery, You must not kill, You must not steal, You must not covet," and whatever other commandment there is, are all summed up in the words — "You must love your neighbour as you love yourself." Love never wrongs a neighbour. Therefore love fully satisfies the Law. This I say, because you know the crisis that we have reached, for the time has already come for you to rouse yourselves from sleep; our salvation is nearer now than when we accepted the faith.
- The night is almost gone; the day is near. Therefore let us have done with the deeds of darkness, and arm ourselves with the weapons of light. Being in the light of day, let us live becomingly, not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lust and licentiousness, not in quarrelling and jealousy. No! Arm yourselves with the spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, and spend no thought on your earthly nature, to satisfy its cravings.
- As for those whose faith is weak, always receive them as friends, but not for the purpose of passing judgment on their scruples. One person's faith permits of their eating food of all kinds, while another whose faith is weak eats only vegetable food. The person who eats meat must not despise the person who abstains from it; nor must the person who abstains from eating meat pass judgment on the one who eats it, for God himself has received them. Who are you, that you should pass judgment on the servant of another? Their standing or falling

concerns their own master. And stand they will, for their Master can enable them to stand. Again, one person considers some 5  
 days to be more sacred than others, while another considers all days to be alike. Everyone ought to be fully convinced in their own mind. The person who observes a day, observes it to the 6  
 Master's honour. They, again, who eat meat eat it to the Master's honour, for they give thanks to God; while the person who abstains from it abstains from it to the Master's honour, and also gives thanks to God. There is not one of us whose life concerns 7  
 ourselves alone, and not one of us whose death concerns ourself alone; for, if we live, our life is for the Master, and, if we die, our 8  
 death is for the Master. Whether, then, we live or die we belong to the Master. The purpose for which Christ died and came 9  
 back to life was this — that he might be Lord over both the dead and the living. I would ask the one "Why do you judge other 10  
 followers of the Lord?" And I would ask the other "Why do you despise them?" For we will all stand before the court of God. For scripture says — "'As surely as I live,' says the Lord, 'every knee 11  
 will bend before me; and every tongue will make acknowledgment to God.'" So, then, each one of us will have to 12  
 render account of himself to God.

Let us, then, cease to judge one another. Rather let this be your 13  
 resolve — never to place a stumbling-block or an obstacle in the way of a fellow follower of the Lord. Through my union with the 14  
 Lord Jesus, I know and am persuaded that nothing is "defiling in itself." A thing is "defiling" only to the person who holds it to be so. If, for the sake of what you eat, you wound your fellow fol- 15  
 lower's feelings, your life has ceased to be ruled by love. Do not, by what you eat, ruin someone for whom Christ died! Do not let 16  
 what is right for you become a matter of reproach. For the kingdom of God does not consist of eating and drinking, but of right- 17  
 eousness and peace and gladness through the presence of the Holy Spirit. The person who serves the Christ in this way pleases 18  
 God, and wins the approval of their fellows. Therefore our efforts 19  
 should be directed towards all that makes for peace and the mutual building up of character. Do not undo God's work for the 20  
 sake of what you eat. Though everything is "clean," yet, if a person eats so as to put a stumbling-block in the way of others, they do wrong. The right course is to abstain from meat or wine or, in- 21  
 deed, anything that is a stumbling-block to your fellow follower

22 of the Lord. As for yourself — keep this faith of yours to yourself, as in the presence of God. Happy the person who never has to condemn themselves in regard to something they think right!

23 The person, however, who has misgivings stands condemned if they still eat, because their doing so is not the result of faith. And anything not done as the result of faith is a sin.

15 We, the strong, ought to take on our own shoulders the weaknesses of those who are not strong, and not merely to please ourselves. Let each of us please our neighbour for our neighbour's good, to help in the building up of their character. Even the Christ did not please himself! On the contrary, as scripture says of him — “The reproaches of those who were reproaching you fell upon me.” Whatever was written in the scriptures in days gone by was written for our instruction, so that, through patient endurance, and through the encouragement drawn from the scriptures, we might hold fast to our hope. And may God, the giver of this patience and this encouragement, grant you to be united in sympathy in Christ, so that with one heart and one voice you may praise the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore always receive one another as friends, just as the Christ himself received us, to the glory of God. For I tell you that Christ, in vindication of God's truthfulness, has become a minister of the covenant of circumcision, so that he may fulfil the promises made to our ancestors, and that the Gentiles also may praise God for his mercy. As scripture says — “Therefore will I make acknowledgment to you among the Gentiles and sing in honour of your name.” And again it says — “Rejoice, you Gentiles, with God's people.” And yet again — “Praise the Lord, all you Gentiles, and let all Peoples sing his praises.” Again, Isaiah says — “There will be a Scion of the house of Jesse, One who is to arise to rule the Gentiles; on him will the Gentiles rest their hopes.” May God, who inspires our hope, grant you perfect happiness and peace in your faith, until you are filled with this hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.

14 I am persuaded, my friends — yes, I Paul, with regard to you — that you are yourselves full of kindness, furnished with all Christian learning, and well able to give advice to one another. But in parts of this letter I have expressed myself somewhat boldly

15 — by way of refreshing your memories — because of the charge with which God has entrusted me, that I should be an assistant of Christ Jesus to go to the Gentiles — that I should act as a priest

of God's good news, so that the offering up of the Gentiles may be an acceptable sacrifice, consecrated by the Holy Spirit. It is, then, through my union with Christ Jesus that I have a proud confidence in my work for God. For I will not dare to speak of anything but what Christ has done through me to win the obedience of the Gentiles — by my words and actions, through the power displayed in signs and marvels, and through the power of the Holy Spirit. And so, starting from Jerusalem and going as far as Illyria, I have told in full the good news of the Christ; yet always with the ambition to tell the good news where Christ's name had not previously been heard, so as to avoid building on another's foundations. But as scripture says — "They to whom he had never been proclaimed will see; and they who have never heard will understand!"

### *Conclusion*

THAT IS WHY I HAVE SO OFTEN BEEN PREVENTED FROM COMING TO YOU. But now there are no further openings for me in these parts, and I have for several years been longing to come to you whenever I may be going to Spain. For my hope is to visit you on my journey, and then to be sent on my way by you, after I have first partly satisfied myself by seeing something of you. Just now, however, I am on my way to Jerusalem, to take help to Christ's people there. For Macedonia and Greece have been glad to make a collection for the poor among Christ's people at Jerusalem. Yes, they were glad to do so; and indeed it is a duty which they owe to them. For the Gentile converts who have shared their spiritual blessings are in duty bound to minister to them in the things of this world. When I have settled this matter, and have secured to the poor at Jerusalem the enjoyment of these benefits, I will go, by way of you, to Spain. And I know that, when I come to you, it will be with a full measure of blessing from Christ.

I beg you, then, friends, by Jesus Christ, our Lord, and by the love inspired by the Spirit, to join me in earnest prayer to God on my behalf. Pray that I may be rescued from those in Judea who reject the faith, and that the help which I am taking to Jerusalem may prove acceptable to Christ's people; so that, God willing, I may be able to come to you with a joyful heart, and enjoy some

33 rest among you. May God, the giver of peace, be with you all.  
Amen.

16 I commend to your care our sister, Phoebe, who is an assistant  
2 of the church at Cenchreae; and I ask you to give her a Christian  
welcome — one worthy of Christ's people — and to aid her in any  
matter in which she may need your assistance. She has proved  
herself a staunch friend and protector and to many others.

3 Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, my fellow workers in  
4 the cause of Christ Jesus, who risked their own lives to save mine.  
It is not I alone who thank them, but all the churches among the  
5 Gentiles thank them also. Give my greeting, also, to the church  
that meets at their house, as well as to my dear friend Epänetus,  
6 one of the first in Roman Asia to believe in Christ; to Mary, who  
7 worked hard for you; to Andronicus and Junia, fellow Jews and  
once my fellow prisoners, who are people of note among the apos-  
8 tles, and who became Christians before I did; to my dear Chris-  
9 tian friend Ampliatus; to Urban, our fellow worker in the cause  
10 of Christ, and to my dear friend Stachys; to that proved Chris-  
11 tian Apelles; to the household of Aristobulus; to my country-  
man Herodion; to the Christians in the household of Narcissus; to  
12 Tryphaena and Tryphosa, who have worked hard for the Master;  
to my dear friend Persis, for she has done much hard work for the  
13 Master; to that eminent Christian, Rufus, and to his mother, who  
14 has been a mother to me also; to Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermes,  
15 Patrobas, Hermas, and our friends with them; also to Philologus  
and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and to all Christ's  
16 people who are with them. Greet one another with a sacred kiss.  
All the churches of the Christ send you greetings.

17 I beg you, friends, to be on your guard against people who,  
by disregarding the teaching which you received, cause divisions  
18 and create difficulties; dissociate yourselves from them. For such  
persons are not serving Christ, our Master, but are slaves to their  
own appetites; and, by their smooth words and flattery, they de-  
19 ceive simple-minded people. Everyone has heard of your ready  
obedience. It is true that I am very happy about you, but I want  
you to be well versed in all that is good, and innocent of all that  
20 is bad. And God, the giver of peace, will before long crush Satan  
under your feet.

May the blessing of Jesus, our Lord, be with you.

Timothy, my fellow worker, sends you his greetings, and Lucius, Jason, and Sosipater, my countrymen, send theirs. 21

I Tertius, who am writing this letter, send you my Christian greeting. 22

My host Gaius, who extends his hospitality to the whole church, sends you his greeting; and Erastus, the city treasurer, and Quartus, our dear friend, add theirs. 23

Now to him who is able to strengthen you, as promised in the good news entrusted to me and in the proclamation of Jesus Christ, in accordance with the revelation of that hidden purpose, which in past ages was kept secret but now has been revealed and, in obedience to the command of the immortal God, made known through the writings of the prophets to all nations, to secure submission to the faith — to him, I say, the wise and only God, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, all glory for ever and ever. Amen. 25  
26  
27





# PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

## *Introduction*

TO THE CHURCH OF GOD IN CORINTH, to those who have been conse- 1  
 crated by union with Christ Jesus and called to become his people,  
 and also to all, wherever they may be, who invoke the name of our  
 Lord Jesus Christ — their Master and ours, from Paul, who has 2  
 been called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and  
 from Sosthenes, our fellow follower of the Lord.

May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and 3  
 give you peace.

I always thank God about you for the blessing bestowed on you 4  
 in Christ Jesus. For through union with him you were enriched 5  
 in every way — in your power to preach, and in your knowledge  
 of the truth; and so became yourselves a confirmation of my tes- 6  
 timony to the Christ. There is no gift in which you are deficient, 7  
 while waiting for the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. And 8  
 God himself will strengthen you to the end, so that at the day of  
 our Lord Jesus Christ you may be found blameless. God will not 9  
 fail you, and it is he who called you into communion with his Son,  
 Jesus Christ, our Lord.

## *The State of the Church at Corinth*

BUT I APPEAL TO YOU, my friends, by the name of our Lord Jesus 10  
 Christ, to agree in what you profess, and not to allow divisions  
 to exist among you, but to be united — of one mind and of one  
 opinion. For I have been informed, my friends, by the members of 11  
 Chloe's household, that party feeling exists among you. I mean  
 this: that every one of you says either "I follow Paul," or "I Apol- 12  
 los," or "I Cephas," or "I Christ." You have torn the Christ in 13

14 pieces! Was it Paul who was crucified for you? Or were you bap-  
 15 tized into the faith of Paul? I am thankful that I did not baptize  
 16 any of you except Crispus and Gaius, so that no one can say that  
 17 you were baptized into my faith. I baptized also the household  
 of Stephanas. I do not know that I baptized anyone else. My mis-  
 sion from Christ was not to baptize, but to tell the good news;  
 not, however, in the language of philosophy, in case the cross of  
 the Christ should be robbed of its meaning.

18 The message of the cross is indeed mere folly to those who are  
 in the path to ruin, but to us who are in the path of salvation it is  
 19 the power of God. For scripture says —

“I will bring the philosophy of the philosophers to naught,  
 and the shrewdness of the shrewd I will bring to nothing.”

20 Where is the philosopher? Where the teacher of the Law? Where  
 the disputant of today? Has not God shown the world’s philoso-  
 21 ophy to be folly? For since the world, in God’s wisdom, did not  
 by its philosophy learn to know God, God saw fit, by the “folly”  
 22 of our proclamation, to save those who believe in Christ! While  
 Jews ask for miraculous signs, and Greeks study philosophy, we  
 23 are proclaiming Christ crucified! — to the Jews an obstacle, to  
 the Gentiles mere folly, but to those who have received the call,  
 whether Jews or Greeks, Christ, the power of God and the wis-  
 24 dom of God! For God’s “folly” is wiser than people, and God’s  
 25 “weakness” is stronger than people.

26 Look at the facts of your call, friends. There are not many  
 among you who are wise, as people reckon wisdom, not many  
 27 who are influential, not many who are high-born; but God chose  
 what the world counts foolish to put its wise to shame, and God  
 chose what the world counts weak to put its strong to shame,  
 28 and God chose what the world counts poor and insignificant —  
 things that to it are unreal — to bring its “realities” to nothing,  
 29 so that in his presence no one should boast. But you, by your  
 union with Christ Jesus, belong to God; and Christ, by God’s  
 30 will, became not only our wisdom, but also our righteousness,  
 31 holiness, and deliverance, so that — in the words of scripture —

“Whoever boasts should boast of the Lord!”

For my own part, friends, when I came to you, it was with no 2  
display of eloquence or philosophy that I came to tell the hid- 2  
den purpose of God; for I had determined that, while with you, 2  
I would forget everything Jesus Christ — and him crucified! In- 3  
deed, when I came among you, I was weak, and full of fears, and 3  
in great anxiety. My message and my proclamation were not 4  
delivered in the persuasive language of philosophy, but were accom- 4  
panied by the manifestation of spiritual power, so that your faith 5  
should be based, not on the human wisdom, but on the power of 5  
God. 5

Yet there is a philosophy that we teach to those whose faith is 6  
matured, but it is not the philosophy of today, or of the leaders of 6  
today — whose downfall is at hand. No, it is a divine philosophy 7  
that we teach, one concerned with the hidden purpose of God 7  
— that long hidden philosophy which God, before time began, 8  
destined for our glory. This philosophy is not known to any of 8  
the leaders of today; for, had they known it, they would not have 8  
crucified our glorified Lord. It is what scripture speaks of as — 9

“What eye never saw, nor ear ever heard,  
what never entered people’s minds —  
even all that God has prepared for those who love him.”

Yet to us God revealed it through his Spirit; for the Spirit fath- 10  
oms all things, even the inmost depths of God’s being. For what 11  
person is there who knows what a person is, except the person’s 11  
own spirit within them? So, also, no one comprehends what God 11  
is, except the Spirit of God. And as for us, it is not the spirit of the 12  
world that we have received, but the Spirit that comes from God, 12  
so that we may realize the blessings given to us by him. And we 13  
speak of these gifts, not in language taught by human philosophy, 13  
but in language taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual things in 13  
spiritual words. The merely intellectual person rejects the teach- 14  
ing of the Spirit of God; for to them it is mere folly; they cannot 14  
grasp it, because it is to be understood only by spiritual insight. 14  
But the person with spiritual insight is able to understand every- 15  
thing, although they themselves are understood by no one. For 16  
“who has so comprehended the mind of the Lord as to be able to 16  
instruct him?” We, however, have the mind of Christ.

3 But I, my friends, could not speak to you as people with spir-  
 2 itual insight, but only as worldly-minded — mere infants in the  
 2 faith of Christ. I fed you with milk, not with solid food, for you  
 were not then able to take it.

No, and even now you are not able; you are still worldly. While  
 3 there exist among you jealousy and party feeling, is it not true  
 that you are worldly, and are acting merely as other people do?  
 4 When one says "I follow Paul," and another "I follow Apollos,"  
 5 aren't you like other people? What, I ask, is Apollos? Or what  
 is Paul? Servants through whom you were led to accept the faith;  
 6 and that only as the Lord helped each of you. I planted, and Apol-  
 7 los watered, but it was God who caused the growth. Therefore  
 neither the one who plants, nor the one who waters, counts for  
 8 anything, but only God who causes the growth. In this the per-  
 son who plants and the person who waters are one; yet each will  
 9 receive their own reward in proportion to their own labour. For  
 we are God's fellow workers; you are God's harvest field, God's  
 building.

10 In fulfilment of the charge which God had entrusted to me, I  
 laid the foundation like a skilful master; but someone else is now  
 11 building on it. Let everyone take care how they build; for no one  
 can lay any other foundation than the one already laid — Jesus  
 12 Christ. Whatever is used by those who build on this foundation,  
 13 whether gold, silver, costly stones, wood, hay, or straw, the qual-  
 ity of each man's work will become known, for the day will make  
 it plain; because that day is to be ushered in with fire, and the  
 14 fire itself will test the quality of every man's work. If anyone's  
 work, which they have built on that foundation, still remains, they  
 15 will gain a reward. If anyone's work is burnt up, they will suffer  
 loss; though they themselves will escape, but only as one who has  
 passed through fire.

16 Don't you know that you are God's Temple, and that God's  
 17 Spirit has his home in you? If any one destroys the Temple of  
 God, God will destroy them; for the Temple of God is sacred, and  
 so also are you.

18 Let no one deceive himself. If any one among you imagines that,  
 as regards this world, they are wise, they should become a "fool,"

that they may become wise. For in God's sight this world's wisdom is folly. Scripture tells of — 19

“One who catches the wise in their own craftiness,”

And it says again — 20

“The Lord sees how fruitless are the deliberations of the wise.”

Therefore let no one boast about people; for all things are yours 21  
— Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or 22  
death, or the present, or the future — all things are yours! But 23  
you are Christ's and Christ is God's.

Let people look on us as Christ's servants, and as stewards of 4  
the hidden truths of God. Now what we look for in stewards is 2  
that they should be trustworthy. But it weighs very little with me 3  
that I am judged by you or by any human tribunal. No, I do not 4  
even judge myself; for, though I am conscious of nothing against 4  
myself, that does not prove me innocent. It is the Lord who is my 5  
judge. Therefore do not pass judgment before the time, but wait 5  
until the Lord comes. He will throw light on what is now dark 5  
and obscure, and will reveal the motives in people's minds; and 5  
then everyone will receive due praise from God.

All this, friends, I have, for your sakes, applied to Apollos and 6  
myself, so that, from our example, you may learn to observe the 6  
precept — “Keep to what is written,” that none of you may speak 7  
boastfully of one teacher to the disparagement of another. For 7  
who makes any one of you superior to others? And what have 7  
you that was not given you? But if you received it as a gift, why 7  
do you boast as if you had not? Are you all so soon satisfied? Are 8  
you so soon rich? Have you begun to reign without us? Would 8  
indeed that you had, so that we also might reign with you! For, 9  
as it seems to me, God has exhibited us, the apostles, last of all, as 9  
people doomed to death. We are made a spectacle to the universe, 9  
both to angels and to people! We, for Christ's sake, are “fools,” 10  
but you, by your union with Christ, are people of discernment. 10  
We are weak, but you are strong. You are honoured, but we are 11  
despised. To this very hour we go hungry, thirsty, and naked; we 11  
are beaten; we are homeless; we work hard, toiling with our own 12  
hands. We meet abuse with blessings, we meet persecution with 12  
endurance, we meet slander with gentle appeals. We have been 13

treated as the scum of the earth, the vilest of the vile, to this very hour.

14 It is with no wish to shame you that I am writing like this; but to  
 15 warn you as my own dear children. Though you may have thou-  
 sands of instructors in the faith of Christ, yet you have not many  
 fathers. It was I who, through union with Christ Jesus, became  
 16 your father by means of the good news. Therefore I entreat you  
 17 — Follow my example. This is my reason for sending Timothy to  
 you. He is my own dear faithful child in the Master's service, and  
 he will remind you of my methods of teaching the faith of Christ  
 Jesus — methods which I follow everywhere in every church.

18 Some, I hear, are puffed up with pride, thinking that I am not  
 19 coming to you. But come to you I will, and that soon, if it please  
 the Lord; and then I will find out, not what words these people  
 20 use who are so puffed up, but what power they possess; for the  
 21 kingdom of God is based, not on words, but on power. What do  
 you wish? Am I to come to you with a rod, or in a loving and  
 gentle spirit?

5 There is a wide-spread report respecting a case of immoral-  
 ity among you, and that, too, of a kind that does not occur even  
 among the Gentiles — a man, I hear, is living with his father's  
 2 wife! Instead of grieving over it and taking steps for the expul-  
 sion of the man who has done this thing, is it possible that you  
 3 are still puffed up? For I myself, though absent in body, have  
 been present with you in spirit, and in the name of our Lord Je-  
 sus I have already passed judgment, just as if I had been present,  
 4 on the man who has acted in this way. I have decided — having  
 been present in spirit at your meetings, when the power of the  
 5 Lord Jesus was with us — to deliver such a man as this over to  
 Satan, that what is sensual in him may be destroyed, so that his  
 6 spirit may be saved at the day of the Lord. Your boasting is un-  
 seemly. Don't you know that even a little leaven leavens all the  
 7 dough? Get rid entirely of the old leaven, so that you may be  
 like new dough — free from leaven, as in truth you are. For our  
 8 passover lamb is already sacrificed — Christ himself; therefore  
 let us keep our festival, not with the leaven of former days, nor  
 with the leaven of vice and wickedness, but with the unleavened  
 bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I told you, in my letter, not to associate with immoral people —  
 10 not, of course, meaning people of the world who are in immoral,

or who are covetous and grasping, or who worship idols; for then you would have to leave the world altogether. But, as things are, I say that you are not to associate with anyone who, although a follower of Christ in name, is immoral, or covetous, or an idolater, or abusive, or a drunkard, or grasping — no, not even to sit down to eat with such people. What have I to do with judging those outside the church? Is it not for you to judge those who are within the church, while God judges those who are outside? “Put away the wicked from among you.”

Can it be that, when one of you has a dispute with another, they dare to have their case tried before the heathen, instead of before Christ’s people? Don’t you know that Christ’s people will try the world? And if the world is to be tried by you, are you unfit to try the most trivial cases? Don’t you know that we are to try angels — to say nothing of the affairs of this life? Why, then, if you have cases relating to the affairs of this life, do you set to try them those who carry no weight with the church? To your shame I ask it. Can it be that there is not one among you wise enough to decide between two of their fellow followers? Must a follower sue a fellow follower? In front of unbelievers? To begin with, it is undoubtedly a loss to you to have lawsuits with one another. Why not rather let yourselves be wronged? Why not rather let yourselves be cheated? Instead of this, you wrong and cheat others yourselves — yes, even other followers! Don’t you know that wrong-doers will have no share in God’s kingdom? Do not be deceived. No one who is immoral, or an idolater, or an adulterer, or licentious, or a sexual pervert, or a thief, or covetous, or a drunkard, or abusive, or grasping, will have any share in God’s kingdom. Such some of you used to be; but you washed yourselves clean. You became Christ’s people! You were pronounced righteous through the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and through the Spirit of our God!

Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but everything is not profitable. Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but for my part, I

13 will not let myself be enslaved by anything. Food exists for the  
14 stomach, and the stomach for food; but God will put an end to  
15 both the one and the other. The body, however, exists, not for  
16 immorality, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body; and, as  
17 God has raised the Lord, so he will raise up us also by the  
18 exercise of his power. Don't you know that your bodies are  
19 Christ's members? Am I, then, to take the members that belong  
20 to the Christ and make them the members of a prostitute?  
Heaven forbid! Or don't you know that a man who unites  
himself with a prostitute is one with her in body (for "the two,"  
it is said, "will become one"); while a man who is united with  
the Lord is one with him in spirit? Shun all immorality. Every  
other sin that people commit is something outside the body; but  
an immoral person sins against their own body. Again, don't  
you know that your body is a shrine of the Holy Spirit that is  
within you – the Spirit which you have from God? Moreover,  
you are not your own masters; you were bought, and the price  
was paid. Therefore, honour God in your bodies.

*Answers to Questions Asked by the Church at Corinth*

7 WITH REFERENCE TO THE SUBJECTS ABOUT WHICH YOU WROTE to me:  
2 It is good for a man to remain single. But, owing to the preva-  
3 lence of immorality, I advise every man to have his own wife, and  
4 every woman her husband. A husband should give his wife her  
5 due, and a wife her husband. It is not the wife, but the husband,  
6 who exercises power over her body; and so, too, it is not the hus-  
7 band, but the wife, who exercises power over his body. Do not  
deprive each other of what is due — unless it is only for a time  
and by mutual consent, so that your minds may be free for prayer  
until you again live as man and wife — otherwise Satan might  
take advantage of your want of self-control and tempt you. I say  
this, however, as a concession, not as a command. I should wish  
everyone to be just what I am myself. But everyone has his own  
gift from God — one in one way, and one in another.



My advice, then, to those who are not married, and to widows, is 8  
this: It would be good for them to remain as I am myself. But, if 9  
they cannot control themselves, they should marry, for it is better  
to marry than to be consumed with passion. To those who are 10  
married my direction is — yet it is not mine, but the Master’s —  
that a woman is not to leave her husband (If she has done so, she 11  
should remain as she is, or else be reconciled to her husband) and  
also that a man is not to divorce his wife. To all others I say — I, not 12  
the Master — If a follower of the Lord is married to a woman, who  
is an unbeliever but willing to live with him, he should not divorce  
her; and a woman who is married to a man, who is an unbeliever 13  
but willing to live with her, should not divorce her husband. For,  
through his wife, the husband who is an unbeliever has become 14  
associated with Christ’s people; and the wife who is an unbeliever  
has become associated with Christ’s people through the Lord’s  
follower whom she has married. Otherwise your children would  
be “defiled,” but, as it is, they belong to Christ’s people. However, 15  
if the unbeliever wishes to be separated, let them be so. Under  
such circumstances neither is bound; God has called you to live  
in peace. How can you tell, wife, whether you may not save your 16  
husband? And how can you tell, husband, whether you may not  
save your wife?

In any case, a person should continue to live in the condition 17  
which the Lord has allotted to them, and in which they were when  
God called them. This is the rule that I lay down in every church.  
Was a man already circumcised when he was called? Then he 18  
should not efface his circumcision. Has a man been called when  
uncircumcised? Then he should not be circumcised. Circumcision  
is nothing; the want of it is nothing; but to keep the commands 19  
of God is everything. Let everyone remain in that condition of  
life in which they were when the call came to them. Were you 21  
a slave when you were called? Do not let that trouble you. No,  
even if you are able to gain your freedom, still do your best. For 22  
the person who was a slave when they were called to the master’s  
service is the Master’s freedman; so, too, the person who was free  
when called is Christ’s slave. You were bought, and the price was 23  
paid. Do not let yourselves become slaves to people. Friends, let  
everyone remain in the condition in which they were when they 24  
were called, in close communion with God.

- 25 With regard to unmarried women, I have no command from the  
26 Master to give you, but I tell you my opinion, and the Master in  
his mercy has made me worthy to be trusted. I think, then, that,  
in view of the time of suffering that has now come upon us, what I  
have already said is best — that a man should remain as he is. Are  
27 you married to a wife? Then do not seek to be separated. Are you  
28 separated from a wife? Then do not seek for a wife. Still, if you  
should marry, that is not wrong; nor, if a young woman marries, is  
that wrong. But those who marry will have much trouble to bear,  
29 and my wish is to spare you. What I mean, friends, is this — the  
time is short. Meanwhile, let those who have wives live as if they  
30 had none, those who are weeping as if not weeping, those who  
are rejoicing as if not rejoicing, those who buy as if not possessing,  
31 and those who use the good things of the world as using them  
32 sparingly; for this world as we see it is passing away. I want you  
to be free from anxiety. The unmarried man is anxious about the  
33 Master's cause, desiring to please him; while the married man is  
34 anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please his wife; and so  
his interests are divided. Again, the unmarried woman, whether  
she is old or young, is anxious about the Master's cause, striving  
to be pure both in body and in spirit, while the married woman  
is anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please her husband.  
35 I say this for your own benefit, not with any intention of putting  
a halter round your necks, but in order to secure for the Master  
seemly and constant devotion, free from all distraction.
- 36 If, however, a father thinks that he is not acting fairly by his  
unmarried daughter, when she is past her youth, and if under  
these circumstances her marriage ought to take place, he should  
act as he thinks right. He is doing nothing wrong — let the mar-  
37 riage take place. On the other hand, a father, who has definitely  
made up his mind, and is under no compulsion, but is free to  
carry out his own wishes, and who has come to the decision, in his  
own mind, to keep his unmarried daughter at home will be doing  
38 right. In short, the one who consents to his daughter's marriage  
is doing right, and yet the other will be doing better.
- 39 A wife is bound to her husband as long as he lives; but, if the  
husband should pass to his rest, the widow is free to marry any-  
40 one she wishes, provided he is a believer. Yet she will be happier

if she remains as she is — in my opinion, for I think that I also have the Spirit of God.

With reference to food that has been offered in sacrifice to idols 8  
— We are aware that all of us have knowledge! Knowledge breeds 2  
conceit, while love builds up character. If someone thinks that 2  
they know anything, they have not yet reached that knowledge 3  
which they ought to have reached. On the other hand, if a per- 3  
son loves God, they are known by God. With reference, then, to 4  
eating food that has been offered to idols — we are aware that 4  
an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no God but one.  
Even supposing that there are so-called “gods” either in heaven 5  
or on earth — and there are many such “gods” and “lords” — Yet 5  
for us there is only one God, the Father, from whom all things 6  
come (and for him we live), and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through 6  
whom all things come (and through him we live). Still, it is not 7  
everyone that has this knowledge. Some people, because of their 7  
association with idols, continued down to the present time, eat 7  
the food as food offered to an idol; and their consciences, while 8  
still weak, are dulled. What we eat, however, will not bring us 8  
nearer to God. We lose nothing by not eating this food, and we 8  
gain nothing by eating it. But take care that this right of yours 9  
does not become in any way a stumbling-block to the weak. For 9  
if someone should see you who possess this knowledge, feast- 10  
ing in an idol’s temple, will not their conscience, if they are weak, 10  
become so hardened that they, too, will eat food offered to idols?  
And so, through this knowledge of yours, the weak person is ru- 11  
ined — someone for whose sake Christ died! In this way, by sin- 12  
ning against your fellow followers of the Lord and injuring their 12  
consciences, while still weak, you sin against Christ. Therefore, 13  
if what I eat makes a follower of the Lord fall, rather than make 13  
them fall, I will never eat meat again.

Am I not free? Am I not an apostle? Have I not seen our Lord 9  
Jesus? Aren’t you yourselves my work achieved in union with the 9  
Lord? If I am not an apostle to others, yet at least I am to you; for 2

3 you are the seal that stamps me as an apostle in union with the  
4 Lord. The defence that I make to my critics is this: Haven't we a  
5 right to food and drink? Haven't we a right to take a wife with  
6 us, if she is a Christian, as the other apostles and the Master's  
7 brothers and Cephas all do? Or is it only Barnabas and I who  
8 have no right to give up working for our bread? Does anyone  
9 ever serve as a soldier at his own expense? Does anyone plant  
10 a vineyard and not eat its produce? Or does anyone look after a  
11 herd and not drink the milk? Am I, in all this, speaking only from  
12 the human standpoint? Does not the Law also say the same? For  
13 in the Law of Moses it is said —

“You should not muzzle a bullock while it is treading out  
the grain.”

14 Is it the bullocks that God is thinking of? Or is not it said en-  
15 tirely for our sakes? Surely it was written for our sakes, for the  
16 ploughman ought not to plough, nor the thrasher to thrash, with-  
17 out expecting a share of the grain. Since we, then, sowed spiri-  
18 tual seed for you, is it too much that we should reap from you an  
19 earthly harvest? If others share in this right over you, don't we  
20 even more? Still we did not avail ourselves of this right. No, we en-  
21 dure anything rather than impede the progress of the good news  
of the Christ. Don't you know that those who do the work of the  
Temple live on what comes from the Temple, and that those who  
serve at the altar share the offerings with the altar? So, too, the  
Master has appointed that those who tell the good news should  
get their living from the good news. I, however, have not availed  
myself of any of these rights. I am not saying this to secure such  
an arrangement for myself; indeed, I would far rather die — No-  
body will make my boast a vain one! If I tell the good news, I  
have nothing to boast of, for I can but do so. Woe is me if I do not  
tell it! If I do this work willingly, I have a reward; but, if unwill-  
ingly, I have been charged to perform a duty. What is my reward,  
then? To present the good news free of all cost, and so make but  
a sparing use of the rights which it gives me.

19 Although I was entirely free, yet, to win as many converts as  
20 possible, I made myself everyone's slave. To the Jews I became  
like a Jew, to win Jews. To those who are subject to Law I became  
like a man subject to Law — though I was not myself subject to  
21 Law — to win those who are subject to Law. To those who have

no Law I became like a man who has no Law — not that I am free from God’s Law; no, for I am under Christ’s Law — to win those who have no law. To the weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become all things to all people, so as at all costs to save some. And I do everything for the sake of the good news, so that with them I may share in its blessings.

Don’t you know that on a racecourse, though all run, yet only one wins the prize? Run in such a way that you may win. Every athlete exercises self-restraint in everything; they, indeed, for a crown that fades, we for one that is unfading. I, therefore, run with no uncertain aim. I box — not like a man hitting the air. No, I bruise my body and make it my slave, so that I, who have called others to the contest, will not myself be rejected.

I want you to bear in mind, friends, that all our ancestors were beneath the cloud, and all passed through the sea; that and in the sea they all underwent baptism as followers of Moses; and that they all ate the same supernatural food, and all drank the same supernatural water, for they used to drink from a supernatural rock which followed them, and that rock was the Christ. Yet with most of them God was displeased; for they were “struck down in the desert.” Now these things happened as warnings to us, to teach us not to long for evil things as our ancestors longed. Do not become idolaters, as some of them became. Scripture says

—  
“The people sat down to eat and drink, and stood up to dance.”

Nor let us act immorally, as some of them acted, with the result that twenty-three thousand of them fell dead in a single day. Nor let us try the patience of the Lord too far, as some of them tried it, with the result that they “were, one after another, destroyed by the snakes.” And do not murmur, as some of them murmured, and so “were destroyed by the angel of death.” These things happened to them by way of warning, and were recorded to serve as a caution to us, in whose days the close of the ages has come.

Therefore let the person who thinks that they stand take care that they do not fall. No temptation has come upon you that is not common to all humanity. God will not fail you, and he will

not allow you to be tempted beyond your strength; but, when he sends the temptation, he will also provide the way of escape, so that you may have strength to endure.

14 Therefore, my dear friends, shun the worship of idols. I speak to  
15 you as man of discernment; form your own judgment about what  
16 I am saying. In the cup of blessing which we bless, is not there  
17 a sharing in the blood of the Christ? And in the bread which we  
18 break, is not there a sharing in the body of the Christ? The bread is  
19 one, and we, though many, are one body; for we all partake of that  
20 one bread. Look at the people of Israel. Do not those who eat the  
21 sacrifices share with the altar? What do I mean? That an offering  
22 made to an idol, or the idol itself, is anything? No; what I say is  
23 that the sacrifices offered by the Gentiles "are offered to demons  
24 and to a being who is no God," and I do not want you to share  
25 with demons. You cannot drink both the Cup of the Lord and  
26 the cup of demons. You cannot partake at the Table of the Lord  
27 and at the table of demons. Or "are we to rouse the jealousy of  
28 the Lord"? Are we stronger than he?

29 Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything is not profitable.  
30 Everything is allowable! Yes, but everything does not build up  
31 character. A person must not study their own interests, but the  
32 interests of others.

33 Eat anything that is sold in the market, without making in-  
34 quiries to satisfy your scruples; for "the earth, with all that is in  
35 it, belongs to the Lord." If an unbeliever invites you to his house  
36 and you consent to go, eat anything that is put before you, without  
37 making inquiries to satisfy your scruples. But, if anyone should  
38 say to you "This has been offered in sacrifice to an idol," then, for  
39 the sake of the speaker and his scruples, do not eat it. I do not  
40 say "your" scruples, but "his." For why should the freedom that  
41 I claim be condemned by the scruples of another? If, for my part,  
42 I take the food thankfully, why should I be abused for eating that  
43 for which I give thanks?

44 Whether, then, you eat or drink or whatever you do, do every-  
45 thing to the honour of God. Do not cause offence either to Jews  
46 or Greeks or to the church of God; for I, also, try to please every-  
47 body in everything, not seeking my own advantage, but do what

is best for others, so that they may be saved. Imitate me, as I myself imitate Christ. 11

I praise you, indeed, because you never forget me, and are keeping my injunctions in mind, exactly as I laid them on you. But I am anxious that you should understand that the Christ is the head of every man, that man is the head of woman, and that God is the head of the Christ. Any man who keeps his head covered, when praying or preaching in public, dishonours him who is his head; while any woman, who prays or preaches in public bare-headed, dishonours him who is her head; for that is to make herself like one of the shameless women who shave their heads. Indeed, if a woman does not keep her head covered, she may as well cut her hair short. But, since to cut her hair short, or shave it off, marks her as one of the shameless women, she should keep her head covered. A man ought not to have his head covered, for he has been from the beginning "the likeness of God" and the reflection of his glory, but woman is the reflection of man's glory. For it was not man who was taken from woman, but woman who was taken from man. Besides, man was not created for the sake of woman, but woman for the sake of man. And, therefore, a woman ought to wear on her head a symbol of her subjection, because of the presence of the angels. Still, when in union with the Lord, woman is not independent of man, or man of woman; for just as woman came from man, so man comes by means of woman; and all things come from God. judge for yourselves. Is it fitting that a woman should pray to God in public with her head uncovered? Does not nature herself teach us that, while for a man to wear his hair long is degrading to him, a woman's long hair is her glory? Her hair has been given her to serve as a covering. If, however, anyone still thinks it right to contest the point — well, we have no such custom, nor have the churches of God. 2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16

In giving directions on the next subject, I cannot praise you; because your meetings do more harm than good. To begin with, I hear you and, to some extent, I believe it. Indeed, there must 17  
18  
19

20 be actual parties among you, for so only will the people of real  
21 worth become known. When you meet together, as I understand,  
22 it is not possible to eat the Lord's Supper; for, as you eat, each  
23 of you tries to secure his own supper first, with the result that  
24 one has too little to eat, and another has too much to drink! Have  
25 you no houses in which you can eat and drink? Or are you trying  
26 to show your contempt for the church of God, and to humiliate  
27 the poor? What can I say to you? Should I praise you? In this  
28 matter I cannot praise you. For I myself received from the Lord  
29 the account which I have in turn given to you — how the Lord  
30 Jesus, on the very night of his betrayal, took some bread, and,  
31 after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and said 'This is my own  
32 body given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me.' And in the  
33 same way with the cup, after supper, saying 'This cup is the new  
34 covenant made by my blood. Do this, whenever you drink it, in  
memory of me.' For whenever you eat this bread and drink the  
cup, you proclaim the Lord's death — until he comes. Therefore,  
whoever eats the bread, or drinks the Lord's cup, in an irreverent  
spirit, will have to answer for an offence against the Lord's  
body and blood. Let everyone look into their own heart, and only  
then eat of the bread and drink from the cup. For the person who  
eats and drinks brings a judgment on themselves by their eating  
and drinking, when they do not discern the body. That is why so  
many among you are weak and ill, and why some are sleeping.  
But, if we judged ourselves rightly, we should not be judged. Yet,  
in being judged by the Lord, we are undergoing discipline, so  
that we may not have judgment passed on us with the rest of the  
world. Therefore, my friends, when you meet together to eat the  
Supper, wait for one another. If anyone is hungry, they should  
eat at home, so that your meetings may not bring a judgment on  
you. The other details I will settle when I come.

12 In the next place, friends, I do not want you to be ignorant about  
2 spiritual gifts. You know that there was a time when you were  
3 Gentiles, going astray after idols that could not speak, just as you  
happened to be led. Therefore I tell you plainly that no one who  
speaks under the influence of the Spirit of God says "JESUS IS



ACCURSED," and that no one can say "JESUS IS LORD," except under the influence of the Holy Spirit. Gifts differ, but the Spirit is the same; ways of serving differ, yet the Master is the same; results differ, yet the God who brings about every result is in every case the same. To each of us there is given spiritual illumination for the general good. To one is given the power to speak with wisdom through the Spirit; to another the power to speak with knowledge, due to the same Spirit; to another faith by the same Spirit; to another power to cure diseases by the one Spirit; to another supernatural powers; to another the gift of preaching; to another the gift of distinguishing between true and false inspiration; to another varieties of the gift of "tongues"; to another the power to interpret "tongues." All these result from one and the same Spirit, who distributes his gifts to each individually as he wills.

For just as the human body is one whole, and yet has many parts, and all its parts, many though they are, form but one body, so it is with the Christ; for it was by one Spirit that we were all baptized to form one body, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or free, and were all imbued with one Spirit. The human body, I repeat, consists not of one part, but of many. If the foot says "Since I am not a hand, I do not belong to the body," it does not because of that cease to belong to the body. Or if the ear says "Since I am not an eye, I do not belong to the body," it does not because of that cease to belong to the body. If all the body were an eye, where would the hearing be? If it were all hearing, where would the sense of smell be? But in fact God has placed each individual part just where he thought fit in the body. If, however, they all made up only one part, where would the body be? But in fact, although it has many parts, there is only one body. The eye cannot say to the hand "I do not need you," nor, again, the head to the feet "I do not need you." No! Those parts of the body that seem naturally the weaker are indispensable; and those parts which we deem less honourable we surround with special honour; and our ungraceful parts receive a special grace which our graceful parts do not require. Yes, God has so constructed the body — by giving a special honour to the part that lacks it — As to secure that there should be no disunion in the body, but that the parts should show the same care for one another. If one part suffers, all the others suffer with it, and if one part has honour done it, all the others

27 share its joy. Together you are the body of Christ, and individu-  
28 ally its parts. In the church God has appointed, first, apostles, sec-  
29 ondly preachers, thirdly teachers; then he has given supernatural  
30 powers, then power to cure diseases, aptness for helping others,  
31 capacity to govern, varieties of the gift of “tongues.” Can every-  
one be an apostle? Can everyone be a preacher? Can everyone be a  
teacher? Can everyone have supernatural powers? Can everyone  
have power to cure diseases? Can everyone speak in “tongues”?  
Can everyone interpret them? Strive for the greater gifts.

Yet I can still show you a way beyond all comparison the best.  
13 Though I speak in the “tongues” of people, or even of angels,  
yet have not love, I have become mere echoing brass, or a clang-  
2 ing cymbal! Even though I have the gift of preaching, and fathom  
all hidden truths and all the depths of knowledge; even though  
I have such faith as might move mountains, yet have not love, I  
3 am nothing! Even though I dole my substance to the poor, even  
though I sacrifice my body in order to boast, yet have not love,  
4 it avails me nothing! love is long-suffering, and kind; Love is  
never envious, never boastful, never conceited, never behaves un-  
5 becomingly; love is never self-seeking, never provoked, never  
6 reckons up her wrongs; love never rejoices at evil, but rejoices  
7 in the triumph of truth; love bears with all things, every trust-  
8 ful, ever hopeful, ever patient. Love never fails. But, whether it  
be the gift of preaching, it will be done with; whether it be the  
gift of “tongues,” it will cease; whether it be knowledge, it, too,  
9 will be done with. For our knowledge is incomplete, and our  
10 preaching is incomplete, but, when the perfect has come, that  
11 which is incomplete will be done with. When I was a child, I  
talked as a child, I felt as a child, I reasoned as a child; now that  
12 I am a man, I have done with childish ways. As yet we see, in  
a mirror, dimly, but then — face to face! As yet my knowledge  
is incomplete, but then I will know in full, as I have been fully  
13 known. Meanwhile faith, hope, and love endure — these three,  
14 but the greatest of these is love. Seek this love earnestly, and  
2 strive for spiritual gifts, above all for the gift of preaching. The  
person who, when speaking, uses the gift of “tongues” is speak-  
ing, not to people, but to God, for no one understands them; yet in

spirit they are speaking of hidden truths. But those who preach 3  
are speaking to their fellow men and women words that will build 4  
up faith, and give them comfort and encouragement. Those who, 4  
when speaking, use the gift of "tongues" builds up their own  
faith, while those who preach build up the faith of the church.  
Now I want you all to speak in "tongues," but much more I wish 5  
that you should preach. A preacher is worth more than one who  
speaks in "tongues," unless they interprets their words, so that  
the faith of the church may be built up. This being so, friends, 6  
what good will I do you, if I come to you and speak in "tongues,"  
unless my words convey some revelation, or knowledge, or take  
the form of preaching or teaching? Even with inanimate things, 7  
such as a flute or a harp, though they produce sounds, yet un-  
less the notes are quite distinct, how can the tune played on the  
flute or the harp be recognised? If the bugle sounds a doubtful 8  
call, who will prepare for battle? And so with you; unless, in 9  
using the gift of "tongues," you utter intelligible words, how can  
what you say be understood? You will be speaking to the winds!  
There is, for instance, a certain number of different languages in 10  
the world, and not one of them fails to convey meaning. If, how-  
ever, I do not happen to know the language, I will be a foreigner 11  
to those who speak it, and they will be foreigners to me. And 12  
so with you; since you are striving for spiritual gifts, be eager to  
excel in such as will build up the faith of the church. Therefore  
anyone who, when speaking, uses the gift of "tongues" should 13  
pray for ability to interpret them. If, when praying, I use the gift of 14  
"tongues," my spirit indeed prays, but my mind is a blank. What,  
then, is my conclusion? Simply this — I will pray with my spirit, 15  
but with my mind as well; I will sing with my spirit, but with my  
mind as well. If you bless God with your spirit only, how can peo- 16  
ple in the congregation who are without your gift say "Amen" to  
your thanksgiving? They do not know what you are saying! Your  
thanksgiving may be excellent, but the other is not helped by it. 17  
Thank God, I use the gift of "tongues" more than any of you. But 18  
at a meeting of the church I would rather speak five words with 19  
my mind, and so teach others, than ten thousand words when  
using the gift of "tongues."

My friends, do not show yourselves children in understanding. 20  
In wickedness be infants, but in understanding show yourselves  
adults. It is said in the Law — 21

“In strange tongues and by the lips of strangers will I speak to this people, but even then they will not listen to me, says the Lord.”

- 22 Therefore the gift of the “tongues” is intended as a sign, not for those who believe in Christ, but for those who do not, while the gift of preaching is intended as a sign, not for those who do not believe in Christ, but for those who do. So, when the whole church meets, if all present use the gift of “tongues,” and some people who are without the gift, or who are unbelievers, come in, will not they say that you are mad? While, if all those present use the gift of preaching, and an unbeliever, or someone without the gift, comes in, they are convinced of their sinfulness by them all, they are called to account by them all; the secrets of their heart are revealed, and then, throwing themselves on their face, they will worship God, and declare “God is indeed among you!”
- 26 What do I suggest, then, friends? Whenever you meet for worship, each of you comes, either with a hymn, or a lesson, or a revelation, or the gift of “tongues,” or the interpretation of them; let everything be directed to the building up of faith. If any of you use the gift of “tongues,” not more than two, or at the most three, should do so — each speaking in his turn — and someone should interpret them. If there is no one able to interpret what is said, they should remain silent at the meeting of the church, and speak to themselves and to God. Of preachers two or three should speak, and the rest should weigh well what is said. But, if some revelation is made to another person as he sits there, the first speaker should stop. For you can all preach in turn, so that all may learn some lesson and all receive encouragement. (The spirit that moves the preachers is within the preachers’ control; for God is not a God of disorder, but of peace.) This custom prevails in all the churches of Christ’s people.
- 34 At the meetings of the church married women should remain silent, for they are not allowed to speak in public; they should take a subordinate place, as the Law itself directs. If they want information on any point, they should ask their husbands about it at home; for it is unbecoming for a married woman to speak at

a meeting of the church. What! Did God's message to the world originate with you? Or did it find its way to none but you? 36

If anyone thinks that he has the gift of preaching or any other spiritual gift, he should recognise that what I am now saying to you is a command from the Lord. Anyone who ignores it may be ignored. Therefore, my friends, strive for the gift of preaching, and yet do not forbid speaking in "tongues." Let everything be done in a proper and orderly manner. 37  
38  
39  
40

*The Apostle's Teaching as to the Resurrection of the Dead*

NEXT, friends, I would like to remind you of the good news which I told you, and which you received — the good news on which you have taken your stand, and by means of which you are being saved. I would like to remind you of the words that I used in telling it to you, since you are still holding fast to it, and since it was not in vain that you became believers in Christ. For at the very beginning of my teaching I gave you the account which I had myself received — that Christ died for our sins (as the scriptures had foretold), that he was buried, that on the third day he was raised (as the scriptures had foretold), and that he appeared to Cephas, and then to the Twelve. After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of his followers at one time, most of whom are still alive, though some have gone to their rest. After that, he appeared to James, and then to all the apostles. Last of all, he appeared even to me, who am, as it were, the abortion. For I am the meanest of the apostles, I who am unworthy of the name of "apostle," because I persecuted the church of God. But it is through the love of God that I am what I am, and the love that he showed me has not been wasted. No, I have toiled harder than any of them, and yet it was not I, but the love of God working with me. Whether, then, it was I or whether it was they, this we proclaim, and this you believed. 15  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11

Now, if it is proclaimed of Christ that he has been raised from the dead, how is it that some of you say that there is no such thing as 12

13 a resurrection of the dead? But, if there is no such thing as a res-  
urrection of the dead, then even Christ has not been raised; and,  
14 if Christ has not been raised, then our proclamation is without  
15 meaning, and our faith without meaning also! Yes, and we are  
being proved to have borne false testimony about God; for we  
testified of God that he raised the Christ, whom he did not raise,  
16 if, indeed, the dead do not rise! For, if the dead do not rise, then  
17 even Christ himself has not been raised, and, if Christ has not  
18 been raised, your faith is folly — your sins are on you still! Yes,  
and they, who have passed to their rest in union with Christ, per-  
19 ished! If all that we have done has been to place our hope in Christ  
for this life, then we of all people are the most to be pitied.

20 But, in truth, Christ has been raised from the dead, the  
21 first-fruits of those who are at rest. For, since through a man  
there is death, so, too, through a man there is a resurrection of  
22 the dead. For, as through union with Adam all die, so through  
23 union with the Christ will all be made to live. But each in their  
proper order — Christ the first-fruits; afterwards, at his coming,  
24 those who belong to the Christ. Then will come the end —  
when he surrenders the kingdom to his God and Father, having  
25 overthrown all other rule and all other authority and power. For  
he must reign until God "has put all his enemies under his feet."  
26 The last enemy to be overthrown is death; for God has placed  
27 all things under Christ's feet. (But, when it is said that all things  
have been placed under Christ, it is plain that God is excepted  
28 who placed everything under him.) And, when everything has  
been placed under him, the Son will place himself under God  
who placed everything under him, so that God may be all in all!  
29 Again, what good will they be doing who are baptized on  
behalf of the dead? If it is true that the dead do not rise, why are  
30 people baptized on their behalf? Why, too, do we risk our lives  
31 every hour? Daily I face death — I swear it, friends, by the pride  
in you that I feel through my union with Christ Jesus, our Lord.  
32 If with only human hopes I had fought in the arena at Ephesus,  
what should I have gained by it? If the dead do not rise, then —  
33 "Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we will die"! Do not be  
deceived.

"Good character is marred by evil company."

Wake up to a righteous life, and cease to sin. There are some who 34  
have no true knowledge of God. I speak in this way to shame you.

Someone, however, may ask "How do the dead rise? And in what 35  
body will they come?" You foolish person! The seed you yourself 36  
sow does not come to life, unless it dies! And when you sow, you 37  
sow not the body that will be, but a mere grain — perhaps of 38  
wheat, or something else. God gives it the body that he pleases 39  
— to each seed its special body. All forms of life are not the same; 40  
there is one for people, another for beasts, another for birds, and 41  
another for fish. There are heavenly bodies, and earthly bodies; 42  
but the beauty of the heavenly bodies is not the beauty of the 43  
earthly. There is a beauty of the sun, and a beauty of the moon, 44  
and a beauty of the stars; for even star differs from star in beauty. 45  
It is the same with the resurrection of the dead. Sown a mortal 46  
body, it rises immortal; sown disfigured, it rises beautiful; sown 47  
weak, it rises strong; sown a human body, it rises a spiritual body. 48  
As surely as there is a human body, there is also a spiritual body. 49  
That is what is meant by the words — "Adam, the first man, be- 50  
came a human being"; the last Adam became a life-giving spirit. 51  
That which comes first is not the spiritual, but the human; after- 52  
wards comes the spiritual; the first man was from the dust of the 53  
earth; the second man from heaven. Those who are of the dust are 54  
like him who came from the dust; and those who are of heaven  
are like him who came from heaven. And as we have borne the like-  
ness of him who came from the dust, so let us bear the like-  
ness of him who came from heaven. This I say, friends — Flesh  
and blood can have no share in the kingdom of God, nor can the  
perishable share the imperishable. Listen, I will tell you God's  
hidden purpose! We will not all have passed to our rest, but we  
will all be transformed — in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye,  
at the last trumpet-call; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead  
will rise immortal, and we, also, will be transformed. For this per-  
ishable body of ours must put on an imperishable form, and this  
dying body a deathless form. And, when this dying body has  
put on its deathless form, then indeed will the words of scripture  
come true —

55 “death has been swallowed up in victory! Where, Death,  
is your victory? Where, death, is your sting?”

56 It is sin that gives death its sting, and it is the Law that gives sin its  
57 power. But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory, through  
58 Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore, my dear friends, stand firm,  
unshaken, always diligent in the Lord’s work, for you know that,  
in union with him, your toil is not in vain.

### Conclusion

16 WITH REFERENCE TO THE COLLECTION FOR CHRIST’S PEOPLE, I want you  
to follow the instructions that I gave to the churches in Galatia. On  
2 the first day of every week each of you should put by what he can  
afford, so that no collections need be made after I have come. On  
3 my arrival, I will send any persons, whom you may authorise  
4 by letter, to carry your gift to Jerusalem; and, if it appears to be  
worth while for me to go also, they will go with me.

5 I will come to you as soon as I have been through Macedonia —  
6 for I am going through Macedonia — And I will probably make  
some stay with you or, perhaps, remain for the winter, so that you  
7 may yourselves send me on my way, wherever I may be going. I  
do not propose to pay you a visit in passing now, for I hope to stay  
8 with you for some time, if the Lord permits. I intend, however,  
staying at Ephesus until the Festival at the close of the Harvest; for  
9 a great opening for active work has presented itself, and there are  
many opponents.

10 If Timothy comes, take care that he has no cause for feeling anx-  
ious while he is with you. He is doing the Master’s work no less  
11 than I am. No one, therefore, should slight him. See him safely on  
his way to me, for I am expecting him with some of our friends.

12 As for our friend Apollos, I have often urged him to go to you  
with the others. He has, however, been very unwilling to do so as  
yet; but he will go as soon as he finds a good opportunity.

13 Be watchful; stand firm in your faith; be brave; be strong. Let  
14 everything you do be done in a loving spirit.

15 I have another request to make of you, friends. You remember  
Stephanas and his household, and that they were the first-fruits  
gathered in from Greece, and set themselves to serve Christ’s peo-  
16 ple. I want you, on your part, to show deference to such people



as these, as well as to every fellow labourer and earnest worker. 17  
I am glad Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus have come, 18  
for they have made up for your absence; they have cheered my  
heart, and your hearts also. Recognise the worth of such people  
as these.

The churches in Roman Asia send you their greetings. Aquila and 19  
Prisca and the church that meets at their house send you many  
Christian greetings. All of the Lord's followers send you greet- 20  
ings. Greet one another with a sacred kiss.

I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Accursed 21  
be anyone who has no love for the Lord. **THE LORD IS COMING.** 22  
May the blessing of the Lord Jesus be with you. My love to all of 23  
you who are in union with Christ Jesus. 24



# PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

## *Introduction*

TO THE CHURCH OF GOD IN CORINTH, and to all Christ's people 1  
throughout Greece, from Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the  
will of God, and from Timothy, who is also a follower. May 2  
God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give  
you peace.

Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ our Lord, the 3  
all-merciful Father, the God ever ready to console, who consoles 4  
us in all our troubles, so that we may be able to console those  
who are in any trouble with the consolation that we ourselves  
receive from him. It is true that we have our full share of the 5  
sufferings of the Christ, but through the Christ we have also our  
full share of consolation. If we meet with trouble, it is for the 6  
sake of your consolation and salvation; and, if we find  
consolation, it is for the sake of the consolation that you will  
experience when you are called to endure the sufferings that we  
ourselves are enduring; and our hope for you remains 7  
unshaken. We know that, as you are sharing our sufferings, you  
will also share our consolation. We want you, friends, to know 8  
that, in the troubles which befell us in Roman Asia, we were  
burdened altogether beyond our strength, so much so that we  
even despaired of life. Indeed, we had the presentiment that we 9  
must die, so that we might rely, not on ourselves, but on God  
who raises the dead. And from so imminent a death God 10  
delivered us, and will deliver us again; for in him we have  
placed our hopes of future deliverance, while you, also, help us  
by your prayers. And then many lips will give thanks on our 11  
behalf for the blessing granted us in answer to many prayers.

*The Apostle's Relations with his Converts*

12 INDEED, our main ground for satisfaction is this — Our conscience  
tells us that our conduct in the world, and still more in our rela-  
tions with you, was marked by a purity of motive and a sincerity  
that were inspired by God, and was based, not on worldly policy,  
13 but on the help of God. We never write anything to you other than  
14 what you will acknowledge to the very end — And, indeed, you  
have already partly acknowledged it about us — that you have a  
right to be proud of us, as we will be proud of you, on the day of  
our Lord Jesus.

15 With this conviction in my mind, I planned to come to see you  
16 first, so that your pleasure might be doubled — To visit you both  
on my way to Macedonia, and to come to you again on my return  
from Macedonia, and then to get you to send me on my way into  
17 Judea. As this was my plan, where, pray, did I show any fickleness  
of purpose? Or do you think that my plans are formed on  
mere impulse, so that in the same breath I say "Yes" and "No"?  
18 As God is true, the message that we brought you does not waver  
19 between "Yes" and "No"! The Son of God, Christ Jesus, whom we  
— Silas, Timothy, and I — proclaimed among you, never wavered  
between "Yes" and "No." With him it has always been "Yes." For,  
20 many as were the promises of God, in Christ is the "Yes" that  
fulfils them. Therefore, through Christ again, let the "Amen" rise,  
21 through us, to the glory of God. God who brings us, with you,  
22 into close union with Christ, and who consecrated us, also set  
his seal on us, and gave us his Spirit in our hearts as a pledge of  
future blessings.

23 But, as my life will answer for it, I call God to witness that it  
24 was to spare you that I deferred my visit to Corinth. I do not  
mean that we are to dictate to you with regard to your faith; on  
the contrary, we work with you for your true happiness; indeed,  
2 it is through your faith that you are standing firm. For my own  
2 sake, as well, I decided not to pay you another painful visit. If  
it is I who cause you pain, why, who is there to cheer me, except

the person whom I am paining? So I wrote as I did because I was 3  
afraid that if I had come, I should have been pained by those who  
ought to have made me glad; for I felt sure that it was true of you  
all that my joy was in every case yours also. I wrote to you in sore 4  
trouble and distress of heart and with many tears, not to give you  
pain, but to let you see how intense a love I have for you.

Now whoever has caused the pain has not so much pained 5  
me, as he has, to some extent — not to be too severe — pained  
every one of you. The man to whom I refer has been sufficiently 6  
punished by the penalty inflicted by the majority of you; so that 7  
now you must take the opposite course, and forgive and encour-  
age him, or else he may be overwhelmed by the intensity of his  
pain. So I entreat you to assure him of your love. I had this fur- 8  
ther object, also, in what I wrote — to find out whether you might 9  
be relied on to be obedient in everything. Anyone you forgive, I 10  
forgive them, too. Indeed, for my part, whatever I have forgiven  
(if I have had to forgive anything), I have forgiven for your sakes,  
in the presence of Christ, so as to prevent Satan from taking ad- 11  
vantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices.

When I went to the district round Troas to tell the good news 12  
of the Christ, even though there was an opening for serving the  
Master, I could get no peace of mind because I failed to find Titus 13  
my friend; so I took leave of the people there, and went on to  
Macedonia. All thanks to God, who, through our union with the 14  
Christ, leads us in one continual triumph, and uses us to spread  
the sweet perfume of the knowledge of him in every place. For 15  
we are the fragrance of Christ ascending to God — both among  
those who are in the path of salvation and among those who are in  
the path to ruin. To the latter we are a stench which arises from 16  
death and tells of death; to the former a fragrance which arises  
from life and tells of life. But who is equal to such a task? Unlike 17  
many people, we are not in the habit of making profit out of God's  
message; but in all sincerity, and bearing God's commission, we  
speak before him in union with Christ.

Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or are we like 3  
some who need letters of commendation to you, or from you? You  
yourselves are our letter — a letter written on our hearts, and one 2

3 which everybody can read and understand. All can see that you  
 are a letter from Christ delivered by us, a letter written, not with  
 ink, but with the Spirit of the living God, not on "tablets of stone,"  
 but on "tablets of human hearts."

### *The Ministry of the Apostles*

4 THIS, then, is the confidence in regard to God that we have gained  
 5 through the Christ. I do not mean that we are fit to form any  
 6 judgment by ourselves, as if on our own authority; our fitness  
 comes from God, who himself made us fit to be assistants of a  
 new covenant, of which the substance is, not a written Law, but a  
 Spirit. For the written Law means death, but the Spirit gives life.

7 If the system of religion which involved death, embodied in a  
 written Law and engraved on stones, began amid such glory, that  
 the Israelites were unable to gaze at the face of Moses because of  
 8 its glory, though it was but a passing glory, will not the religion  
 9 that confers the Spirit have still greater glory? For, if there was  
 a glory in the religion that involved condemnation, far greater is  
 10 the glory of the religion that confers righteousness! Indeed, that  
 which then had glory has lost its glory, because of the glory which  
 11 surpasses it. And, if that which was to pass away was attended  
 with glory, far more will that which is to endure be surrounded  
 with glory!

12 With such a hope as this, we speak with all plainness; unlike  
 13 Moses, who covered his face with a veil, to prevent the Israelites  
 from gazing at the disappearance of what was passing away. But  
 14 their minds were slow to learn. Indeed, to this very day, at the  
 public reading of the old covenant, the same veil remains ; only  
 15 for those who are in union with Christ does it pass away. But,  
 even to this day, whenever Moses is read, a veil lies on their hearts.  
 16 "Yet, whenever someone turns to the Lord, the veil is removed."  
 17 And the "Lord" is the Spirit, and, where the Spirit of the Lord  
 18 is, there is freedom. And all of us, with faces from which the veil  
 is lifted, seeing, as if reflected in a mirror, the glory of the Lord,  
 are being transformed into his likeness, from glory to glory, as it  
 is given by the Lord, the Spirit.

4 Therefore, since it is by God's mercy that we are engaged  
 2 in this ministry, we do not lose heart. No, we have renounced

the secrecy prompted by shame, refusing to adopt crafty ways, or to tamper with God's message, and commending ourselves to everyone's conscience, in the sight of God, by our exhibition of the truth. And, even if the good news that we bring is veiled, 3  
it is veiled only in the case of those who are on the path to ruin — people whose minds have been blinded by the God of this 4  
age, unbelievers as they are, so that the light from the good news of the glory of the Christ, who is the incarnation of God, should not shine for them. (For it is not ourselves that we proclaim, but 5  
Christ Jesus, as Lord, and ourselves as your servants for Jesus' sake.) Indeed, the same God who said "Out of darkness light 6  
will shine," has shone in on our hearts, so that we should bring out into the light the knowledge of the glory of God, seen in the face of Christ.

This treasure we have in these earthen vessels, so that its all-prevailing power may be seen to come from God, and not to be our own. Though hard pressed on every side, we are never hemmed 7  
in; though perplexed, never driven to despair; though pursued, 8  
never abandoned; though struck down, never killed! We always 9  
bear on our bodies the marks of the death that Jesus died, so that the life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our bodies. Indeed, we 10  
who still live are continually being given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that the life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our mortal 11  
nature. And so, while death is at work within us, life is at work within you. But, in the same spirit of faith as that expressed in the 12  
words — "I believed, and therefore I spoke," we, also believe, and therefore speak. For we know that he who raised the Lord Jesus 13  
will raise us also with him, and will bring us, with you, into his presence. For all this is for your sakes, so that the loving kindness 14  
of God, spreading from heart to heart, may cause yet more hearts to overflow with thanksgiving, to his glory. 15

Therefore, as I said, we do not lose heart. No, even though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed 16  
day by day. The light burden of our momentary trouble is preparing for us, in measure transcending thought, a weight of imperishable glory; we, all the while, gazing not on what is seen, but 17  
18

on what is unseen; for what is seen is transient, but what is un-  
 5 seen is imperishable. For we know that if our tent — that earthly  
 body which is now our home — is taken down, we have a house  
 of God's building, a home not made by hands, imperishable, in  
 2 heaven. Even while in our present body we sigh, longing to put  
 3 over it our heavenly house, sure that, when we have put it on, we  
 4 will never be found discarnate. For we who are in this "tent" sigh  
 under our burden, unwilling to take it off, yet wishing to put our  
 heavenly body over it, so that all that is mortal may be absorbed  
 5 in life. And he who has prepared us for this change is God, who  
 has also given us his Spirit as a pledge.

6 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while our  
 home is in the body, we are absent from our home with the Lord.  
 7 For we guide our lives by faith, and not by what we see. And in  
 8 this confidence we would gladly leave our home in the body, and  
 9 make our home with the Lord. Therefore, whether in our home or  
 10 absent from our home, our one ambition is to please him. For at  
 the court of the Christ we must all appear in our true characters,  
 so that each may reap the results of the life which he has lived  
 in the body, in accordance with his actions — whether good or  
 worthless.

11 Therefore, because we know the fear inspired by the Lord, it is  
 true that we are trying to win people over, but our motives are  
 plain to God; and I hope that in your inmost hearts they are plain  
 12 to you also. We are not 'commending ourselves' again to you, but  
 rather are giving you cause for pride in us, so that you may have  
 an answer ready for those who pride themselves on appearances  
 13 and not on character. For, if we were 'beside ourselves,' it was in  
 14 God's service! If we are not in our senses, it is in yours! It is the  
 love of the Christ which compels us, when we reflect that, as one  
 15 died for all, therefore all died; and that he died for all, so that the  
 living should no longer live for themselves, but for him who died  
 and rose for them.

16 For ourselves, then, from this time forward, we refuse to regard  
 anyone from the world's standpoint. Even if we once thought of  
 Christ from the standpoint of the world, yet now we do so no  
 17 longer. Therefore, if anyone is in union with Christ, he is a new



being! His old life has passed away; a new life has begun! But 18  
 all this is the work of God, who reconciled us to himself through 19  
 Christ, and gave us the Ministry of Reconciliation — To proclaim  
 that God, in Christ, was reconciling the world to himself, not reck-  
 oning people's offences against them, and that he had entrusted  
 us with the message of this reconciliation.

It is, then, on Christ's behalf that we are acting as ambassadors, 20  
 God, as it were, appealing to you through us. We implore you on  
 Christ's behalf — Be reconciled to God. For our sake God made 21  
 Christ, who was innocent of sin, one with our sinfulness, so that in  
 him we might be made one with the righteousness of God. There-  
 fore, as God's fellow workers, we also appeal to you not to receive 6  
 his loving kindness in vain. For he says — 2

“At the time for acceptance I listened to you,  
 And on the day of deliverance I helped you.”

Now is the time for acceptance! Now is the day of deliverance!  
 Never do we put an obstacle in anyone's way, so that no fault may 3  
 be found with our ministry. No, we are trying to commend our- 4  
 selves under all circumstances, as God's assistants should — in  
 many an hour of endurance, in troubles, in hardships, in difficul- 5  
 ties, in floggings, in imprisonments, in riots, in toils, in sleepless 6  
 nights, in fastings; by purity, by knowledge, by patience, by kind- 6  
 liness, by holiness of spirit, by unfeigned love; by the message of 7  
 truth, and by the power of God; by the weapons of righteousness 8  
 in the right hand and in the left; amid honour and disrepute,  
 amid slander and praise; regarded as deceivers, yet proved to be 8  
 true; as unknown, yet well-known; as at death's door, yet, see, we 9  
 are living; as chastised, yet not killed; as saddened, yet always re- 10  
 joicing; as poor, yet enriching many; as having nothing, and yet 10  
 possessing all things!

*The Apostle and his Converts*

WE HAVE BEEN SPEAKING FREELY TO YOU, dear friends in Corinth; we 11  
 have opened our heart; there is room there for you, yet there is 12  
 not room, in your love, for us. Can you not in return — I appeal 13  
 to you as I should to children — open your hearts to us?

14 Do not enter into inconsistent relations with those who reject  
the faith. For what partnership can there be between righteous-  
ness and lawlessness? Or what has light to do with darkness?  
15 What harmony can there be between Christ and Belial? Or what  
can those who accept the faith have in common with those who  
16 reject it? What agreement can you be between a temple of God  
and idols? And we are a temple of the living God. That is what  
God meant when he said —

“I will live among them, and walk among them;  
And I will be their God, and they will be my people.  
17 Therefore ‘Come out from among the nations, and sepa-  
rate yourselves from them,’ says the Lord,  
‘And touch nothing impure;  
And I will welcome you;  
18 and I will be a father to you, and you will be my sons and  
daughters,’  
says the Lord, the Ruler of all.”

7 With these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from  
everything that pollutes either body or spirit, and, in deepest re-  
spect for God, aim at perfect holiness.

2 Make room for us in your hearts. In no instance have we ever  
3 wronged, or harmed, or taken advantage of, anyone. I am not  
saying this to condemn you. Indeed, I have already said that you  
4 are in our heart, to live and die together. I have the utmost confi-  
dence in you; I am always boasting about you. I am full of encour-  
agement and, in spite of all our troubles, my heart is overflowing  
with happiness.

5 Ever since we reached Macedonia, we have had no rest in body  
or mind; on every side there have been troubles — conflicts with-  
6 out, anxieties within. But God, who encourages the downcast,  
7 has encouraged us by the arrival of Titus. And it is not only by  
his arrival that we are encouraged, but also by the encouragement  
which he received from you; for he tells us of your strong affec-  
tion, your penitence, and your zeal on my behalf — so that I am  
8 happier still. For, though I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do  
not regret it. Even if I were inclined to regret it — for I see that my  
9 letter did cause you sorrow though only for a time — I am glad  
now; not because of the sorrow it caused you, but because your  
sorrow brought you to repentance. For it was God’s will that you

should feel sorrow, in order that you should not suffer loss in any way at our hands. For, when sorrow is in accordance with God's will, it results in a repentance leading to salvation, and which will never be regretted. The sure result of the sorrow that the world knows is death. For see what results that other sorrow — sorrow in accordance with God's will — has had in your case. What earnestness it produced! What explanations! What strong feeling! What alarm! What longing! What eagerness! What readiness to punish! You have proved yourselves altogether free from guilt in that matter. So, then, even though I did write to you, it was not for the sake of the wrong-doer, or of the man who was wronged, but to make you conscious, in the sight of God, of your own earnest care for us. And it is this that has encouraged us.

In addition to the encouragement that this gave us, we were made far happier still by the happiness of Titus for his heart has been cheered by you all. Although I have been boasting a little to him about you, you did not put me to shame; but, just as every thing we had said to you was true, so our boasting to Titus about you has also proved to be the truth. And his affection for you is all the greater, as he remembers the deference that you all showed him, and recalls how you received him with anxious care. I am glad that I can feel perfect confidence in you.

### *The Palestine Famine Fund*

WE WANT TO REMIND YOU, friends, of the love that God has shown to the churches in Macedonia — How, tired though they were by many a trouble, their overflowing happiness, and even their deep poverty, resulted in a flood of generosity. I can bear witness that to the full extent of their power, and even beyond their power, spontaneously, and with many an appeal to us for permission, they showed their love, and contributed their share towards the fund for their fellow Christians. And that, not only in the way we had expected; but first they gave themselves to the Lord, and to us also, in accordance with God's will. And this led us beg Titus, since he had started the work for you, he should also see to the completion of this expression of your love. And, remembering how you excel in everything — in faith, in teaching, in knowledge, in unflinching earnestness, and in the affection that we have

awakened in you — I ask you to excel also in this expression of your love.

8 I am not laying a command on you, but I am making use of  
 9 the earnestness shown by others to test the genuineness of your  
 10 affection. For you do not forget the loving kindness of our Lord  
 11 Jesus Christ — how that for your sakes, although he was rich,  
 12 he became poor, so that you also might become rich through his  
 13 poverty. I am only making suggestions on this matter; for this is  
 14 the best course for you, since you were a year before others, not  
 15 only in taking action, but also in showing your readiness to do so.  
 And now I want you to complete the work, so that its completion  
 may correspond with your willing readiness — in proportion, of  
 course, to your means. For, where there is willingness, a person's  
 gift is valued by its comparison with what they have, and not with  
 what they do not have. For our object is not to give relief to oth-  
 ers and bring distress on you. It is a matter of a fair balance. On  
 this occasion what you can spare will supply what they need, at  
 another time what they can spare may supply your need, and so  
 things will be equal. As scripture says —

“Those who had much had nothing over, and those who  
 had little did not lack!”

16 I thank God for inspiring Titus with the same keen interest in  
 17 your welfare that I have; for Titus has responded to my appeals  
 18 and, in his great earnestness, is starting to go to you of his own  
 19 accord. We are sending with him one of the Lord's followers  
 20 whose fame in the service of the good news has spread through  
 21 all the churches; and not only that, but he has been elected by the  
 22 churches to accompany us on our journey, in connexion with this  
 23 expression of your love, which we are personally administering to  
 the honour of the Lord, and to show our deep interest. What we  
 are specially guarding against is that any fault should be found  
 with us in regard to our administration of this charitable fund;  
 for we are trying to make arrangements which will be right, not  
 only in the eyes of the Lord, but also in the eyes of people. We  
 are also sending with them another of our friends, whose earnestness  
 we have many a time proved in many ways, and whom we now  
 find made even more earnest by his great confidence in you. If I  
 must say anything about Titus, he is my intimate companion, and  
 he shares my work for you; if it is our friends, they are delegates

of the churches, an honour to Christ. Show them, therefore — so 24  
that the churches may see it — the proof of your affection, and  
the ground for our boasting to them about you.

With reference, indeed, to the Fund for your fellow Christians, 9  
it is quite superfluous for me to say anything to you. I know, of 2  
course, your willingness to help, and I am always boasting of it to  
the Macedonians. I tell them that you in Greece have been ready  
for a year past; and it was really your zeal that stimulated most of  
them. So my reason for sending our friends is to prevent what we 3  
said about you from proving, in this particular matter, an empty  
boast, and to enable you to be as well prepared as I have been  
saying that you are. Otherwise, if any Macedonians were to come 4  
with me, and find you unprepared, we — to say nothing of you  
— should feel ashamed of our present confidence. Therefore I 5  
think it necessary to beg the friends to go to you in advance, and  
to complete the arrangements for the gift, which you have already  
promised, so that it may be ready, as a gift, before I come, and not  
look as if it were being given under pressure.

Remember the saying — “Scanty sowing, scanty harvest; plen- 6  
tiful sowing, plentiful harvest.” Let everyone give as he has de- 7  
termined before hand, not grudgingly or under compulsion; for  
God loves “a cheerful giver.” God has power to shower all kinds 8  
of blessings on you, so that, having, under all circumstances and  
on all occasions, all that you can need, you may be able to shower  
all kinds of benefits on others. (As scripture says — 9

“He scattered broadcast, he gave to the poor; His right-  
eousness continues for ever.”

And he who supplies “seed to the sower, and bread for eating,” 10  
will supply you with seed, and cause it to increase, and will mul-  
tiply “the fruits of your righteousness”). Rich in all things your- 11  
selves, you will be able to show liberality to all, which, with our  
help, will cause thanksgiving to be offered to God. For the ren- 12  
dering of a public service such as this, not only relieves the needs  
of your fellow Christians, but also results in the offering to God of  
many a thanksgiving. Through the evidence afforded by the ser- 13  
vice rendered, you cause people to praise God for your fidelity to  
your profession of faith in the good news of the Christ, as well as  
for the liberality of your contributions for them and for all others.  
And they also, in their prayers for you, express their longing to 14

see you, because of the surpassing love of God displayed toward  
 15 you. All thanks to God for his inestimable gift!

*The Apostle's Claims and Authority*

10 Now, I, Paul, make a personal appeal to you by the meekness and  
 gentleness of the Christ — I who, 'in your presence, am humble  
 in my bearing towards you, but, when absent, am bold in my lan-  
 2 guage to you' — I implore you not to drive me to 'show my bold-  
 ness,' when I do come, by the confident tone which I expect to  
 have to adopt towards some of you, who are expecting to find us  
 3 influenced in our conduct by earthly motives. For, though we live  
 4 an earthly life, we do not wage an earthly war. The weapons for  
 our warfare are not earthly, but, under God, are powerful enough  
 5 to pull down strongholds. We are engaged in confuting argu-  
 ments and pulling down every barrier raised against the knowl-  
 edge of God. We are taking captive every hostile thought, to bring  
 6 it into submission to the Christ, and are fully prepared to punish  
 every act of rebellion, when once your submission is complete.  
 7 You look at the outward appearance of things! Let anyone, who  
 is confident that he belongs to Christ, reflect, for himself, again on  
 8 the fact — that we belong to Christ no less than he does. Even if  
 I boast extravagantly about our authority — which the Lord gave  
 us for building up your faith and not for overthrowing it — still I  
 9 have no reason to be ashamed. I say this so that it doesn't seem  
 10 as if I am trying to overawe you by my letters. For people say 'His  
 letters are impressive and vigorous, but his personal appearance  
 11 is insignificant and his speaking contemptible.' Let such a per-  
 son be assured of this — that our words in our letters show us to  
 be, when absent, just what our deeds will show us to be, when  
 12 present. We have not indeed the audacity to class or compare  
 ourselves with some of those who indulge in self-commendation!  
 But, when such persons measure themselves by themselves, and  
 compare themselves with themselves, they show a want of wis-  
 13 dom. We, however, will not give way to unlimited boasting, but  
 will confine ourselves to the limits of the sphere to which God  
 14 limited us, when he permitted us to come as far as Corinth. For it  
 is not the case, as it would be if we were not in the habit of coming  
 to you, that we are exceeding our bounds! Why, we were the very

first to reach you with the good news of the Christ! Our boasting, therefore, is not unlimited, nor does it extend to the labours of others; but our hope is that, as your faith grows, our influence among you may be very greatly increased — though still confined to our sphere — So that we will be able to tell the good news in the districts beyond you, without trespassing on the sphere assigned to others, or boasting of what has been already done. "Let anyone who boasts make their boast of the Lord." For it is not those who commend themselves that stand the test, but those who are commended by the Lord.

I could wish that you would tolerate a little folly in me! But indeed you do tolerate me. I am jealous over you with the jealousy of God. For I engaged you to one husband so that I might present you to the Christ a pure bride. Yet I fear that it may turn out that, just as the snake by his craftiness deceived Eve, so your minds may have lost the loyalty and purity due from you to the Christ. For, if some newcomer is proclaiming a Jesus other than him whom we proclaimed, or if you are receiving a Spirit different from the Spirit which you received, or a good news different from that which you welcomed, then you are marvellously tolerant! I do not regard myself as in any way inferior to the most eminent apostles! Though I am no trained orator, yet I am not without knowledge; indeed we made this perfectly clear to you in every way.

Perhaps you say that I did wrong in humbling myself that you might be exalted — I mean because I told you God's good news without payment. I robbed other churches by taking pay from them, so that I might serve you! And, when I was with you in need, I did not become a burden to any of you; for our friends, on coming from Macedonia, supplied my needs. I kept myself, and will keep myself from being an expense to you in any way. As surely as I know anything of the truth of Christ, this boast, as far as I am concerned, will not be stopped in any part of Greece. Why? Because I do not love you? God knows that I do!

What I am doing now I will continue to do in order to cut away the ground from under those who are wishing for some ground

13 for attacking me, so that as regards the thing of which they boast  
14 they may appear in their true characters, just as we do. Such peo-  
15 ple are false apostles, treacherous workers, disguising themselves  
16 as apostles of Christ! And no wonder; for even Satan disguises  
17 himself as an angel of light. It is not surprising, therefore, if his  
18 servants also disguise themselves as servants of righteousness.  
19 But their end will be in accordance with their actions.

16 I say again — Let no one think me a fool! Yet, if you do, at least  
17 welcome me as you would a fool, so that I, too may indulge in a  
18 little boasting. When I speak like this, I am not speaking as the  
19 Master would, but as a fool might, in boasting so confidently. As  
20 so many are boasting of earthly things, I, too, will boast. For all  
21 your cleverness, you tolerate fools willingly enough! You toler-  
22 ate a person even when they enslave you, when they plunder you,  
23 when they get you into their power, when they put on airs of su-  
24 periority, when they strike you in the face! I admit, to my shame,  
25 that we have been weak. But whatever the subject on which oth-  
26 ers are not afraid to boast — though it is foolish to say so — I  
27 am not afraid either! Are they Hebrews? So am I! Are they Is-  
28 raelites? So am I! Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I! Are  
29 they “Servants of Christ”? Though it is madness to talk like this,  
30 I am more so than they! I have had more of toil, more of impris-  
onment! I have been flogged times without number. I have been  
often at death’s door. Five times I received at the hands of my  
own people forty lashes, all but one. Three times I was beaten  
with rods. Once I was stoned. Three times I was shipwrecked.  
I have spent a whole day and night in the deep. My journeys  
have been many. I have been through dangers from rivers, dan-  
gers from robbers, dangers from my own people, dangers from  
the Gentiles, dangers in towns, dangers in the country, dangers on  
the sea, dangers among people pretending to be followers of the  
Lord. I have been through toil and hardship. I have passed many  
a sleepless night; I have endured hunger and thirst; I have often  
been without food; I have known cold and nakedness. And, not  
to speak of other things, there is my daily burden of anxiety about  
all the churches. Who is weak without my being weak? Who is  
led astray without my burning with indignation? If I must boast,



I will boast of things which show my weakness! The God and Father of the Lord Jesus — he who is for ever blessed — knows that I am speaking the truth. When I was in Damascus, the Governor under King Aretas had the gates of that city guarded, so as to arrest me, but I was let down in a basket through a window in the wall, and so escaped his hands.

I must boast! It is unprofitable; but I will pass to visions and revelations given by the Lord. I know a man in union with Christ, who, fourteen years ago — whether in the body or out of the body I do not know; God knows — was caught up (this man of whom I am speaking) to the third heaven. And I know that this man — whether in the body or separated from the body I do not know; God knows — Was caught up into Paradise, and heard unspeakable things of which no human being may tell. About such a man I will boast, but about myself I will not boast except as regards my weaknesses. Yet if I choose to boast, I will not be a fool; for I will be speaking no more than the truth. But I refrain, in case anyone should credit me with more than he can see in me or hear from me, and because of the marvellous character of the revelations. It was for this reason, and to prevent my thinking too highly of myself, that a thorn was sent to pierce my flesh — an instrument of Satan to discipline me — so that I should not think too highly of myself. About this I three times entreated the Lord, praying that it might leave me. But his reply has been — “My help is enough for you; for my strength attains its perfection in the midst of weakness.”

Most gladly, then, will I boast all the more of my weaknesses, so that the strength of the Christ may overshadow me. That is why I delight in weakness, ill treatment, hardship, persecution, and difficulties, when borne for Christ. For, when I am weak, then it is that I am strong!

### Conclusion

I HAVE BEEN ‘PLAYING THE FOOL!’ IT IS YOU WHO DROVE me to it. For it is you who ought to have been commending me! Although I am nobody, in no respect did I prove inferior to the most eminent apostles. The marks of the true apostle were exhibited among you in constant endurance, as well as by signs, by marvels, and

- 13 by miracles. In what respect, I ask, were you treated worse than the other churches, unless it was that, for my part, I refused to become a burden to you? Forgive me the wrong I did to you!
- 14 Remember, this is the third time that I have made every preparation to come to see you, and I will refuse to be a burden to you; I want, not your money, but you. It is not the duty of children to put by for their parents, but of parents to put by for their children.
- 15 For my part, I will most gladly spend, and be spent, for your welfare. Can it be that the more intensely I love you the less I am to
- 16 be loved? You will admit that I was not a burden to you but you
- 17 say that I was 'crafty' and caught you 'by a trick'! Do you assert that I took advantage of you through any of those whom I have
- 18 sent to you? I urged Titus to go, and I sent another follower with him. Did Titus take any advantage of you? Didn't we live in the same Spirit, and tread in the same footsteps?
- 19 Have you all this time been fancying that it is to you that we are making our defence? No, it is in the sight of God, and in union with Christ, that we are speaking. And all this, dear friends, is to
- 20 build up your characters; for I am afraid that perhaps, when I come, I may find that you are not what I want you to be, and, on the other hand, that you may find that I am what you do not want me to be. I am afraid that I may find quarrelling, jealousy, ill feeling, rivalry, slandering, backbiting, self-assertion, and disorder.
- 21 I am afraid that, on my next visit, my God may humble me in regard to you, and that I may have to mourn over many who have long been sinning, and have not repented of the impurity, immorality, and sensuality, in which they have indulged.
- 13 For the third time I am coming to see you. "By the word of
- 2 two or three witnesses each statement will be established." I have said it, and I say it again before I come, just as if I were with you on my second visit, though for the moment absent, I say to those who have been long sinning, as well as to all others — that if I
- 3 come again, I will spare no one. And that will be the proof, which you are looking for, that the Christ speaks through me. There is no weakness in his dealings with you. No, he shows his power
- 4 among you. For though his crucifixion was due to weakness, his life is due to the power of God. And we, also, are weak in his weakness, but with him we will live for you through the power of
- 5 God. Put yourselves to the proof, to see whether you are holding to the faith. Test yourselves. Surely you recognise this fact about

yourselves — that Jesus Christ is in you! Unless indeed you cannot  
stand the test! But I hope that you will recognise that we can stand 6  
the test. We pray God that you may do nothing wrong, not that 7  
we may be seen to stand the test, but that you may do what is  
right, even though we may seem not to stand the test. We have 8  
no power at all against the truth, but we have power in the service  
of the truth. We are glad when we are weak, if you are strong. 9  
And what we pray for is that you may become perfect. This is 10  
my reason for writing as I am now doing, while I am away from  
you, so that, when I am with you, I may not act harshly in the  
exercise of the authority which the Lord gave me — and gave me  
for building up and not for pulling down.

And now, friends, goodbye. Aim at perfection; take courage; 11  
agree together; live in peace. And then God, the source of all  
love and peace, will be with you. Greet one another with a 12  
sacred kiss. All Christ's people here send you their greetings. 13

May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, 14  
and the communion with the Holy Spirit, be with you all.



# PAUL'S LETTER TO THE GALATIANS

## *Introduction*

TO THE CHURCHES IN GALATIA, from Paul, an apostle whose com- 1  
mission is not from any human authority and is given, not by hu-  
man beings, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father who raised 2  
him from the dead; and from all the followers of the Lord here. 2  
May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, bless you and 3  
give you peace. For Christ, to rescue us from this present wicked 4  
age, gave himself for our sins, in accordance with the will of 4  
God and Father, to whom be ascribed all glory for ever and ever. 5  
Amen.

I am astonished at your so soon deserting him, who called you 6  
through the love of Christ, for a different "good news," Which is 7  
really no good news at all. But then, I know that there are people  
who are harassing you, and who want to pervert the good news 8  
of the Christ. Yet even if we — or if an angel from heaven were 8  
to tell you any other "good news" than that which we told you, 9  
may he be accursed! We have said it before, and I repeat it now 9  
— If anyone tells you a "good news" other than that which you  
received, may he be accursed!

Is this, I ask, trying to conciliate people, or God? Am I seeking to 10  
please people? If I were still trying to please people, I should not  
be a servant of Christ.

*The Independence of the Apostle's Gospel*

11 I REMIND YOU, friends, that the good news which I told is no mere  
 12 human invention. I, at least, did not receive it from any human  
 being, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through a revelation  
 made by Jesus Christ.

13 You heard, no doubt, of my conduct when I was devoted to Ju-  
 daism — how I persecuted the church of God to an extent beyond  
 14 belief, and made havoc of it, and how, in my devotion to Judaism,  
 I surpassed many of my contemporaries among my own people  
 in my intense earnestness in upholding the traditions of my an-  
 15 cestors. But when God, who had set me apart even before my  
 16 birth, and who called me by his love, saw fit to reveal his Son in  
 me, so that I might tell the good news of him among the Gentiles,  
 17 then at once, instead of consulting any human being, or even go-  
 ing up to Jerusalem to see those who were apostles before me, I  
 18 went to Arabia, and came back again to Damascus. Three years  
 afterwards I went up to Jerusalem to make the acquaintance of  
 19 Peter, and I stayed a fortnight with him. I did not, however, see  
 20 any other apostle, except James, the Master's brother. (As to what  
 I am now writing to you, I call God to witness that I am speaking  
 21 the truth). Afterwards I went to the districts of Syria and Cilicia.  
 22 But I was still unknown even by sight to the Christian churches  
 23 in Judea; all that they had heard was — "The man who once per-  
 secuted us is now telling the good news of the faith of which he  
 24 once made havoc." And they praised God for my sake.

2 Fourteen years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem again with  
 2 Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. It was in obedience to  
 a revelation that I went; and I laid before the apostles the good  
 news that I am proclaiming among the Gentiles. I did this pri-  
 vately before those who are thought highly of because I was afraid  
 that I might possibly be taking, or might have already taken, a  
 3 course which would prove useless. Yet even my companion, Ti-  
 4 tus, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised. But,  
 because of those who pretended to be followers who had stolen  
 in, the intruders who had crept in to spy on the liberty which we  
 have through union with Christ Jesus, in order to bring us back  
 5 to slavery — Why, we did not for a moment yield submission  
 to them, so that the truth of the good news might be yours al-  
 6 ways! Of those who are thought somewhat highly of — what

they once were makes no difference to me; God does not recognise human distinctions — those, I say, who are thought highly of added nothing to my message. On the contrary, they saw that I had been entrusted with the good news for the Gentiles, just as Peter had been for the Jews. For he who gave Peter power for his mission to the Jews gave me, also, power to go to the Gentiles. Recognising the charge entrusted to me, James, Peter, and John, who were regarded as pillars of the church, openly acknowledged Barnabas and me as fellow workers, agreeing that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews. Only we were to remember the poor — the thing I was myself anxious to do. But, when Peter came to Antioch, I opposed him to his face; for he stood self-condemned. Before certain persons came from James, he had been in the habit of eating with the Gentile converts; but, when they came, he began to withdraw and hold aloof, because he was afraid of offending those who still held to circumcision. The rest of the Jewish converts were guilty of the same hypocrisy, so that even Barnabas was led away by it. But, when I saw that they were not dealing straightforwardly with the truth of the good news, I said to Peter, before them all, ‘If you, who were born a Jew, adopt Gentile customs, instead of Jewish, why are you trying to compel the Gentile converts to adopt Jewish customs?’

### *The Law and the Gospel*

WE, though we are Jews by birth and not outcasts of Gentile origin, know that no one is pronounced righteous as the result of obedience to Law, but only through faith in Christ Jesus. So we placed our faith in Christ Jesus, in order that we might be pronounced righteous, as the result of faith in Christ, and not of obedience to Law; for such obedience “will not result in even one soul’s being pronounced righteous.” If, while seeking to be pronounced righteous through union with Christ, we were ourselves seen to be outcasts, would that make Christ an agent of sin? Heaven forbid! For, if I rebuild the things that I pulled down, I prove myself to have done wrong. I, indeed, through Law became dead to Law, in order to live for God. I have been crucified with Christ. So it is no longer I that live, but it is Christ who lives in me; and, as for my present earthly life, I am living it

21 by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. I do not reject the love of God. If righteousness comes through Law, then there was no need for Christ to die!

3 Foolish Galatians! Who has been fascinating you — you before  
 2 whose eyes Jesus Christ was depicted on the cross? Here is the  
 one thing that I want to find out from you — Did you receive the  
 Spirit as the result of obedience to Law, or of your having listened  
 3 with faith? Can you be so foolish? After beginning with what  
 4 is spiritual, do you now end with what is external? Did you go  
 through so much to no purpose? — if indeed it really was to no  
 5 purpose! He who supplies you abundantly with his Spirit and  
 endows you with such powers — does he do this as the result of  
 obedience to Law? Or as the result of your having listened with  
 6 faith? It is just as it was with Abraham —

“He had faith in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.”

7 You see, then, that those whose lives are based on faith are the  
 8 sons of Abraham. And scripture, foreseeing that God would pronounce the Gentiles righteous as the result of faith, foretold the good news to Abraham in the words —

“Through you all the Gentiles will be blessed.”

9 And, therefore, those whose lives are based on faith share the  
 10 blessings bestowed on the faith of Abraham. All who rely on obedience to Law are under a curse, for scripture says —

“Cursed is everyone who does not abide by all that is written in the book of the Law, and do it.”

11 Again, it is evident that no one is pronounced righteous before God through Law, for we read —

“Through faith the righteous will find life.”

12 But the Law is not based on faith; no, its words are —

“Those who practice these precepts will find life through them.”



Christ ransomed us from the curse pronounced in the Law, by taking the curse on himself for us, for scripture says — 13

“Cursed is anyone who is hanged on a tree.”

And this he did that the blessing given to Abraham might be extended to the Gentiles through their union with Jesus Christ; that so, through our faith, we also might receive the promised gift of the Spirit. 14

To take an illustration, friends, from daily life — No one sets aside even an agreement between two people, when once it has been confirmed, nor do they add conditions to it. Now it was to Abraham that the promises were made, “and to his offspring.” It was not said “to his offsprings,” as if many persons were meant, but the words were “to your offspring,” showing that one person was meant — and that was Christ. My point is this — An agreement already confirmed by God cannot be canceled by the Law, which came four hundred and thirty years later, so as to cause the promise to be set aside. If our heritage is the result of Law, then it has ceased to be the result of a promise. Yet God conferred it on Abraham by a promise. 15 16 17 18

What, then, you ask, was the use of the Law? It was a later addition, to make people conscious of their wrong-doings, and intended to last only until the coming of that “offspring” to whom the promise had been made; and it was delivered through angels by a mediator. Now mediation implies more than one person, but God is one only. Does that set the Law in opposition to God’s promises? Heaven forbid! For, if a Law had been given capable of bestowing life, then righteousness would have actually owed its existence to Law. But the words of scripture represent the whole world as being in bondage to sin, so that the promised blessing, dependent, as it is, on faith in Jesus Christ, may be given to those who have faith in him. 19 20 21 22

Before the coming of faith, we were kept under the guard of the Law, in bondage, awaiting the faith that was destined to be revealed. Thus the Law has proved a guide to lead us to Christ, in order that we may be pronounced righteous as the result of faith. But now that faith has come we no longer need a guide. 23 24 25

26 For you are all sons of God, through your faith in Christ Jesus.  
27 For all of you who were baptized into union with Christ clothed  
28 yourselves with Christ. All distinctions between Jew and Greek,  
slave and free, male and female, have vanished; for in union with  
29 Christ Jesus you are all one. And, since you belong to Christ, it  
follows that you are Abraham's offspring and, under the promise,  
sharers in the inheritance.

4 My point is this — As long as the heir is under age, there is  
no difference between him and a slave, though he is master of the  
2 whole estate. He is subject to the control of guardians and stew-  
ards, during the period for which his father has power to appoint  
3 them. And so is it with us; when we were under age, as it were,  
4 we were slaves to the puerile teaching of this world; but, when the  
full time came, God sent his Son — born a woman's child, born  
5 subject to Law — To ransom those who were subject to Law, so  
that we might take our position as sons.

6 And it is because you are sons that God sent into our hearts  
7 the Spirit of his Son, with the cry — "Abba, our Father." You,  
therefore, are no longer a slave, but a son; and, if a son, then an  
heir also, by God's appointment.

8 Yet formerly, in your ignorance of God, you became slaves to  
9 "gods" which were no gods. But now that you have found God —  
or, rather, have been found by him — how is it that you are turning  
back to that poor and feeble puerile teaching, to which yet once  
10 again you are wanting to become slaves? You are scrupulous in  
11 keeping days and months and seasons and years! You make me  
fear that the labour which I have spent on you may have been  
wasted.

12 I entreat you, friends, to become like me, as I became like you.  
13 You have never done me any wrong. You remember that it was  
owing to bodily infirmity that on the first occasion I told you the  
14 good news. And as for what must have tried you in my condition,  
it did not inspire you with scorn or disgust, but you welcomed  
me as if I had been an angel of God — or Christ Jesus himself!

What has become then, of your blessings? For I can bear witness 15  
that, had it been possible, you would have torn out your eyes and  
given them to me! Am I to think, then, that I have become your 16  
enemy by telling you the truth? Certain people are seeking your 17  
favour, but with no honourable object. No, indeed, they want to  
isolate you, so that you will have to seek their favour. It is always 18  
honourable to have your favour sought in an honourable cause,  
and not only when I am with you, my dear children — You for 19  
whom I am again enduring a mother's pains, until a likeness to  
Christ will have been formed in you. But I could wish to be with 20  
you now and speak in a different tone, for I am perplexed about  
you.

Tell me, you who want to be still subject to Law — Why don't 21  
you listen to the Law? scripture says that Abraham had two sons, 22  
one the child of the slave-woman and the other the child of the  
free woman. But the child of the slave-woman was born in the 23  
course of nature, while the child of the free woman was born  
in fulfilment of a promise. This story may be taken as an alle- 24  
gory. The women stand for two Covenants. One covenant, given  
from Mount Sinai, produces a race of slaves and is represented by  
Hagar (The word Hagar meaning in Arabia Mount Sinai) and it 25  
ranks with the Jerusalem of today, for she and her children are in  
slavery. But the Jerusalem above is free, and she it is who is our 26  
mother. For scripture says — 27

“Rejoice, you barren one, who does never bear,  
Break into shouts, you who are never in labour,  
For many are the children of her who is desolate —  
aye, more than of her who has a husband.”

As for ourselves, friends, we, like Isaac, are children born in ful- 28  
filment of a promise. Yet at that time the child born in the course 29  
of nature persecuted the child born by the power of the Spirit; and  
it is the same now. But what does the passage of scripture say? 30

“Send away the slave-woman and her son; for the slave's  
son will not be coheir with the son of the free woman.”

- 31 And so, friends, we are not children of a slave, but of her who is free.

*The Gospel in the Daily Life*

- 5 IT IS FOR FREEDOM THAT CHRIST SET US FREE; stand firm therefore, and do not again be held under the yoke of slavery.

- 2 Understand that I, Paul, myself tell you that if you allow yourselves to be circumcised, Christ will avail you nothing. I again declare to everyone who receives circumcision, that he binds himself to obey the whole Law. You have severed yourselves from Christ — you who are seeking to be pronounced righteous through Law; 3  
4  
5 you have fallen away from love. For we, by the help of the Spirit, are eagerly waiting for the fulfilment of our hope — that we may 6  
7 be pronounced righteous as the result of faith. If we are in union with Christ Jesus, neither is circumcision nor the omission of it 8  
9 anything, but faith, working through love, is everything. You were once making good progress! Who has hindered you from 10  
11 obeying the truth? The persuasion brought to bear on you does not come from him who calls you. A little leaven leavens all the 12  
13 dough. I, through my union with the Lord, am persuaded that you will learn to think with me. But the man who is disturbing your minds will have to bear his punishment, whoever he may 14  
15 be. If I, friends, am still proclaiming circumcision, why am I still persecuted? It seems that the cross has ceased to be an obstacle! I could even wish that the people who are unsettling you would go further still and mutilate themselves.

- 13 Remember, friends, to you the call came to give you freedom. Only do not make your freedom an opportunity for self-indulgence, but serve one another in a loving spirit. Indeed, the whole Law has been summed up in this one precept —

“You must love your neighbour as you love yourself.”

- 15 But, if you are continually wounding and preying on one another, take care that you are not destroyed by one another.

This is what I have to say — Let your steps be guided by the Spirit, and then you will never gratify the cravings of your earthly nature. For these cravings of our earthly nature conflict with the Spirit, and the Spirit with our earthly nature — they are two contrary principles — so that you cannot do what you wish. But, if you follow the guidance of the Spirit, you are not subject to Law. The sins of our earthly nature are unmistakable. They are sins like these — sexual immorality, impurity, indecency, idolatry, sorcery, quarrels, strife, jealousy, outbursts of passion, rivalries, dissensions, divisions, feelings of envy, drunkenness, revelry, and the like. And I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who indulge in such things will have no place in the kingdom of God. But the fruit produced by the Spirit is love, joy, peace, forbearance, kindness, generosity, trustfulness, gentleness, self-control. Against such things there is no law! And those who belong to Jesus, the Christ, have already crucified their earthly nature, with its passions and its cravings.

Since our life is due to the Spirit, let us rule our conduct also by the Spirit. Do not let us grow vain, and provoke or envy one another. My friends, even if someone should be caught committing a sin, you who are spiritually minded should, in a gentle spirit, help them to recover themselves, taking care that you yourselves are not tempted. Bear one another's burdens, and so carry out the Law of the Christ. If a person imagines themselves to be somebody, when they are really nobody, they deceive themselves. Let everyone test their own work, and then their cause for satisfaction will be in themselves and not in a comparison with their neighbour; for everyone must bear their own load. The person, however, who is being instructed in the message ought always to share their blessings with their teacher.

Do not be deceived. God cannot be mocked. What a person sows that they will reap. For the person who sows the field of their earthly nature will from that earthly nature reap corruption; while the one who sows the field of the spirit will from that spirit reap eternal life. Let us never tire of doing right, for at the proper season we will reap our harvest, if we do not grow weary. Therefore, I say, as the opportunity occurs, let us treat everyone with kindness, and especially members of the Household of the faith.

*Conclusion in the Apostle's own handwriting*

11 SEE IN WHAT LARGE LETTERS I AM WRITING WITH MY OWN hand. Those  
12 who wish to appear to advantage in regard to outward obser-  
13 vances are the people who are trying to compel you to be circum-  
14 cised; and they do it only to avoid being persecuted for the cross  
15 of Jesus, the Christ. Even these men who are circumcised do not  
16 themselves keep the Law; yet they want you to be circumcised,  
17 so that they may boast of your observance of the rite. But, for  
18 my part, may I never boast of anything except the cross of Jesus  
19 Christ, our Master, through whom the world has been crucified to  
20 me, and I to the world. For neither is circumcision nor the omis-  
21 sion of it anything; but a new nature is everything. May all who  
22 rule their conduct by this principle find peace and mercy — they  
23 who are the Israel of God.

17 For the future let no one trouble me; for I bear the marks of Jesus  
branded on my body.

18 May the blessing of Jesus Christ, our Lord, rest on your souls,  
friends. Amen.

# PAUL'S LETTER TO THE EPHESIANS

## *Introduction*

TO CHRIST'S PEOPLE AT EPHESUS WHO ARE FAITHFUL TO HIM, from Paul, 1  
 an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God. May God, our Fa- 2  
 ther, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

Blessed is the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord, who has 3  
 blessed us on high with every spiritual blessing, in Christ. For he 4  
 chose us in our union with Christ before the creation of the uni-  
 verse, so that we might be holy and blameless in his sight, living 5  
 in the spirit of love. From the first he destined us, in his good-  
 will towards us, to be adopted as sons through Jesus Christ, and 6  
 so to enhance that glorious manifestation of his loving kindness  
 which he gave us in the one he loves; for in him, and through 7  
 the shedding of his blood, we have found redemption in the par-  
 don of our offences. All this accords with the loving kindness 8  
 which God lavished on us, accompanied by countless gifts of wis-  
 dom and discernment, when he made known to us his hidden 9  
 purpose. And it also accords with the goodwill which God pur-  
 posed to exhibit in Christ, in view of that divine order which 10  
 was to mark the completion of the ages, when he should make  
 everything, both in heaven and on earth, centre in him. In him, I 11  
 say, for by our union with him we became God's heritage, having  
 from the first been destined for this in the intention of him who,  
 in all that happens, is carrying out his own fixed purpose; that we 12  
 should enhance his glory — we who have been the first to rest our  
 hopes on the Christ. And you, too, by your union with him, after 13  
 you had heard the message of the truth, the good news of your  
 salvation — you believed in him and were sealed as his by receiv-  
 ing the holy Spirit, which he had promised. And the Spirit is a 14

pledge of our future heritage, foreshadowing the full redemption of God's own people — to enhance his glory.

*The power of God displayed in  
Christ, the Head of the Church*

15 AND THEREFORE I, ever since I heard of the faith in the Lord Jesus  
16 which prevails among you, and of your confidence in all Christ's  
17 people, have never omitted to thank God on your behalf, when-  
18 ever I make mention of you in my prayers. My prayer is that the  
19 God of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all-glorious Father, may inspire  
20 you with wisdom and true insight through a fuller knowledge of  
21 himself; that your minds may be so enlightened that you may  
22 realise the hope given by God's call, the wealth of the glory of  
23 his heritage among Christ's people, and the transcendent great-  
24 ness of the power which he is able to exercise in dealing with us  
25 who believe in him. The same mighty power was exerted on the  
26 Christ, when he raised the Christ from the dead and "caused him  
27 to sit at his right hand" on high, exalting him above all angels  
28 and archangels of every rank, and above every name that can be  
29 named, whether in the present age, or in the age to come. And  
30 God placed "all things under Christ's feet," and gave him to the  
31 church as its supreme head; for the church is Christ's body, and  
32 is filled by him who fills all things everywhere with his presence.  
33 You yourselves were once dead because of your offences and  
34 sins. For at one time you lived in sin, following the ways of the  
35 world, in subjection to the Ruler of the powers of the air — the  
36 Spirit who is still at work among the disobedient. And it was  
37 among them that we all once lived our lives, indulging the crav-  
38 ings of our earthly nature, and carrying out the desires prompted  
39 by that earthly nature and by our own thoughts. Our nature ex-  
40 posed us to the divine wrath, like the rest of humanity. Yet God,  
41 in his abundant compassion, and because of the great love with  
42 which he loved us, even though we were "dead" because of our  
43 offences, gave life to us in giving life to the Christ. (By God's lov-  
44 ing kindness you have been saved.) And, through our union with  
45 Christ Jesus, God raised us with him, and caused us to sit with  
46 him on high, in order that, by his goodness to us in Christ Je-  
47 sus, he might display in the ages to come the boundless wealth of



his loving kindness. For it is by God's loving kindness that you 8  
have been saved, through your faith. It is not due to yourselves;  
the gift is God's. It is not due to obedience to Law, so that no one 9  
can boast. For we are God's handiwork, created, by our union 10  
with Christ Jesus, for the good actions in doing which God had  
pre-arranged that we should spend our lives.

Remember, therefore, that you were once Gentiles yourselves, 11  
as your bodies showed; you were called "The Uncircumcised" by  
those who were called "The Circumcised" — circumcised only  
by human hands! Remember that you were at that time far from 12  
Christ; you were shut out from the citizenship of Israel; you were  
strangers to the Covenants founded on God's Promise; you were  
in the world without hope and without God. But now, through 13  
your union with Christ Jesus, you who once were "far off" have,  
by the shedding of the blood of the Christ, been brought "near."  
He it is who is our peace. He made the two divisions of human- 14  
ity one, broke down the barrier that separated them, and in his  
human nature put an end to the cause of enmity between them 15  
— the Law with its injunctions and ordinances — in order to cre-  
ate, through union with himself, from Jew and Gentile, one new 16  
humanity and so make peace. And when, on the cross, he had des-  
troyed their mutual enmity, he sought by means of his cross to 17  
reconcile them both to God, united in one body. He came with the  
good news of peace for you who were "far off," and of peace for 18  
those who were "near"; for it is through him that we, the Jews and  
the Gentiles, united in the one Spirit, are now able to approach 19  
the Father. It follows, then, that you are no longer strangers and  
aliens, but are fellow citizens with Christ's people and members 20  
of God's Household. You have been built up on the foundation  
laid by the apostles and prophets, Christ Jesus himself being "the 21  
corner-stone." United in him, every part of the building, closely  
joined together, will grow into a Temple, consecrated by its union 22  
with the Lord. And, through union in him, you also are being  
built up together, to be a place where God lives through the Spirit.

*The Apostle's Divine Commission to the Gentiles*

FOR THIS REASON I, Paul, the prisoner of Jesus, the Christ, for the 3  
sake of you Gentiles — For you have heard, I suppose, of the re- 2  
sponsible charge with which God entrusted me for your benefit,

3 and also that it was by direct revelation that the hidden purpose  
of God was made known to me, as I have already briefly told  
4 you. And, by reading what I have written, you will be able to  
judge how far I understand this hidden purpose of God in Christ.  
5 In former generations it was not made known to humanity, as  
fully as it has now been revealed by the Spirit to the apostles and  
6 prophets among Christ's people — That, by union with Christ Je-  
sus and through the good news, the Gentiles are coheirs with us  
and members of one body, and that they share with us in God's  
7 Promise. Of this good news I become an assistant, in virtue of  
the charge with which God entrusted me in the exercise of his  
8 power — Yes, to me, who am less than the least of all Christ's  
people, was this charge entrusted! — to tell the Gentiles the good  
9 news of the boundless wealth to be found in the Christ, and to  
make clear what is God's way of working out that hidden pur-  
pose which from the first has been concealed in the mind of the  
10 Creator of all things; so that now to the archangels and to all the  
powers on high should be made known, through the church, the  
11 all-embracing wisdom of God, in accordance with that purpose  
which runs through all the ages and which he has now accom-  
12 plished in Jesus, the Christ, our Master. And in union with him,  
and through our trust in him, we find courage to approach God  
13 with confidence. Therefore I beg you not to be disheartened at  
the sufferings that I am undergoing for your sakes; for they re-  
14 dound to your honour. For this reason, then, I kneel before the  
15 Father — From whom all "fatherhood" in heaven and on earth  
16 derives its name — And pray that, in proportion to the wealth  
of his glory, he will strengthen you with his power by breathing  
17 his Spirit into your inmost soul, so that the Christ, through your  
faith, may make his home within your hearts in love; And I pray  
that you, now firmly rooted and established, may, with all Christ's  
18 people, have the power to comprehend in all its width and length  
19 and height and depth, and to understand — though it surpasses  
all understanding — the love of the Christ; and so be filled to the  
full with God himself.

To him who, through his power which is at work within us, is 20  
 able to do far more than anything that we can ask or conceive —  
 To him be all glory through the church and through Christ Jesus, 21  
 for all generations, age after age. Amen.

*The Gospel and Daily Life*

I BEG YOU, then — I who am a prisoner in the Master’s cause — to 4  
 live lives worthy of the call that you have received; always hum- 2  
 ble and gentle, patient, bearing lovingly with one another, and 3  
 striving to maintain in the bond of peace the unity given by the 4  
 Spirit. There is but one body and one Spirit, just as there was but 4  
 one hope set before you when you received your call. There is 5  
 but one Lord, one faith, one baptism. There is but one God and 6  
 Father of all — the God who is over all, pervades all, and is in all.  
 Everyone of us, however, has been entrusted with some charge, 7  
 each in accordance with the extent of the gift of the Christ. That 8  
 is why it is said —

“When he went up on high, he led his captives into captiv-  
 ity. And gave gifts to humanity.”

Now surely this “going up” must imply that he had already gone 9  
 down into the world beneath. He who went down is the same 10  
 as he who went up — up beyond the highest heaven, so that he  
 might fill all things with his presence. And he it is who gave to the 11  
 church apostles, prophets, missionaries, pastors, and teachers, to  
 fit his people for the work of the ministry, for the building up of 12  
 the body of the Christ. And this will continue, until we all attain 13  
 to that unity which is given by faith and by a fuller knowledge  
 of the Son of God; until we reach maturity — the full standard 14  
 of the perfection of the Christ. Then we will no longer be like in-  
 fants, tossed backward and forward, blown about by every breath 15  
 of human teaching and by people’s trickery and craftiness; but  
 holding the truth in a spirit of love, we will grow into complete 16  
 union with him who is our head — Christ himself. For from him  
 the whole body, closely joined and knit together by the contact of  
 every part with the source of its life, derives its power to grow, in  
 proportion to the vigour of each individual part; and so is being  
 built up in a spirit of love.

17 This, then, as one in union with the Lord, I implore: Do not con-  
18 tinue to live such purposeless lives as the Gentiles live, with their  
powers of discernment darkened, cut off from the life of God, ow-  
ing to the ignorance that prevails among them and to the hardness  
19 of their hearts. Lost to all sense of shame, they have abandoned  
themselves to licentiousness, in order to practice every kind of  
20 impurity without restraint. But far different is the lesson you  
learned from the Christ — if, that is, you really listened to him,  
21 and through union with him were taught the truth, as it is to be  
22 found in Jesus. For you learned with regard to your former way  
of living that you must cast off your old nature, which, yielding to  
23 deluding passions, grows corrupt; that the spirit of your minds  
24 must be constantly renewed; and that you must clothe yourselves  
in that new nature which was created to resemble God, with the  
righteousness and holiness springing from the truth.

25 Since, therefore, you have cast off what is false, “you must  
every one of you speak the truth to your neighbours.” For we  
26 are united to one another like the parts of a body. “Be angry,  
yet do not sin.” Do not let the sun go down on your anger; and  
27 give no opportunity to the devil. Let the person who steals steal  
28 no longer, but rather they should toil with their hands at honest  
work, so that they may have something to share with anyone in  
29 need. Never let any foul word pass your lips, but only such good  
words as the occasion demands, so that they may be a help to  
30 those who hear them. And do not grieve God’s Holy Spirit; for  
it was through that Spirit that God sealed you as his, against the  
31 day of redemption. Let all bitterness, passion, anger, brawling,  
and abusive language be banished from among you, as well as all  
32 malice. Be kind to one another, tenderhearted, ready to forgive  
5 one another, just as God, in Christ, forgave you. Therefore imi-  
tate God, as his dear children, and live a life of love, following the  
2 example of the Christ, who loved you and gave himself for you as  
“an offering and a sacrifice to God, that should be fragrant and  
acceptable.”

3 As for sexual immorality and every kind of impurity, or greed,  
do not let them even be mentioned among you, as befits Christ’s  
4 people, nor shameful conduct, nor foolish talk or jesting, for they

are wholly out of place among you; but rather thanksgiving. For 5  
of this you may be sure — that no one who is unchaste or impure  
or greedy of gain (for to be greedy of gain is idolatry) has any  
place awaiting him in the kingdom of the Christ and God.

Do not let anyone deceive you with specious arguments. Those 6  
are the sins that bring down the wrath of God on the disobedient.  
Therefore have nothing to do with such people. For, although 7  
you were once in darkness, now, by your union with the Lord, 8  
you are in the light. Live as “children of light” — For the out- 9  
come of life in the light may be seen in every form of goodness,  
righteousness, and sincerity — Always trying to find out what 10  
is pleasing to the Lord. Take no part in deeds of darkness, from 11  
which no good can come; on the contrary, expose them. It is de- 12  
grading even to speak of the things continually done by them in  
secret. All such actions, when exposed, have their true character 13  
made manifest by the light. For everything that has its true char- 14  
acter made manifest is clear as light. And that is why it is said  
—

“Sleeper, awake!  
Arise from the dead,  
And the Christ will give you light!”

Take great care, then, how you live — not unwisely but wisely, 15  
making the most of every opportunity; for these are evil days. 16  
Therefore do not grow thoughtless, but try to understand what 17  
the Lord’s will is. Do not drink wine to excess, for that leads to 18  
profligacy; but seek to be filled with the Spirit of God, and speak  
to one another in psalms and hymns and sacred songs. Sing and 19  
make music in your hearts to the Lord. Always give thanks for 20  
everything to our God and Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus  
Christ.

Submit to one another because you honour and respect Christ. 21

Wives should submit to their husbands as submitting to the 22  
Lord. For a man is the head of his wife, as the Christ is the head 23  
of the church — being indeed himself the Saviour of his body. But  
as the church submits to the Christ, so also should wives submit 24  
to their husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just 25  
as the Christ loved the church, and gave himself for her, to make 26  
her holy, after purifying her by the washing with the water, ac-  
cording to his promise; so that he might himself bring the church, 27

in all her beauty, into his own presence, with no spot or wrinkle or blemish of any kind, but that she might be holy and faultless.

28 That is how husbands ought to love their wives — as if they were their own bodies. A man who loves his wife is really loving himself; for no one ever yet hated his own body. But everyone feeds  
29 his body and cares for it, just as the Christ for the church; for we  
30 are members of his body.

31 “For this cause a man will leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife; and the man and his wife will become one.”

32 In this there is a profound truth — I am speaking of Christ and his church. However, for you individually, let each love his wife as if she were himself; and the wife be careful to respect her husband.

6 Children, obey your parents, as children of the Lord; for that  
2 is but right. “Honour your father and mother” — this is the first  
3 Commandment with a promise — “So that you may prosper and  
4 have a long life on earth.” And fathers, do not irritate your children, but bring them up with Christian discipline and instruction.

5 Slaves, obey your earthly masters, with anxious care, giving  
6 them ungrudging service, as if obeying the Christ; not only when their eyes are on you, as if you had merely to please people, but as slaves of Christ, who are trying to carry out the will of God. Give  
7 your service heartily and cheerfully, as working for the Master  
8 and not for people; for you know that everyone will be rewarded by the Master for any honest work that he has done, whether he is  
9 a slave or free. And masters, treat your slaves in the same spirit. Give up threatening them; for you know that he who is both their Master and yours is in heaven, and that before him there is no distinction of rank.

10 For the future, find strength in your union with the Lord, and  
11 in the power which comes from his might. Put on the full armour of God, so that you may be able to stand your ground against  
12 the stratagems of the devil. For ours is no struggle against enemies of flesh and blood, but against all the various powers of evil that hold sway in the darkness around us, against the spirits of  
13 wickedness on high. Therefore take up the full armour of God, so that when the evil day comes, you may be able to withstand the attack, and, having fought to the end, still to stand your ground.  
14 Stand your ground, then, “with truth for your belt,” and “with

*Conclusion*

righteousness for your breast-plate," And with the readiness to 15  
serve the good news of peace as shoes for your feet. At every on- 16  
slaught take up faith for your shield; for with it you will be able  
to extinguish all the flaming darts of the evil one. And receive 17  
"the helmet of salvation," and "the sword of the Spirit" — which  
is the message of God — always with prayer and supplication.  
Pray in spirit at all times. Be intent on this, with unwearied per- 18  
severance and supplication for all Christ's people — And on my 19  
behalf also, so that when I begin to speak, words may be given  
me, so that I may fearlessly make known the inmost truth of the  
good news, on behalf of which I am an ambassador — in chains! 20  
Pray that, in telling it, I may speak fearlessly as I ought.

*Conclusion*

TO ENABLE YOU, as well as others, to know all that concerns me and 21  
what I am doing, Tychicus, our dear friend and faithful helper in  
the Master's cause, will tell you everything. I am sending him to 22  
you on purpose that you may learn all about us, and that he may  
cheer your hearts.

May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ give every fol- 23  
lower peace, and love linked with faith. May God's blessing be 24  
with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying love.





## PAUL'S LETTER TO THE PHILIPPIANS

To all Christ's people at Philippi, with the supervisors and 1  
 assistants, from Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ Jesus. May 2  
 God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you, and give you  
 peace. Every recollection that I have of you is a cause of thank- 3  
 fulness to God, always, in every prayer that I offer for you all — 4  
 my prayers are full of joy — Because of the share that you have 5  
 had in spreading the good news, from the first day that you re-  
 ceived it until now. For of this I am confident, that he who began 6  
 a good work in you will complete it in readiness for the day of  
 Jesus Christ. And, indeed, I am justified in feeling like this about 7  
 you all; because you have a warm place in my heart — you who  
 all, both in my imprisonment and in the work of defending and  
 establishing the good news, shared my privilege with me. God 8  
 will bear me witness how I yearn over you all with the tenderness  
 of Christ Jesus. And what I pray for is this — that your love may 9  
 grow yet stronger and stronger, with increasing knowledge and  
 all discernment, until you are able to appreciate all moral distinc- 10  
 tions. And I pray, too, that you may be kept pure and blameless  
 against the day of Christ, bearing a rich harvest of that righteous- 11  
 ness which comes through Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of  
 God.

Friends, I want you to realise that what has happened to me 12  
 has actually served to forward the good news. It has even become 13  
 evident, not only to all the imperial guard, but to everyone else,  
 that it is for Christ's sake that I am in chains. And besides this, 14  
 most of our fellow followers have gained confidence in the Lord  
 through my chains, and now venture with far greater freedom  
 to speak of God's message fearlessly. It is true that some do pro- 15  
 claim the Christ out of Jealousy and opposition; but there are oth-  
 ers who proclaim him from goodwill. The latter do it from love 16  
 for me, knowing that I have been appointed to plead the cause  
 of the good news. The former spread the news of the Christ in 17  
 a factious spirit, and not sincerely, thinking to add to the pain of  
 my chains. But what of that? Only that in some way or other, 18  
 either with assumed or with real earnestness, Christ is being made

## Philippians 2

19 known; and at that I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice, for I know that,  
through your prayers and through a rich supply of the Spirit of  
20 Jesus Christ, “all this will make for my salvation.” And this will  
fulfil my earnest expectation and hope that I will have no cause for  
shame, but that, with unfailing courage, now as hitherto, Christ  
will be honoured in my body, whether by my life or by my death,  
21 for to me life is Christ, and death is gain. But what if the life  
22 here in the body — if this brings me fruit from my labours? Then  
which to choose I cannot tell! I am sorely perplexed either way!  
23 My own desire is to depart and be with Christ, for this would  
24 be far better. But, for your sakes, it may be more needful that  
25 I should still remain here in the body. Yes, I am confident that  
this is so, and therefore I am sure that I will stay, and stay near  
26 you all, to promote your progress and joy in the faith; so that,  
when you once more have me among you, you, in your union  
with Christ Jesus, may find in me fresh cause for exultation. Un-  
27 der all circumstances let your lives be worthy of the good news  
of the Christ: so that, whether I come and see you, or whether I  
hear of your affairs at a distance, I may know that you are stand-  
ing firm, animated by one spirit, and joining with one heart in a  
common struggle for the faith taught by the good news, without  
28 ever shrinking from your opponents. To them this will be a sign  
of their destruction and of your salvation — a sign from God. For,  
29 on behalf of Christ, you have had the privilege granted you, not  
30 only of trusting in him, but also of suffering on his behalf. You  
will be engaged in the same hard struggle as that which you once  
saw me waging, and which you hear that I am waging still.

2 If, then, any encouragement comes through union with Christ,  
if there is any persuasive power in love, if there is any commu-  
2 nion with the Spirit, if there is any tenderness or pity, I entreat  
you to make my happiness complete — Live together animated  
by the same spirit and in mutual love, one in heart, animated by  
3 one Spirit. Nothing should be done out of selfish ambition or  
vain conceit. Rather, in humility lift others up above yourselves,  
4 considering not only your own interests but also the interests of  
5 others. Let the spirit of Christ Jesus be yours also. Though the  
6 divine nature was his from the beginning, yet he did not look on  
7 equality with God as above all things to be clung to, but impover-  
ished himself by taking the nature of a servant and becoming  
8 like one of us; he appeared among us as a man, and still further

humbled himself by submitting even to death — to death on a  
 cross! And that is why God raised him to the very highest place, 9  
 and gave him the name which stands above all other names, so  
 that in adoration of the name of Jesus every knee should bend, 10  
 in heaven, on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue 11  
 should acknowledge JESUS CHRIST as LORD — to the glory of  
 God the Father. Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always 12  
 been obedient in the past, so now work out your own salvation  
 with anxious care, not only when I am with you, but all the more  
 now that I am absent. Remember it is God who, in his kindness, 13  
 is at work within you, enabling you both to will and to work.  
 In all that you do, avoid murmuring and dissension, so as to 14  
 prove yourselves blameless and innocent — “faultless children of 15  
 God, in the midst of an evil-disposed and perverse generation,”  
 in which you are seen shining like stars in a dark world, offering  
 to them the message of life; and then I will be able at the day of 16  
 Christ to boast that I did not run my course for nothing, or toil  
 for nothing. And yet, even if, when your faith is offered as a sac- 17  
 rifice to God, my lifeblood must be poured out in addition, still  
 I will rejoice and share the joy of you all; and you must also re- 18  
 joice and share my joy. I hope, however, as one who trusts in the 19  
 Lord Jesus, to send Timothy to you before long, so that I may my-  
 self be cheered by receiving news of you. For I have no one but 20  
 him to send — no one of kindred spirit who would take the same  
 genuine interest in your welfare. They are all pursuing their own 21  
 aims and not those of Christ Jesus. But you know what Timothy 22  
 has proved himself to be, and how, like a child working for his  
 father, he worked hard with me in spreading the good news. It is 23  
 Timothy, then, whom I hope to send, as soon as ever I can foresee  
 how it will go with me. And I am confident, as one who trusts in 24  
 the Lord Jesus, that before long I myself will follow. Still I think 25  
 it necessary to send Epaphroditus to you now, for he is my dear  
 friend, fellow worker, and fellow soldier, and he was also your 26  
 messenger to help me in my need. For he has been longing to see  
 you all, and has been distressed because you heard of his illness.  
 And I can assure you that his illness very nearly proved fatal. But 27  
 God had pity on him, and not on him only but also on me, so that  
 I might not have sorrow on sorrow. I am all the more ready, there- 28  
 fore, to send him, so that the sight of him may revive your spirits  
 and my own sorrow be lightened. Give him, then, the heartiest of 29

### Philippians 3

30 Christian welcomes, and hold such people in great honour. For it was owing to his devotion to the Master's work that he was at the point of death, having risked his own life in the effort to supply what was wanting in the help that you sent me.

3 In conclusion, my friends, all joy be yours in your union with the Lord. To repeat what I have already written does not weary me, and is the safe course for you. Beware of those "dogs"! Beware of those mischievous workers! Beware of the men who mutilate themselves! For it is we who are the circumcised — we whose worship is prompted by the Spirit of God, who exult in Christ Jesus, and who do not rely on external privileges; though I, if anyone, have cause to rely even on them. If anyone thinks he can rely on external privileges, far more can I! I was circumcised when eight days old; I am an Israelite by birth, and of the tribe of Benjamin; I am a Hebrew, and the child of Hebrews. As to the Law, I was a Pharisee; as to zeal, I was a persecutor of the church; as to such righteousness as is due to Law, I proved myself blameless. But all the things which I once held to be gains I have now, for the Christ's sake, come to count as loss. More than that, I count everything as loss, for the sake of the exceeding value of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. And for his sake I have lost everything, and count it as refuse, if I may but gain Christ and be found in union with him; any righteousness that I have being, not the righteousness that results from Law, but the righteousness which comes through faith in Christ — the righteousness which is derived from God and is founded on faith. Then indeed I will know Christ, and the power of his resurrection, and all that it means to share his sufferings, in the hope that, if I become like him in death, I may possibly attain to the resurrection from the dead. Not that I have already laid hold of it, or that I am already made perfect. But I press on, in the hope of actually laying hold of that for which indeed I was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. For I, friends, do not regard myself as having yet laid hold of it. But this one thing I do — forgetting what lies behind, and straining every nerve for that which lies in front, I press on to the goal, to gain the prize of that heavenward call which God gave me through Christ Jesus. Let all of us, then, whose faith is mature, think this way. Then, if on any matter you think otherwise, God will make that also plain to you. Only we are bound to order our lives by what we have already attained.

My friends, unite in following my example, and fix your eyes 17  
 on those who are living by the pattern which we have set you. For  
 there are many — of whom I have often told you, and now tell 18  
 you even with tears — who are living in enmity to the cross of  
 the Christ. The end of such people is ruin; for their appetites are 19  
 their God, and they glory in their shame; their minds are given  
 up to earthly things. But the State of which we are citizens is in 20  
 heaven; and it is from heaven that we are eagerly looking for a  
 Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, who, by the exercise of his power 21  
 to bring everything into subjection to himself, will make this body  
 that we have in our humiliation like to that body which he has in  
 his glory.

So then, my dear friends, whom I am longing to see — you 4  
 who are my joy and my crown, stand fast in union with the Lord,  
 dear friends. I entreat Euodia, and I entreat Syntyche, to live in 2  
 harmony, in union with the Lord; yes, and I ask you, my true 3  
 comrade, to help them, remembering that they toiled by my side  
 in spreading the good news; and so, too, did Clement and my  
 other fellow workers, whose names are “in the book of life.” All 4  
 joy be yours at all times in your union with the Lord. Again I 4  
 repeat — All joy be yours. Let your forbearing spirit be plain to 5  
 everyone. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything; 6  
 but under all circumstances, by prayer and entreaty joined with  
 thanksgiving, make your needs known to God. Then the peace of 7  
 God, which is beyond all human understanding, will stand guard  
 over your hearts and thoughts, through your union with Christ  
 Jesus.

In conclusion, friends, whenever you find things that are true 8  
 or honourable, righteous or pure, loveable or praiseworthy, or  
 if “virtue” and “honour” have any meaning, let them fill your  
 thoughts. All that you learned and received and heard and saw in 9  
 me put into practice continually; and then God, the giver of peace,  
 will be with you. It was a matter of great joy to me, as one in union 10  
 with the Lord, that at length your interest in me had revived. The  
 interest indeed you had, but not the opportunity. Do not think 11  
 that I am saying this under the pressure of want. For I, however  
 I am placed, have learned to be independent of circumstances. I 12  
 know how to face humble circumstances, and I know how to face  
 prosperity. Into all and every human experience I have been initi-  
 ated — into plenty and hunger, into prosperity and want. I can 13

14 do everything in the strength of him who makes me strong! Yet  
15 you have acted nobly in sharing my troubles. And you at Philippi  
know, as well as I, that in the early days of the good news — at  
the time when I had just left Macedonia — no church, with the  
one exception of yourselves, had anything to do with me as far  
16 as giving and receiving are concerned. Indeed, even while I was  
still in Thessalonica, you sent more than once to relieve my wants.  
17 It is not that I am anxious for your gifts, but I am anxious to see  
the abundant return that will be placed to your account. I have  
18 enough of everything, and to spare. My wants are fully satis-  
fied, now that I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts which  
you sent me — the sweet fragrance of a sacrifice acceptable and  
19 pleasing to God. And my God, out of the greatness of his wealth,  
will, in glory, fully satisfy your every need, through your union  
20 with Christ Jesus. To him, our God and Father, be ascribed all  
glory for every and ever. Amen. Give my greeting to everyone of  
21 the people of Christ Jesus. The Lord's followers who are with me  
22 send your their greetings. All Christ's people here, and especially  
those who belong to the Emperor's household, send theirs.

23 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

# PAUL'S LETTER TO THE COLOSSIANS

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, an apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, and 1  
from Timothy, also a follower of the Lord. To Christ's people at 2  
Colossae — the followers who are faithful to him: May God, our  
Father, bless you and give you peace.

Whenever we pray we never fail to thank God, the Father of our 3  
Lord Jesus Christ, for you, now that we have heard of your faith 4  
in Christ Jesus and of the love that you have for all his people,  
because of the hope which is kept safe for you in heaven. Of this 5  
hope you heard long ago in the true message of the good news  
which reached you, bearing fruit and growing, as it does, through 6  
all the world, just as it did among you from the very day that you  
heard of God's loving kindness, and understood what that loving 7  
kindness really is. It is just what you learned from Epaphras, our  
dear fellow servant, who, as a minister of the Christ, faithfully 8  
represents us, and who told us of the love with which the Spirit  
has inspired you.

And therefore we, from the very day that we heard this, have 9  
never ceased praying for you, or asking that you may be filled  
with the knowledge of the will of God, which comes through all 10  
true spiritual wisdom and insight. Then you will live lives worthy  
of the Master, and so please God in every way. Your lives will  
be fruitful in every kind of good action, and grow into a fuller 11  
knowledge of God; you will be made strong at all points with a  
strength worthy of the power manifested in his glory — strong  
to endure with patience, and even with gladness, whatever may 12  
happen to you; and you will give thanks to the Father who made

you fit to share the lot which awaits Christ's people in the realms of light.

*The Person and Work of the Christ*

13 FOR GOD HAS RESCUED US FROM THE TYRANNY OF DARKNESS, and has removed us into the kingdom of his Son, who is the embodiment of his love, and through whom we have found deliverance in the forgiveness of our sins.

15 For Christ is the incarnation of the invisible God — first-born and head of all creation; for in him was created all that is in heaven and on earth, the visible and the invisible — angels and archangels and all the powers of heaven. All has been created through him and for him. He was before all things, and all things unite in him; and he is the head of the church, which is his body. The first-born from the dead, he is to the church the Source of its life, that he, in all things, may stand first. For it pleased the Father that in him the divine nature in all its fulness should live, and through him to reconcile all things to himself (making peace by the shedding of Christ's blood offered on the cross) — whether on earth or in heaven. And it pleased God that you, once estranged from him and hostile towards him in your thoughts, intent only on wickedness — But now he has reconciled you to himself by the sacrifice of Christ's earthly body in death — it has pleased God that you should stand in his presence holy, pure, and blameless, if only you remain true to your faith, firm and immovable, never abandoning the hope held out in the good news to which you listened, which has been proclaimed among all created things under heaven, and of which I, Paul, was made an assistant.

24 Now at last I can rejoice in my sufferings on your behalf, and in my own person I supplement the afflictions endured by the Christ, for the sake of his body, the church; of which I myself became a minister in virtue of the office with which God entrusted me for your benefit, to declare the message of God in all its fulness — That truth which has been hidden from former ages and generations. But now it has been revealed to God's people, to whom it



was his pleasure to make known the surpassing glory of that hidden truth when proclaimed among the Gentiles — “Christ among you! Your hope of glory!” This is the Christ whom we proclaim, warning everyone, and instructing everyone, with all the wisdom that we possess, in the hope of bringing everyone into God’s presence perfected by union with Christ. It is for that I toil, struggling with all the energy which he inspires and which works powerfully within me. I want you to know in how great a struggle I am engaged for you and for Christ’s people at Laodicea, and for all who have not yet seen me; in the hope that they, being bound to one another by love, and keeping in view the full blessedness of a firm conviction, may be encouraged to strive for a perfect knowledge of God’s hidden truth, even Christ himself, in whom all treasures of wisdom and knowledge lie hidden. I say this to prevent anyone from deceiving you by plausible arguments. It is true that I am not with you in person, but I am with you in spirit, and am glad to see the good order and the unbroken front resulting from your faith in Christ.

Since, therefore, you have received Jesus, the Christ, as your Lord, live your lives in union with him — rooted in him, building up your characters through union with him, growing stronger through your faith, as you were taught, overflowing with faith and thanksgiving. Take care there is not someone who will carry you away by his “philosophy” — a hollow sham! — following, as it does, mere human traditions, and dealing with puerile questions of this world, and not with Christ. For in Christ the Godhead in all its fulness dwells incarnate; and, by your union with him, you also are filled with it. He is the head of all archangels and powers of heaven. By your union with him you received a circumcision that was not performed by human hands, when you threw off the tyranny of the earthly body, and received the circumcision of the Christ. For in baptism you were buried with Christ; and in baptism you were also raised to life with him, through your faith in the omnipotence of God, who raised him from the dead. And to you, who once were “dead,” by reason of your sins and your uncircumcised nature — to you

- God gave life in giving life to Christ! He pardoned all our sins!
- 14 He canceled the bond which stood against us — the bond that consisted of ordinances — and which was directly hostile to us!
- 15 He has taken it out of our way by nailing it to the cross! He rid himself of all the powers of evil, and held them up to open contempt, when he celebrated his triumph over them on the cross!
- 16 Do not, then, allow anyone to take you to task on questions of eating or drinking, or in the matter of annual or monthly or weekly festivals. These things are only the shadow of what is to come; the substance is in the Christ. Do not let anyone defraud you of the reality by affecting delight in so-called “humility” and angel-worship. Such a person busies themselves with their visions, and without reason are rendered conceited by their merely
- 17 human intellect. They fail to maintain union with the head, to whom it is due that the whole body, nourished and knit together by the contact and connexion of every part, grows with a divine growth.
- 20 Since, with Christ, you became dead to the puerile teaching of this world, why do you submit, as if you still belonged to the
- 21 world, to such ordinances as “Do not handle, or taste, or touch”?
- 22 For all the things referred to in them cease to exist when used.
- 23 You are following mere human directions and instructions. Such prohibitions appear reasonable where there is a desire for self-imposed service, and so-called “humility,” and harsh treatment of the body, but are of no real value against the indulgence of our
- 3 earthly nature. Since, therefore, you were raised to life with the Christ, seek for the things that are above; for it is there that the
- 2 Christ is “seated at the right hand of God.” Fix your thoughts
- 3 on the things that are above, not on those that are on earth. For you died, and your life now lies hidden, with the Christ, in God.
- 4 When the Christ, who is our life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory.

*The Gospel in the Daily Life*

THEREFORE DESTROY ALL THAT IS EARTHLY IN YOU — IMMORALITY, un- 5  
 cleanness, passions, evil desires, and that greed which is idolatry. 6  
 These are the things because of which the wrath of God comes, 6  
 and to which you, like others, once devoted your lives, when you 7  
 lived for them. You, however, must now lay aside all such things 8  
 — anger, passion, malice, slander, abuse. Never lie to one another. 9  
 Get rid of your old self and its habits, and clothe yourselves with 10  
 that new self, which, as it gains in knowledge, is being constantly 11  
 renewed “in resemblance to him who made it.” In that new life 11  
 there is no distinction between Greek and Jew, circumcised and 12  
 uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, free; but Christ is all!  
 — and in all!

Therefore, as God’s people, consecrated and dear to him, clothe 12  
 yourselves with tenderness of heart, kindness, humility, gentle- 13  
 ness, forbearance; bearing with one another, and, when there is 13  
 any ground for complaint, forgiving one another freely. As the 14  
 Master freely forgave you, so you must forgive one another. Over 14  
 all these virtues put on love; for that is the belt which makes all 15  
 complete. Let the peace that the Christ gives decide all doubts 15  
 within your hearts; for you also were called to the enjoyment of 16  
 peace as members of one body. And show yourselves thankful. 16  
 Let the message of the Christ be alive in your minds in all its 17  
 wealth, bringing all wisdom with it. Teach and admonish one 17  
 another with psalms, and hymns, and sacred songs, full of the lov-  
 ing kindness of God, lifting your hearts in song to him. And, 17  
 whatever you say or do, do everything in the name of the Lord  
 Jesus; and through him offer thanksgiving to God the father.

Wives, submit to your husbands, as befits those who belong to the 18  
 Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and never treat them harshly. 19  
 Children, always obey your parents; for that is pleasant to see in 20  
 those who belong to the Lord. Fathers, never irritate your chil- 21  
 dren, otherwise they might become disheartened. Slaves, always 22  
 obey your earthly masters, not only when their eyes are on you, as  
 if you had but to please people alone, but giving them ungrudg-  
 ing service, in your respect for the Master. Whatever you do, do 23  
 it with all your heart, as if working for the Master and not for

24 people, since you know that it is from the Master that you will  
 25 receive the inheritance which will be your reward. You are serv-  
 26 ing Christ, the Master. Those who do wrong will reap the wrong  
 4 they have done; and there will be no partiality. Masters, do what  
 is right and fair by your slaves, for you know that you also have a  
 Master — in heaven.

2 Devote yourselves to prayer. Give your whole mind to it, and also  
 3 offer thanksgiving; and at the same time pray for us, so that God  
 may give us an opening for our message, so that we may speak  
 4 of the truths hidden in the Christ — the truths for which I am in  
 chains! Then I will make them known, as I ought to do. Show  
 5 tact in your behaviour to the outside world, making the most of  
 6 every opportunity. Let your conversation always be kindly, but  
 not bland, season it, as it were, with salt; be aware in each case of  
 the answer you should be giving.

### *Conclusion*

7 OUR DEAR FRIEND, Tychicus, will tell you all about me. He is a faith-  
 8 ful minister, and a fellow servant in the Master's cause. I send him  
 to you expressly that you may learn our circumstances, and that  
 9 he may give you encouragement. With him will be Onesimus,  
 our dear faithful friend, who is one of yourselves. They will tell  
 you all that is going on here.

10 My fellow prisoner, Aristarchus, sends you his greeting, and  
 Barnabas's cousin, Mark, sends his. (You have received  
 directions about him. If he comes to you, make him welcome.)  
 11 Joshua, who is called Justus, also sends his greeting. These are  
 the only converts from Judaism who have worked with me for  
 the kingdom of God; I have found them a great comfort.  
 12 Epaphras, who is one of yourselves, sends you his greeting. He  
 is a servant of Christ Jesus, and is always most earnest in your

behalf in his prayers, praying that you may stand firm, with a  
matured faith and with a sure conviction of all that is in  
accordance with God's will. I can bear testimony to the deep 13  
interest he takes in you, as well as in the followers at Laodicea  
and at Hierapolis. Luke, our dear doctor, sends you his greeting, 14  
and Demas sends his. Give my greeting to the followers at 15  
Laodicea, and to Nymphé, and to the church that meets at her  
house. And when this letter has been read to you, see that it is 16  
also read before the church at Laodicea, and that you yourselves  
read the letter which will be forwarded from there. Give this 17  
message to Archippus — "Take care to discharge to the best of  
your ability the office to which you were appointed in the  
Master's cause."

I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. Remember 18  
these chains of mine. God's blessing be with you.



# PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

## *Introduction*

TO THE THESSALONIAN CHURCH IN UNION WITH GOD THE FATHER and 1  
the Lord Jesus Christ, from Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God  
bless you and give you peace.

## *The Apostle and his Converts*

WE ALWAYS MENTION YOU IN OUR PRAYERS and thank God for you all; 2  
recalling continually before our God and Father the efforts that 3  
have resulted from your faith, the toil prompted by your love, and  
the patient endurance sustained by your hope in our Lord Jesus 4  
Christ. Friends, whom God loves, we know that he has chosen 4  
you, because the good news that we brought came home to you, 5  
not merely as so many words, but with a power and a fulness of  
conviction due to the Holy Spirit. For you know the life that we 6  
lived among you for your good. And you yourselves began to 6  
follow, not only our example, but the Master's also; and, in spite  
of much suffering, you welcomed the message with a joy inspired 7  
by the Holy Spirit, and so became a pattern to all who believed 7  
in Christ throughout Macedonia and Greece. For it was from you 8  
that the Lord's message resounded throughout Macedonia and  
Greece; and, more than that, your faith in God has become known 8  
far and wide; so that there is no need for us to say another word.  
Indeed, in speaking about us, the people themselves tell of the 9  
reception you gave us, and how, turning to God from your idols,  
you became servants of the true and living God, and are now 10  
awaiting the return from heaven of his Son whom he raised from  
the dead — Jesus, our deliverer from the coming wrath.

Yes, friends, you yourselves know that your reception of us 2  
was not without result. For, although we had experienced 2  
suffering and ill treatment, as you know, at Philippi, we had the

3 courage, by the help of our God, to tell you God's good news in  
4 spite of great opposition. Our appeal to you was not based on a  
5 delusion, nor was it made from unworthy motives, or with any  
6 intention of misleading you. But, having been found worthy by  
7 God to be entrusted with the good news, therefore we tell it;  
8 with a view to please, not people, but God who proves our  
9 hearts. Never at any time, as you know, did we use the language  
10 of flattery, or make false professions in order to hide selfish  
11 aims. God will bear witness to that. Nor did we seek to win  
12 honour from people, whether from you or from others,  
13 although, as apostles of Christ, we might have burdened you  
14 with our support. But we lived among you with the simplicity  
15 of a child; we were like a woman nursing her own children. In  
our strong affection for you, that seemed to us the best way of  
sharing with you, not only God's good news, but our lives as  
well — so dear had you become to us. You will not have  
forgotten, friends, our labour and toil. Night and day we used to  
work at our trades, so as not be a burden to any of you, while we  
proclaimed to you God's good news. You will bear witness, and  
God also, that our relations with you who believed in Christ  
were pure, and upright, and beyond reproach. Indeed, you  
know that, like a father with his own children, we used to  
encourage and comfort every one of you, and solemnly plead  
with you; so that you should make your daily lives worthy of  
God who is calling you into the glory of his kingdom.

13 This, too, is a reason why we, on our part, are continually thank-  
ing God — because, in receiving the teaching that you had from  
us, you accepted it, not as the teaching of humans, but as what it  
really is — the teaching of God, which is even now doing its work  
14 within you who believe in Christ. For you, friends, began to fol-  
low the example of the churches of God in Judea which are in  
union with Jesus Christ; you, in your turn, suffering at the hands  
of your fellow citizens, in the same way as those churches did at  
15 the hands of their people — who killed both the Lord Jesus and  
the prophets, and persecuted us also. They do not try to please



God, and they are enemies to all humanity, for they try to prevent us from speaking to the Gentiles with a view to their salvation, and so are always “filling up the measure of their iniquity.” But the wrath of God has come upon them to the full!

As for ourselves, friends, our having been bereaved of you even for a short time — though in body only, and not in spirit — made us all the more eager to see your faces again; and the longing to do so was strong on us. That was why we made up our minds to go and see you — at least I, Paul, did, more than once — but Satan put difficulties in our way. For what hope or joy will be ours, or what crown will we have to boast of, in the presence of our Lord Jesus, at his coming, if it isn't you? You are our pride and our delight!

And so, as we could bear it no longer, we made up our minds to remain behind alone at Athens, and sent Timothy, our dear friend and God's minister of the good news of the Christ, to strengthen you, and to encourage you in your faith, so that none of you should be shaken by the troubles through which you are passing. You yourselves know that we are destined to meet with such things. For, even while we were with you, we warned you beforehand that we were certain to encounter trouble. And so it proved, as you know. Therefore, since I could no longer endure the uncertainty, I sent to make inquiries about your faith, fearing that the Tempter had tempted you, and that our toil might prove to have been in vain. But, when Timothy recently returned to us from you with good news of your faith and love, and told us how kindly you think of us — always longing, he said, to see us, just as we are longing to see you — on hearing this, we felt encouraged about you, friends, in the midst of all our difficulties and troubles, by your faith. For it is new life to us to know that you are holding fast to the Lord. How can we thank God enough for all the happiness that you are giving us in the sight of our God? Night and day we pray most earnestly that we may see you face to face, and make good any deficiency in your faith.

May our God and Father himself, and Jesus, our Lord, make the way plain for us to come to you. And for you, may the Lord fill you to overflowing with love for one another and for everyone, just as we are filled with love for you; and so make your hearts strong, and your lives pure beyond reproach, in the sight of our

God and Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus, with all his Holy Ones.

*Advice on Daily Life*

4 FURTHER, friends, we beg and urge you in the name of our Lord Jesus to carry out more fully than ever — as indeed you are already doing — all that you have heard from us as to what your daily life must be, if it is to please God. For you have not forgotten the directions that we gave you on the authority of our Lord Jesus.

3 For this is God's purpose — that you should be pure; abstain-  
4 ing from all immorality; each of you learning to gain control over  
5 your own body, in a way that is holy and honourable, and not  
6 for the mere gratification of your passions, like the Gentiles who  
7 know nothing of God; none of you overreaching or taking advantage of their fellow follower of the Lord in such matters. "The Lord takes vengeance" on all who do such things, as we have already warned you and solemnly declared. For God's call to us does not permit of an impure life, but demands purity. Therefore  
8 the person who disregards this warning disregards, not people, but God who gives you his Holy Spirit.

9 As to love for each other there is no need to write to you; for  
10 you have yourselves been taught by God to love one another; and indeed you do act in this spirit towards all his people throughout Macedonia.

11 Yet, friends, we beg you to do even more. Make it your ambition to live quietly, and to attend to your own business, and to work with your hands, as we directed you; so that your conduct may win respect from those outside the church, and that you may not want for anything.

*The Dead in Christ at the coming of the Lord*

13 WE DON'T WANT YOU TO BE IGNORANT, friends, about those who have passed to their rest. We don't want you to grieve like other people who have no hope. For, as we believe that Jesus died and rose again, so also we believe that God will bring, with Jesus, those  
15 who through him have passed to their rest. This we tell you on

the authority of the Lord — that those of us who are still living at the coming of the Lord will not anticipate those who have passed to their rest. For, with a loud summons, with the shout of an archangel, and with the trumpet-call of God, the Lord himself will come down from heaven. Then those who died in union with Christ will rise first; and afterwards we who are still living will be caught up in the clouds, with them, to meet the Lord in the air; and so we will be for ever with the Lord. Therefore, comfort one another with what I have told you.

But as to the times and the moments, there is no need, friends, for anyone to write to you. You yourselves know well that the day of the Lord will come just as a thief comes in the night. When people are saying “All is quiet and safe,” it is then that, like birth pains on a pregnant woman, ruin comes suddenly upon them, and there will be no escape! You, however, friends, are not in darkness, that the daylight should take you by surprise as if you were thieves. For you all are “sons of light” and “sons of the day.”

We have nothing to do with night, or darkness. Therefore let us not sleep as others do. No, let us be watchful and self-controlled. It is at night that people sleep, and at night that drunkards get drunk. But let us, who belong to the day, control ourselves, and put on faith and love as a breast plate, and the hope of salvation as a helmet. For God destined us, not for wrath, but to win salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us, that, whether we are still watching or have fallen asleep, we may live with him. Therefore encourage one another, and try to build up one another’s characters, as indeed you are doing.

### Conclusion

WE BEG YOU, friends, to value those who toil among you, and are your leaders in the Lord’s service, and give you counsel. Hold them in the very greatest esteem and affection for the sake of their work. Live at peace with one another. We entreat you also, friends — warn the disorderly, comfort the faint-hearted, give a helping hand to the weak, and be patient with everyone. Take care that none of you ever pays back wrong for wrong, but always follow the kindest course with one another and with everyone. Always be joyful; never cease to pray; under all circumstances

19 give thanks to God. For this is his will for you as made known  
20 in Christ Jesus. Do not quench the Spirit; do not make light of  
21 preaching. Bring everything to the test; cling to what is good;  
22 shun every form of evil. May God himself, the giver of peace,  
23 make you altogether holy; and may your spirits, souls, and bodies  
24 be kept altogether faultless until the coming of our Lord Jesus  
25 Christ. He who calls you will not fail you; he will complete his  
work.  
26 Friends, pray for us.

26 Greet all the Lord's followers with a sacred kiss. I order you in  
27 the Lord's name to have this letter read to all the brethren.

28 May the blessing of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

# PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

## *Introduction*

TO THE THESSALONIAN CHURCH IN UNION WITH GOD OUR FATHER and 1  
the Lord Jesus Christ, From Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God, 2  
the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

## *The Apostle and his Converts*

FRIENDS, it is our duty always to thank God about you, as is but 3  
right, considering the wonderful growth of your faith, and be-  
cause, without exception, your love for one another is continually  
increasing. So much is this the case that we ourselves speak with 4  
pride, before the churches of God, of the patience and faith which  
you have shown, in spite of all the persecutions and troubles that  
you are enduring. These persecutions will vindicate the justice 5  
of God's judgment, and will result in your being reckoned wor-  
thy of God's kingdom, for the sake of which you are now suffer-  
ing; since God deems it just to inflict suffering on those who are 6  
now inflicting suffering on you, and to give relief to you who are 7  
suffering, as well as to us, at the appearing of the Lord Jesus from  
heaven with his mighty angels, "in flaming fire." Then he will 8  
"inflict punishment on those who refuse to know God, and on  
those who turn a deaf ear" to the good news of Jesus, our Lord.  
They will pay the penalty of unutterable ruin — banished "from 9  
the presence of the Lord and from the glorious manifestation of  
his might, when he comes to be honour ed in his people," and 10  
to be revered in all who have learned to believe in him (for you  
also believed our testimony) — as he will be on "that day." With  
this in view, our constant prayer for you is that our God may 11  
count you worthy of the call that you have received, and by his  
power make perfect your delight in all goodness and the efforts  
that have resulted from your faith. Then, in the loving kindness 12

of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ, will the name of Jesus, our Lord, be honoured in you, and you in him.

*Events that must precede the Lord's Coming*

2 AS TO THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST, and our being gathered to meet him, we beg you, friends, not lightly to let your minds become unsettled, or disturbed by any revelation, or by any message, or by any letter, purporting to come from us, to the effect that the day of the Lord is come. Do not let anyone deceive you, whatever he may do. For it will not come until after the Great Apostasy, and the appearing of that Incarnation of Wickedness, that Lost Soul, who so opposes himself to everyone that is spoken of as a God or as an object of worship, and so exalts himself above them, that he seats himself in the Temple of God, and displays himself as God! Don't you remember how, when I was with you, I used to speak to you of all this? And you know now what the restraining influence is which prevents his appearing before his appointed time. Wickedness, indeed, is already at work in secret; but only until he who at present restrains it is removed out of the way. Then will "Wickedness Incarnate" appear, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him with the breath of his lips, and annihilate him by the splendour of his coming. For at the coming of the Lord there will be great activity on the part of Satan, in the form of all kinds of deceptive miracles, signs, and marvels, as well as of wicked attempts to delude — to the ruin of those who are on the path to destruction, because they have never received and loved the truth to their own salvation. That is why God places them under the influence of a delusion, to cause them to believe a lie; so that sentence may be passed on all those who refuse to believe the truth, but delight in wickedness.

13 But, friends, whom the Lord loves, it is our duty always to thank God about you, for, from the first, God chose you for salvation through the purifying influence of the Spirit, and your belief in the truth. To this you were called by the good news which we brought you, to attain to the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Stand

firm then, friends, and hold fast to the truths that we taught you, 15  
 whether by word or by letter. And may our Lord Jesus Christ him- 16  
 self, and God our Father, who loved us and, in his loving kind-  
 ness, gave us unfailing consolation and good ground for hope,  
 console your hearts, and strengthen you to do and to say all that 17  
 is right.

### *Conclusion*

IN CONCLUSION, friends, pray for us — pray that the Lord’s mes- 3  
 sage may spread rapidly, and be received everywhere with hon- 2  
 our, as it was among you; and that we may be preserved from  
 wrong-headed and wicked people — for it is not everyone who 3  
 believes in Christ. But the Lord will not fail you; he will give you 3  
 strength, and guard you from evil. Yes, and the confidence that 4  
 our union with the Lord enables us to place in you leads us to  
 believe that you are doing, and will do, what we direct you. May 4  
 the Lord bring you to the love of God, and to the patience of the 5  
 Christ.

We beg you, friends, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to avoid 6  
 any follower who is living an ill-ordered life, which is not in agree- 6  
 ment with the teaching that you received from us. For you know 7  
 well that you ought to follow our example. When we were with 7  
 you, our life was not ill-ordered, nor did we eat anyone’s bread 8  
 without paying for it. Night and day, labouring and toiling, we 8  
 used to work at our trades, so as not to be a burden on any of 8  
 you. This was not because we had not a right to receive support, 9  
 but our object was to give you a pattern for you to copy. Indeed, 10  
 when we were with you, the rule we laid down was — “Whoever 10  
 does not choose to work will not get to eat.” We hear that there 11  
 are among you people who are living ill-ordered lives, and who, 11  
 instead of attending to their own business, are mere busybodies. 11  
 All such people we beg, and implore,, in the name of the Lord Je- 12  
 sus Christ, to attend quietly to their business, and earn their own 12  
 living. You, friends, must not grow weary of doing what is right. 13  
 If anyone disregards what we have said in this letter, take note 14

of them and avoid their company, so that they may feel ashamed.  
15 Yet do not think of them as an enemy, but caution them as you  
16 would a brother or sister. May the Lord, from whom all peace  
comes, himself give you his peace at all times and in all ways.  
May he be with you all.

17 I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. It is my signa-  
18 ture to every letter. This is how I write. May the blessing of our  
Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.



# PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO TIMOTHY

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the appointment of God, 1  
our Saviour, and Christ Jesus, our hope. To Timothy, my true child 2  
in the faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Lord, bless  
you, and be merciful to you, and give you peace.

I beg you, as I did when I was on my way into Macedonia, to re- 3  
main at Ephesus; that you may instruct certain people there not  
to teach new and strange doctrines, nor to devote their attention 4  
to legends and interminable genealogies, which tend to give rise  
to argument rather than to further that divine plan which is re-  
vealed in the faith. The object of all instruction is to call forth 5  
that love which comes from a pure heart, a clear conscience, and  
a sincere faith. And it is because they have not aimed at these 6  
things that the attention of certain people has been diverted to  
unprofitable subjects. They want to be teachers of the Law, and 7  
yet do not understand either the words they use, or the subjects  
on which they speak so confidently. We know, of course, that the 8  
Law is excellent, when used legitimately, by one who recognises 9  
that laws were not made for good people, but for the lawless and  
disorderly, for irreligious and wicked people, for those who are ir-  
reverent and profane, for those who ill-treat their fathers or moth-  
ers, for murderers, for the immoral, for perverts, for slave-dealers, 10  
for liars, for perjurers, and for whatever else is opposed to sound  
Christian teaching — as is taught in the glorious good news of 11  
the ever-blessed God, with which I was entrusted.

I am thankful to Christ Jesus, our Lord, who has been my 12  
strength, for showing that he thought me worthy of trust by  
appointing me to his ministry, though I once used to 13

blaspheme, and to persecute, and to insult. Yet mercy was shown me, because I acted in ignorance, while still an  
 14 unbeliever; and the loving kindness of our Lord was boundless, and filled me with that faith and love which come from union  
 15 with Christ Jesus. How true the saying is, and worthy of the fullest acceptance, that “Christ Jesus came into the world to save  
 16 sinners”! And there is no greater sinner than I! Yet mercy was shown me for the express purpose that Christ Jesus might  
 exhibit in my case, beyond all others, his exhaustless patience, as  
 an example for those who were afterwards to believe on him and  
 17 attain eternal life. To the eternal King, ever-living, invisible, the one God, be ascribed honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.  
 18 This, then, is the charge that I lay on you, Timothy, my child, in accordance with what was predicted of you — Fight the good  
 19 fight in the spirit of those predictions, with faith, and with a clear conscience; and it is because they have thrust this aside, that, as  
 20 regards the faith, some have wrecked their lives. Hymenaeus and Alexander are instances — the men whom I delivered over to Satan so that they might be taught not to blaspheme.

*General Directions on Church Matters*

2 FIRST OF ALL, then, I ask that petitions, prayers, intercessions, and  
 2 thanksgivings should be offered for everyone, especially for kings and all who are in high positions, in order that we may lead a quiet and peaceful life in a deeply religious and reverent  
 3 spirit. This will be good and acceptable in the eyes of God, our  
 4 Saviour, whose will is that everyone should be saved, and attain to a full knowledge of the truth. There is but one God, and one  
 5 mediator between God and men — the man, Christ Jesus, who gave himself as a ransom on behalf of all men.

This must be our testimony, as opportunities present  
 7 themselves; and it was for this that I was myself appointed a herald and an apostle (I am telling the simple truth and no lie) — a teacher of the Gentiles in the faith and truth.

8 My desire, then, is that it should be the custom everywhere for the men to lead the prayers, with hands reverently uplifted, avoiding heated controversy.

I also desire that women should adorn themselves with appropriate dress, worn quietly and modestly, and not with wreaths or gold ornaments for the hair, or pearls, or costly clothing, but — as is proper for women who profess to be religious — with good actions. They must learn, listening quietly to their teachers and showing them all deference. I do not consent to them becoming teachers, or exercising authority over men; they ought to not make a fuss. Adam was formed first, not Eve. And it was not Adam who was deceived; it was the woman who was entirely deceived and fell into sin. But she will be saved by the birth of a child, if they never abandon faith, love, or holiness, and behave with modesty.

How true is this saying: "To aspire to be to be a supervisor in the church is to be ambitious for a noble task." The supervisor should be of blameless character; a faithful partner; living a temperate, discreet, and well-ordered life; hospitable, and a skilful teacher, not addicted to drink or brawling, but of a forbearing and peaceable disposition, and not a lover of money; they should provide for own household well, and their children should kept under control and be well-behaved. If someone does not know how to provide for their own household, how can they take charge of the church of God? The supervisor should not be a recent convert, or they might become blinded by pride and fall under the same condemnation as the devil. They should also be well spoken of by outsiders, so that they may not incur censure and so fall into the devil's trap. So, too, assistants should be serious and straightforward, not given to taking much drink or to questionable money-making, but people who hold the deep truths of the faith and have a clear conscience. They should be tested first, and only appointed to their office if no objection is raised against them. It should be the same with the women in this office. They should be serious, not gossips, sober, and trustworthy in all respects. assistants should be faithful partners who manage their children and their households well. Those who have filled that post with honour gain for themselves an honourable position, as well as great confidence through the faith that they place in Christ Jesus.

*Special Directions to Timothy*

14 I AM WRITING THIS TO YOU, though I hope that I will come to see  
 15 you before long; but in case I should be delayed, I want you to  
 know what your conduct ought to be in the Household of God,  
 which is the church of the living God — the pillar and stay of the  
 16 truth. Yes, and confessedly wonderful are the deep truths of our  
 religion; for —

“He was revealed in our nature,  
 Pronounced righteous in spirit,  
 Seen by angels,  
 Proclaimed among the Gentiles,  
 Believed on in the world,  
 Taken up into glory.”

4 But the Spirit distinctly says that in later times there will be some  
 who will fall away from the faith, and devote their attention to  
 2 misleading spirits, and to the teaching of demons, who will make  
 use of the hypocrisy of lying teachers. These people’s consciences  
 3 are seared, and they discourage marriage and enjoin abstinence  
 from certain kinds of food; though God created these foods to be  
 enjoyed thankfully by those who hold the faith and have attained  
 4 a full knowledge of the truth. Everything created by God is good,  
 and there in nothing that need be rejected — provided only that  
 5 it is received thankfully; for it is consecrated by God’s blessing  
 and by prayer.

6 Put all this before the followers, and you will be a good servant  
 of Christ Jesus, sustained by the precepts of the faith and of that  
 7 good teaching by which you have guided your life. As for profane  
 legends and old wives’ tales, leave them alone. Train yourself to  
 8 lead a religious life; for while the training of the body is of service  
 in some respects, religion is of service in all, carrying with it, as  
 9 it does, a promise of life both here and hereafter. How true that  
 10 saying is and worthy of the fullest acceptance! With that aim we  
 toil and struggle, for we have set our hopes on the living God,  
 who is the Saviour of all, and especially of those who hold the  
 faith.

Remember these things in your teaching. Do not let anyone look 11  
 down on you because you are young, but, by your conversation, 12  
 your conduct, your love, your faith, and your purity, be an ex- 13  
 ample to those who hold the faith. Until I come, apply yourself 14  
 to public reading, preaching, and teaching. Do not neglect the 15  
 divine gift within you, which was given you, amid many a pre- 16  
 diction, when the hands of the church elders were laid on your  
 head. Practice these things, devote yourself to them, so that your 15  
 progress may be plain to everyone. Look to yourself as well as 16  
 to your teaching. Persevere in this, for your doing so will mean  
 salvation for yourself as well as for your hearers.

Do not reprimand an older man, but plead with him as if 5  
 he were your father. Treat the young men as brothers, the older 2  
 women as mothers, and the younger women as sisters — with 3  
 all purity. Show consideration for widows — I mean those who 3  
 are really widowed. but, if a widow has children or grandchild- 4  
 ren, they should learn to show proper regard for the members 4  
 of their own family first, and to make some return to their par-  
 ents; for that is pleasing in God's sight. As for the woman who is 5  
 really widowed and left quite alone, her hopes are fixed on God,  
 and she devotes herself to prayers and supplications night and 6  
 day. But the life of a widow who is devoted to pleasure is a liv- 6  
 ing death. Those are the points you should teach, so that there 7  
 may be no call for your censure. Anyone who fails to provide 8  
 for their own relatives, and especially for those under their own  
 roof, has disowned the faith, and is worse than an unbeliever. A 9  
 widow, when her name is added to the list, should not be less than  
 sixty years old; she should have been a faithful wife, and be well 10  
 spoken of for her kind actions. She should have brought up chil-  
 dren, have shown hospitality to strangers, have washed the feet 11  
 of her fellow Christians, have relieved those who were in distress,  
 and devoted herself to every kind of good action. But you should 11  
 exclude the younger widows from the list; for, when they grow 12  
 restive under the yoke of the Christ, they want to marry, and so 12  
 they bring condemnation on themselves for having broken their  
 previous promise. And not only that, but they learn to be idle as 13  
 they go about from house to house. Nor are they merely idle, but 13  
 they also become gossips and busybodies, and talk of what they  
 ought not. Therefore I advise young widows to marry, bear child- 14  
 ren, and attend to their homes, and so avoid giving the enemy

15 an opportunity for scandal. There are some who have already  
 16 left us, to follow Satan. Any Christian woman, who has relatives  
 who are widows, ought to relieve them and not allow them to be-  
 come a burden to the church, so that the church may relieve those  
 widows who are really widowed.

17 Those church elders who fill their office well should be held de-  
 serving of especial consideration, particularly those whose work  
 18 lies in preaching and teaching. The words of scripture are —

“You should not muzzle the ox while it is treading out the  
 grain.”

and again —

“The worker is worth their wages.”

19 Do not receive a charge against an church elder, unless it is sup-  
 20 ported by two or three witnesses; but rebuke offenders publicly,  
 21 so that others may take warning. I charge you solemnly, before  
 God and Christ Jesus and the chosen angels, to carry out these  
 directions, unswayed by prejudice, never acting with partiality.  
 22 Never ordain anyone hastily, and take no part in the wrong-do-  
 23 ing of others. Keep your life pure. Do not continue to drink water  
 only, but take a little wine because of the weakness of your stom-  
 24 ach, and your frequent ailments. There are some people whose  
 sins are conspicuous and lead on to judgment, while there are  
 25 others whose sins dog their steps. In the same way noble deeds  
 become conspicuous, and those which are otherwise cannot be  
 concealed.

6 All who are in the position of slaves should regard their mas-  
 ters as deserving of the greatest respect, so that the name of God,  
 2 and our teaching, may not be maligned. Those who have Chris-  
 tian masters should not think less of them because they are also  
 followers of Christ, but on the contrary they should serve them all  
 the better, because those who are to benefit by their good work are  
 dear to them as their fellow Christians.

### Conclusion

THOSE ARE THE THINGS TO INSIST ON IN YOUR TEACHING.

3 Anyone who teaches otherwise, and refuses their assent to  
 sound instruction — the instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ —

and to the teaching of religion, is puffed up with conceit, not 4  
really knowing anything, but having a morbid craving for  
discussions and arguments. Such things only give rise to envy,  
quarrelling, recriminations, base suspicions, and incessant 5  
wrangling on the part of these corrupt-minded people who have  
lost all hold on the truth, and who think of religion only as a  
source of gain. And a great source of gain religion is, when it 6  
brings contentment with it! For we brought nothing into the 7  
world, because we cannot even carry anything out of it. So, with 8  
food and shelter, we will be content. Those who want to be rich 9  
fall into the net of temptation, and become the prey of many  
foolish and harmful ambitions, which plunge people into  
destruction and ruin. Love of money is a source of all kinds of 10  
evil; and in their eagerness to be rich some have wandered away  
from the faith, and have been pierced to the heart by many a  
regret.

But you must, servant of God, avoid all this. Aim at righteous- 11  
ness, piety, faith, love, endurance, gentleness. Run the great race 12  
of the faith, and win the eternal life. It was for this that you re-  
ceived the call, and, in the presence of many witnesses, made the  
great profession of faith. I beg you, as in the sight of God, the 13  
source of all life, and of Christ Jesus who before Pontius Pilate  
made the great profession of faith — I implore you to keep his 14  
command free from stain or reproach, until the appearing of our  
Lord Jesus Christ. This will be brought about in his own time by 15  
the one ever-blessed Potentate, the king of all kings and Lord of  
all lords, who alone is possessed of immortality and dwells in 16  
unapproachable light, whom no one has ever seen or ever can see  
— to whom be ascribed honour and power for ever. Amen.

Teach those who are wealthy in this life not to pride them- 17  
selves, or fix their hopes, on so uncertain a thing as wealth, but  
on God, who gives us a wealth of enjoyment on every side. Teach 18  
them to show kindness, to exhibit a wealth of good actions, to be  
open-handed and generous, storing up for themselves what in 19  
the future will prove to be a good foundation, so that they may  
gain the only true life.

Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you. Avoid the pro- 20  
fane prattle and contradictions of what some miscall "theology,"  
for there are those who, while asserting their proficiency in it, 21  
have yet, as regards the faith, gone altogether astray.

God bless you all.



# PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO TIMOTHY

## *Introduction*

To TIMOTHY, my dear child, from Paul who, by the will of God, is 1  
an apostle of Christ Jesus, charged to proclaim the life that comes  
from union with Christ Jesus. May God, the Father, and Christ  
Jesus, our Lord, bless you, and be merciful to you, and give you  
peace.

I am thankful to God, whom I serve, as my ancestors did, with a 3  
clear conscience, when I remember you, as I never fail to do, in my  
prayers — night and day alike, as I think of your tears, longing to 4  
see you, that my happiness may be completed, now that I have 5  
been reminded of the sincere faith that you have shown. That faith  
was seen first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice,  
and is now, I am convinced, in you also. And that is my reason for 6  
reminding you to stir into flame that gift of God, which is yours  
through your ordination at my hands. For the Spirit which God 7  
gave us was not a spirit of cowardice, but a spirit of power, love,  
and self-control. Do not, therefore, be ashamed of the testimony 8  
which we have to bear to our Lord, or of me imprisoned for his  
sake; but join with me in suffering for the good news, as far as God  
enables you. It was God who saved us, and from him we received 9  
our solemn call — not as a reward for anything that we had done,  
but in fulfilment of his own loving purpose. For that love was  
extended to us, through Christ Jesus, before time began, and has 10  
now been made apparent through the appearing of our Saviour,  
Christ Jesus; who has made an end of death, and has brought  
life and Immortality to light by that good news, of which I was 11  
myself appointed a herald and apostle, and teacher. That is why 12  
I am undergoing these sufferings; yet I feel no shame, for I know

13 in whom I have put my faith, and am convinced that he is able to  
 14 guard what I have entrusted to him until “that day.” Keep before  
 you, as an example of sound teaching, all that you learnt from me  
 as you listened with that faith and love which come from union  
 15 with Christ Jesus. Guard by the help of the Holy Spirit, who is  
 within us, the glorious trust that has been committed to you.

16 You know, of course, that all our friends in Roman Asia turned  
 their backs on me, and among them Phygellus and Hermogenes.  
 17 May the Lord show mercy to the household of Onesiphorus; for  
 he often cheered me and was not ashamed of my chains. On the  
 contrary, when he arrived in Rome, he sought eagerly for me until  
 18 he found me. The Lord grant that he may find mercy at the hands  
 of the Lord on “that day.” The many services that he rendered at  
 Ephesus you have the best means of knowing.

### *Injunctions to Timothy*

2 YOU MUST, then, my child, find strength in the help which comes  
 2 from the union with Christ Jesus; and what you learnt from me,  
 in the presence of many listeners, entrust to reliable people, who  
 3 will be able in their turn to teach others. Share hardships with  
 4 me, as a true soldier of Christ Jesus. A soldier on active service,  
 to please his superior officer, always avoids entangling himself in  
 5 the affairs of ordinary life. No athlete is ever awarded the wreath  
 6 of victory unless they have kept the rules. The labourer who does  
 the work should be the first to receive a share of the fruits of the  
 7 earth. Reflect on what I say; the Lord will always help you to  
 8 understand. Keep before your mind Jesus Christ, raised from the  
 dead, a descendant of David, as told in the good news entrusted  
 9 to me; in the service of which I am suffering hardships, even to  
 being put in fetters as a criminal. But the message of God is not  
 10 fettered; and that is why I submit to anything for the sake of God’s  
 people: so that they also may obtain the salvation which comes  
 11 from union with Christ Jesus, and imperishable glory. How true  
 this saying is — “If we have shared his death, we will also share  
 12 his life. If we continue to endure, we will also share his throne.  
 13 If we should ever disown him, he, too, will disown us. If we lose  
 our trust, he is still to be trusted, for he cannot be false to himself!”

Remind people of all this; tell them solemnly, as in the sight of God, to avoid controversy, a useless thing and the ruin of those who listen to it. Do your utmost to show yourself true to God, a worker with no reason to be ashamed, accurate in delivering the message of the truth. Avoid profane prattle. Those who indulge in it only get deeper into irreligious ways, and their teaching will spread like a cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are instances of this. They have gone completely astray as regards the truth; they say that a resurrection has already taken place, and so upset some people's faith. Yet God's firm foundation still stands unmoved, and it bears this inscription —

“THE LORD KNOWS THOSE WHO ARE HIS”;

and this —

“LET ALL THOSE WHO USE THE NAME OF THE LORD  
TURN AWAY FROM WICKEDNESS.”

Now in a large house there are not only things of gold and silver, but also others of wood and earthenware, some for better and some for common use. If, then, a person has escaped from the pollution of such errors as I have mentioned, they will be like a thing kept for better use, set apart, serviceable to its owner, ready for any good purpose. Flee from the passions of youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, and peace, in the company of those who, with a pure heart, invoke the Lord. Shun foolish and ignorant discussions, for you know that they only breed quarrels; and a servant of the Lord should never quarrel. They ought, on the contrary, to be courteous to everyone, skilful teachers, and forbearing. They should instruct their opponents in a gentle spirit; for, possibly, God may give those opponents a repentance that will lead to a fuller knowledge of truth, and they may yet come to a sober mind, and escape from the devil's net, when captured by the Lord's servant to do the will of God.

Be sure of this, that in the last days difficult times will come. People will be selfish, mercenary, boastful, haughty, and blasphemous; disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, impure, incapable of affection, merciless, slanderous, wanting in self-control,

4 brutal, careless of the right, treacherous, reckless, and puffed up  
5 with pride; they will love pleasure more than they love God; and  
while they retain the outward form of religion, they will not allow  
6 it to influence them. Turn your back on such people as these. For  
among them are to be found those who creep into homes and cap-  
tivate weak women — women who, loaded with sins, and slaves  
7 to all kinds of passions, are always learning, and yet never able  
8 to attain to a real knowledge of the truth. Just as Jannes and Jam-  
bres opposed Moses, so do these people, in their turn, oppose  
the truth. Their minds are corrupted, and, as regards the faith,  
9 they are utterly worthless. They will not, however, make further  
progress; for their wicked folly will be plain to everyone, just as  
10 the folly Jannes and Jambres was. But you, Timothy, were a close  
observer of my teaching, my conduct, my purposes, my faith, my  
11 forbearance, my love, and my patient endurance, as well as of  
my persecutions, and of the sufferings which I met with at Anti-  
och, Iconium, and Lystra. You know what persecutions I under-  
12 went; and yet the Lord brought me safe out of all! Yes, and all  
who aim at living a religious life in union with Christ Jesus will  
13 have to suffer persecution; but wicked people and impostors will  
go from bad to worse, deceiving others and deceived themselves.  
14 You, however, must stand by what you learnt and accepted as  
15 true. You know who they were from whom you learnt it; and  
that, from your childhood, you have known the sacred writings,  
which can give you the wisdom that, through belief in Christ Je-  
16 sus, leads to salvation. All scripture is God-breathed: helpful for  
teaching, for refuting error, for giving guidance, and for training  
17 others in righteousness; so that God's people may be capable and  
equipped for good work of every kind.

4 I solemnly charge you, in the sight of God and of Christ Jesus,  
who will one day judge the living and the dead — I charge you  
2 by his appearing and by his kingdom: — Proclaim the message,  
be ready in season and out of season, convince, rebuke, encour-  
3 age, never failing to instruct with forbearance. For a time will  
come when people will not tolerate sound teaching. They will fol-  
low their own wishes, and, in their itching for novelty, procure  
4 themselves a crowd of teachers. They will turn a deaf ear to the  
5 truth, and give their attention to legends instead. But you, Tim-  
othy, must always be temperate. Face hardships; do the work of a  
missionary; discharge all the duties of your office.

*Conclusion*

As for me, my life blood is already being poured out; the time 6  
of my departure is close at hand. I have run the great race; I have 7  
finished the course; I have kept the faith. And now the crown of 8  
righteousness awaits me, which the Lord, the just judge, will give  
me on "that day" — and not only to me, but to all who have loved  
his appearing.

*Conclusion*

DO YOUR UTMOST TO COME TO ME SOON; for Demas, in his love for the 9  
world, has deserted me. He has gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to 10  
Galatia, and Titus to Dalmatia. There is no one but Luke with 11  
me. Pick up Mark on your way, and bring him with you, for he is  
useful to me in my work. I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. Bring 12  
with you, when you come, the cloak which I left at Troas with 13  
Carpus, and the books, especially the parchments. Alexander, 14  
the coppersmith, showed much ill feeling towards me. "The Lord  
will give him what his actions deserve." You must also on your 15  
guard against him, for he is strongly opposed to our teaching. At  
my first trial no one stood by me. They all deserted me. May it 16  
never be counted against them! But the Lord came to my help 17  
and strengthened me, in order that, through me, the proclama-  
tion should be made so widely that all the Gentiles should hear it;  
and I was rescued "out of the Lion's mouth." The Lord will rescue 18  
me from all evil, and bring me safe into his Heavenly kingdom.  
All glory to him for ever and ever! Amen.

Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, and to the household of 19  
Onesiphorus. Erastus remained at Corinth, and I left Thophimus 20  
ill at Miletus. Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus, 21  
Pudens, Linus and Claudia send you their greetings, and so do  
the rest of the Lord's followers.

May the Lord be with your soul. God bless you all. 22



# PAUL'S LETTER TO TITUS

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, on 1  
 behalf of the faith of God's chosen people, and their knowledge 2  
 of that truth which makes for godliness — and is based on the 2  
 hope of eternal life, which God, who never lies, promised before 3  
 the ages began, and has revealed at his own time in his message, 3  
 with the preaching of which I was entrusted by the command of 4  
 God our Saviour. To Titus, my true child in our shared faith: May 4  
 God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Saviour, bless you and give 4  
 you peace.

## *Mission of Titus in Crete*

MY REASON FOR LEAVING YOU IN CRETE WAS THAT YOU MIGHT put in 5  
 order what had been left unfinished, and appoint church elders 5  
 in the various towns, as I myself directed you. They are to be of ir- 6  
 reproachable character, faithful to their partners, whose children 6  
 are believers in Christ and have never been open to the charge of 6  
 being wild or unruly. For a supervisor, as God's steward, ought to 7  
 be of blameless character — not arrogant or quick-tempered, not 7  
 given to drunkenness, violence or shady money-making. Instead, 8  
 they should be hospitable, love what is good, self-controlled, up- 8  
 right, people of holy life and disciplined, holding firmly to the 9  
 trustworthy message as it has been taught — so that they may be 9  
 able to encourage others by sound teaching, as well as to refute 9  
 those who contradict it.

For there are many undisciplined persons who lead others 10  
 astray with their nonsense, especially those of the group 10  
 advocating the necessity of circumcision. They need to be kept 11  
 quiet as they disrupt whole households by teaching what they 11  
 ought not to teach, simply to make shameful financial gain. It 12

13 was a Cretan — one of their own prophets — who said: “Cretans  
 14 are always liars, evil beasts, and lazy gluttons.” This statement is  
 15 true. Therefore rebuke them sharply, so that they may be sound  
 16 in the faith, and may pay no attention to Jewish legends, or to  
 the directions of those who turn their backs on the truth. To  
 those whose minds are pure, all things are ritually pure, but to  
 those whose minds are tainted and unbelieving nothing is pure,  
 as their minds and consciences are alike polluted. They claim to  
 know God, but by their actions they deny him. They are  
 detestable and disobedient and useless for any good work.

2 You however, should speak of such subjects as properly have a  
 2 place in sound teaching. Teach that the older men should be  
 soberly clear minded, dignified and self-controlled — sound in  
 3 faith, love, and patient endurance. So, too, that the older women  
 should live reverent lives, not slanderers, not slaves to excessive  
 4 drinking. They should teach what is good, so as to train the  
 5 younger women to love their husbands and children, and to be  
 self-controlled, pure-minded, to be watching over their home, to  
 be kind, respecting the authority of their husbands, so that no  
 6 one will speak badly of God’s message. In the same way with  
 7 the younger men — encourage them to be self-controlled. In all  
 things, set an example of doing good. In your teaching, show  
 8 integrity and seriousness — let the instruction that you give be  
 sound and above reproach, so that those who oppose you may  
 be ashamed when they fail to find anything bad to say about us.  
 9 Tell slaves to respect their owner’s authority in all  
 10 circumstances, and to try their best to please them. Teach them  
 not to contradict or to pilfer, but to show such praiseworthy  
 fidelity in everything, as to recommend the teaching about God  
 our Saviour by all that they do.

11 For the loving kindness of God has been revealed, bringing sal-  
 12 vation for all, leading us to renounce ungodliness and worldly  
 desires, and to live self-controlled, upright, and godly lives here  
 13 in this present age, while awaiting our blessed hope — the ap-  
 14 pearing in glory of our great God and Saviour, Christ Jesus. For  
 he gave himself on our behalf, to deliver us from all wickedness,  
 and to purify for himself a people who should be truly his own



and eager to do good. Tell them of all this, and encourage and rebuke with all authority. Do not let anyone belittle you. Remind them to respect and obey the rulers and authorities, to be ready for every kind of good work, to slander no one, to avoid quarrelling, to be reasonable, and under all circumstances to show a gentle spirit with all. There was a time when we ourselves were foolish, disobedient, misled, enslaved to all kinds of desires and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hating ourselves and hating one another. But, when the kindness of God our Saviour and his love for humanity appeared, he saved us, not as the result of any righteous actions that we had done, but due to his mercy. He saved us though the washing of rebirth and renewal by the power of the Holy Spirit, which he poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour — so that, having been put right with God through his grace, we become heirs to the hope of eternal life. This saying is trustworthy! And it is on these subjects that I want you to lay special emphasis, so that those who have learned to trust in God may be careful to devote themselves to doing good. Such subjects are excellent in themselves, and of benefit to all. But have nothing to do with foolish controversies, or with genealogies, or with quarrels, or fights about the Law. They are useless and futile. If someone is causing divisions among you then, after giving them a second warning, excuse yourself from them. You can be sure that such a person has forsaken the truth and is in the wrong; they stand self-condemned.

### *Conclusion*

AS SOON AS I SEND ARTEMAS OR TYCHICUS TO YOU, join me as quickly as possible at Nicopolis, for I have arranged to spend the winter there. Do your best to help Zenas, the teacher of the Law, and Apollos, on their way, and see that they want for nothing. Let all our people learn to devote themselves to doing good, so as to meet the most pressing needs, and that their lives may not be unfruitful.

- 15 All who are with me here send you their greeting. Give my greeting to our friends in the faith.

God bless you all.

# PAUL'S LETTER TO PHILEMON

## *Introduction*

FROM PAUL, now a prisoner for Christ Jesus, and from Timothy, a 1  
fellow follower of the Lord. To our dear friend and fellow worker 2  
Philemon, to our sister Apphia, to our fellow soldier Archippus;  
and to the church that meets at Philemon's house; may God, our 3  
Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

## *Request regarding runaway slave*

I ALWAYS MENTION YOU IN MY PRAYERS and thank God for you, be- 4  
cause I hear of the love and the faith which you show, not only to 5  
the Lord Jesus, but also to all his people; and I pray that your 6  
participation in the faith may result in action, as you come to a fuller  
realisation of everything that is good and Christlike in us. I have 7  
indeed found great joy and encouragement in your love, know-  
ing, as I do, how the hearts of Christ's People have been cheered,  
friend, by you.

And so, though my union with Christ enables me, with all con- 8  
fidence, to dictate the course that you should adopt, yet the claims 9  
of love make me prefer to plead with you — yes, even me, Paul,  
though I am an ambassador for Christ Jesus and, now a prisoner  
for him as well. I plead with you for this child of mine, Onesimus, 10  
to whom, in my prison, I have become a father. Once he was of 11  
little service to you, but now he has become of great service, not  
only to you, but to me as well; and I am sending him back to you 12  
with this letter — though it is like tearing out of my heart. For 13  
my own sake I should like to keep him with me, so that, while I  
am in prison for the good news, he might attend to my wants on  
your behalf. But I do not wish to do anything without your con- 14  
sent, because I want your generosity to be voluntary and not, as it  
were, compulsory. It may be that he was separated from you for 15

16 an hour, for this reason, so that you might have him back for ever,  
no longer as a slave, but as something better — a dearly loved  
friend and follower of the Lord, especially dear to me, and how  
much more so to you, not only as a person, but as your fellow  
17 Christian! If, then, you count me your friend, receive him as you  
18 would me. If he has caused you any loss, or owes you anything,  
19 charge it to me. I, Paul, put my own hand to it — I will repay you  
20 myself. I say nothing about your owing me your self. Yes, friend,  
let me gain something from you because of your union with the  
Lord. Cheer my heart by your Christlike spirit.

21 Even as I write, I have such confidence in your compliance with  
my wishes, that I am sure that you will do even more than I am  
22 asking. Please also get a lodging ready for me, for I hope that I  
will be given back to you all in answer to your prayers.

*Messages and Blessing*

23 EPAPHRAS, who is my fellow prisoner for Christ Jesus, sends you  
24 his greeting; and Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fel-  
low workers, send theirs.

25 May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

# THE LETTER TO THE HEBREWS

## *Christ the Mediator*

God, who, of old, at many times and in many ways, spoke to our  
ancestors, by the prophets, has in these latter days spoken to us  
by the Son, whom he appointed the heir of all things, and through  
whom he made the universe. For he is the radiance of the glory  
of God and the expression of his being, upholding all creation by  
the power of his word; and, when he had made an expiation for  
the sins of humanity, he "took his seat at the right hand" of God's  
Majesty on high, having shown himself as much greater than the  
angels as the name that he has inherited surpasses theirs.

For to which of the angels did God ever say — 5

"You are my Son; this day I have become your Father"?

or again —

"I will be to him a Father, and he will be to me a Son"?

And again, when God brought the first-born into the world, he  
said — 6

"Let all the angels of God bow down before him."

Speaking of the angels, he said — 7

"He makes the winds his angels  
And the flames of fire his servants";

while of the Son he said — 8

"God is your throne for ever and ever;  
The sceptre of his kingdom is the sceptre of Justice;  
You love righteousness and hates iniquity; 9  
Therefore God, your God, has anointed you with the  
festal oil more abundantly than your peers."

Again — 10

- “You, Lord, in the beginning did lay the foundation of the earth,  
 And the heavens are the work of your hands.  
 11 They will perish, but you remain;  
 As a garment they will all grow old;  
 12 As a mantle you will fold them up,  
 And as a garment they will be changed,  
 But you are the same, and your years will know no end.”
- 13 To which of the angels has God ever said —  
 “Sit you at my right hand  
 Until I put your enemies as a stool for your feet”?
- 14 Are not all the angels spirits in the service of God, sent out to minister for the sake of those who are destined to obtain salvation?
- 2 Therefore we must give still more heed to what we were  
 2 taught, so we do not drift away. For, if the message which was delivered by angels had its authority confirmed, so that every offence against it, or neglect of it, met with a fitting requital, how  
 3 can we, of all people, expect to escape, if we disregard so great a salvation? It was the Master who at the outset spoke of this salvation, and its authority was confirmed for us by those who  
 4 heard him, while God himself added his testimony to it by signs, and marvels, and many different miracles, as well as by imparting the Holy Spirit as he saw fit.
- 5 God has not given to angels the control of that future world of  
 6 which we are speaking! No; a writer has declared somewhere —  
 “What are mere mortals that you should remember them?  
 Or human beings that you should care for them?  
 7 You have made them, for a while, lower than angels;  
 With glory and honour you have crowned them;  
 You have set them over all that your hands have made;  
 8 You have placed all things beneath their feet.”
- This “placing of everything” under humanity means that there was nothing which was not placed under them. As yet, however,  
 9 we do not see everything placed under humanity. What our eyes

do see is Jesus, who was made for a while lower than angels, now, because of his sufferings and death, crowned with glory and honour; so that his tasting the bitterness of death should, in God's loving kindness, be on behalf of all humanity. It was, indeed, fitting that God, for whom and through whom all things exist, should, when leading many children to glory, make the author of their salvation perfect through suffering. For he who purifies, and those whom he purifies, all spring from One; and therefore he is not ashamed to call them his brothers and sisters." He says

—  
 "I will tell of your name to my brothers and sisters,  
 In the midst of the congregation I will sing your praise."

And again —

"As for me, I will put my trust in God."

And yet again —

"See, here am I and the children whom God gave me."

Therefore, since human nature is the common heritage of "the children," Jesus also shared it, in order that by death he might render powerless him whose power lies in death — that is, the devil — and so might deliver all those who, from fear of death, had all their lives been living in slavery. It was not, surely, to the help of the angels that Jesus came, but "to the help of the descendants of Abraham." And consequently it was necessary that he should in all points be made like "his brothers and sisters," in order that he might prove a merciful as well as a faithful high priest in humanity's relations with God, for the purpose of expiating the sins of his people. The fact that he himself suffered under temptation enables him to help those who are tempted.

Therefore, my Christian friends, you who, all alike, have received the call from heaven, fix your attention on Jesus, the apostle and high priest of our religion. See how faithful he was to the God who appointed him, as Moses was in the whole house of God. He has been deemed worthy of far higher honour than Moses, just as the founder of the house is held in greater regard than the

4 house itself. For every house has its founder, and the founder  
 5 of the universe is God. While the faithful service of Moses in the  
 whole house of God was that of a servant, whose duty was to bear  
 6 testimony to a message still to come, the faithfulness of Christ was  
 that of a son set over the house of God. And we are his house — if  
 only we retain, unshaken to the end, the courage and confidence  
 inspired by our hope.

7 Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says —

“If today you hear God’s voice,  
 8 harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me  
 On the day when they tried my patience in the desert,  
 9 Where your ancestors tried my forbearance,  
 And saw my mighty deeds for forty years.  
 10 Therefore I was sorely vexed with that generation,  
 And I said — ‘Their hearts are always straying;  
 They have never learned my ways’;  
 11 While in my wrath I swore —  
 “They will never enter upon my rest.””

12 Be careful, friends, that there is never found in anyone of you  
 a wicked and faithless heart, shown by that person separating  
 13 themselves from the living God. Rather encourage one another  
 daily — while there is a “Today” — to prevent anyone among you  
 14 from being hardened by the deceitfulness of sin. For we now all  
 share in the Christ, if indeed we retain, unshaken to the end, the  
 15 confidence that we had at the first. To use the words of scripture —

“If today you hear God’s voice,  
 Harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me.”

16 Who were they who heard God speak and yet provoked him?  
 Were not they all those who left Egypt under the leadership of  
 17 Moses? And with whom was it that God was sorely vexed for  
 forty years? Was not it with those who had sinned, and who fell  
 18 dead in the desert? And who were they to whom God swore that  
 they should not enter upon his rest, if not those who had proved  
 19 faithless? We see, then, that they failed to enter upon it because of  
 4 their want of faith. We must, therefore, be very careful, though  
 there is a promise still standing that we will enter upon God’s rest,  
 2 that none of you even appear to have missed it. For we have had



the good news told us just as they had. But the message which they heard did them no good, since they did not share the faith of those who were attentive to it. Upon that rest we who have believed are now entering. As God has said — 3

“In my wrath I swore —  
“They will never enter upon my rest;”

Although God’s work was finished at the creation of the world; for, in a passage referring to the seventh day, you will find these words — 4

“God rested on the seventh day after all his work.”

On the other hand, we read in that passage — 5

“They will never enter upon my rest.”

Since, then, there is still a promise that some will enter upon this rest, and since those who were first told the good news did not enter upon it, because of their disbelief, again God fixed a day. “Today,” he said, speaking after a long interval through the mouth of David, in the passage already quoted — 6 7

“If today you hear God’s voice  
Harden not your hearts.”

Now if Joshua had given “rest” to the people, God would not have spoken of another and later day. There is, then, a Sabbath rest still awaiting God’s people. For the person who enters upon God’s rest do themselves rest after their work, just as God did. Let us, therefore, make every effort to enter upon that rest, so that none of us fall through such disbelief as that of which we have had an example. God’s message is a living and active power, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing its way until it penetrates soul and spirit — not the joints only but the marrow — and detecting the inmost thoughts and purposes of the mind. There is no created thing that can hide itself from the sight of God. Everything is exposed and laid bare before the eyes of him to whom we have to give account. 8 9 10 11 12 13

We have, then, in Jesus, the Son of God, a great high priest who has passed into the highest heaven; let us, therefore, hold fast to the faith which we have professed. Our high priest is not one unable to sympathise with our weaknesses, but one who has in every way been tempted, exactly as we have been, but without 14 15

16 sinning. Therefore, let us draw near boldly to the throne of love, to find pity and love for the hour of need.

5 Every high priest, taken from among the people, is appointed as their representative in their relations with God, to offer both  
 2 gifts and sacrifices in expiation of sins. And he is able to sympathise with the ignorant and deluded, since he is himself subject to  
 3 weakness, and is therefore bound to offer sacrifices for sins, not  
 4 only for the people, but equally so for himself. Nor does anyone take that high office on themselves, until they have been called to  
 5 do so by God, as Aaron was. In the same way, even the Christ did not take the honour of the high priesthood on himself, but he was appointed by him who said to him —

“You are my Son; this day I have become your Father”;

6 and on another occasion also —

“You are a priest for all time of the order of Melchizedek.”

7 Jesus, in the days of his earthly life, offered prayers and supplications, with earnest cries and with tears, to him who was able to save him from death; and he was heard because of his devout  
 8 submission. Son though he was, he learned obedience from his sufferings; and, being made perfect, he became to all those who  
 9 obey him the source of eternal salvation, while God himself pronounced him a high priest of the order of Melchizedek.

11 Now on this subject I have much to say, but it is difficult to explain it to you, because you have shown yourselves so slow to learn. For  
 12 whereas, considering the time that has elapsed, you ought to be teaching others, you still need someone to teach you the alphabet of the divine revelation, and need again to be fed with “milk”  
 13 instead of with “solid food.” For everyone who still has to take “milk” knows nothing of the teaching of righteousness; they are  
 14 a mere infant. But “solid food” is for Christians of mature faith — those whose faculties have been trained by practice to distinguish  
 6 right from wrong. Therefore, let us leave behind the elementary teaching about the Christ and press on to perfection, not

always laying over again a foundation of repentance for a lifeless formality, of faith in God — teaching concerning baptisms and the laying on of hands, the resurrection of the dead and a final judgment. Yes and, with God's help, we will. For if those who were once for all brought into the light, and learned to appreciate the gift from heaven, and came to share in the Holy Spirit, and learned to appreciate the beauty of the divine message, and the new powers of the coming age — if those, I say, fell away, it would be impossible to bring them again to repentance; they would be crucifying the Son of God over again for themselves, and exposing him to open contempt. Ground that drinks in the showers that from time to time fall on it, and produces vegetation useful to those for whom it is tilled, receives a blessing from God; but, if it "bears thorns and thistles," it is regarded as worthless, it is in danger of being "cursed," and its end will be the fire.

But about you, dear friends, even though we speak in this way, we are confident of better things — of things that point to your salvation. For God is not unjust; he will not forget the work that you did, and the love that you showed for his name, in sending help to your fellow Christians — as you are still doing. But our great desire is that every one of you should be equally earnest to attain to a full conviction that our hope will be fulfilled, and that you should keep that hope to the end. Then you will not show yourselves slow to learn, but you will copy those who, through faith and patience, are now entering upon the enjoyment of God's promises.

When God gave his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater by whom he could swear, he swore by himself. His words were —

"I will assuredly bless you and increase your numbers."

And so, after patiently waiting, Abraham obtained the fulfilment of God's promise. People, of course, swear by what is greater than themselves, and with them an oath is accepted as putting a matter beyond all dispute. And therefore God, in his desire to show, with unmistakable plainness, to those who were to enter on the enjoyment of what he had promised, the unchangeableness of his purpose, bound himself with an oath. For he intended us to find great encouragement in these two unchangeable things, which make it impossible for God to prove false — we, I mean, who fled

19 for safety where we might lay hold on the hope set before us. This  
 hope is an anchor for our souls, secure and strong, and it “reaches  
 20 into the sanctuary that lies behind the curtain,” where Jesus, our  
 forerunner, has entered on our behalf, after being made for all  
 time a high priest of the order of Melchizedek.

*Paramount Priesthood of the Christ*

7 IT WAS THIS MELCHIZEDEK, king of Salem and priest of the Most  
 High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the  
 2 kings, and gave him his blessing; and it was to him that Abraham  
 allotted a tithe of all the spoil. The meaning of his name is “king  
 of righteousness,” and besides that, he was also king of Salem,  
 3 which means “king of peace.” There is no record of his father, or  
 mother, or lineage, nor again of any beginning of his days, or end  
 of his life. In this he resembles the Son of God, and stands before  
 us as a priest whose priesthood is continuous.

4 Consider, then the importance of this Melchizedek, to whom  
 even the patriarch Abraham himself gave a tithe of the choicest  
 5 spoils. Those descendants of Levi, who are from time to time  
 appointed to the priesthood, are directed to collect tithes from  
 the people in accordance with the Law — that is from their own  
 6 kindred, although they also are descended from Abraham. But  
 Melchizedek, although not of this lineage, received tithes from  
 Abraham, and gave his blessing to the man who had God’s  
 7 promises. Now no one can dispute that it is the superior who  
 8 blesses the inferior. In the one case the tithes are received by  
 people who are mortal; in the other case by one about whom  
 9 there is the statement that his life still continues. Moreover, in a  
 sense, even Levi, who is the receiver of the tithes, has, through  
 10 Abraham, paid tithes; for Levi was still in the body of his  
 ancestor when Melchizedek met Abraham.

11 If, then, perfection had been attainable through the Levitical  
 priesthood — and it was under this priesthood that the people  
 received the Law — why was it still necessary that a priest of a  
 different order should appear, a priest of the order of Melchizedek  
 12 and not of the order of Aaron? With the change of the priest-  
 hood a change of the Law became a necessity. And he of whom  
 13 all this is said belonged to quite a different tribe, no member of

which has ever served at the altar. For it is plain that our Lord 14  
 had sprung from the tribe of Judah, though of that tribe Moses 15  
 said nothing about their being priests. All this becomes even yet 16  
 plainer when we remember that a new priest has appeared, re- 17  
 sembling Melchizedek, and that he was appointed, not under a  
 Law regulating only earthly matters, but by virtue of a life beyond  
 the reach of death; for that is the meaning of the declaration —

“You are for all time a priest of the order of Melchizedek.”

On the one hand, we have the abolition of a previous regulation 18  
 as being both inefficient and useless (for the Law never brought 19  
 anything to perfection); and, on the other hand, we have the intro-  
 duction of a better hope, which enables us to draw near to God.  
 Then again, the appointment of this new priest was ratified by an 20  
 oath, which is not so with the Levitical priests, but his appoint- 21  
 ment was ratified by an oath, when God said to him —

“The Lord has sworn, and will not change, ‘You are a priest  
 for all time.’”

And the oath shows the corresponding superiority of the 22  
 covenant of which Jesus is appointed the surety. Again, new 23  
 Levitical priests are continually being appointed, because death  
 prevents their remaining in office; but Jesus remains for all time, 24  
 and therefore the priesthood that he holds will never pass to 25  
 another. And that is why he is able to save perfectly those who  
 come to God through him, living for ever, as he does, to  
 intercede of their behalf.

This was the high priest that we needed — holy, innocent, spot- 26  
 less, withdrawn from sinners, exalted above the highest heaven,  
 one who has no need to offer sacrifices daily as those high priests 27  
 have, first for their own sins, and then for those of the people. For  
 this he did once and for all, when he offered himself as the sac-  
 rifice. The Law appoints as high priests men who are weak, but 28  
 the words of God’s oath, which was later than the Law, name the  
 Son as, for all time, the perfect priest.

To sum up what I have been saying: — Such is the high priest 8  
 that we have, one who “has taken his seat at the right hand” of 2  
 the throne of God’s Majesty in heaven, where he serves in the  
 sanctuary, in that true tent set up by the Lord and not by man.  
 Every high priest is appointed for the purpose of offering gifts 3

and sacrifices to God; it follows, therefore, that this high priest  
 4 must have some offering to make. If he were, however, still on  
 earth, he would not even be a priest, since there are already priests  
 5 who offer the gifts as the Law directs. (These priests, it is true, are  
 engaged in a service which is only a copy and shadow of the heav-  
 enly realities, as is shown by the directions given to Moses when  
 he was about to construct the tent. "Look to it," are the words,  
 "that you make every part in accordance with the pattern shown  
 6 you on the mountain.") But Jesus, as we see, has obtained a min-  
 istry as far excelling theirs, as the covenant of which he is the in-  
 termediary, based, as it is, on better promises, excels the former  
 7 covenant. If that first covenant had been faultless, there would  
 8 have been no occasion for a second. But, finding fault with the  
 people, God says —

"A time is coming,' says the Lord,  
 'When I will ratify a new covenant with the people of  
 Israel and with the people of Judah —  
 9 Not such a covenant as I made with their ancestors  
 On the day when I took them by the hand to lead them  
 out of the land of Egypt.  
 For they did not abide by their covenant with me,  
 And therefore I disregarded them,' says the Lord.  
 10 'This is the covenant that I will make with the people of  
 Israel  
 After those days,' says the Lord.  
 'I will impress my laws on their minds,  
 And will inscribe them on their hearts;  
 And I will be their God,  
 And they will be my people.  
 11 There will be no need for anyone to instruct their fellow  
 citizen,  
 Or for a person to say to their relatives "Learn to know  
 the Lord";  
 For everyone will know me,  
 From the lowest to the highest.  
 12 For I will be merciful to their wrong-doings,  
 And I will no longer remember their sins.'"

By speaking of a “new” covenant, God at once renders the former 13  
 covenant obsolete; and whatever becomes obsolete and loses its  
 force is virtually annulled.

*The New Revelation and the Old*

IT IS TRUE THAT EVEN THE FIRST COVENANT HAD ITS REGULATIONS FOR 9  
 divine worship, and its sanctuary — though only a material one. 2  
 For a tent was constructed, with an outer part which contained 2  
 the stand for the lamps, and the table, and the consecrated bread.  
 This is called the sanctuary. The part of the tent behind the second 3  
 curtain is called the inner sanctuary. In it is the gold incense-al- 4  
 tar, and the ark containing the covenant, completely covered with  
 gold. In the ark is a gold casket containing the manna, Aaron’s rod 4  
 that budded, and the tablets on which the covenant was written;  
 while above it, and overshadowing the cover on which atonement 5  
 was made, are the cherubim of the presence. Now is not the time  
 to discuss these things in detail. Such, then, was the arrangement 6  
 of the tent. Into the outer part priests are constantly going, in the  
 discharge of their sacred duties; but into the inner only the high 7  
 priest goes, and that but once a year, and never without taking  
 the blood of a victim, which he offers on his own behalf, and on  
 behalf of the errors of the people. By this the Holy Spirit is teach- 8  
 ing that the way into the sanctuary was hidden, as long as the  
 outer part of the tent still remained. For that was only a type, to 9  
 continue down to the present time; and, in keeping with it, both  
 gifts and sacrifices are offered, though incapable of satisfying the  
 conscience of the worshiper; the whole system being concerned 10  
 only with food and drink and various ablutions — external cere-  
 monials imposed until the coming of the new order.

But, when Christ came, he appeared as high priest of that better 11  
 system which was established; and he entered through that nob-  
 ler and more perfect “tent,” not made by human hands — that is 12  
 to say, not a part of this present creation. Nor was it with the blood  
 of goats and calves, but with his own blood, that he entered, once 12  
 and for all, into the sanctuary, and obtained our eternal deliver-  
 ance. For, if the blood of goats and bulls, and the sprinkling of 13  
 the ashes of a heifer, purify those who have been defiled (as far as  
 ceremonial purification goes), how much more will the blood of 14

the Christ, who, through his eternal Spirit, offered himself up to God, as a victim without blemish, purify our consciences from a lifeless formality, and fit us for the service of the living God! And that is why he is the intermediary of a new covenant; in order that, as a death has taken place to effect a deliverance from the offences committed under the first covenant, those who have received the call may obtain the eternal inheritance promised to them. Whenever such a covenant as a will is in question, the death of the testator must of necessity be alleged. For such a covenant takes effect only on death, it does not come into force as long as the testator is alive. This explains why even the first covenant was not ratified without the shedding of blood. For, when every command had been announced to all the people by Moses in accordance with the Law, he took the blood of the calves and of the goats, with water, scarlet wool, and a bunch of hyssop, and sprinkled even the book of the Law, as well as all the people, saying, as he did so — ‘This is the blood that renders valid the covenant which God has commanded to be made with you.’ And in the same way he also sprinkled with the blood the tent and all the things that were used in public worship. Indeed, under the Law, almost everything is purified with blood; and, unless blood is shed, no forgiveness is to be obtained.

While, then, it was necessary for the copies of the heavenly realities to be purified by such means as these, the heavenly realities themselves required better sacrifices. For it was not into a sanctuary made by human hands, which merely foreshadowed the true one, that Christ entered, but into heaven itself, so that he might now appear in the presence of God on our behalf. Nor yet was it to offer himself many times, as year after year the high priest entered the sanctuary with an offering of blood — but not his own blood; for then Christ would have had to undergo death many times since the creation of the world. But now, once and for all, at the close of the age, he has appeared, in order to abolish sin by the sacrifice of himself. And, as it is ordained for people to die but once (death being followed by judgment), so it is with the Christ. He was offered up once and for all, to “bear away the sins of many”; and the second time he will appear — but without any burden of sin — to those who are waiting for him, to bring salvation.



The Law, though able to foreshadow the better system which 10  
 was coming, never had its actual substance. Its priests, with those  
 sacrifices which they offer continuously year after year, can never  
 make those who come to worship perfect. Otherwise, would not 2  
 the offering of these sacrifices have been abandoned, as the wor-  
 shippers, having been once purified, would have had their consci-  
 ences clear from sins? But, on the contrary, these sacrifices 3  
 recall their sins to mind year after year. For the blood of bulls 4  
 and goats is powerless to remove sins. That is why, when he was 5  
 coming into the world, the Christ declared —

“Sacrifice and offering you do not desire, but you provide  
 for me a body;  
 You take no pleasure in burnt offerings and sacrifices 6  
 for sin.  
 So I said, ‘See, I have come’ (as is written of me in the 7  
 pages of the book),  
 ‘To do your will, God.’”

First come the words — “You do not desire, nor do you take 8  
 pleasure in, sacrifices, offerings, burnt offerings, and sacrifices for  
 sin” (offerings regularly made under the Law), and then there is 9  
 added — “See, I have come to do your will.” The former sacrifices  
 are set aside to be replaced by the latter. And it is in the fulfilment 10  
 of the will of God that we have been purified by the sacrifice, once  
 and for all, of the body of Jesus Christ. Every other priest stands 11  
 day after day at his ministrations, and offers the same sacrifices  
 over and over again — sacrifices that can never take sins away.  
 But, this priest, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, which 12  
 should serve for all time, “took his seat at the right hand of God,”  
 and has since then been waiting “for his enemies to be put as a 13  
 stool for his feet.” By a single offering he has made perfect for all 14  
 time those who are being purified. We have also the testimony of 15  
 the Holy Spirit. For, after saying —

““This is the covenant that I will make with them 16  
 After those days,’ says the Lord;  
 ‘I will impress my laws on their hearts,  
 And will inscribe them on their minds,’”

then we have — 17

“And their sins and their iniquities I will no longer remember.”

- 18 And, when these are forgiven, there is no further need of an offering for sin.

### *Encouragement and Warning*

- 19 THEREFORE, friends, since we may enter the sanctuary with confidence, in virtue of the blood of Jesus, by the way which he inaugurated for us — a new and living way, a way through the sanctuary curtain (that is, his human nature); and, since we have in him “a great priest set over the house of God,” let us draw near to God in all sincerity of heart and in perfect faith, with our hearts purified by the sprinkled blood from all consciousness of wrong, and with our bodies washed with pure water. Let us maintain the confession of our hope unshaken, for he who has given us his promise will not fail us. Let us vie with one another in a rivalry of love and noble actions. And let us not, as some do, cease to meet together; but, on the contrary, let us encourage one another, and all the more, now that you see the day drawing near. Remember, if we sin wilfully after we have gained a full knowledge of the truth, there can be no further sacrifice for sin; there is only a fearful anticipation of judgment, and a burning indignation which will destroy all opponents. When someone disregarded the Law of Moses, they were, on the evidence of two or three witnesses, put to death without pity. How much worse then, think you, will be the punishment deserved by those who have trampled underfoot the Son of God, who have treated the blood that rendered the covenant valid — the blood by which they were purified — as if it were not holy, and who have outraged the Spirit of love? We know who it was that said —

“It is for me to avenge, I will requite”;

and again —

“The Lord will judge his people.”

- 31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.  
 32 Call to mind those early days in which, after you had received the light, you patiently underwent a long and painful conflict.  
 33 Sometimes, in consequence of the taunts and injuries heaped on

you, you became a public spectacle; and sometimes you suffered through having shown yourselves to be the friends of people who were in the same position in which you had been. For you not only sympathised with those who were in prison, but you even took the confiscation of your possessions joyfully, knowing, as you did, that you had in yourselves a greater possession and a lasting one. Do not, therefore, abandon the confidence that you have gained, for it has a great reward awaiting it. You still have need of patient endurance, in order that, when you have done God's will, you may obtain the fulfilment of his promise.

“For there is indeed but a very little while  
 Ere He who is coming will have come, without delay;  
 And through faith the righteous will find life,  
 But, if anyone draws back, my heart can find no pleasure in them.”

But we do not belong to those who draw back, to their ruin, but to those who have faith, to the saving of their souls.

*Heroes of Faith*

FAITH IS THE REALISATION OF THINGS HOPED FOR — THE proof of things not seen. And it was for faith that the people of old were renowned. Faith enables us to perceive that the universe was created at the bidding of God — so that we know that what we see was not made out of visible things. Faith made the sacrifice which Abel offered to God a better sacrifice than Cain's, and won him renown as a righteous man, God himself establishing his renown by accepting his gifts; and it is by the example of his faith that Abel, though dead, still speaks. Faith led to Enoch's removal from earth, so that he might not experience death. “He could not be found because God had removed him.” For, before his removal, he was renowned as having pleased God; but without faith it is impossible to please him, for he who comes to God must believe that God exists, and that he rewards those who seek for him.

It was faith that enabled Noah, after he had received the divine warning about what could not then be foreseen, to build, in reverent obedience, an ark in which to save his family. By his faith he

condemned the world, and became possessed of that righteousness which follows on faith.

8 It was faith that enabled Abraham to obey the call that he received, and to set out for the place which he was afterwards to obtain as his own; and he set out not knowing where he was going. It was faith that made him go to live as an emigrant in the promised land — as in a strange country — living there in tents  
9 with Isaac and Jacob, who shared the promise with him. For he was looking for the city with the sure foundations, whose architect and builder is God.

11 Again, it was faith that enabled Sarah to conceive (though she was past the age for child-bearing), because she felt sure that he who had given her the promise would not fail her. And so from one man — and that when his powers were dead — there sprang a people as numerous “as the stars in the heavens or the countless grains of sand on the shore.”

13 All these died sustained by faith. They did not obtain the promised blessings, but they saw them from a distance and welcomed the sight, and they acknowledged themselves to be only aliens and strangers on the earth. Those who speak like this show plainly that they are seeking their homeland. If they had been thinking of the land that they had left, they could have  
16 found opportunities to return. But no, they were longing for a better, a heavenly, land! And therefore God was not ashamed to be called their God; indeed he had already prepared them a city.  
17 It was faith that enabled Abraham, when put to the test, to offer Isaac as a sacrifice — he who had received the promises offering  
18 up his only son, of whom it had been said —

“It is through Isaac that there will be descendants to bear your name.”

19 For he argued that God was even able to raise a man from the dead — and indeed, figuratively speaking, Abraham did receive Isaac back from the dead. It was faith that enabled Isaac to bless  
20 Jacob and Esau, even with regard to the future. Faith enabled Jacob, when dying, to give his blessing to each of the sons of Joseph, and “to bow himself in worship as he leant on the top of his staff.”  
22 Faith caused Joseph, when his end was near, to speak of the future migration of the Israelites, and to give instructions with regard  
23 to his bones. Faith caused the parents of Moses to hide the

child for three months after his birth, for they saw that he was a beautiful child; and they would not respect the king's order. It was faith that caused Moses, when he was grown up, to refuse the title of "son of a daughter of Pharaoh." He preferred sharing the hardships of God's people to enjoying the short-lived pleasures of sin. For he counted "the reproaches that are heaped on the Christ" of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, looking forward, as he did, to the reward awaiting him. Faith caused him to leave Egypt, though undaunted by the king's anger, for he was strengthened in his endurance by the vision of the invisible God. Faith led him to institute the Passover and the sprinkling of the blood, so that the Destroyer might not touch the eldest children of the Israelites. Faith enabled the people to cross the Red Sea, as if it had been dry land, while the Egyptians, when they attempted to do so, were drowned. Faith caused the walls of Jericho to fall after being encircled for seven days. Faith saved Rahab, the prostitute, from perishing with the unbelievers, after she had entertained the spies with friendliness.

Need I add anything more? Time would fail me if I attempted to relate the stories of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and Jephthah, and those of David, Samuel, and the prophets. By their faith they subdued kingdoms, ruled righteously, gained the fulfilment of God's promises, "shut the mouths of lions," quelled the fury of the flames, escaped the edge of the sword, found strength in the hour of weakness, displayed their prowess in war, and routed hostile armies. Women received back their dead raised to life. Some were tortured on the wheel, and refused release in order that they might rise to a better life. Others had to face taunts and blows, and even chains and imprisonment. They were stoned to death, they were tortured, they were swan asunder, they were put to the sword; they wandered about clothed in the skins of sheep or goats, destitute, persecuted, ill-used — people of whom the world was not worthy — roaming in lonely places, and on the mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. Yet, though they all won renown by their faith, they did not obtain the final fulfilment of God's promise; since God had in view some better thing for us, so that they would only reach perfection together with us.

12 Seeing, therefore, that there is on every side of us such a throng of witnesses, let us also lay aside everything that hinders us, and the sin that clings about us, and run with patient endurance the race  
 2 that lies before us, our eyes fixed on Jesus, the leader and perfect example of our faith, who, for the joy that lay before him, endured the cross, heedless of its shame, and now "has taken his seat at the right hand" of the throne of God. Weigh well the example  
 3 of him who had to endure such opposition from "people who were sinning against themselves," so that you should not grow  
 4 weary or faint-hearted. You have not yet, in your struggle with sin, resisted to the death; and you have forgotten the encouraging words which are addressed to you as God's children —

"My child, think not lightly of the Lord's discipline,  
 Do not despond when he rebukes you;

6 For it is him whom he loves that he disciplines,  
 And he chastises every child whom he acknowledges."

7 It is for your discipline that you have to endure all this. God is dealing with you as his children. For where is there a child whom  
 8 his father does not discipline? If you are left without that discipline, in which all children share, it shows that you are bastards, and not true children. Further, when our earthly fathers disciplined us, we respected them. Should we not, then, much  
 9 rather yield submission to the Father of souls, and live? Our fathers disciplined us for only a short time and as seemed best to them; but God disciplines us for our true good, to enable us to  
 10 share his holiness. No discipline is pleasant at the time; on the contrary, it is painful. But afterwards its fruit is seen in the peacefulness of a righteous life which is the lot of those who have been  
 11 trained under it. Therefore "lift again the down-dropped hands and straighten the weakened knees; make straight paths for your feet," so that the lame limb may not be put out of joint, but rather be cured.

### *Conclusion*

14 TRY EARNESTLY TO LIVE AT PEACE WITH EVERYONE, and to attain to that purity without which no one will see the Lord. Take care that no one fails to use the loving help of God, "that no bitterness is allowed to take root and spring up, and cause trouble," and

so poison the whole community. Take care that no one becomes 16  
immoral, or irreligious like Esau, who sold his birthright for a  
single meal. For you know that even afterwards, when he wished 17  
to claim his father's blessing, he was rejected — for he never found  
an opportunity to repair his error — though he begged for the  
blessing with tears.

It is not to tangible "flaming fire" that you have drawn near, 18  
nor to "gloom, and darkness, and storm, and the blast of a trum- 19  
pet, and an audible voice." Those who heard that voice entreated  
that they might hear no more, for they could not bear to think 20  
of the command — "If even an animal touches the mountain, it  
is to be stoned to death;" and so fearful was the sight that Moses 21  
said — "I tremble with fear." No, but it is to Mount Zion that 22  
you have drawn near, the city of the living God, the heavenly  
Jerusalem, to countless hosts of angels, to the festal gathering 23  
and assemblage of God's firstborn whose names are enrolled in  
heaven, to God the judge of all people, to the spirits of the right- 24  
eous who have attained perfection, to Jesus, the intermediary of a  
new covenant, and to the sprinkled blood that tells of better things 25  
than the blood of Abel. Beware how you refuse to hear him who  
is speaking. For, if the Israelites did not escape punishment, when  
they refused to listen to him who taught them on earth the divine  
will, far worse will it be for us, if we turn away from him who is  
teaching us from heaven. Then his voice shook the earth, but now 26  
his declaration is —

"Still once more I will cause not only the earth to tremble,  
but also the heavens."

And those words "still once more" indicate the passing away of 27  
all that is shaken — that is, of all created things — in order that  
only what is unshaken may remain. Therefore, let us, who have 28  
received a kingdom that cannot be shaken, be thankful, and so  
offer acceptable worship to God, with awe and the deepest re-  
spect. For our God is "a consuming fire." 29

Let your love for the Lord's followers continue. Do not neglect 13  
to show hospitality; for, through being hospitable, people have 2  
all unawares entertained angels. Remember the prisoners, as if 3  
you were their fellow prisoners, and the oppressed, not forgetting 4  
that you also are still in the body. Let marriage be honoured by 4  
all and the married life be pure; for God will judge those who are

5 immoral and those who commit adultery. Do not let your conduct be ruled by the love of money. Be content with what you have, for God himself has said —

“I will never forsake you, nor will I ever abandon you.”

6 Therefore we may say with confidence —

“The Lord is my helper, I will not be afraid.  
What can mere people do to me?”

7 Do not forget your leaders, who told you God’s message. Recall the close of their lives, and imitate their faith.

8 Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today — yes, and for  
9 ever! Do not let yourselves be carried away by the various novel  
forms of teaching. It is better to rely for spiritual strength on the  
divine help, than on regulations regarding food; for those whose  
lives are guided by such regulations have not found them of ser-  
10 vice. We are not without an altar; but it is one at which those who  
11 still worship in the tent have no right to eat. The bodies of those  
animals whose blood is brought by the high priest into the sanc-  
12 tuary, as an offering for sin, are burnt outside the camp. And so  
Jesus, also, to purify the people by his own blood, suffered out-  
13 side the gate. Therefore let us go out to him “outside the camp,”  
14 bearing the same reproaches as he; for here we have no perma-  
15 nent city, but are looking for the city that is to be. Through him  
let us offer, as our sacrifice, continual praise to God — an offering  
16 from lips that glorify his name. Never forget to do kindly acts  
and to share what you have with others, for such sacrifices are ac-  
17 ceptable to God. Obey your leaders, and submit to their control,  
for they are watching over your souls, since they will have to ren-  
der an account, so that they may do it with joy, and not in sorrow.  
That would not be to your advantage.

18 Pray for us, for we are sure that our consciences are clear, since  
19 our wish is to be occupied with what is good. And I the more  
earnestly ask for your prayers, so that I may be restored to you  
the sooner.

20 May God, the source of all peace, who brought back from the  
dead him who, “by virtue of the blood that rendered valid the  
unchangeable covenant, is the great shepherd of God’s Sheep,”



Jesus, our Lord — may God make you perfect in everything that 21  
is good, so that you may be able to do his will. May he bring out in  
us all that is pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom  
be all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

I beg you, friends, to bear with these words of advice. For I 22  
have written only very briefly to you.

You will be glad to hear that our friend, Timothy, has been set 23  
free. If he comes here soon, we will visit you together.

Give our greeting to all your leaders, and to all Christ's people. 24  
Our friends from Italy send their greetings to you.

May God bless you all. 25



# THE LETTER FROM JAMES

## *Greeting*

JAMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, greets the 1  
twelve tribes that are living abroad.

## *Advice on Various Subjects*

MY FRIENDS, whatever trials you may face from time to time, al- 2  
ways regard them as a reason for rejoicing, knowing, as you do, 3  
that the testing of your faith develops endurance. And let en- 4  
durance do its work perfectly, so that you may be altogether per-  
fect, and in no respect lacking.

If any one of you lacks wisdom, they should ask wisdom from 5  
the God who gives freely to everyone without reproach, and it 6  
will be given to them. But they should ask with confidence, never 6  
doubting; for the person who doubts is like a wave of the sea dri- 7  
ven here and there at the mercy of the wind — Such a person 7  
must not expect that they will receive anything from the Lord,  
vacillating as they are, irresolute at every turn. 8

Let a follower in humble circumstances be proud of their ex- 9  
alted position, but a rich follower of their humiliation; for the rich 10  
will pass away “like the flower of the grass.” As the sun rises, and 11  
the hot wind blows, “the grass withers, its flower fades,” and all  
its beauty is gone. So is it with the rich. In the midst of their pur-  
suits they will wither away.

Blessed is the person who remains firm under temptation, for, 12  
when they have stood the test, they will receive the crown of life,  
which the Lord has promised to those who love him. Let no one 13  
say, when they are tempted, ‘It is God who is tempting me!’ For  
God, who cannot be tempted to do wrong, does not himself tempt  
anyone. A man is in every case tempted by their own passions — 14  
allured and enticed by them. Then passion conceives and gives 15

16 birth to sin, and sin, on reaching maturity, brings forth death. Do  
 17 not be deceived, my dear friends. Every good thing given us, and  
 every perfect gift, is from above, and comes down to us from the  
 Father of the lights in the heavens, who is himself never subject to  
 18 change or to eclipse. Because he so willed, he gave us life, through  
 the message of the truth, so that we should be, as it were, a kind  
 of first fruits of his creation.

19 Mark this, my dear friends — Let everyone be quick to listen,  
 20 slow to speak, and slow to get angry; for human anger does not  
 21 forward the righteous purpose of God. Therefore, get rid of all  
 filthiness and whatever wickedness still remains, and in a hum-  
 ble spirit receive that message which has been planted in your  
 22 hearts and is able to save your souls. Put that message into prac-  
 23 tice, and do not merely listen to it — deceiving yourselves. For,  
 when anyone listens to it and does not practice it, they are like a  
 24 person looking at their own face in a mirror. They look at them-  
 25 selves, then go on their way, but the person who looks carefully  
 into the perfect Law, the Law of freedom, and continues to do so,  
 not listening to it and then forgetting it, but putting it into practice  
 26 — that person will be blessed in what they do. When a person ap-  
 pears to be religious, yet does not bridle their tongue, but imposes  
 on their own conscience, that person's religious observances are  
 27 valueless. That religious observance which is pure and spotless  
 in the eyes of God our Father is this — to visit orphans and wid-  
 ows in their trouble, and to keep oneself uncontaminated by the  
 world.

### *Warning on Various Subjects*

2 MY FRIENDS, are you really trying to combine faith in Jesus  
 2 Christ, our glorified Lord, with discrimination? Suppose a  
 visitor should enter your synagogue, with gold rings and in  
 grand clothes, and suppose a poor man should come in also, in  
 3 shabby clothes, and you show more respect to the visitor who is  
 wearing grand clothes, and say — 'There is a good seat for you  
 here,' but to the poor man — 'You must stand; or sit down there  
 4 by my footstool,' Haven't you made distinctions among

yourselves, and used evil standards of judgement? Listen, my 5  
 dear friends. Has not God chosen those who are poor in the  
 things of this world to be rich through their faith, and to possess  
 the kingdom which he has promised to those who love him? But  
 you — you insult the poor man! Isn't it the rich who oppress 6  
 you? Isn't it they who drag you into law courts? Isn't it they 7  
 who malign that honourable name spoken over you at your  
 baptism? If you keep the royal law which runs — "You must 8  
 love your neighbour as you love yourself," you are doing right;  
 but, if you discriminate, you commit a sin, and stand convicted 9  
 by that same law of being offenders against it. For a person who 10  
 has laid the Law, as a whole, to heart, but has failed in one  
 particular, is accountable for breaking all its provisions. He who 11  
 said "You must not commit adultery" also said "You must not  
 murder." If, then, you commit murder but not adultery, you are  
 still an offender against the Law. Therefore, speak and act as 12  
 people who are to be judged by the "Law of freedom." For there 13  
 will be justice without mercy for the person who has not acted  
 mercifully. Mercy triumphs over Justice.

My friends, what good is it if someone claims that they have 14  
 faith, but they do not prove it by actions? Can such faith save  
 them? Suppose some brother or sister should be in need of 15  
 clothes and of daily bread, and one of you says to them — 'Go, 16  
 and peace be with you; keep warm and eat well!' and yet you do  
 not actually give them the necessities of life, what good would it  
 be to them? In just the same way faith, if not followed by 17  
 actions, is, by itself, a lifeless thing. Someone, indeed, may say 18  
 — 'You are a man of faith, and I am a man of action.'

'Then show me your faith,' I reply, 'apart from any actions, and  
 I will show you my faith by my actions.' It is a part of your faith, 19  
 is it not, that there is one God? Good; yet even the demons have  
 that faith, and tremble at the thought. Now do you really want 20  
 to understand, fool, how it is that faith without actions leads to  
 nothing? Look at our ancestor, Abraham. Was he not justified by 21  
 his actions after he had offered his son, Isaac, on the altar? You 22  
 see how, in his case, faith and actions went together; that his faith  
 was perfected as the result of his actions; and that in this way the 23  
 words of scripture came true — 'Abraham believed God, and that  
 was regarded by God as righteousness,' and 'He was called the  
 friend of God.' You see, then, that a person is justified by actions, 24

25 and not by faith alone. Wasn't it the same with the prostitute, Ra-  
26 hab? Was she not justified by her actions, after she had welcomed  
the messengers and helped them escape by another road? Just as  
a body is dead without a spirit, so faith is dead without actions.

3 Not many of you should become teachers, my friends, because  
you know that we who teach will be judged more strictly than oth-  
2 ers. We often make mistakes, every one of us. Anyone who does  
not make mistakes when speaking is indeed a perfect person, able  
3 to bridle their whole body as well. When we put bits into horses'  
mouths to make them obey us, we change their course the rest of  
4 their bodies. Again, think of ships. Large as they are, and even  
when driven by fierce winds, they are guided by a very small ruder  
and steered in whatever direction the man at the helm may  
5 determine. So is it with the tongue. Small as it is, it is a great  
boaster. Think how a tiny spark may set the largest forest ablaze!  
6 And the tongue is like a spark. It is a world of unrighteousness  
among the parts of our body. It contaminates the whole body; it  
sets the whole course of our existence on fire, and is itself set on  
7 fire by the flames of Gehenna. For while all kinds of animals,  
birds and reptiles and sea creatures can be tamed and have been  
8 tamed by humans, no human being can tame the tongue. It is a  
restless plague! It is charged with deadly poison! With it we bless  
9 our Lord and Father, and with it we curse people who are made  
10 "in God's likeness." From the very same mouth come blessings  
and curses! My friends, it is not right that this should be so. Does  
11 a spring give both good and bad water from the same source?  
12 Can a fig tree, my friends, bear olives? Or a vine bear figs? No,  
nor can a brackish well give good water.

13 Who among you claims to be wise and intelligent? They should  
show that their actions are the outcome of a good life lived in the  
14 humility of true wisdom. But if you harbour bitter envy and a  
spirit of rivalry in your hearts, do not boast or deny the truth. That  
15 is not the wisdom which comes from above; no, it is earthly, ani-  
16 malistic, demonic. For where envy and rivalry exist, there you  
will also find disorder and all kinds of bad, worthless actions.  
17 But the wisdom from above is, before everything else, pure; then  
peace-loving, gentle, open to conviction, rich in compassion and  
18 good deeds, and free from partiality and insincerity. Justice is  
the harvest peacemakers will reap from seeds sown in a spirit of  
peace.

What is the cause of the fighting and quarrelling that goes on 4  
among you? Isn't it to be found in the desires which are always at  
war within you? You crave, yet do not have, so you commit murder 2  
, so You covet, yet cannot gain your end. You quarrel and fight.  
You do not have, because you do not ask. You ask, yet do not receive 3  
, because you ask for a wrong purpose — to spend what you  
get on your pleasures. Unfaithful people! Don't you know that to 4  
be friends with the world means to be at enmity with God? There-  
fore whoever chooses to be friends with the world makes himself  
an enemy to God. Do you suppose scripture means nothing when 5  
it says, "Envy results from the longings of the spirit which God  
has implanted within you?" But he gives us greater grace; and 6  
that is why it says, —

"God opposes the haughty,  
but gives grace to the humble."

Therefore submit to God. Stand up to the devil, and he will flee 7  
from you. Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Make 8  
your hands clean, you sinners; and your hearts pure, you vacil-  
lators! Grieve, mourn, and lament! Let your laughter be turned 9  
to mourning, and your happiness to gloom! Humble yourselves 10  
before the Lord, and he will exalt you. Do not disparage one an- 11  
other, friends. The person who disparages others, or passes judg-  
ment on them, disparages the Law and passes judgment on the  
Law. But, if you pass judgment on the Law, you are not obeying  
it, but judging it. There is only one lawgiver and judge — he who 12  
has the power both to save and to destroy. So then who who are  
you to pass judgment on your neighbour?

Listen to me, you who say "Today or tomorrow we will go to 13  
such and such a town and spend a year there, doing business and  
making money," yet you do not know what your life will be like 14  
tomorrow! For you are but a puff of smoke that appears for a  
little while and then vanishes. Instead you should say "If the Lord 15  
wills, we will live and do this or that." But as it is, you are boasting 16

17 presumptuously! All such boasting is wicked. The person, then,  
 who knows what is right but fails to do it — that is sin in them.

5 Listen to me, you rich people, weep and wail for the miseries  
 2 that are coming upon you! Your riches have wasted away, and  
 3 your clothes have become moth-eaten. Your gold and silver are  
 rusted; and the rust on them will be evidence against you, and  
 will eat into your flesh. It was fire, so to speak, that you stored up  
 4 for yourselves in these last days. Listen! The wages you have held  
 back from the labourers who mowed your fields are crying out  
 against you, and the outcries of your harvesters have reached the  
 5 ears of the Lord of Hosts! You have lived on earth a life of extravag-  
 agance and luxury; you have indulged your fancies in a time of  
 6 bloodshed. You have condemned, you have murdered, the right-  
 eous one! Must not God be opposed to you?

### *Concluding Appeal*

7 BE PATIENT, then, friends, until the coming of the Lord. Even the  
 farmer has to wait for the precious fruit of the earth, watching  
 over it patiently, until it has had the spring and summer rains.  
 8 And you must be patient also, and not be discouraged; for the  
 9 Lord's coming is near. Do not make complaints against one an-  
 other, friends, or judgment will be passed on you. The judge is  
 10 already standing at the door! Friends, as an example of the pa-  
 tient endurance of suffering, take the prophets who spoke in the  
 11 name of the Lord. We count those who displayed such endurance  
 blessed! You have heard, too, of Job's endurance, and have seen  
 what the Lord's purpose was, for "the Lord is full of pity and  
 compassion."

12 Above all things, my friends, never take an oath, either by  
 heaven, or by earth, or by anything else. Let your "Yes" suffice  
 for yes, and "No" for no, so that you may escape condemnation.

13 If anyone of you is in trouble, they should pray; if anyone is  
 14 happy, they should sing hymns. If anyone of you is ill, they  
 should send for the church elders, and let them pray over them,  
 15 anointing them with oil in the name of the Lord. The prayer  
 offered in faith will save the person who is sick, and the Lord  
 will raise them from their bed; and if they have committed sins,  
 16 they will be forgiven. Therefore, confess your sins to one



another and pray for one another, so that you may be cured.  
Great is the power of a good person's fervent prayer. Elijah was 17  
only human like ourselves, but, when he prayed fervently that it  
might not rain, no rain fell on the land for three and a half years.  
And, when he prayed again, the clouds brought rain, and the 18  
land bore crops. My friends, should one of you be led astray 19  
from the truth, and someone bring them back again, be sure 20  
that the person who brings a sinner back from their mistaken  
ways will save that person's soul from death, and will cover a  
multitude of sins.



# PETER'S FIRST LETTER

## *Introduction*

TO THE PEOPLE OF GOD WHO ARE LIVING ABROAD, dispersed through- 1  
 out Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Roman Asia, and Bithynia, and 2  
 who were chosen in accordance with the foreknowledge of God  
 the Father, through the consecration of the Spirit, to learn obedi-  
 ence, and to be purified by the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus  
 Christ, from Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ. May blessing and  
 peace be yours in ever increasing measure.

## *The Christian's Hope of Salvation*

BLESSED IS THE GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has, 3  
 in his great mercy, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from  
 the dead, given us the new life of undying hope, that promises an 4  
 inheritance, imperishable, stainless, unfading, which has been re-  
 served for you in heaven — for you who, through faith, are being 5  
 guarded by the power of God, awaiting a salvation that is ready  
 to be revealed in the last days. At the thought of this you are full 6  
 of exultation, though (if it has been necessary) you have suffered  
 for the moment somewhat from various trials; that the genuineness 7  
 of your faith — a thing far more precious than gold, which  
 is perishable, yet has to be tested by fire — may win praise and  
 glory and honour at the appearing of Jesus Christ. Though you 8  
 have never seen him, yet you love him; though you do not even  
 now see him, yet you believe in him, and exalt with a triumphant  
 happiness too great for words, as you receive the reward of your 9  
 faith in the salvation of your souls! It was this salvation that the 10  
 prophets, who spoke long ago of the blessing intended for you,  
 sought, and strove to comprehend; as they strove to discern what 11  
 that time could be, to which the Spirit of Christ within them was  
 pointing, when foretelling the sufferings that Christ would have  
 to endure, and the glories that would follow. And it was revealed 12  
 to them that it was not for themselves, but for you, that they were  
 acting as Ministers of the truths which have now been told to you,

by those who, with the help of the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, have brought you the good news — truths into which even angels long to look.

*The Christian's Character*

13 THEREFORE CONCENTRATE YOUR MINDS, with the strictest self-control, and fix your hopes on the blessing that is coming for you at  
14 the appearing of Jesus Christ. Be like obedient children; do not let your lives be shaped by the passions which once swayed you  
15 in the days of your ignorance, but in your whole life show yourselves to be holy, after the pattern of the Holy One from whom  
16 you received your call. For scripture says —

“You will be holy, because I am holy.”

17 And since you call on him as “Father,” who judges everyone impartially by what he has done, let respectful awe be the spirit  
18 of your lives during the time of your stay on earth. For you know that it was not by perishable things, such as silver and gold, that you were ransomed from the aimless way of living  
19 which was handed down to you from your ancestors, but by precious blood, as it were of a lamb, unblemished and spotless, the blood of Christ. Destined for this before the beginning of the world, he has been revealed in these last days for your sakes,  
21 who, through him, are faithful to God who raised him from the dead and gave him honour, so that your faith and hope are now in God.

22 Now that, by your obedience to the truth, you have purified your lives, so that there is growing up among you a genuine affection, love one another earnestly with all your hearts; since your new life has come, not from perishable, but imperishable, seed,  
24 through the message of the Everliving God. For —

“All earthly life is but as grass,  
and all its splendour as the flower of grass.

The grass fades,  
its flower falls,

25 but the teaching of the Lord remains for ever.”

And that is the teaching of the good news which has been told to  
2 you. Now that you have done with all malice, all deceitfulness,

insincerity, jealous feelings, and all backbiting, like newly born 2  
infants, crave pure spiritual milk, so that you may be enabled by  
it to grow until you attain salvation — since “you have found by 3  
experience that the Lord is kind.” Come to him, then, as to a liv- 4  
ing stone, rejected, indeed, by men, but in God’s eyes choice and  
precious; and, as living stones, form yourselves into a spiritual 5  
house, to be a consecrated priesthood, for the offering of spiritual  
sacrifices that will be acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. For  
there is a passage of scripture that runs — 6

“See, I am placing in Zion a choice and precious  
corner-stone;

And those who believe in him will have no cause for  
shame.”

It is to you, then, who believe in him that he is precious, but to 7  
those who do not believe he is “a stone which, though rejected  
by the builders, has now itself become the corner-stone,” and “a 8  
stumbling-block, and a rock which will prove a hindrance.” They  
stumble because they do not accept the message. This was the fate  
destined for them. But you are “a chosen people, a royal priest- 9  
hood, a consecrated nation, God’s own people,” entrusted with  
the proclamation of the goodness of him who called you out of  
darkness into his wonderful light. Once you were “not a people 10  
,” but now you are “God’s people”; once you “had not found  
mercy,” but now you “have found mercy.”

*Practical Appeals in view of the Dangers of the Times.*

DEAR FRIENDS, I beg you, as pilgrims and strangers on earth, to re- 11  
frain from indulging the cravings of your earthly nature, for they  
make war on the soul. Let your daily life among the Gentiles be 12  
so upright, that, whenever they malign you as evil-doers, they  
may learn, as they watch, from the uprightness of your conduct,  
to praise God “at the time when he will visit them.”

Submit to all human institutions for the Lord’s sake, alike to 13  
the emperor as the supreme authority, and to governors as sent  
by him to punish evil-doers and to commend those who do right. 14  
For God’s will is this — that you should silence the ignorance of 15  
foolish people by doing what is right. Act as free people, yet not 16

17 using your freedom as those do who make it a cloak for wicked-  
ness, but as Servants of God. Show honour to everyone, love the  
Lord's followers, "revere God, honour the emperor."

18 Those of you who are domestic servants should always be sub-  
missive and respectful to their masters, not only to those who are  
19 good and considerate, but also to those who are arbitrary. For this  
wins God's approval when, because conscious of God's presence,  
a person who is suffering unjustly bears their troubles patiently.  
20 What credit can you claim when, after doing wrong, you take  
your punishment for it patiently? But, on the other hand, if, af-  
ter doing right, you take your sufferings patiently, that does win  
21 the approval of God. For it was to this that you were called! For  
Christ, too, suffered — on your behalf — and left you an exam-  
22 ple, that you should follow in his steps. He "never sinned, nor  
23 was anything deceitful ever heard from his lips." He was abused,  
but he did not answer with abuse; he suffered, but he did not  
threaten; he entrusted himself to him whose judgments are just.  
24 And he "himself carried our sins" in his own body to the cross,  
so that we might die to our sins, and live for righteousness. "His  
25 bruising was your healing." Once you were straying like sheep,  
but now you have returned to the shepherd and guardian of your  
souls.

3 Again, you married women should submit to your husbands,  
so that if any of them reject the message, they may, apart from  
2 the message, be won over, by the conduct of their wives, as they  
3 watch your submissive and blameless conduct. Yours should be,  
not the external adornment of the arrangement of the hair, the  
4 wearing of jewellery, or the putting on of dresses, but the inner  
life with the imperishable beauty of a quiet and gentle spirit; for  
5 this is very precious in God's sight. It was by this that the holy  
women of old, who rested their hopes on God, adorned them-  
6 selves; submitting to their husbands, as Sarah did, who obeyed  
Abraham, and called him master. And you are her true children,  
as long as you live good lives, and let nothing terrify you.

7 Again, those of you who are married men should live consid-  
erately with their wives, showing due regard to their sex, as phys-  
ically weaker than their own, and not forgetting that they share  
with you in the gift of life. Then you will be able to pray without  
hindrance.

Lastly, you should all be united, sympathetic, full of love for 8  
each other, kind-hearted, humble-minded; never returning evil 9  
for evil, or abuse for abuse, but, on the contrary, blessing. It was  
to this that you were called — to obtain a blessing!

“The person who wants to enjoy life 10  
And see happy days —  
They should keep their tongue from evil  
And their lips from deceitful words,  
they should turn from evil and do good, 11  
They should seek for peace and follow after it;  
For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous, 12  
And his ears are attentive to their prayers,  
But the face of the Lord is set against those who do  
wrong.”

Who, indeed, is there to harm you, if you prove yourselves to be 13  
eager for what is good? Even if you should suffer for 14  
righteousness, count yourselves blessed! “Do not let people  
terrify you, or allow yourselves to be dismayed.” Revere the 15  
Christ as Lord in your hearts; always ready to give an answer to  
anyone who asks your reason for the hope that you cherish, but 16  
giving it with courtesy and respect, and keeping your  
consciences clear, so that, whenever you are maligned, those  
who vilify your good and Christian conduct may be put to  
shame. It is better that you should suffer, if that should be God’s 17  
will, for doing right, than for doing wrong. For Christ himself 18  
died to atone for sins once for all — the good on behalf of the  
bad — that he might bring you to God; his body being put to  
death, but his spirit entering on new life. And it was then that 19  
he went and preached to the imprisoned spirits, who once were 20  
disobedient, at the time when God patiently waited, in the days  
of Noah, while the ark was being prepared; in which some few  
lives, eight in all, were saved by means of water. And baptism, 21  
which this foreshadowed, now saves you — not the mere  
cleansing of the body, but the search of a clear conscience after  
God — through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, who has gone 22  
into heaven, and is at God’s right hand, where angels and

archangels and the powers of heaven now yield submission to him.

4 Since, then, Christ suffered in body, arm yourselves with the  
2 same resolve as he; for he who has suffered in body has ceased  
3 to sin, and so will live the rest of his earthly life guided, not by  
4 human passions, but by the will of God. Surely in the past you  
5 have spent time enough living as the Gentiles delight to live. For  
6 your path has lain among scenes of debauchery, licentiousness,  
drunkenness, revelry, hard-drinking, and profane idolatry. And,  
4 because you do not run to the same extremes of profligacy as  
5 others, they are astonished, and malign you. But they will have  
to answer for their conduct to him who is ready to judge both the  
6 living and the dead. For that was why the good news was told to  
the dead also — that, after they have been judged in the body, as  
people are judged, they might live in the spirit, as God lives.

7 But the end of all things is near. Therefore exercise self-restraint  
8 and be calm, so that you may be able to pray. Above all things,  
let your love for one another be earnest, for “Love throws a veil  
9 over countless sins.” Never grudge hospitality to one another.  
10 Whatever the gift that each has received, use it in the service of  
11 others, as good stewards of the varied bounty of God. When any-  
one speaks, they should speak as one who is delivering the ora-  
cles of God. When anyone is endeavouring to serve others, they  
should do so in reliance on the strength which God supplies; so  
that in everything God may be honour ed through Jesus Christ  
— to whom be ascribed all honour and might for ever and ever.  
Amen.

12 Dear friends, do not be astonished at the trial of fire that you  
are passing through, to test you, as though something strange  
13 were happening to you. No, the more you share the sufferings of  
the Christ, the more may you rejoice, that, when the time comes  
14 for the manifestation of his glory, you may rejoice and exult. If  
you are insulted for bearing the name of Christ, count yourselves



blessed; because the divine glory and the Spirit of God are resting on you. I need hardly say that no one among you must suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or a criminal, or for interfering in matters which do not concern Christians. But, if someone suffers as a Christian, they should not be ashamed of it; they should bring honour to God even though they bear that name. For the time has come for judgment to begin with the house of God; and, if it begins with us, what will be the end of those who reject God's good news? If "a good person is saved only with difficulty, what will become of the godless and the sinful?" Therefore, I say, let those who suffer, because God wills it so, commit their lives into the hands of a faithful Creator, and persevere in doing right.

### *Conclusion*

AS FOR THE OLDER ONES AMONG YOU, who are elders in the church, I, their fellow elder, and a witness to the sufferings of the Christ, who will also share in the glory that is to be revealed — I beg you to be true shepherds of the flock of God among you, not because you are compelled, but of your own free will; not from a base love of gain, but with a ready spirit; not as lords of your charges, but as examples to your flock. Then, when the chief shepherd appears, you will win the crown of glory that never fades. Again, you younger ones should show deference to the older. And all of you should put on the badge of humility in mutual service, for "God is opposed to the proud, but gives his help to the humble."

Humble yourselves, therefore, under the mighty hand of God, so that he may exalt you in his good time, laying all your anxieties on him, for he makes you his care. Exercise self-control, be watchful. Your adversary, the devil, like a roaring lion, is prowling about, eager to devour you. Stand firm against him, strong in your faith; knowing, as you do, that the sufferings which you are undergoing are being endured to the full by the Lord's followers throughout the world. God, from whom all help comes, and who called you, by your union with Christ, into his eternal

glory, will, when you have suffered for a little while, himself perfect, establish, strengthen you. To him be ascribed dominion for ever. Amen.

I have been writing to you briefly by the hand of Silas, our true-hearted friend (for so I regard him), to encourage you, and to bear my testimony that in what I have written is to be found the true love of God. On that take your stand. Your sister church in "Babylon" sends you greeting, and so does Mark, who is as a son to me. Greet one another with the kiss of love.

May God give his peace to you all in your union with Christ.

# PETER'S SECOND LETTER

## *Introduction*

TO THOSE TO WHOM, through the justice of our God and Saviour 1  
Jesus Christ, there has been granted faith equally privileged with  
our own, from Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus  
Christ.

May blessing and peace be yours in ever increasing measure, as 2  
you advance in the knowledge of God and of Jesus, our Lord. For  
his divine power has given us everything that is needful for a life 3  
of piety, as we advance in the knowledge of him who called us  
by a glorious manifestation of his goodness. For it was through 4  
this that he gave us what we prize as the greatest of his promises,  
that through them you might participate in the divine nature,  
now that you have fled from the corruption in the world, result- 5  
ing from human passions. Yes, and for this reason do your best  
to supplement your faith by goodness, goodness by knowledge, 6  
knowledge by self-control, self-control by endurance, endurance  
by piety, piety by mutual affection, and mutual affection by love. 7  
For, when these virtues are yours, in increasing measure, they 8  
prevent your being indifferent to, or destitute of, a fuller knowl-  
edge of our Lord Jesus Christ. Surely the person who has not 9  
these virtues is shortsighted even to blindness, and has chosen  
to forget that they have been purified from their sins of the past!  
Therefore, friends, do your best to put God's call and selection of 10  
you beyond all doubt; for, if you do this, you will never fall. For  
in this way you will be given a triumphant admission into the 11  
eternal kingdom of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ.

*The Transfiguration and the  
"Second Coming" of the Christ*

12 I WILL, therefore, always be ready to remind you of all this, even  
13 though you know it and are firmly established in the truth that  
14 you now hold. But I think it my duty, as long as I live in this "tent,"  
15 to rouse you by awakening memories of the past; for I know that  
16 the time for this "tent" of mine to be put away is soon coming, as  
17 our Lord Jesus Christ himself assured me. So I will do my best to  
18 enable you, at any time after my departure, to call these truths to  
19 mind. For we were not following cleverly devised stories when  
20 we told you of the coming in power of our Lord Jesus Christ, but  
21 we had been eye-witnesses of his majesty. For he received honour  
and glory from God the Father, when from the glory of the Divine  
Majesty there were borne to his ears words such as these — "This  
is my dearly loved son, who brings me great joy." These were the  
words that we heard, borne to our ears from heaven, when we  
were with him on that sacred mountain. And still stronger is the  
assurance that we have in the teaching of the prophets; to which  
you will do well to pay attention (as if it were a lamp shining in a  
gloomy place), until the day dawns and the morning star rises in  
your hearts. But first be assured of this: — There is no prophetic  
teaching found in scripture that can be interpreted by a person's  
unaided reason; for no prophetic teaching ever came in the old  
days at the mere wish of people, but people, moved by the Holy  
Spirit, spoke direct from God.

*Warning against separating Christianity from a Holy Life*

2 BUT THERE WERE FALSE PROPHETS ALSO IN THE NATION, just as there  
will be false teachers among you, people who will secretly intro-  
duce ruinous divisions, disowning even the Lord who bought  
them, and bringing speedy ruin on themselves. There will be  
many, too, who will follow their licentious courses, and cause the  
way of the truth to be maligned. In their covetousness they will  
try to make you a source of profit by their fabrications; but for a  
long time past their sentence has not been standing idle, nor their  
ruin slumbering. Remember, God did not spare angels when they  
sinned, but sent them down to Tartarus, and consigned them to  
caverns of darkness, to be kept under guard for judgment. Nor

did he spare the world of old; though he preserved Noah, the preacher of righteousness, and seven others, when he brought a flood on the godless world. He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah and reduced them to ashes, holding them up as a warning to the godless of what was in store for them; but he rescued righteous Lot, whose heart was vexed by the wanton licentiousness of his neighbours; for, seeing and hearing what he did, as he lived his righteous life among them, day after day, Lot's righteous soul was tortured by their wicked doings. The Lord, therefore, knows how to deliver the pious from temptation, and to keep the wicked, who are even now suffering punishment, in readiness for "the day of judgment" — especially those who, following the promptings of their lower nature, indulge their polluting passions and despise all control. Audacious and self-willed, they feel no awe of the celestial beings, maligning them, even where angels, though excelling them in strength and power, do not bring against them a malignant charge before the Lord. These people, however, like animals without reason, intended by nature to be caught and killed — these people, I say, malign those of whom they know nothing, and will assuredly perish through their own corruption, suffering themselves, as the penalty for the suffering that they have inflicted. They think that pleasure consists in the self-indulgence of the moment. They are a stain and a disgrace, indulging, as they do, in their wanton revelry, even while joining you at your feasts. They have eyes only for adulteresses, eyes never tired of sin; they entice weak souls; their minds are trained to covet; they live under a curse. Leaving the straight road, they have gone astray and followed in the steps of Balaam, the son of Beor, who set his heart on the reward for wrongdoing, but was rebuked for his offence. A dumb animal spoke with a human voice, and checked the prophet's madness. These people are like springs without water, or mists driven before a gale; and for them the blackest darkness has been reserved. With boastful and foolish talk, they appeal to the passions of people's lower nature, and, by their profligacy, entice those who are just escaping from the people who live such misguided lives. They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves to corrupt habits; for a person is the slave of anything to which they give way. If, after having escaped the polluting influences of the world, through

knowing our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ, people are again entangled in them, and give way to them, their last state has become  
 21 worse than their first. It would, indeed, have been better for them  
 not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after knowing  
 22 it, to turn away from the holy command delivered to them. In  
 their case is seen the truth of the proverb — "A dog returns to  
 what it has vomited" and "A sow after washing to her wallowing-  
 place in the mud."

*A Reassertion of the "Second Coming" of the Christ*

3 THIS, dear friends, is my second letter to you. In both of them I  
 have tried, by appealing to your remembrance, to arouse your  
 2 better feelings. I want you to recall what was foretold by the holy  
 prophets, as well as the command of our Lord and Saviour given  
 3 to you through your apostles. First be assured of this, that, as  
 4 the age draws to an end, scoffers, led by their own passions, will  
 come and ask scoffingly — "Where is his promised coming? Ever  
 since our ancestors passed to their rest, everything remains just as  
 5 it was when the world was first created!" For they wilfully shut  
 their eyes to the fact that long ago the heavens existed; and the  
 earth, also — formed out of water and by the action of water, by  
 6 the fiat of God; and that by the same means the world which then  
 7 existed was destroyed in a deluge of water. But the present heavens  
 and earth, by the same fiat, have been reserved for fire, and  
 are being kept for the day of the judgment and destruction of the  
 godless.

8 But you, dear friends, must never shut your eyes to the fact that,  
 to the Lord, one day is the same as a thousand years, and a thou-  
 9 sand years as one day. The Lord is not slow to fulfil his promise, as  
 some count slowness; but he is forbearing with you, as it is not his  
 will that any of you should perish, but that all should be brought  
 10 to repentance. The day of the Lord will come like a thief; and on  
 that day the heavens will pass away with a crash, the elements  
 will be burnt up and dissolved, and the earth and all that is in it  
 11 will be disclosed. Now, since all these things are in the process of  
 dissolution, think what you yourselves ought to be — what holy  
 12 and pious lives you ought to lead, while you wait for the coming

of the day of God and strive to make it come soon<sup>12</sup> . At its coming the heavens will be dissolved in fire, and the elements melted by heat, but we look for “new heavens and a new earth,” where righteousness will have its home, in fulfilment of the promise of God. 13

Therefore, dear friends, in expectation of these things, make every effort to be found by him spotless, blameless, and at peace. Regard our Lord’s forbearance as your one hope of salvation. This is what our dear friend Paul wrote to you, with the wisdom that God gave him. It is the same in all his letters, when he speaks in them about these subjects. There are some things in them difficult to understand, which untaught and weak people distort, just as they do all other writings, to their own ruin. You must, therefore, dear friends, now that you know this beforehand, be on your guard against being led away by the errors of reckless people, and so lapsing from your present steadfastness; and advance in the love and knowledge of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ. All glory be to him now and for ever. 14 15 16 17 18

---

<sup>12</sup> Or “and desire its coming”





## JOHN'S FIRST LETTER

### *The Immortal Love*

IT IS OF WHAT HAS BEEN IN EXISTENCE FROM THE BEGINNING, of what 1  
we have heard, of what we have seen with our eyes, of what we  
watched reverently and touched with our hands — it is about the  
Word who is the life that we are now writing. That life was made 2  
visible, and we have seen it, and now bear our testimony to it,  
and tell you of that eternal life, which was with the Father and  
was made visible to us. It is of what we have seen and heard that 3  
we now tell you, so that you may have communion with us. And  
our communion is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ.  
And we are writing all this to you that our joy may be complete. 4

These, then, are the tidings that we have heard from him and now 5  
tell you — “God is light, and darkness has no place at all in him.”  
If we say that we have communion with him, and yet continue 6  
to live in the darkness, we lie, and are not living the truth. But,  
if our lives are lived in the light, as God himself is in the light, 7  
we have communion with one another, and the blood of Jesus,  
his Son, purifies us from all sin. If we say that there is no sin in 8  
us, we are deceiving ourselves, and the truth has no place in us.  
If we confess our sins, God may be trusted, in his righteousness, 9  
to forgive us our sins and purify us from all wickedness. If we  
say that we have not sinned, we are making God a liar, and his  
message has no place in us. 10

My children, I am writing to you to keep you from sinning; 2  
but if anyone should sin, we have one who can plead for us with  
the Father — Jesus Christ, the righteous — and he is the atoning 2  
sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but for those of the  
whole world besides. And by this we know that we have learned 3  
to know him — by our laying his commands to heart. The per- 4  
son who says “I know Jesus,” but does not lay his commands to  
heart, is a liar, and the truth has no place in them; but, whenever 5

a person lays his message to heart, in that person the love of God has indeed reached its perfection. By this we know that we are  
 6 in union with God — He who professes to maintain union with God is himself bound to live as Christ lived.

7 Dear friends, it is no new command that I am writing to you, but an old command, which you have had from the first. That old  
 8 command is the message to which you listened. Yet, in a way, it is a new command that I am writing to you — manifest in Christ's life and in your own — for the darkness is passing away and the  
 9 true light is already shining. The person who says that they are in the light, and yet hates others, is in the darkness even now.  
 10 The person who loves others is always in the light, and there is nothing within them to cause them to stumble; while the person  
 11 who hates others is in the darkness, and is living in the darkness, and does not know where they are going, because the darkness prevents them seeing.

12 I am writing, God's children, to you, because your sins have been forgiven you for Christ's sake. I am writing, adults in the  
 13 faith, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the beginning. I am writing, young ones in the faith, to you, because you have conquered the evil one. I write, children, to you,  
 14 because you have learned to know the Father. I write, adults in the faith, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the beginning. I write, young ones in the faith, to you, be-  
 15 cause you are strong, and God's message is always in your hearts, and you have conquered the evil one. Do not love the world or what the world can offer. When anyone loves the world, there is  
 16 no love for the Father in them; for all that the world can offer — the gratification of the earthly nature, the gratification of the eye, the pretentious life — belongs, not to the Father, but to the world.  
 17 And the world, and all that it gratifies, is passing away, but they who do God's will remains for ever.

### *Warnings against Antichrist*

18 MY CHILDREN, these are the last days. You were told that an antichrist was coming; and many antichrists have already arisen. By

that we know that these are the last days. From us, it is true, they 19  
went out, but they had never belonged to us; for, if they had be-  
longed to us, they would have remained among us. They left us  
that it might be made clear that they do not, any of them, belong  
to us. You, however, have received consecration from the Holy 20  
One. You all know — But I am not writing to you because you 21  
do not know the truth, but because you do know it, and because  
nothing false can come from the truth.

Who is a liar, if not the person who rejects the truth that Jesus is 22  
the Christ? That person is the antichrist — the person who rejects  
the Father and the Son. No one who rejects the Son has found the 23  
Father; the person who acknowledges the Son has found the Fa-  
ther also. As for you, let what you were told at the first be always 24  
in your thoughts. If, then, what you were told at the first is always  
in your thoughts, you yourselves will maintain your union both  
with the Son and with the Father. And this is what he himself 25  
promised us — eternal life!

In writing this to you, I have in mind those who are trying to 26  
mislead you. But you — you still retain in your hearts that conse-  
cration which you received from the Christ, and are not in need  
of anyone to teach you; but, since his consecration of you teaches  
you about everything, and since it is a real consecration, and no  
lie, then, as it has taught you, maintain your union with him. Yes, 28  
my children, maintain your union with Christ, so that, whenever  
he appears, our confidence may not fail us, and we may not be  
ashamed to meet him at his coming. Knowing him to be right- 29  
eous, you realise that everyone who lives righteously has received  
the new life from him.

*The Privileges and Duties of God's Children*

THINK WHAT LOVE THE FATHER HAS SHOWN US IN ALLOWING US TO BE 3  
called “children of God”; as indeed we are. The reason why the  
world does not know us is that it has not learned to know him.  
Dear friends, we are God’s children now; what we will be has 2  
not yet been revealed. What we do know is that, when it is re-  
vealed, we will be like Christ; because we will see him as he is.  
And everyone who has this hope with regard to Christ tries to 3  
make themselves pure — as Christ is pure.

4 Everyone who lives sinfully is living in violation of Law. Sin  
5 is violation of Law. And you know that Christ appeared to take  
6 away our sins; and in him sin has no place. No one who maintains  
7 union with him lives in sin; no one who lives in sin has ever really  
8 seen him or learned to know him. My children, do not let anyone  
9 mislead you. The person who lives righteously is righteous — as  
10 Christ is righteous. The person who lives sinfully belongs to the  
11 devil, for the devil has sinned from the first. It was for this that  
12 the Son of God appeared, that he might undo the devil's work.

9 No one who has received the new life from God lives sinfully,  
because the nature of God dwells within them; and they cannot  
live in sin, because they have received the new life from God. By  
10 this the children of God are distinguished from the children of  
the devil — No one who lives unrighteously comes from God,  
11 and especially the person who does not love others. For these are  
the tidings that we heard from the first — that we are to love one  
12 another. We must not be like Cain, who belonged to the evil one  
and killed his brother. And why did he kill him? It was because  
his life was bad while his brother's was good.

13 Do not wonder, friends, if the world hates you. We know that  
14 we have passed out of death into life, because we love each other.  
15 The person who does not love remains in a state of death. The  
person who hates another is a murderer; and you know that no  
murderer has eternal life within them.

16 We have learned to know what love is from this — that Christ  
laid down his life on our behalf. Therefore we also ought to lay  
17 down our lives for each other. But, if anyone has worldly pos-  
sessions, and yet looks on while one of our own is in need, and  
steals their heart against that person, how can it be said that the  
18 love of God is within them? My children, do not let our love be  
mere words, or end in talk; let it be true and show itself in acts.

19 By that we will know that we are on the side of the truth; and  
20 we will satisfy ourselves in God's sight, that if our conscience  
condemns us, yet God is greater than our conscience and knows  
21 everything. Dear friends, if our conscience does not condemn us,  
22 then we approach God with confidence, and we receive from  
him whatever we ask, because we are laying his commands to

heart, and are doing what is pleasing in his sight. His command 23  
is this — that we should put our trust in the name of his Son,  
Jesus Christ, and love one another, in accordance with the com-  
mand that he gave us. And the person who lays his commands 24  
to heart maintains union with Christ, and Christ with them. And  
by this we know that Christ maintains union with us — by our  
possession of the Spirit which he gave us.

*True and False Inspiration*

DEAR FRIENDS, do not trust every inspiration, but test each inspi- 4  
ration, to see whether it proceeds from God; because many false  
prophets have gone out into the world.

This is the way by which to know the inspiration of God — All 2  
inspiration that acknowledges Jesus Christ as come in our human  
nature is from God; while all inspiration that does not acknowl- 3  
edge Jesus is not inspiration from God. It is the inspiration of the  
Antichrist; you have heard that it was to come, and it is now al-  
ready in the world.

You, my children, come from God, and you have successfully 4  
resisted such people as these, because he who is in you is greater  
than the one who is in the world. Those people belong to the 5  
world; and therefore they speak as the world speaks, and the  
world listens to them. We come from God. He who knows God 6  
listens to us; the person who does not come from God does not  
listen to us. By that we may know the true inspiration from the  
false.

*Love of God and Love of People*

DEAR FRIENDS, let us love one another, because love comes from 7  
God; and everyone who loves has received the new life from God  
and knows God. The person who does not love has not learned to 8  
know God; for God is love. The love of God was revealed to us by 9  
his sending his only Son into the world, so that we might find life  
through him. His love is seen in this — not in our having loved 10  
God, but in his loving us and sending his Son to be an atoning  
sacrifice for our sins.

11 Dear friends, since God loved us in this way, we, surely, ought  
 12 to love one another. No human eyes have ever seen God, yet, if  
 13 we love one another, God remains in union with us, and his love  
 14 attains its perfection in us. We know that we remain in union  
 15 with him, and he with us, by this — by his having given us some  
 16 measure of his Spirit. Moreover, our eyes have seen — and we are  
 17 testifying to the fact — that the Father has sent the Son to be the  
 18 Saviour of the world. Whoever acknowledges that Jesus Christ is  
 19 the Son of God — God remains in union with that man, and he  
 20 with God. And, moreover, we have learned to know, and have  
 21 accepted as a fact, the love which God has for us.

God is love; and whoever lives in love lives in God, and God  
 17 in them. It is through this that love has attained its perfection  
 18 in us, so that we may have confidence on the day of judgment,  
 19 because what Christ is that we also are in this world. There is  
 20 no fear in love. No! Love, when perfect, drives out fear, because  
 21 fear implies punishment, and the person who feels fear has not  
 attained to perfect love. We love, because God first loved us. If  
 someone says "I love God," and yet hates another person, they are  
 a liar; for the person who does not love their fellow, whom they  
 have seen, cannot love God, whom they have not seen. Indeed,  
 we have this command from God — "Those who love God must  
 also love each other."

### *A Christian's Faith and Confidence*

5 EVERYONE WHO BELIEVES THAT JESUS IS THE CHRIST HAS received the  
 new life from God; and everyone who loves him who gave that life  
 2 loves him who has received it. By this we know that we love God's  
 children — when we love God and carry out his commands. For  
 3 to love God is to lay his commands to heart; and his commands  
 4 are not burdensome, because all that has received the new life  
 from God conquers the world. And this is the power that has  
 5 conquered the world — our faith! Who is the person that con-  
 quers the world but the person who believes that Jesus is the Son  
 6 of God? He it is whose coming was by water and blood — Jesus  
 Christ himself; not by water only, but by water and by blood. And  
 there is the Spirit also to bear testimony, and the Spirit is truth it-  
 7 self. It is a threefold testimony — that of the Spirit, the water, and  
 8

the blood — and these three are at one. We accept the testimony 9  
of people, but God’s testimony is still stronger; and there is the  
testimony of God — the fact that he has already borne testimony  
about his Son. The person who believes in the Son of God has that 10  
testimony within them. The person who does not believe God has  
made God a liar, by refusing to believe in that testimony which he  
has borne about his Son. And that testimony is that God gave us 11  
eternal life, and that this life is in his Son. The person who finds 12  
the Son finds life; the person who does not find the Son of God  
does not find life.

I write this to you so that you may realise that you have found 13  
eternal life — you who believe in the name of the Son of God. And  
this is the confidence with which we approach him, that when- 14  
ever we ask anything that is in accordance with his will, he listens  
to us. And if we realise that he listens to us — whatever we ask — 15  
we realise that we have what we have asked from him. If anyone 16  
sees one of our people committing some sin that is not a deadly  
sin, they will ask, and so be the means of giving life to them — to  
any whose sin is not deadly. There is such a thing as deadly sin;  
about that I do not say that a person should pray. Every wrong 17  
action is sin, and there is sin that is not deadly.

We know that no one who has received the new life from God 18  
lives in sin. No, the person who has received the new life from  
God keeps the thought of God in their heart, and then the evil one  
does not touch them. We realise that we come from God, while 19  
all the world is under the influence of the evil one. We realise, 20  
too, that the Son of God has come among us, and has given us the  
discernment to know the true God; and we are in union with the  
true God by our union with his Son, Jesus Christ. He is the true  
God and he is eternal life. My children, guard yourselves against 21  
false ideas of God.





## JOHN'S SECOND LETTER

To an eminent Christian Lady, and to her children, from the church elder. I sincerely love you all, and not I only, but also all those who have learned to know the truth. We love you for the sake of that truth which is always in our hearts; yes, and it will be ours for ever.

Blessing, mercy, and peace will be ours — the gift of God, the Father, and of Jesus Christ, the Father's Son — in a life of truth and love.

It was a great joy to me to find the lives of some of your children guided by the truth, in obedience to the command that we received from the Father. And now, I pray you, Lady — not as though I were writing a new command for you; no, it is the command which we had from the first — Let us love one another. And this is love — to live in obedience to the Father's commands. This is the command as you learned from the first, to live in a spirit of love. I say this because many impostors have left us to go into the world — people who do not acknowledge Jesus as Christ come in our human nature. It is that which marks someone as an impostor and an antichrist. Take care that you do not lose the fruit of all our work; rather, reap the benefit of it in full. Everyone who goes beyond the limits of the teaching of the Christ has failed to find God; the person who keeps to that teaching — they have found both the Father and the Son. If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching, do not receive them into your house or welcome them; for the person who welcomes them is sharing with them in his wicked work.

Though I have a great deal to say to you, I would rather not trust it to paper and ink, but I am hoping to come and see you, and to

13 speak with you face to face, so that your joy may be complete. The  
children of your eminent sister send you their greetings.

## JOHN'S THIRD LETTER

To his dear friend Gaius, whom he sincerely loves, From the church elder. 1

Dear friend, I pray that all may be well with you and that you may have good health — I know that all is well with your soul. For it was a great joy to me, when some followers of the Lord came and testified to your fidelity to the truth — I know that your own life is guided by the truth. Nothing gives me greater pleasure than to hear from time to time that the lives of my children are guided by the truth. 2 3 4

Dear friend, whatever you do for other followers is done in a Christian spirit — even when they are strangers to you. They themselves have testified before the church to your love; and you will do well to help them on their way in a manner worthy of the service of God. For it was on behalf of the name that they left their homes, and refused to take anything from the Gentiles. We, therefore, ought to give such people a hearty welcome, and so take our share in their work for the truth. 5 6 7 8

I wrote a few lines to the church; but Diotrephes, who loves to be first among them, declines to recognise us. Therefore, when I come, I will not forget his conduct in ridiculing us with his wicked tongue. Not content with that, he not only declines to recognise our friends who are followers himself, but actually prevents those who would, and expels them from the church. 9 10

Dear friend, take what is good for your example, not what is bad. The person who does what is good is from God; the person who does what is bad has never seen God. Everyone has always had a good word for Demetrius, and the truth itself speaks for him. Yes, and we also add our good word, and you know that what we say about him is true. 11 12

13 I have a great deal to say to you, but I do not care to trust it to  
14 pen and ink in a letter. I hope, however, it will not be long before  
I see you, and then we will speak face to face. Peace be with you.  
Our friends here send you their greetings. Greet each one of our  
friends.

# THE LETTER FROM JUDE

## *Introduction*

TO THOSE WHO, having received the call, have been loved by God 1  
the Father and protected by Jesus Christ, From Jude, a servant of  
Jesus Christ, and the brother of James. May mercy, peace, and 2  
love be yours in ever increasing measure.

## *Warnings against moral corruption*

DEAR FRIENDS, while I was making every effort to write to you 3  
about our common salvation, I felt that I must write to you at once  
to encourage you to fight in defence of the faith that has once for  
all been entrusted to the keeping of Christ's people. For there 4  
have crept in among you certain godless people, whose sentence  
has long since been pronounced, and who make the mercy of God  
an excuse for profligacy, and disown our only lord and master, Je-  
sus Christ.

Now I want to remind you — but you already know it all — 5  
that, though the Lord delivered the people from Egypt, yet he af-  
terwards destroyed those who refused to believe in him; and that 6  
even those angels, who did not keep to their appointed spheres,  
but left their proper homes, have been kept by him for the judg-  
ment of the great day in everlasting chains and black darkness.  
Like Sodom and Gomorrah and the towns near them, which gave 7  
themselves up to fornication, and fell into unnatural vice, these  
angels now stand out as a warning, undergoing, as they are, pun-  
ishment in eternal fire.

Yet in the same way these people, too, cherishing vain dreams, 8  
pollute our human nature, reject control, and malign the celest-  
stial beings. Yet even Michael, the archangel, when, in his dispute 9  
with the devil, he was arguing about the body of Moses, did not  
venture to charge him with maligning, but said merely "The Lord

- 10 rebuke you!" But these people malign whatever they do not understand; while they use such things as they know by instinct (like  
11 the animals that have no reason) for their own corruption. Alas for them! They walk in the steps of Cain; led astray by Balaam's love of gain, they plunge into sin, and meet their ruin through  
12 rebellion like Korah. These are the people who are blots on your "love-feasts," when they feast together and provide without scruple for themselves alone. They are clouds without rain, driven before the winds; they are leafless trees without a vestige of fruit,  
13 dead through and through, torn up by the roots; they are wild sea waves, foaming with their own shame; they are "wandering stars," for which the blackest darkness has been reserved for ever.
- 14 To these people, as to others, Enoch, the seventh in descent from Adam, declared — "See! The Lord has come with his hosts  
15 of holy ones around him, to execute judgment on all people, and to convict all godless people of all their godless acts, which in their ungodliness they have committed, and of all the harsh words which they have spoken against him, godless sinners that they are!"
- 16 These people are always murmuring, and complaining of their lot; they follow where their passions lead them; they have arrogant words on their lips; and they flatter others for the sake of what they can get from them.
- 17 But you should, dear friends, recall what was foretold by the  
18 apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; how they used to say to you — "As time draws to an end, there will be scoffers, who will be led  
19 by their godless passions." These are the people — animal and unspiritual — who cause divisions. But you must, dear friends,  
20 build up your characters on the foundation of your most holy faith, pray under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, and keep within the love of God, while waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus  
21 Christ, to bring you to eternal life. To some show pity, because they are in doubt. "Drag them out of the fire," and save them. To  
22 others show pity, but with caution, hating the clothing polluted by their touch.

*Ascription*

*Ascription*

TO HIM WHO IS ABLE TO GUARD YOU FROM FALLING, and to bring you 24  
into his glorious presence, blameless and rejoicing — to the one 25  
God, our Saviour, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, our Lord,  
glory, majesty, power, and dominion, as it was before time began,  
is now, and will be for all time to come. Amen.





## THE REVELATION TO JOHN

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him to 1  
make known to his servants, concerning what must shortly take  
place, and which he sent and revealed by his angel to his servant  
John, who testified to the message of God and to the testimony to 2  
Jesus Christ, omitting nothing of what he had seen. Blessed is the 3  
one who reads, and blessed are they who listen to, the words of  
this prophecy, and lay to heart what is here written; for the time  
is near.

### *Messages to the Seven Churches*

FROM JOHN, to the seven churches which are in Roman Asia. Bless- 4  
ing and peace be yours from him who is, and who was, and who  
will be, and from the seven spirits that are before his throne, and  
from Jesus Christ, “the faithful witness, the first-born from the 5  
dead, and the Ruler of all the kings of the earth.” To him who  
loves us and freed us from our sins by his own blood — and he 6  
made us “a kingdom of priests in the service of God,” his Father!  
— to Him be ascribed glory and dominion for ever. Amen. “He 7  
is coming among the clouds!” Every eye will see him, even those  
who pierced him; “and all the nations of the earth will mourn  
over him.” So will it be. Amen.

“I am the Alpha and the Omega,” says the Lord, the God who is, 8  
and who was, and who will be, the Almighty.

I, John, who am your brother, and who share with you in the 9  
suffering and kingship and endurance of Jesus, found myself on  
the island called Patmos, for the sake of the message of God and  
the testimony to Jesus. I fell into a trance on the Lord’s day, and I 10  
heard behind me a loud voice, like the blast of a trumpet. It said — 11  
“Write what you see in a book and send it to the seven churches, to  
Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and

12 Laodicaea." I turned to see what voice it was that spoke to me;  
 13 and when I turned, I saw seven golden lamps, and in the midst  
 of the lamps one "like a man, in a robe reaching to his feet," and  
 14 with a golden sash across his breast. "The hair of his head was as  
 white as wool, as white as snow; his eyes were like flaming fire;  
 15 and his feet were like brass" as when molten in a furnace; "his  
 16 voice was like the sound of many streams," in his right hand he  
 held seven stars, from his mouth came a sharp two-edged sword,  
 17 and his face was like "the sun in the fulness of its power." And,  
 when I saw him, I fell at his feet like one dead. He laid his hand on  
 18 me and said — "Do not be afraid. I am the First and the Last, the  
 Everliving. I died, and I am alive for ever and ever. And I hold the  
 19 keys of the Grave and of the place of the dead. Therefore write of  
 what you have seen and of what is happening now and of what is  
 20 about to take place — the mystic meaning of the seven stars which  
 you saw in my right hand, and the seven golden lamps. The seven  
 stars are the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lamps are  
 the seven churches.

2 To the angel of the church in Ephesus write: —

"These are the words of him who holds the seven stars in  
 his right hand, and walks among the seven golden lamps:  
 2 — I know your life, your toil and endurance, and I know  
 that you cannot tolerate evil-doers. I know, too, how you  
 tested those who declare that they are apostles, though  
 3 they are not, and how you proved them false. You possess  
 endurance, and have borne much for my name, and  
 4 have never grown weary. But this I have against you —  
 5 You have abandoned your first love. Therefore remember  
 from what you have fallen, and repent, and live the life  
 that you lived before; or else, I will come and remove your  
 6 Lamp from its place, unless you repent. But this is in your  
 favour — You hate the life lived by the Nikolaitans, and I  
 7 also hate it. Anyone with ears should hear what the Spirit  
 is saying to the churches. To him who conquers — to him I  
 will give the right "to eat the fruit of the Tree of life, which  
 stands in the Paradise of God." "

To the angel of the church in Smyrna write: — 8  
 ‘These are the words of him who is the First and the Last,  
 who died, but is restored to life: — I know your persecu- 9  
 tion and your poverty — yet you are rich! I know, too, the  
 slander that comes from those who declare that they are  
 God’s people<sup>13</sup>, though they are not, but are a congrega-  
 tion of Satan. Do not be afraid of what you are about to 10  
 suffer. The devil is about to throw some of you into prison  
 so that you may be tempted, and may undergo persecution  
 for ten days. Be faithful even to death, and I will give you  
 the Crown of life. Let those who have ears hear what the 11  
 Spirit is saying to the churches. Those who conquer will  
 suffer no hurt from the Second Death.’

To the angel of the church in Pergamus write: — 12  
 ‘These are the words of him who holds the sharp  
 two-edged sword: — I know where you live, where the 13  
 throne of Satan stands. And yet you hold to my name,  
 and you did not disown my faith even in the days of  
 Antipas, my faithful witness, who was put to death  
 among you where Satan dwells. Yet I have a few things 14  
 against you — You have among you those who hold to  
 the teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put  
 temptations in the way of the Israelites, so that they  
 should eat idol-offerings and commit licentious acts.  
 Again you have among you those who hold in the same 15  
 way to the teaching of the Nikolaitans. Therefore repent, 16  
 or else, I will come quickly and contend with such people  
 with words that will cut like a sword. Let those who have 17  
 ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches. To  
 those who conquer — to them I will give a share of the  
 mystic manna, and I will give them a white stone; and on

---

<sup>13</sup> God’s people: Literally “Jews.” These people claimed to be God’s people because they were Jews.

the stone will be inscribed a new name, which no one knows except the person who receives it.'

18 To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: —

'These are the words of the Son of God, "whose eyes are like flaming fire, and whose feet are like brass": — I know your life, your love, faith, service, and endurance; and I know that your life of late has been better than it was at first. Yet I have this against you — You tolerate the woman Jezebel, who declares that she is a prophet, and misleads my servants by her teaching, until they commit licentious acts and eat idol-offerings. I gave her time to repent, but she is determined not to turn from her licentiousness. Therefore I am laying her on a bed of sickness, and bringing great suffering on those who are unfaithful with her, unless they repent and turn from a life like hers. I will also put her children to death; and all the churches will learn that I am he who "looks into people's hearts and souls"; and I will give to each one of you what their life deserves. But I say to the rest of you at Thyatira — all who do not accept such teaching, whose who did not learn "the secrets of Satan," as people call them — I am not laying on you any further burden; only hold fast to what you have received, until I come. To those who conquer and are careful to live my life to the end — to them I will give authority over the nations, and "they will rule them with an iron rod, as when earthen vessels are broken in pieces" (as I myself have received from my Father) and I will give them the morning star. Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches.'

3 To the angel of the church in Sardis write: —

'These are the words of him who has the seven spirits of God and the seven stars; — I know your life, and that people say of you that you are living, though you are dead. Be

on the watch, and strengthen what still survives, though 2  
 once it was all but dead; for I have not found your life per- 3  
 fect in the eyes of my God. Therefore remember what you 3  
 have received and heard, and lay it to heart and repent. Un-  
 less you are on the watch, I will come like a thief, and you 4  
 will not know at what hour I am coming to you. Yet there 4  
 are some few among you at Sardis who did not soil their  
 robes; they will walk with me, robed in white, for they are 5  
 worthy. Those who conquer will be clothed in these white 5  
 robes, and I will not “strike their name out of the book of  
 life”; but I will own them before my Father, and before his 6  
 angels. Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is 6  
 saying to the churches.’

To the angel of the church in Philadelphia write: — 7

“These are the words of him who is holy and true, who 8  
 holds “the Key of David, who opens and no one will shut,  
 and shuts and no one opens”: — I know your life (see, I 8  
 have set a door open before you which no one is able to  
 shut), I know that, though you have but little strength, you  
 kept my teaching in mind, and did not disown my name. 9  
 Listen, I give some of the congregation of Satan, the peo- 9  
 ple who declare that they are God’s people<sup>14</sup>, though they  
 are not, but are lying — I will make them “come and bow  
 down at your feet,” and they will learn that I loved you.  
 Because you kept in mind the story of my endurance, I 10  
 will keep you in the hour of trial that is about to come on  
 the whole world, the hour that will test all who are living 11  
 on earth. I will come quickly. Hold to what you have re- 11  
 ceived so that no one may take your crown. Those who 12  
 conquer — I will make them a pillar in the Temple of my  
 God; and never more will they leave it; and I will write  
 on them the name of my God and the name of the city of  
 my God, the New Jerusalem, which is coming down out  
 of heaven from my God, and I will write on them my new

---

<sup>14</sup> God’s people: Literally “Jews.” These people claimed to be God’s people because they were Jews.

13 name. Let those who have ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches.'

14 To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: —

'These are the words of the Unchanging One, "the witness faithful and true, the beginning of the Creation of God": —  
 15 I know your life; I know that you are neither cold nor hot.  
 16 If only you were either cold or hot! But now, because you are lukewarm, neither hot nor cold, I am about to spit you out of my mouth. You say "I am rich and have grown rich, and I want for nothing," and you do not know that you  
 17 are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, naked! Therefore I counsel you to buy from me gold which has been refined by fire so that you may grow rich; and white robes, so that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness be hidden; and ointment to anoint your eyes, so that you may see.  
 18 "All whom I love I rebuke and discipline." Therefore be in earnest and repent. I am standing at the door and knocking! If anyone hears my voice and opens the door, I will go in, and will feast with them, and they will feast with me.  
 19 To those who conquer — to them I will give the right to sit beside me on my throne, as I, when I conquered, took my seat beside my Father on his throne. Let those who have  
 20 ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the churches.'

### *The Vision of the Seven Seals*

4 AFTER THIS, in my vision, I saw an open door in the heavens, and the first voice that I heard was like the blast of a trumpet speaking to me. It said — "Come up here and I will show you what must take place." Immediately after this I fell into a trance. There stood  
 2 a throne in heaven, and on the throne was One seated. He who was seated on it was in appearance like a jasper and a sardius; and  
 3 "round the throne there was a rainbow" of the colour of an emerald. And round the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and on these I saw twenty-four elders sitting clothed in white robes;  
 4 and on their heads they had crowns of gold. Out from the throne  
 5

“come flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder”! There are seven torches burning in front of the throne, which are the seven spirits of God; and in front of the throne is what seemed to be a sea of glass, “resembling crystal, while within the space before the throne and round the throne are four creatures full of eyes” in front and behind. The first creature is like a lion, the second creature like a calf, the third creature has a face like a man’s, and the fourth creature is like an eagle on the wing. These four creatures have each of them six wings, and all round, and within, they are full of eyes; and day and night they never cease to say —

“Holy, holy, holy is the Lord, our God, the Almighty, who was, and who is, and who will be.”

And, whenever these creatures give praise and honour and thanks to him who is “seated on the throne, to him who lives for ever and ever,” the twenty-four elders prostrate themselves before him who is seated on the throne, and worship him who lives for ever and ever, and throw down their crowns before the throne, saying —

“Worthy are you, our Lord and God, to receive all praise, and honour, and power, for you did create all things, and at your bidding they came into being and were created.”

Then I saw at the right hand of him who was “seated on the throne a book, with writing inside and out, and sealed” with seven seals; and I saw a mighty angel who was proclaiming in a loud voice — “Who is worthy to open the book and break its seals?” But no one either in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the book or look within it. At this I wept long, because no one could be found who was worthy to open the book or look within it. But one of the elders said to me — “Do not weep. The Lion conquered — the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Scion of David — and can therefore open the book with its seven seals.”

Then, within the space between the throne and the four creatures, and in the midst of the elders, I saw, standing, a Lamb, which seemed to have been sacrificed. It had seven horns and seven eyes. (These eyes are the seven spirits of God, and they are sent into all the world.) The Lamb came forward; and he has taken the book from the right hand of him who was seated

8 on the throne. And, when he had taken the book, the four creatures and the twenty-four elders prostrated themselves before the Lamb, each of them holding a harp and golden bowls full of incense. (These are the prayers of Christ's people.) And they are singing a new song —

9 “You are worthy to take the book and break its seals, for you were sacrificed, and with your blood you did buy for God people of every tribe, and language, and people, and nation, and did make them a kingdom of priests in the service of our God, and they are reigning on the earth.”

10 Then, in my vision, I heard the voices of many angels round the throne, and of the creatures, and of the elders. In number they were “ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands,” and they cried in a loud voice —

11 “Worthy is the Lamb that was sacrificed to receive all power, and wealth, and wisdom, and might, and honour, and praise, and blessing.”

12 And I heard every created thing in the air, and on the earth, and under the earth, and on the sea, and all that is in them crying —

13 “To him who is seated on the throne and to the Lamb be ascribed all blessing, and honour, and praise, and dominion for ever and ever.”

14 And the four creatures said “Amen,” and the elders prostrated themselves and worshiped.

6 Then I saw the Lamb break one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four creatures crying with a voice like thunder — “Come.”

2 And in my vision I saw “a white horse.” Its rider held a bow, and he was given a crown, and he went out conquering and to conquer.

3 When the Lamb broke the second seal, I heard the second creature crying — “Come.” Then there went out another horse, “a red horse,” and to its rider was given the power to deprive the earth of peace, so that people should kill one another; and he was given a great sword.



When the Lamb broke the third seal, I heard the third creature 5  
crying — “Come.” And in my vision I saw “a black horse.” Its  
rider held scales in his hand. And I heard what seemed to be a 6  
voice, coming from among the four creatures, crying — “A quart  
of wheat for a silver coin, and three quarts of barley for a silver  
coin! But do not harm the oil and the wine.”

When the Lamb broke the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the 7  
fourth creature crying — “Come.” And in my vision I saw a grey 8  
horse. His rider’s name was Death, and the Lord of the place  
of Death rode behind him; and power was given them over the  
fourth part of the earth, so that they might “destroy with sword  
and famine and death, and by means of the wild beasts of the  
earth.”

When the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the 9  
souls of those who had been killed for the sake of God’s message  
and for the testimony which they had borne. They cried in a loud 10  
voice — “How long, Sovereign Lord, holy and true, before you  
will give judgment and avenge our blood on all who are living  
on the earth?” Then to each of them was given a white robe, and 11  
they were told to rest yet a little longer, until the number of their  
fellow servants and of their friends in Christ’s service who were  
about to be put to death, as they had been, should be complete.

And I saw the Lamb break the sixth seal, and then there was a 12  
great earthquake. The sun became black, like sackcloth, and the  
moon, which was at its full, like blood. “The stars of the heavens 13  
fell” to the earth, as when a fig-tree, shaken by a strong wind,  
drops its unripe fruit. The heavens disappeared like a scroll when 14  
it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from  
its place. Then all the kings of the earth, and the princes, and the 15  
generals, and the rich, and the powerful, and every slave and free  
person, “hid themselves in the caves and under the rocks” of the  
mountains; and they are crying to the mountains and the rocks 16  
— “Fall on us, and hide us from the eyes of him who is seated on  
the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of 17  
his wrath is come, and who can stand to meet it?”

After this, I saw four angels standing “on the four corners 7  
of the earth,” restraining the four winds of the earth, so that no  
wind should blow over the earth, or over the sea, or against any  
tree. And, in the east, I saw another angel, ascending, holding 2  
the seal of the living God; and he cried in a loud voice to the four

angels, to whom there had been given power to harm the earth  
3 and the sea — “Do not harm the earth, or the sea, or the trees,  
until we have sealed the servants of our God on their foreheads.”  
4 I heard, too, the number of those who had been sealed. It was  
one hundred and forty-four thousand; and they were from every  
tribe of the Israelites.

5 From the tribe of Judah twelve thousand were sealed,  
from the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Gad twelve thousand,  
6 from the tribe of Asher twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Naphtali twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand,  
7 from the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Levi twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand,  
8 from the tribe of Zebulun twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand,  
from the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand were sealed.

9 After this, in my vision, I saw a vast throng which no one could  
number, of people from every nation and of all tribes, and  
peoples, and languages. They stood in front of the throne and in  
front of the Lamb, robed in white, holding palm branches in  
10 their hands. And they are crying in a loud voice —

“Salvation be ascribed to our God who is seated on his  
throne and to the Lamb.”

11 And all the angels were standing round the throne and the elders  
and the four creatures, and they prostrated themselves on their  
12 faces in front of the throne and worshiped God, saying —

“Amen. Blessing and praise, and wisdom, and thanksgiv-  
ing, and honour, and power, and might be ascribed to our  
God for ever and ever. Amen.”

13 Then one of the elders turned to me and said “Who are these who  
are robed in white? And where did they come from?”

14 “My Lord,” I answered, “it is you who know.”

“These,” he said, “are they who come through the Great Persecution; they washed their robes white in the blood of the Lamb. And therefore it is that they are before the throne of God, and are serving him day and night in his Temple; and he who is seated on the throne will shelter them. Never again will they be hungry, never again will they be thirsty, nor will the sun smite them, nor any scorching heat; for the Lamb that stands in the space before the throne will be their shepherd, and will lead them to life-giving springs of water; and God will wipe away all tears from their eyes.”

As soon as the Lamb had broken the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for, it might be, half an hour.

### *Vision of Seven Trumpet-Blasts*

THEN I SAW THE SEVEN ANGELS WHO STAND before God, and seven trumpets were given to them.

Next, another angel came and stood at the altar with a golden censer in his hand; and a great quantity of incense was given to him, to mingle with the prayers of all Christ’s people on the golden altar before the throne. The smoke of the incense ascended, with the prayers of Christ’s people, from the hand of the angel before God. Then the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire from the altar, and threw it down on the earth; and there followed “peals of thunder, cries, flashes of lightning,” and an earthquake. Then the seven angels holding the seven trumpets prepared to blow their blasts.

The first blew; and there came hail and fire mixed with blood, and it fell on the earth. A third part of the earth was burnt up, and a third of the trees, and every blade of grass.

Then the second angel blew; and what appeared to be a great mountain, burning, was hurled into the sea. A third of the sea became blood, and a third part of all created things that are in the sea — that is, of all living things — died, and a third of the ships was destroyed.

Then the third angel blew; and there fell from the heavens a great star, burning like a torch. It fell on a third of the rivers and

- 11 on the springs. (The star is called "Wormwood.") A third of the water became bitter as wormwood, and so bitter was the water that many died from drinking it.
- 12 Then the fourth angel blew; and a third of the sun and a third of the moon and a third of the stars were blasted, so that a third of them was eclipsed, and for a third part of the day there was no light, and at night it was the same.
- 13 And, in my vision, I heard an eagle flying in mid-heaven and crying in a loud voice — "Woe, woe, woe for all who live on the earth, at the other trumpet-blasts of the three angels who have yet to blow."
- 9 Then the fifth angel blew; and I saw a star that had fallen on the earth from the heavens, and to him was given the key of the  
2 bottomless pit. He opened the bottomless pit, and from the pit rose a smoke like the smoke of a great furnace. The sun and the  
3 air grew dark because of the smoke from the pit. Out of the smoke locusts descended on the earth, and they received the same power  
4 as that possessed by scorpions. They were told not to harm the grass, or any plant, or any tree, but only those who have not "the  
5 seal of God on their foreheads." Yet they were not allowed to kill them, but it was ordered that those men should be tortured for  
6 five months. Their torture was like the torture caused by a scorpion when it stings a person. In those days people "will seek  
7 Death and will not find it"; They will long to die, but Death flees  
8 from them. In appearance the locusts were like horses equipped for battle. On their heads there were what appeared to be crowns  
9 that shone like gold, their faces resembled human faces, and they had hair like the hair of a woman, their teeth were like lions'  
10 teeth, and they had what seemed to be iron breastplates, while the noise of their wings was like the noise of chariots drawn by  
11 many horses, galloping into battle. They have tails like scorpions, and stings, and in their tails lies their power to harm people for  
12 five months. They have as their king the angel of the bottomless pit, whose name, in Hebrew, is "Abaddon," while, in Greek, his name is "Apollyon" (the Destroyer).
- 12 The first Woe has passed; and still there are two Woes to follow!

Then the sixth angel blew; and I heard a voice proceeding from 13  
 the corners of the golden altar that stood before God. It spoke to 14  
 the sixth angel — the angel with the trumpet — and said “Let  
 loose the four angels that are in chains at the great river  
 Euphrates.” Then the four angels, that were held in readiness 15  
 for that hour and day and month and year, were let loose, to  
 destroy a third of mankind. The number of the hosts of cavalry 16  
 was ten thousand times ten thousand, twice told; I heard their  
 number. And this is what the horses and their riders appeared 17  
 to be like in my vision: — They had breastplates of fire,  
 blood-red and sulphurous, and the heads of the horses were like  
 lions’ heads, while out of their mouths issue fire, and smoke,  
 and sulphur. Through these three curses a third of humanity 18  
 perished — because of the fire, and the smoke, and the sulphur  
 that issued from their mouths; for the power of the horses lies 19  
 in their mouths and in their tails. For their tails are like snakes,  
 with heads, and it is with them that they do harm. But those 20  
 who were left of humanity, who had not perished through these  
 curses, did not repent and turn away from what their own hands  
 had made; they would not abandon the worship of “demons,  
 and of idols made of gold or silver or brass or stone or wood,  
 which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk”; and they did not 21  
 repent of their murders, or their sorceries, or their  
 licentiousness, or their thefts.

Then I saw another mighty angel, descending from heaven. **10**  
 His robe was a cloud; over his head was the rainbow; his face was  
 like the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; in his hand he held 2  
 a little book open. He set his right foot on the sea, and his left on  
 the land; and he cried in a loud voice like the roaring of a lion. At 3  
 his cry the seven peals of thunder spoke, each with its own voice.  
 And, when they spoke, I was about to write; but I heard a voice 4  
 from heaven say — “Keep secret what the seven peals of thunder  
 said, and do not write it down.” Then the angel, whom I had 5  
 seen standing on the sea and on the land, “raised his right hand  
 to the heavens, and swore by him who lives for ever and ever, 6  
 who created the heavens and all that is in them, and the earth  
 and all that is in it, and the sea and all that is in it,” that time  
 should cease to be. Moreover at the time when the seventh angel 7  
 will speak, when he is ready to blow his blast, then the hidden  
 purposes of God, of which he told the good news to his servants,

8 the prophets, are at once fulfilled. Then came the voice which I  
had heard from heaven. It spoke to me again, and said — “Go and  
9 take the book that is open in the hand of the angel who stands on  
the sea and on the land.” So I went to the angel and asked him  
to give me the little book. And he said “Take it, and eat it. It will  
be bitter to your stomach, but in your mouth it will be as sweet  
10 as honey.” I took the little book out of the angel’s hand “and ate  
it, and, while in my mouth, it was like the sweetest honey”; but,  
11 when I had eaten it, it was bitter to my stomach. And I was told  
— “You must prophesy again about men of many peoples, and  
nations, and languages, and about many kings.”

11 Then I was given a measure like a rod, and a voice said to me  
— “Go and measure the Temple of God and the altar, and count  
2 the worshiper there. But omit the court outside the Temple, and  
do not measure that, for it has been given up to the nations; and  
the holy City will be under their heel for forty-two months. Then  
3 I will give permission to my Two Witnesses, and for those twelve  
hundred and sixty days they will continue teaching, clothed in  
4 sackcloth.” These men are represented by “the two olive trees  
and the two lamps that stand before the Lord of the earth.” When  
5 anyone wishes to harm them, “fire comes from their mouths and  
consumes their enemies”; and whoever wishes to harm them will,  
6 in this way, inevitably perish. These men have the power to close  
the heavens, so that “no rain may fall” during the time that they  
are teaching; and they have power “to turn the streams into blood,  
7 and to smite the land with any curse,” whenever they will. As  
soon as they have completed their testimony, “the wild Beast that  
ascends from the bottomless pit will make war on them and con-  
8 quer” and kill them. Their dead bodies will lie in the streets of the  
great city, which is mystically spoken of as “Sodom” and “Egypt,”  
9 where their Master was crucified. People of all nations, and tribes,  
and languages, and races look at their dead bodies for three days  
10 and a half, and do not allow them to be laid in a grave. Those who  
live on the earth rejoice over them and are merry, and they will  
send presents to one another, because these two prophets brought  
11 torments on those who live on the earth. After three days and a  
half “the life-giving breath of God entered these men, and they  
stood up on their feet,” and a great terror took possession of those  
12 who were watching them. The two men heard a loud voice from  
heaven which said to them — “Come up here,” and they went

up to heaven in the cloud, while their enemies watched them. At that very time a great earthquake occurred. A tenth part of the city fell, and seven thousand people perished in the earthquake. Those who escaped were much terrified, and praised the God of heaven.

The second Woe has passed; and there is a third Woe soon to follow!

Then the seventh angel blew; and loud voices were heard in heaven saying —

“The kingdom of the world has become the kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever and ever.”

At this the twenty-four elders, who were seated on their thrones before God, prostrated themselves on their faces and worshiped Him, saying —

“We thank you, Lord, our God, the Almighty, who is and who was, that you have assumed your great power and reigned. The nations were enraged, and your wrath fell on them; the time came for the dead to be judged, and for you to give the reward to your servants the prophets, and to the people of Christ, and to those who honour your name — the high and the low alike — and to destroy those who are destroying the earth.”

Then the Temple of God in heaven was opened, and the ark containing his covenant was seen in his Temple; and there followed “flashes of lightning, cries, peals of thunder,” an earthquake, and “a great storm of hail.”

*Vision of Seven Figures*

THEN A GREAT PORTENT WAS SEEN IN THE HEAVENS — A WOMAN WHOSE robe was the sun, and who had the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars. She was pregnant; and “she is crying out in the pain and agony of childbirth.” Another portent also was seen in the heavens There was a great red Dragon, with

seven heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems.  
 4 His tail draws after it a third of the stars in the heavens, and it  
 hurled them down on the earth. The Dragon is standing in front  
 of the woman who is about to give birth to the child, so that he  
 5 may devour it as soon as it is born. The woman gave birth to a son,  
 a male child, who is destined to rule all the nations with an iron  
 rod; and her child was at once caught up to God on his throne.  
 6 But the woman fled into the wilderness, where there is a place  
 prepared for her by God, to be tended there for twelve hundred  
 and sixty days.  
 7 Then a battle took place in the heavens. Michael and his angels  
 fought with the Dragon. But though the Dragon, with his angels,  
 8 fought, he did not prevail; and there was no place left for them  
 9 any longer in the heavens. Then the great Dragon, the primeval  
 snake, known as the "devil" and "Satan," who deceives all the  
 world, was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were hurled  
 10 down with him. And I heard a loud voice in heaven which said  
 —

"Now has begun the day of the salvation, and Power, and  
 Dominion of our God, and the Rule of his Christ; for the  
 Accuser of our people has been hurled down, he who has  
 11 been accusing them before our God day and night. Their  
 victory was due to the blood of the Lamb, and to the mes-  
 sage to which they bore their testimony. In their love of life  
 12 they shrank not from death. Therefore, be glad, heaven,  
 and all who live in heaven! Alas for the earth and for the  
 sea, for the devil has gone down to you in great fury, know-  
 ing that he has but little time."

13 when the Dragon saw that he was hurled down to the earth, he  
 pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But  
 14 to the woman were given the two wings of the great eagle, so  
 that she might fly to her place in the wilderness, where she is  
 being tended for "one year, and for two years, and for half a year"  
 15 in safety from the snake. Then the snake poured water from its  
 mouth after the woman, like a river, so that it might sweep her  
 16 away. But Earth came to her help, and opened her mouth and  
 drank up the river which the Dragon had poured out of its mouth.  
 17 The Dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to fight with  
 the rest of her offspring — those who lay to heart the commands



of God and bear their testimony to Jesus; and he took his stand on the sea-shore.

Then I saw, "rising out of the sea, a wild Beast with ten horns" and seven heads. On its horns were ten diadems, and on its heads were blasphemous names. The Beast that I saw was like a leopard; but its feet were like a bear's, and its mouth like the mouth of a lion. The Dragon gave it his power and his throne, and wide dominion. One of its heads seemed to me to have been mortally wounded, but its deadly wound had been healed. The whole earth followed the Beast, wondering; and men worshiped the Dragon, because he had given his dominion to the Beast; while, as they worshiped the Beast, they said — "Who can compare with the Beast? And who can fight with it?" The Beast was given "a mouth that spoke proudly" and blasphemously, and it was empowered to work its will for forty-two months. It opened its mouth only to blaspheme God, to blaspheme his name and his tent — those who live in his tent in heaven. It had been permitted to fight with Christ's people and to conquer them, and it had received power over men of every tribe, and people, and language, and nation. All who are living on earth will worship it — all whose names have not been written in the Lamb's book of life, the Lamb that has been sacrificed from the foundation of the world. Let those who have ears hear. "Whoever is destined for captivity goes into captivity." Whoever will kill with the sword must inevitably be killed with the sword. (Here there is need for endurance and faith on the part of Christ's people.)

Then I saw, rising out of the earth, another wild Beast. It had two horns like those of a lamb, and its voice was like a dragon's. It exercises all the authority of the first Beast under its eyes; and it makes the earth and all who are living on it worship that first Beast, whose mortal wound was healed. It performs great marvels, even causing fire to fall from the heavens to the earth, before people's eyes; and in consequence of the marvels which it was allowed to perform under the eyes of the Beast, it is able to deceive all who are living on the earth. It tells those who live on the earth to make a statue in honour of the Beast, who, despite the wound from the sword, yet lived. It was permitted to breathe life into the image of the Beast, so that the image of the Beast might speak; and

16 it was also permitted to cause all who refused to worship the im-  
age of the Beast to be put to death. High and low, rich and poor,  
17 free and enslaved — it causes a brand to be put on the right hand  
or on the forehead of every one of them, so that no one is able to  
buy or sell, except those that bear this brand — either the name of  
the Beast or the number indicated by the letters of his name. (Here  
18 there is need for discernment.) The person with ability can com-  
pute the number of the Beast; for the number indicates a person's  
name. Its number is six hundred and sixty-six.

14 Then, in my vision, I saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion.  
With him were a hundred and forty-four thousand, with his name  
2 and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. And I  
heard a sound from heaven, "like the sound of many waters,"  
and like the sound of a loud peal of thunder; the sound that I  
3 heard was like the music of harpers playing on their harps. They  
are singing what seems to be a new song, before the throne, and  
before the four creatures and the elders; and no one was able to  
4 learn that song except the hundred and forty-four thousand who  
had been redeemed from earth. These are the men who never  
defiled themselves in their intercourse with women; they are as  
pure as virgins. These are the men who follow the Lamb wher-  
ever he goes. They were redeemed as the first-fruits of mankind  
5 for God and for the Lamb. "No lie was ever heard on their lips."  
They are beyond reach of blame.

6 Then I saw another angel, flying in mid-heaven. He had the good  
news, decreed from eternity, to announce to those who live on the  
earth — to men of every nation, and tribe, and language, and peo-  
7 ple; and he cried in a loud voice — "Reverence God, and give him  
praise (for the hour of his judgment has come) and worship him  
who made the heaven and the earth and the sea and all springs  
of water."  
8 Then a second angel followed, crying — "She has fallen! She  
has fallen — Babylon the Great, who has made all the nations  
drink the maddening wine of her licentiousness!"

Then a third angel followed them, crying in a loud voice — 9  
“Whoever worships the Beast and its image, and receives its 10  
brand on his forehead or on his hand, that person will drink the  
maddening wine of God that has been poured unmixed into the  
cup of his wrath, and they will be tortured with fire and sulphur 11  
before the eyes of the holy angels and before the eyes of the  
Lamb. The smoke from their torture rises for ever and ever, and 12  
they have no rest day nor night — those who worship the Beast  
and its image, and all who are branded with its name.” (Here 13  
there is need for endurance on the part of Christ’s people —  
those who lay to heart the commands of God and the faith of  
Jesus.) Then I heard a voice from heaven saying “Write: ‘Blessed 14  
are the dead who from this hour die in union with the Lord.’”  
‘Yes,’ answers the Spirit, ‘that they may rest from their toil.  
Their good deeds go with them.’

Then, in my vision, I saw a white cloud, and on the cloud there 14  
was sitting one “like a man.” On his head he had a crown of gold,  
and in his hand a sharp sickle.

Then another angel came out from the Temple, crying in a loud 15  
voice to him who was sitting on the cloud — “Take your sickle and  
reap, for the time to reap has come; the Harvest of Earth is ready.”  
He who was sitting on the cloud brought his sickle down on the 16  
earth, and the Harvest of Earth was reaped.

Then another angel came out of the Temple in heaven; he, also, 17  
had a sharp sickle.

Then another angel came out of the altar; he had power over 18  
fire, and he called in a loud voice to the angel that had the sharp  
sickle — “Take your sharp sickle, and gather the bunches from the  
Vine of Earth, for its grapes are ripe.” The angel brought his sickle 19  
down on the earth and gathered the fruit of the Vine of Earth, and  
threw it into the great winepress of the wrath of God. The “grapes 20  
were trodden in the press” outside the city; and blood came out of  
the press, rising as high as the bridles of the horses for a distance  
of two hundred miles.

*Vision of Seven Curses*

- 15 THEN I SAW ANOTHER PORTENT IN THE HEAVENS — A GREAT and marvellous portent — seven angels with the seven last curses; because with them the wrath of God is ended.
- 2 Then I saw what appeared to be a sea of glass mixed with fire; and, standing by this sea of glass, holding the harps of God, I saw those who had come victorious out of the conflict with the Beast
- 3 and its image and the number that formed its name. They are singing the song of Moses, the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb —
- “Great and marvellous are your deeds, Lord, our God, the Almighty. Righteous and true are your ways, eternal King.
- 4 Who will not honour and praise your name, Lord? You alone are holy! All nations will come and worship before you, for your judgments have become manifest.”
- 5 After this I saw that the inmost shrine of the tent of testimony in
- 6 heaven was opened, and out of it came the seven angels with the seven curses. They were adorned with precious stones, pure and
- 7 bright, and had golden girdles round their breasts. One of the four creatures gave the seven angels seven golden bowls, filled
- 8 with the wrath of God who lives for ever and ever. “The Temple was filled with smoke from the glory” and Majesty of God; and no one could enter the Temple, until the seven curses inflicted
- 16 by the seven angels were at an end. Then I heard a loud voice, which came from the Temple, saying to the seven angels — “Go and empty the seven bowls of the wrath of God on the earth.”
- 2 The first angel went and emptied his bowl on the earth; and it turned to loathsome and painful sores on all who bore the brand of the Beast and who worshiped its image.
- 3 Then the second angel emptied his bowl on the sea; and it turned to blood like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing died — everything in the sea.
- 4 Then the third angel emptied his bowl on the rivers and springs
- 5 of water; and it turned to blood. And I heard the angel of the Waters saying — “Righteous are you, you who is and who is, the
- 6 Holy One, in inflicting this judgment; for men shed the blood of Christ’s people and of the prophets, and you have given them
- 7 blood to drink. It is what they deserve.” And I heard the response

from the altar — “Yes, Lord, our God, the Almighty, true and righteous are they judgments.”

Then the fourth angel emptied his bowl on the sun; and he was permitted to scorch men with fire; and men were scorched by the intense heat. They blasphemed the name of God who controlled these curses, yet they did not repent and give him praise.

Then the fifth angel emptied his bowl on the throne of the Beast; and darkness fell on its kingdom. Men gnawed their tongues for pain, and blasphemed the God of heaven, because of their pains and because of their sores; yet they did not repent of what they had done.

Then the sixth angel emptied his bowl on the great river Euphrates; and the water in the river was dried up, so that the road for the kings of the East might be made ready. And I saw three foul spirits, like frogs, come from the mouth of the Dragon and from the mouth of the Beast and from the mouth of the false prophet. They are the spirits of demons, and perform marvels; they go to kings all over the world, to collect them for the battle on the great day of Almighty God. (“I am coming like a thief! Happy will he be who is on the watch, and keeps his clothing at hand, so that he will not have to walk about unclothed and let men see his nakedness.”) And the spirits collected the kings at the place called in Hebrew “Har-Magedon.”

Then the seventh angel emptied his bowl on the air. (A loud voice came from the throne in the Temple; it said “All is over.”) There followed “flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder”; and there was a great earthquake, such as had not occurred since man began to be on the earth — none so great; and the great city was torn in three, and the cities of the nation fell, and God remembered Babylon the Great, and gave her the maddening wine-cup of his wrath; and every island vanished, and the mountains disappeared. Great hailstones, a pound in weight, are falling on men from the heavens. And men blasphemed God because of the curse of the hail, for it was a very terrible curse.

### *Doom of the Enemies of Christ*

THEN ONE OF THE SEVEN ANGELS WHO HELD THE SEVEN BOWLS came and spoke to me. “Come here,” he said, “and I will show you the

2 sentence passed on that Great Harlot who is seated at the meet-  
ing of many waters, and with whom all the kings of the earth  
3 have had licentious intercourse; while all who live on the earth  
have been made drunk by the wine of her licentiousness." And  
4 he bore me away in a trance to a lonely place, and I saw a woman  
seated on a scarlet Beast, which was covered with blasphemous  
5 names; it had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was clothed  
in purple and scarlet, and glittering with gold ornaments, pre-  
6 cious stones, and pearls. In her hand she held a gold cup, full of  
idolatrous abominations, and the unclean fruits of her licentious-  
7 ness; while on her forehead there was written this mystic name  
— "BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND  
8 OF ALL IDOLATROUS ABOMINATIONS ON EARTH." And I  
saw the woman drunk with the blood of Christ's people and with  
the blood of the martyrs for Jesus. When I saw her, I was amazed  
9 beyond measure; but the angel said to me — "Why were you  
amazed? I will tell you the mystic meaning of the vision of this  
10 woman, and of the Beast, with the seven heads and ten horns,  
that carries her. The Beast that you saw was, but is not, and is  
about to rise out of the bottomless pit, and is on its way to de-  
struction. Those who are living on earth will be amazed — those  
11 whose names have not been written in the book of life from the  
foundation of the world — when they see that the Beast was,  
12 but is not, and yet will come." (Here there is need for the dis-  
cerning mind.) The seven heads are seven mountains on which  
13 the woman is seated. They are also seven kings; of whom five  
have fallen and one remains, while one is not yet come. When he  
14 comes, he must stay for a little while. So must the Beast that was,  
but is not. He counts as an eighth king, although he is one of the  
15 seven, and is on his way to destruction. The ten horns that you  
saw are ten kings, who have not yet received their kingdoms, but  
16 for an hour they receive the authority of kings, together with the  
Beast. These kings are of one mind in surrendering their power  
and authority to the Beast. They will fight with the Lamb, but  
the Lamb will conquer them, for he is Lord of lords and King of  
kings; so, too, will those with him who have received the call and  
are chosen and faithful. And the angel said to me — "The waters  
that you saw, where the Harlot is seated, are throngs of people  
and men of all nations and languages. The ten horns that you  
saw, and the Beast — they will hate the Harlot, and cause her to

become deserted and strip her bare; they will eat her flesh and utterly consume her with fire. For God has put it into their minds to carry out his purpose, in carrying out their common purpose and surrendering their kingdoms to the Beast, until God's decrees will be executed. As for the woman whom you saw, she is the great city that holds sway over all the kings of the earth." 17

After this I saw another angel, descending from heaven, invested with great authority; and the earth was illuminated by his splendour. With a mighty voice he cried — "She has fallen! She has fallen — Babylon the Great! She has become an abode of demons, a stronghold of every wicked spirit, a stronghold of every foul and hateful bird. For, after drinking the maddening wine of her licentiousness, all the nations have fallen; while all the kings of the earth have had licentious intercourse with her, and the merchants of the earth have grown rich through the excess of her luxury." Then I heard another voice from heaven saying — "Come out of her, my people, so that you may not participate in her sins, and that you may not suffer from the curses inflicted on her. For her sins are heaped up to the heavens, and God has not forgotten her misdeeds. Pay her back the treatment with which she has treated you; yes, repay twice over what her actions deserve; in the cup which she mixed for you, mix for her as much again; for her self-glorification and her luxury, give her now an equal measure of torture and misery. In her heart she says "I sit here a queen; no widow am I; I will never know misery." Therefore in one day will these curses strike her — death, misery, and famine, and she will be utterly consumed by fire; for mighty is the Lord God who condemned her. All the kings of the earth who had licentious intercourse with her and shared her luxury will weep and lament over her, when they see the smoke from the burning city, while they stand at a distance, horrified at her torture, and cry — "Alas! Alas! Great city! Mighty city of Babylon! In a single hour your judgment fell. And the merchants of the earth weep and wail over her, because no longer does anyone buy their cargoes — their cargoes of gold, or silver, or precious stones, or pearls, or fine linen, or purple robes, or silk, or scarlet cloth; nor their many scented woods; nor their many articles of ivory; nor their many articles of choicest wood, or brass, or iron, or marble; nor their cinnamon, or spice, or incense, or perfumes, or frankincense, or wine, or oil, or fine flour, or wheat, or cattle, or sheep; 18  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13

14 nor their horses, or chariots, or slaves; nor the bodies and souls of  
 15 people. The fruit that your soul craved is no longer within your  
 16 reach, and all dainties and luxuries are lost to you, never to be  
 17 found again." The merchants who sold these things, and grew  
 18 rich by her, will stand at a distance weeping and wailing, hor-  
 19 rified at her torture, and crying — "Alas! Alas! Great city! City  
 20 clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet cloth! City adorned  
 21 with gold ornaments, and precious stones, and pearls! In a single  
 22 hour your vast wealth vanished." Every ship's captain and all  
 23 who sail to any port, and sailors, and all who get their living from  
 24 the sea, stood at a distance, and seeing the smoke from the burn-  
 ing city, cried — "What city can compare with the Great city?"  
 They threw dust on their heads, and, as they wept and wailed,  
 they cried — "Alas! Alas! Great city! All who have ships on the  
 sea grew rich through her magnificence. In a single hour it has  
 vanished." Rejoice over her, heaven, and people of Christ, and  
 apostles, and prophets, for God has avenged you on her! Then a  
 mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and threw it  
 into the sea, crying — "So will Babylon, the great city, be violently  
 overthrown, never more to be seen. No more will the music of  
 harpers, or minstrels, or flute players, or trumpeters be heard in  
 you, no more will any worker, skilled in any art, be found in you;  
 no more will the sound of a mill be heard in you; no more will the  
 light of a lamp shine in you; no more will the voices of groom and  
 bride be heard in you. Your merchants were the great men of the  
 earth, for all the nations were deceived by your magical charms.  
 Yes, and in her was to be found the blood of the prophets and  
 of Christ's people, and of all who have been put to death on the  
 earth."

19 After this, I heard what seemed to be a great shout from a vast  
 throng in heaven, crying —

2 "Hallelujah! To our God belong salvation, and glory, and  
 Power, for true and righteous are his judgments. For he  
 has passed judgment on the Great Harlot who was cor-  
 rupting the earth by her licentiousness, and he has taken  
 vengeance on her for the blood of his servants."



Again they cried — “Hallelujah!” And the smoke from her ruins rises for ever and ever. Then the twenty-four elders and the Four creatures prostrated themselves and worshiped God who was seated on the throne, crying — “Amen, Hallelujah!”; and from the throne there came a voice which said —

“Praise our God all you who serve him, You who worship him, both high and low.”

Then I heard “what seemed to be the shout of a vast throng, like the sound of many waters,” and like the sound of loud peals of thunder, crying —

“Hallelujah! For the Lord is king, our God, the Almighty. Let us rejoice and exalt; and we will pay him honour, for the hour for the Marriage of the Lamb has come, and his Bride has made herself ready. And to her it has been granted to robe herself in fine linen, white and pure, for that linen is the good deeds of the people of Christ.”

Then a voice said to me “Write — ‘Blessed are those who have been summoned to the marriage feast of the Lamb.’” And the voice said — “These words of God are true.” I prostrated myself at the feet of him who spoke to worship him, but he said to me — “No! I am your fellow servant, and the fellow servant of your brothers and sisters who bear their testimony to Jesus. Worship God. For to bear testimony to Jesus needs the inspiration of the prophets.” Then I saw that heaven lay open. There appears a white horse; its rider is called “Faithful” and “True”; righteously does he judge and make war. His eyes are flaming fires; on his head there are many diadems, and he bears a name, written, which no one knows but himself; he has been clothed in a garment sprinkled with blood; and the name by which he is called is “The Word of God.” The armies of heaven followed him, mounted on white horses and clothed in fine linen, white and pure. From his mouth comes a sharp sword, with which “to smite the nations; and he will rule them with an iron rod.” He “treads the grapes in the press” of the maddening wine of the wrath of Almighty God; and on his robe and on his thigh he has this name written — “KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.”

17 Then I saw an angel standing on the sun. He cried in a loud voice  
18 to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven — “Gather and come to  
19 the great feast of God, to eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of  
20 commanders, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses  
21 and their riders, and the flesh of all free and enslaved, and of high  
and low.” Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their  
armies, gathered together to fight with him who sat on the horse  
and with his army. The Beast was captured, and with him was  
taken the false prophet, who performed the marvels before the  
eyes of the Beast, with which he deceived those who had received  
the brand of the Beast and those who worshiped his image. Alive,  
they were thrown, both of them, into the lake of fire - of burning  
sulphur. The rest were killed by the sword which came out of the  
mouth of him who rode on the horse; and all the birds fed on their  
flesh.

20 Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, with the key of  
2 the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He seized the  
Dragon, the primeval snake (who is the “devil” or “Satan”), and  
3 bound him in chains for a thousand years. He flung him into the  
bottomless pit and locked it, and set his seal on it; that he should  
not deceive the nations any more, until the thousand years were  
ended. After that he must be let loose for a while.  
4 Then I saw thrones, and to those who took their seats on them  
authority was given to act as judges. And I saw the souls of those  
who had been beheaded because of the testimony to Jesus and  
because of the message of God, for they had refused to worship  
the Beast or its image, and had not received the brand on their  
foreheads and on their hands. They were restored to life, and they  
5 reigned with the Christ for a thousand years. (The rest of the dead  
were not restored to life until the thousand years were ended.)  
6 This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy will he be who  
shares in that first resurrection. The second Death has no power  
over them; but they will be priests of God, and the Christ, and  
they will reign with him for the thousand years.

When the thousand years are ended, Satan will be let loose 7  
 from his prison, and he will come out to deceive the nations that 8  
 live in "the four corners of the earth — Gog and Magog." He will  
 come to gather them together for battle; and their number will  
 be as great as the sand on the sea-shore. They went up over the 9  
 breadth of the whole earth, and surrounded the camp of Christ's  
 people and the city that he loves. Then fire fell from the heavens  
 and consumed them; and the devil, their deceiver, was hurled 10  
 into the lake of fire and sulphur, where the Beast and the false  
 prophet already were, and they will be tortured day and night  
 for ever and ever.

Then I saw a great white throne, and him who was seated on 11  
 it. "The earth and the heavens fled from his presence; no place  
 was left for them." And I saw the dead, high and low, standing 12  
 before the throne; and books were opened. Then another book  
 was opened, the book of life; and the dead were judged, according  
 to their actions, by what was written in the books. The sea gave 13  
 up its dead, and Death and the Lord of the place of Death gave up  
 their dead; and they were judged, one by one, each according to  
 his actions. Then Death and the Lord of the place of Death were 14  
 hurled into the lake of fire. This is the Second Death — the lake  
 of fire; and all whose names "were not found written in the book 15  
 of life" were hurled into the lake of fire.

### *The New Creation*

THEN I SAW NEW HEAVENS and a new earth. The former heavens 21  
 and the former earth had passed away; and the sea has ceased  
 to be. And I saw the Holy City, Jerusalem, descending new out 2  
 of heaven from God, like a bride adorned in readiness for her  
 husband. And I heard a loud voice from the throne, which said 3  
 — "See! The tent of God is set up among people. God will live  
 among them, and they will be his Peoples, and God himself will  
 be among them, and he will wipe away all tears from their eyes. 4  
 There will be no more death, nor will there be any more grief or  
 crying or pain. The old order has passed away." And he who was 5  
 seated on the throne said — "See, I make all things new!" And he

said — “Write this, for these words may be trusted and are true.”  
6 And he said to me — “They are fulfilled. I am the Alpha and the  
Omega, the beginning and the End. To those who thirst I will give  
7 of the spring of the water of life, freely. Those who conquer will  
enter into possession of these things, and I will be their God, and  
8 they will be my children. But as for cowards, unbelievers, the de-  
graded, murderers, the impure, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars  
— their place will be in the burning lake of fire and sulphur. That  
is the Second Death.”

9 Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls, and were  
laden with the seven last curses, came and spoke to me. “Come  
here,” he said, “and I will show you the Bride, the Wife of the  
10 Lamb.” He carried me away in a trance to a great high moun-  
tain, and showed me Jerusalem, the Holy City, descending out  
11 of heaven from God, filled with the glory of God. Its brilliance  
was like a precious stone, like a jasper, transparent as crystal. It  
12 had a great high wall, in which were twelve gates; and at these  
gates there were twelve angels, and there were names inscribed  
on the gates, the names of the twelve tribes of the Israelites. “There  
13 were three gates on the east, three gates on the north, three gates  
on the south, and three gates on the west.” The wall of the city  
14 had twelve foundation stones, on which were the twelve names of  
the twelve apostles of the Lamb. And the angel who was speak-  
ing to me had as a measure a gold rod, with which to measure  
15 the city and its gates and its wall. The city is square; the length  
and the breadth are the same. The angel measured with his rod;  
16 it was twelve hundred miles; its length, and breadth, and height  
are equal. Then he measured the wall; it was two hundred and  
eighty-eight feet, as people measure, that is as the angel mea-  
17 sured. The material of the wall of the city was jasper, and the city  
was built of pure gold, which shone like clear glass. The founda-  
18 tions of the wall of the city were ornamented with every kind  
of precious stone. The first foundation stone was a jasper; the sec-  
19 ond a sapphire; the third a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald;  
the fifth a sardonyx; the sixth a carnelian; the seventh a chryso-  
20 lite; the eighth a beryl; the ninth a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprase;

the eleventh a hyacinth; and the twelfth an amethyst. The twelve 21  
 gates were made of twelve pearls, each gate of one pearl. The  
 street of the city was of pure gold, transparent as glass. And I 22  
 saw no Temple there, for the Lord, our God, the Almighty, and  
 the Lamb are its Temple. The city has no need of "the sun or the 23  
 moon to shine on it, for the glory of God illuminated it," and its  
 Lamp was the Lamb. "The nations walk by the light of it; and 24  
 the kings of the earth bring their glory into it. Its gates will never  
 be shut by day," and there will be no night there. And people 25  
 will bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. "Never 26  
 will any unhallowed thing enter it," nor they whose life is shame- 27  
 ful and false, but only "those whose names have been written in  
 the Lamb's book of life." And the angel showed me "a river of 22  
 the water of life," as clear as crystal, issuing from the throne of  
 God and of the Lamb, in the middle of the street of the city. On 2  
 each side of the river was a Tree of life which bore twelve kinds of  
 fruit, yielding its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree were  
 for the healing of the nations. "Every thing that is accursed will 3  
 cease to be." The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within  
 it, and his servants will worship him; they will see his face, and 4  
 his name will be on their foreheads. Night will cease to be. They 5  
 have no need of the light of a lamp, nor have they the light of the  
 sun; for the "Lord God will be their light, and they will reign for  
 ever and ever."

### Conclusion

THEN THE ANGEL SAID TO ME — "THESE WORDS MAY BE TRUSTED AND 6  
 are true. The Lord, the God that inspires the prophets, sent his  
 angel to show his servants what must quickly take place; and they 7  
 said 'I will come quickly.' Blessed will he be who lays to heart the  
 words of the prophecy contained in this book."

It was I, John, who heard and saw these things; and, when I 8  
 heard and saw them, I prostrated myself in worship at the feet of  
 the angel that showed them to me. But he said to me — "Forbear; 9  
 I am your fellow servant, and the fellow servant of your fellow  
 prophets, and of all who lay to heart the words in this book. Wor-  
 ship God."

- 10 Then the angel said to me — “Do not keep secret the words  
of the prophecy contained in this book; for the time is near. Let  
11 the wrong-doer continue to do wrong; the filthy-minded con-  
tinue to be filthy; the righteous continue to act righteously; and  
12 the holy-minded continue to be holy.” (“I will come quickly. I  
bring my rewards with me, to give to each what their actions de-  
13 serve. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the  
14 beginning and the End.”) Blessed will they be who wash their  
robes, that they may have the right to approach the Tree of life,  
15 and may enter the city by the gates. Outside will be the filthy, the  
sorcerers, the impure, the murderers, the idolaters, and all who  
love the false and live it.”
- 16 “I, Jesus, sent my angel to bear testimony to you about these  
things before the churches. I am the Scion and the Offspring of  
David, the bright star of the Morning.”
- 17 “Come,” say the Spirit and the Bride; and all who hear, say  
“Come.” All who thirst, come; anyone who wants, take the  
water of life freely.
- 18 I declare to all who hear the words of the prophecy contained in  
this book — “If anyone adds to it, God will add to his troubles the  
19 curses described in this book; and if anyone takes away any of the  
words in the book containing this prophecy, God will take away  
his share in the Tree of life, and in the Holy City — as described  
in this book.”
- 20 He whose testimony this is says — “Assuredly I will come  
quickly.” “Amen, come, Lord Jesus.”

May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, be with his people. 21





# THE PSALMS

## *Book One*

### *Psalm 1 — The Way of Happiness*

HAPPY ARE THOSE	1
who do not follow the counsel of the wicked, not halting in ways frequented by sinners, nor taking a seat in a gathering of scoffers.	
But the law of the LORD is their joy, they study it day and night.	2
They are like trees	3
planted by runlets of water, yielding fruit in due season, leaves never fading. In all that they do, they prosper.	
Not so fare the wicked, not so;	4
like chaff are they, blown by the wind.	
So the wicked will not stand firm in the judgment, nor sinners appear, when the righteous are gathered.	5
For the way of the righteous is dear to the LORD, but the way of the wicked will end in ruin.	6

### *Psalm 2 — The Lord's Chosen King*

Why this turmoil of nations,	2
this futile plotting of peoples, with kings of the earth conspiring,	2
and rulers consulting together, against the LORD and against his anointed, to snap their bonds	3
and fling their cords away?	
He whose throne is in heaven laughs,	4

the LORD mocks them.  
 5 Then he speaks to them in his wrath,  
 and in his hot anger confounds them.  
 6 'This my king is installed by me,  
 on Zion my holy mountain.'  
 7 I will tell of the LORD's decree.  
 He said to me: 'You are my son,  
 this day I became your father.  
 8 Only ask, and I make you the heir of the nations,  
 and lord of the world to its utmost bounds.  
 9 You will break them with sceptre of iron,  
 shatter them like pottery.'  
 10 So now, you kings, be wise:  
 be warned, you rulers of earth.  
 11 Serve the LORD in awe,  
 kiss his feet with trembling,  
 12 lest, angry, he hurl you to ruin;  
 for soon will his fury blaze.  
 Happy all who take refuge in him.

*Psalm 3 — A Morning Prayer for Protection*

3 *A psalm of David, when he fled from his son Absalom.*  
 How many, LORD, are my foes!  
 Those who rise up against me are many.  
 2 Many are those who say of me,  
 'There is no help for him in his God.' (*Selah*)  
 3 But you, LORD, are shield about me,  
 my glory, who lifts up my head.  
 4 When loudly I call to the LORD,  
 from his holy hill he gives answer. (*Selah*)  
 5 I laid down and slept:  
 now I wake, for the LORD sustains me.  
 6 I fear not the myriads of people  
 who beset me on every side.  
 7 Arise, LORD: save me, my God,

who strikes all my foes on the cheek,  
and shatters the teeth of the wicked.  
Victory belongs to the LORD: 8  
let your blessing descend on your people. (*Selah*)

*Psalm 4 — An Evening Prayer*

*For the leader, with stringed instruments. A psalm of David.* 4

Answer my cry,  
God, my defender.  
Often from straits you have brought me  
to spacious places.  
So now show me your favour  
and hear my prayer.

How long, you proud people, 2  
will my honour be stained  
by the slanders you love,  
and the lies that you follow? (*Selah*)

See! The LORD has shown me 3  
his wonderful kindness:  
the LORD hears,  
when I call to him.

Sin not in your anger: 4  
but speak in your heart  
on your bed, and be still. (*Selah*)

Offer true sacrifice, 5  
trust in the LORD.

Many are longing 6  
for fortune to smile.

Lift upon us  
the light of your face.

You have put in my heart, LORD, 7  
a deeper joy  
than was theirs who had corn  
and wine in abundance.

So in peace I will 8  
lie down and sleep;

for you, LORD, keep me  
safe.

*Psalm 5 — A Prayer for Guidance*

5 *For the leader: A psalm of David, to be accompanied by the flute.*

Hear my words, LORD:  
give heed to my whisper.

2 Attend to my loud cry for help,  
my king and my God.

3 When I pray to you, LORD, in the morning,  
hear my voice.

I make ready for you in the morning,  
and look for a sign.

4 For you are no God who takes pleasure in wickedness:  
no one of evil can be your guest.

5 No braggarts can stand in your presence,  
you hate all workers of wrong.

6 You destroy all speakers of lies,  
people of blood and deceit you abhor.

7 But I, through your kindness abundant,  
may enter your house,  
and towards the shrine of your temple  
may reverently bow.

8 Lead me, LORD, in your righteousness  
because of my enemies.

Make your way level before me.

9 For their mouth is a stranger to truth,  
their heart is a pit of destruction.

Their throat is a wide open grave,  
their tongue the smooth tongue of the hypocrite.

10 Condemn them, God;  
let their schemes bring them down to the ground.

For their numberless crimes thrust them down  
for playing the rebel against you.

11 But let all who take refuge in you  
ring out their gladness forever.

Protect those who love your name,

so they may exult in you.  
 For you give your blessing, LORD, to the godly, 12  
 and the shield of your favour protects them.

*Psalm 6 — A Cry for Help in Time of Trouble*

*For the leader; with instrumental music on the sheminith. A psalm of David.* 6

Rebuke me not, LORD, in your anger,  
 punish me not in your wrath.

LORD, be gracious to me 2  
 in my weakness.

Heal me LORD,  
 for racked is my body;  
 all of me utterly racked. 3  
 Why do you wait so long, LORD?

Turn, LORD, rescue me; 4  
 save me, because of your love.

For in death none can call you to mind; 5  
 in Sheol who can praise you?

I am so weary of sighing. 6  
 All the night I make my bed swim,  
 and wet my couch with my tears.

My eyes swollen with grief; 7  
 from weeping caused by my foes.

Begone, workers of wrong, 8  
 for the LORD has heard my loud weeping,

the LORD has heard my entreaty, 9  
 the LORD accepts my prayer.

My foes will be stricken with terror, 10  
 brought to shame and dismay in a moment.

*Psalm 7 — A Prayer to the God of Justice*

*A Shiggaion of David, which he sang to the LORD about Cush, the Benjamite.* 7

LORD my God, I take refuge in you.  
 Deliver me, save me from all who pursue me;

2           or like lions they will tear me to pieces,  
          and rend me, past hope of rescue.

3           LORD , my God, if my life has been such  
          if my hands have been stained with guilt,  
4           if friends I paid back with evil,  
          if I plundered my foes without cause,  
5           may the enemy chase and find me,  
          trample my life to the ground,  
          my honour leave in the dirt! (*Selah*)

6           Arise, LORD, in anger,  
          against my foes rise in fury.  
          Awake for my help:  
          let justice be done.

7           Gather the nations about you,  
          and sit on your lofty throne,  
8           as the LORD, the judge of the peoples.  
          Judge me, LORD, in my innocence  
          and according to my integrity.

9           Put an end to the wrong of the wicked,  
          protect the righteous.  
          Searcher of hearts and minds,  
          righteous God.

10          God is my shield:  
          he saves the upright in heart.

11          God is a just judge,  
          constant in righteous anger.

12          He will sharpen his sword without fail,  
          his bow is bent and ready,  
13          his deadly weapons are ready,  
          his arrows he makes of flame.

14          The enemy who conceives evil;  
          pregnant with mischief,  
          giving birth to lies,  
15          a pit they have made and dug;  
          but into the hole that they made they will fall.

16          On their own heads their mischief comes back;

on their own skulls their violence comes down.  
 I will give thanks to the LORD for his justice, 17  
 and sing to the name of the LORD Most High.

*Psalm 8 — God's Glory in Nature*

*For the leader: A psalm of David, to be accompanied by a stringed instrument.* 8

LORD our God!  
 How glorious in all the earth is your name!  
 Your praise reaches as high as the heavens,  
 from the mouths of children and infants. 2

You have built a fortress  
 against your enemies,  
 to silence the foe and the rebel.

When I look at your heavens, 3  
 the work of your fingers,  
 the moon and the stars,  
 which you have set there,  
 what are mortals, 4  
 that you think of them,  
 humans,  
 that you visit them?

Yet you made them little less than divine, 5  
 crowned them with glory and majesty,  
 made them lord of the works of your hands, 6  
 put all things under their feet —  
 sheep and oxen, 7  
 all of them;  
 and the wild beasts also:  
 birds of the air, 8  
 and fish of the sea,  
 and all that crosses the paths of the ocean.

LORD our God! 9  
 How glorious in all the earth is your name!

*Psalm 9 — A Song of Praise the Lord's Justice*

- 9            *For the leader; "almuth labben. A psalm of David.*  
With all my heart I will praise the LORD,  
all your wonders I will rehearse.
- 2            I will rejoice and exult in you,  
singing praise to your name, Most High;  
3            because backward my foes were turned,  
they stumbled and perished before you.
- 4            My right and my claim you have upheld,  
you did sit on the throne as a fair judge,  
5            rebuking the nations, destroying the wicked,  
and blotting their name out forever and ever.  
6            The foe is vanished, ruined forever,  
their cities destroyed, their memory perished.
- 7            See! The LORD is seated forever  
on the throne he established for judgment,  
8            ruling the world with justice,  
and judging the nations with equity.
- 9            So the LORD proves a haven to the oppressed,  
a haven in times of trouble.
- 10           Well may they trust you who know your name,  
for those who seek you, you never abandon.
- 11           Sing praise to the LORD, whose home is in Zion,  
declare his deeds among the nations.
- 12           As avenger of blood, he keeps them in mind,  
he does not forget the cry of the wretched.
- 13           Show me favour, LORD,  
see how my foes afflict me,  
lift me up from the gates of death;  
14           so I may, in your help exulting,  
tell forth your praise at the gates of Zion.
- 15           The nations are sunk in the pit which they made,  
in the net that they hid, their own foot is entangled.
- 16           The LORD is revealed in the judgment he wrought,  
the wicked are snared in their own handiwork. (*Selah*)



Let the wicked depart to Sheol, 17  
 all the nations that live forgetful of God.  
 For the needy will not be always forgotten, 18  
 nor the hope of the helpless be lost forever.  
 Arise, LORD; don't let them triumph: 19  
 before your face let the nations be judged.  
 Strike them with fear, LORD: 20  
 show the nations how frail they are. (*Selah*)

*Psalm 10 — A Prayer for Help*

Why do you stand, LORD, so far away, 10  
 hiding yourself in times of trouble?  
 The wicked, in their pride, are pursuing the helpless: 2  
 let them be caught in the schemes they have plotted.  
 For the wicked boasts of their wanton greed; 3  
 the robber despises the LORD, and curses him,  
 in wicked pride, thinks: 4  
 God doesn't care,  
 God doesn't call to account.  
 Never a season that they do not prosper; 5  
 your judgments are far above out of their sight:  
 they scoff at their foes.  
 Each says in their heart, 6  
 'I will never be shaken;  
 I will live for all time  
 untouched by misfortune.'  
 Their mouths are full of deceit and oppression: 7  
 under their tongues lurks mischief and wrong.  
 Lying in secret in some village ambush, 8  
 and stealthily watching, they murder the innocent.  
 Like a lion that lurks in a secret lair 9  
 they lurk intending to catch the defenceless;  
 to seize them, to drag them away in their net.  
 Their victims are crushed, 10  
 sink down to the ground.

- Under their claws  
the hapless fall.
- 11 The wicked say in their hearts  
that God has forgotten,  
has hidden his face,  
will see nothing.
- 12 Arise, LORD, lift up your hand,  
do not forget the cry of the wretched.
- 13 Why do the wicked treat God with contempt,  
and say in their hearts, 'God doesn't care'?
- 14 You have seen the trouble and sorrow;  
you mark it all, and will take it in hand.  
The hapless can count on you,  
helper of orphans.
- 15 Break the arm of the wicked and evil:  
search out their sin, till no more be found.
- 16 The LORD is king forever and ever:  
the nations will vanish from his land.
- 17 LORD, you have heard the desire of the humble,  
inclining your ear, strengthening their hearts,
- 18 rights you have won for the crushed and the orphan,  
so no one on earth may strike terror again.

*Psalm 11 — Trust in the Lord*

- 11 *For the leader. Of David.*
- In the LORD I take refuge.  
How can you tell me  
to flee like a bird to the mountains?
- 2 'See! The wicked are bending the bow,  
their arrow is set on the string,  
to shoot from the shadows at the upright in heart.
- 3 In this tearing down of foundations  
what good can a good person do?'
- 4 The LORD in his holy temple,  
the LORD in heaven, enthroned.

His eyes watch the world,  
 they see everyone.  
 The LORD examines the righteous and wicked, 5  
 and the lover of violence he hates.  
 On the wicked he rains coals of fire and brimstone, 6  
 and their drink will be scorching wind.  
 For the LORD is just, and justice he loves; 7  
 so the upright will see his face.

*Psalm 12 — A Prayer for the Faithful in a False World*

*For the leader; on the sheminith. A psalm of David.* 12

Help, LORD, for the good are all gone,  
 faithful people have vanished.  
 One lies to another, speaking empty lies, 2  
 with flattering lips and false hearts they speak.  
 May the LORD cut off all the flattering lips, 3  
 and the tongue that utters arrogance,  
 they declare, 'Our tongue is our strength, 4  
 our allies our lips: who is lord over us?'  
 'The poor are despoiled, and the needy are sighing; 5  
 so now I will act,' the LORD declares  
 'And place them in the safety they long for.'  
 The words of the LORD are words that are pure, 6  
 silver smelted, seven times refined.  
 You will keep us, LORD, 7  
 and guard us from this generation forever,  
 in a world where the wicked prowl, 8  
 and worthless people exalted.

*Psalm 13 — A Prayer for Help in Trouble*

*For the leader. A psalm of David.* 13

How long, LORD, will you forget me forever?  
 How long will you hide your face from me?  
 How long must I nurse grief inside me, 2  
 and in my heart a daily sorrow?  
 How long are my foes to exult over me?

3 Look at me, answer me, LORD my God.  
 Fill my eyes with your light,  
 lest I sleep in death,  
 4 lest my enemies claim to have triumphed,  
 lest my foes rejoice at my downfall.

5 But I trust in your kindness:  
 my heart will rejoice in your help.  
 6 I will sing to the LORD who was good to me.

*Psalm 14 — The Folly of Denying God*

14 *For the leader. Of David*

Fools say in their heart,  
 'There is no God.'  
 Vile, hateful their life is;  
 not one does good.

2 From heaven the LORD looks out  
 on humans, to see  
 if any are wise,  
 and care for God.

3 But all have turned bad,  
 the taint is on all;  
 not one does good,  
 no, not one.

4 Have they learned their lesson,  
 those workers of evil?  
 Who ate up my people,  
 eating, devouring,  
 never calling to the LORD.

5 Sore afraid will they be;  
 for God is among  
 those who are righteous,  
 6 you may mock the plans of the poor,  
 but the LORD is their refuge.

7 If only help from Zion  
 would come for Israel!

When the LORD brings his people  
 a change of fortune,  
 how glad will be Jacob,  
 and Israel how joyful!

*Psalm 15 — Standing Firm*

*A psalm of David* 15

LORD, who can be guest in your tent?  
 Who may live on your holy mountain?

The person whose walk is blameless, 2  
 whose conduct is right,  
 whose words are true and sincere;  
 on whose tongue there sits no slander, 3  
 who will not harm a friend,  
 nor cruelly insult a neighbour, 4  
 who regards with contempt those rejected by God;  
 but honours those who obey the LORD,  
 who keeps an oath, whatever the cost,  
 whose money is lent without interest, 5  
 and never takes a bribe to hurt the innocent.

The person who does these things will always stand firm.

*Psalm 16 — The Joy of Fellowship with God*

*A michtam of David.* 16

Keep me, O God, for in you I take refuge.  
 I said to the LORD, 'You are my LORD, 2  
 my happiness rests in you alone.  
 Those who are holy in the land, 3  
 they, they alone, are the noble ones;  
 all my delight is in them.'

Those who choose other gods 4  
 find endless sorrow.  
 In their offerings of blood I will have no part  
 nor take their name on my lips.  
 The LORD is my share and my portion, 5  
 my fate is in your strong hands.

6 The boundary lines of my life  
     mark out delightful country,  
     my heritage pleases me well.  
 7 I praise the LORD for his counsel,  
     which so stirs my heart in the night.  
 8 I keep the LORD always in mind:  
     with him at my hand, I can never be moved.

9 So my heart is glad, there is joy inside me;  
     and in safety of body I live.  
 10 For you will not give me up to Sheol  
     nor let any who love you see the pit.  
 11 You will show me the path that leads to life,  
     to that fulness of joy which is in your presence,  
     and the pleasures dispensed by your hand evermore.

*Psalm 17 — A Prayer for Deliverance*

17 *A prayer of David.*

Listen, O LORD, to my innocence;  
     attend to my piercing cry.  
 Give heed to my prayer  
     out of lips unfeigned.

2 Let my vindication come from you,  
     your eyes see the truth.

3 When you test my heart when you visit at night,  
     and assay me like silver — you can find no evil.  
 I am determined that my mouth should not lie.

4 I gave earnest heed to the words of your lips.  
 5 My steps have held fast to the paths of your precepts  
     and in your tracks have my feet never stumbled.

6 So I call you, O God, with assurance of answer;  
     bend down your ear to me, hear what I say.  
 7 Show your marvellous love, you who save from enemies  
     those who take refuge at your right hand.

8 Keep me as the apple of the eye,  
     hide me in the shelter of your wings.  
 9 From wicked people who do me violence,

from deadly foes who crowd around me.

They have closed their hearts to pity, 10  
the words of their mouths are haughty.  
Now they dog us at every step, 11  
keenly watching, to hurl us to the ground,  
like a lion, longing to tear, 12  
like a young lion, lurking in secret.

Arise, LORD, face them and fell them. 13  
By your sword set me free from the wicked,  
by your hand, O LORD, from those — 14  
whose portion of life is but of this world.  
But let your treasured ones have food in plenty  
may their children be full and their children satisfied.

In my innocence I will see your face, 15  
awake I am filled with a vision of you.

*Psalm 18 — A King's Song of Gratitude*

*For the leader. Of David, the servant of the LORD, who recited the words of this song to the LORD after the LORD had saved him from the power of all his enemies and from the hand of Saul. He said:* **18**

I love you, O LORD, my strength.  
The LORD is my rock, my fortress, deliverer, 2  
my God, my rock, where I take refuge,  
my shield, my defender, my tower.  
Worthy of praise is the LORD whom I call on, 3  
he rescues me from all my foes.

The waves of death broke about me, 4  
fearful floods of chaos.  
Sheol threw cords around me, 5  
snares of death came to meet me.  
In distress I cried to the LORD, 6  
and shouted for help to my God;  
in his temple he heard my voice,  
into his ears came my cry.

Then the earth shook and quaked, 7

mountains trembled to their foundations,  
and quaked because of his wrath.  
8 Smoke went up from his nostrils,  
devouring fire from his mouth,  
coals were kindled by it.

9 Then he bent the sky and came down,  
thick darkness was under his feet.  
10 He rode on a cherub and flew,  
darting on wings of wind,  
11 with his screen of darkness about him,  
in thick dark clouds of water.

12 At the radiance before him there passed  
hailstones and coals of fire.  
13 The LORD thundered from heaven,  
the Most High uttered his voice.  
14 He shot his arrows and scattered them,  
flashed lightnings, and routed them.  
15 The channels of the sea were revealed,  
the world was laid bare to its base,  
at your rebuke, O LORD,  
at the blast of the breath of your nostrils.

16 He stretched from on high, he seized me,  
drew me up from the mighty waters,  
17 and saved me from those who hated me —  
fierce foes, too mighty for me.  
18 In my day of distress they assailed me,  
but the LORD proved my support.  
19 To a spacious place he brought me,  
and, for love of me, he saved me.

20 The LORD repays my innocence,  
he rewards my cleanness of hands.  
21 For I kept the ways of the LORD,  
nor have wickedly strayed from my God.  
22 His commandments were all before me,  
his statutes I put not away.  
23 And I was blameless before him,  
guarding myself from sin.



So the LORD repaid my innocence, my cleanness of hands in his sight.	24
With the loyal you are loyal, and with the blameless blameless.	25
With the pure you show yourself pure, but shrewd with the devious.	26
For the lowly people you save, but haughty eyes you abase.	27
You are my lamp, LORD, my God who enlightens my darkness.	28
With you I can storm a rampart, with my God I can leap a wall.	29
As for God, his way is perfect; the word of the LORD is pure. He is shield to all who take refuge in him.	30
For who is God but the LORD? And who is a rock but our God?	31
The God who arms me with strength, who cleared and smoothed my way.	32
He made my feet like hinds' feet, and set me up on the heights.	33
He taught my hands how to fight, and my arms how to bend a bronze bow.	34
The shield of your help you gave me, your right hand supports me, you stoop down to make me great.	35
In your strength I took giant strides, and my feet never slipped.	36
So I chased the foe till I caught them, and turned not, till I made an end of them.	37
I smashed them, they could not rise, they fell beneath my feet.	38
You did arm me with strength for war, you did bow my assailants beneath me.	39
You made my foes turn their back to me, and those who did hate me I finished.	40
They cried for help, but none saved them;	41

to the LORD, but he answered them not.  
 42 I beat them like dust of the market-place,  
     stamped them like mud of the streets.  
 43 From the strife of the peoples you saved me,  
     you made me head of the nations,  
     peoples I knew not did serve me.  
 44 On the instant they hear, they obey me,  
     foreigners come to me cringing.  
 45 Foreigners lose courage,  
     and come out of their strongholds trembling.  
 46 The LORD is alive! Blest be my rock!  
     Exalted be God, my protector!  
 47 The God who gave me revenge,  
     and brought down nations beneath me,  
 48 who saved me from angry foes,  
     and set me above my assailants,  
     safe from the violent.  
 49 For this I will praise you among the nations,  
     making music, O LORD, to your name:  
 50 for great triumphs he grants to his king,  
     and faithful love he shows his anointed,  
     to David and his seed evermore.

*Psalm 19 — The Glory of God in the Heavens*

**19**                      *For the leader. A psalm of David.*

The heavens declare God's glory,  
     the sky tells what his hands have done.  
 2 Day tells it to day,  
     night reveals it to night,  
 3 without speaking, without words;  
     without the sound of voices.  
 4 But through all the world their voice carries  
     their words to the ends of the earth.  
 He has pitched a tent for the sun in the sky,  
 5 it comes out like a bridegroom from his bridal cham-  
     ber,

it joyfully runs its course like a hero.  
 From one end of the heavens it rises, 6  
 and round it runs to the other,  
 and nothing hides from its heat.

*In Praise of the Law*

The law of the LORD is perfect, 7  
 renewing life.

The decrees of the LORD are trusty,  
 making the simple wise.

The behests of the LORD are right, 8  
 rejoicing the heart.

The command of the LORD is pure,  
 giving light to the eyes.

The fear of the LORD is clean, 9  
 it endures forever.

The LORD's judgments are true  
 and right altogether.

More precious are they than gold — 10  
 than fine gold in plenty,  
 and sweeter they are than honey,  
 that drops from the comb.

By them is your servant warned; 11  
 who keeps them has rich reward.

Who can know their flaws? 12  
 Absolve me from those I know not.

Keep your servant from wilful sins — 13  
 from falling under their sway:  
 then blameless and clear will I be  
 from great offence.

May the words of my mouth and the thoughts of my heart 14  
 be pleasing to you, LORD,  
 my rock and redeemer.

*Psalm 20 — A Prayer for Victory*

- 20 *For the leader. A psalm of David.*  
 The LORD answer you in the day of distress,  
 the name of the Jacob's God protect you,  
 2 sending you help from the temple,  
 out of Zion supporting you.
- 3 All your meal-offerings may he remember,  
 your burnt-offerings look on with favour. (*Selah*)  
 4 May he grant you your heart's desire,  
 and bring all your plans to pass.
- 5 We will shout then for joy at your victory,  
 and rejoice in the name of our God.  
 May the LORD grant your every request.
- 6 Now I am sure that the LORD  
 will help his anointed.  
 From his temple in heaven he will answer  
 by his mighty triumphant right hand.
- 7 Some in chariots are strong, some in horses;  
 but our strength is the LORD our God.
- 8 They will totter and fall,  
 while we rise and stand firm.
- 9 Give victory, LORD, to the king,  
 and answer us when we call.

*Psalm 21 — A Prayer after a Victory*

- 21 *For the leader. A psalm of David.*  
 The king rejoices, LORD, in your might,  
 how he exults because of your help!
- 2 You have granted to him his heart's desire,  
 you have not withheld his lips' request. (*Selah*)
- 3 You came to meet him with rich blessings,  
 you set on his head a golden crown.
- 4 He asked you for life, you gave it —  
 many long days, forever and ever.
- 5 Great is his glory because of your help,  
 honour and majesty you lay upon him.

For you make him most blessed forever, you make him glad with the joy of your presence.	6
For the king puts always his trust in the LORD; the Most High, in his love, will preserve him unshaken.	7
Your hand will reach all your foes, your right hand, all who hate you.	8
You will make them like a furnace of fire, when you appear, LORD.	9
The LORD will swallow them up in his wrath. The fire will devour them.	
You will sweep their offspring from the earth, their children from humanity.	10
When they scheme against you and hatch evil plots — they will fail.	11
For you aim your bow at their faces, make them turn in flight.	12
Be exalted, LORD, in your strength, to your might we shall sing and make music.	13

*Psalm 22 — The Sufferer's Triumph*

<i>For the leader; set to "Deer of the Dawn". A psalm of David.</i>	<b>22</b>
My God, my God, why have you left me, my rescue so far from the words of my roaring?	
I cry in the day, you do not answer, I cry in the night but find no rest.	2
You are the Holy One, throned on the praises of Israel.	3
In you our ancestors trusted, they trusted and you delivered them.	4
They cried to you, and found safety, in you did they trust and were not put to shame.	5
But I am a worm, not a person; insulted by others, despised by the people.	6
All who see me mock me, with mouths wide open and wagging heads:	7
'He relies on the LORD; let him save him.	8

Let him rescue the one he holds dear!

- 9 But you drew me from the womb,  
laid me safely on my mother's breasts.
- 10 On your care was I cast from my very birth,  
you are my God from my mother's womb.
- 11 Be not far from me, for trouble is nigh,  
and there is none to help.
- 12 I am circled by many bulls,  
beset by the mighty of Bashan,  
13 who face me with gaping jaws,  
like ravening roaring lions.
- 14 Poured out am I like water,  
and all my bones are loosened.  
My heart is become like wax,  
melted within me.
- 15 My palate is dry as a sherd,  
my tongue sticks to my jaws;  
in the dust of death you lay me.
- 16 For dogs are round about me,  
a band of knaves encircles me,  
gnawing my hands and my feet.
- 17 I can count my bones, every one.  
As for them, they feast their eyes on me.
- 18 They divide my garments among them,  
and over my raiment cast lots.
- 19 But you, O LORD, be not far,  
O my strength, hasten to help me.
- 20 Deliver my life from the sword  
my life from the power of the dogs.
- 21 Save me from the jaws of the lion,  
from the horns of the wild oxen help me.
- 22 I will tell of your fame to my kindred,  
and in the assembly will praise you.
- 23 Praise the LORD, you who fear him.  
All Jacob's seed, give him glory.  
All Israel's seed, stand in awe of him.

For he has not despised nor abhorred 24  
 the sorrow of the sorrowful.  
 He hid not his face from me,  
 but he listened to my cry for help.

Of you is my praise in the great congregation; 25  
 my vows I will pay before those who fear him.

The afflicted will eat to their heart's desire, 26  
 and those who seek after the LORD will praise him.  
 Lift up your hearts forever.

All will call it to mind, to the ends of the earth, 27  
 and turn to the LORD;  
 and all tribes of the nations will bow down before you.

For the kingdom belongs to the LORD: 28  
 he is the LORD of the nations.

To him will bow down all who sleep in the earth, 29  
 and before him bend all who go down to the dust,  
 and those who could not preserve their lives.

My descendents will tell of the LORD 30  
 to the next generation;  
 they will declare his righteousness 31  
 to people yet to be born:  
 He has done it.

*Psalm 23 — The Good Shepherd*

*A psalm of David.* **23**

The LORD is my shepherd: I am never in need.  
 He lays me down in green pastures. 2

He gently leads me to waters of rest,  
 he refreshes my life. 3

He guides me along paths that are straight,  
 true to his name.

And when my way lies through a valley of gloom, 4  
 I fear no evil, for you are with me.  
 Your rod and your staff comfort me.

You spread a table for me 5  
 in face of my foes;  
 with oil you anoint my head,

and my cup runs over.  
 6 Surely goodness and love will pursue me —  
 all the days of my life.  
 In the house of the LORD I will live  
 through the length of the days.

*Psalm 24 — The True Worshipper*

24 *Of David. A psalm.*  
 The earth is the LORD's and all that it holds,  
 the world and those who live in it.  
 2 For he founded it on the seas,  
 and on the floods he sustains it.  
 3 Who may ascend the hill of the LORD?  
 Who may stand in his holy place?  
 4 The clean of hands, the pure of heart,  
 who sets not their heart upon sinful things,  
 nor swears with intent to deceive:  
 5 they win from the LORD a blessing:  
 God is their champion and saviour.  
 6 Such must be those who resort to him,  
 and seek the face of the God of Jacob. (*Selah*)

*The Lords' Triumphal Entry into the Sanctuary*

7 Lift high your heads, you gates —  
 Higher, you ancient doors;  
 welcome the glorious king.  
 8 'Who is the glorious king?'  
 'The LORD strong and heroic,  
 the LORD heroic in battle.'  
 9 Lift high your heads, you gates —  
 Higher, you ancient doors;  
 welcome the glorious king.  
 10 'Who is the glorious king?'  
 'The LORD, the God of hosts,  
 he is the glorious king.' (*Selah*)

*Psalm 25 — A Prayer for Forgiveness and Protection*



<i>A psalm of David.</i>	<b>25</b>
To you, O LORD, I lift up my heart: all the day I wait for you.	
In you I trust, put me not to shame; let not my foes exult over me.	2
None will be shamed who wait for you, but shame will fall upon wanton traitors.	3
Make me, O LORD, to know your ways: teach me your paths.	4
In your faithfulness guide me and teach me, for you are my God and my saviour.	5
Remember your pity, O LORD, and your kindness, for they have been ever of old.	6
Do not remember the sins of my youth; remember me in kindness, because of your goodness, LORD.	7
Good is the LORD and upright, so he teaches sinners the way.	8
The humble he guides in the right, he teaches the humble his way.	9
All his ways are loving and loyal to those who observe his charges and covenant.	10
Be true to your name LORD, forgive my many sins.	11
Who then is the person who fears the LORD? He will teach them the way to choose.	12
They will live in prosperity, their children will inherit the land.	13
The LORD gives guidance to those who fear him, and with his covenant he makes them acquainted.	14
My eyes are ever toward the LORD, for out of the net he brings my foot.	15
Turn to me with your favour, for I am lonely and crushed	16
In my heart are strain and storm; bring me out of my distresses.	17
Look on my misery and trouble, and pardon all my sins,	18
look on my foes oh, so many!	19

And their cruel hatred towards me.  
 20 Deliver me, keep me, and shame not  
     one who takes refuge in you.  
 21 May integrity and innocence preserve me,  
     for I wait for you, O LORD.  
 22 Redeem Israel, O God,  
     from all its distresses.

*Psalm 26 — Prayer of a Devout Worshipper*

26 *A psalm of David.*  
 Defend me, O LORD, for my walk has been blameless;  
     in the LORD have I trusted unswervingly:  
 2 Examine me, LORD, and test me;  
     test my heart and my mind.  
 3 For your love is before my eyes,  
     and your faithfulness governs my way.  
 4 I never sat down with the worthless,  
     nor companied with dissemblers.  
 5 I hate the assembly of knaves,  
     I would never sit down with the wicked;  
 6 but, with hands washed in innocence,  
     I would march round your altar, O LORD,  
 7 singing loud songs of thanks,  
     and telling of all your wonders.  
 8 O LORD, I love your house,  
     the place where your glory lives.  
 9 Do not gather me up with sinners;  
     slay me not with people of blood,  
 10 whose hands are stained with villainy,  
     and whose right hand is filled with bribes.  
 11 But my walk is blameless!  
     O redeem me, be gracious to me.  
 12 My foot stands on even ground,  
     in the choirs I will bless the LORD.

*Psalm 27 — If God is for Me*

<i>A psalm of David.</i>	27
The LORD is my light and my saviour; whom then should I fear? The LORD protects my life; whom then should I dread?	
When the wicked drew near to assail me and eat up my flesh, it was those who distressed and opposed me who stumbled and fell.	2
Though against me a host should encamp, yet my heart would be fearless: though battle should rise up against me, still would I be trustful.	3
One thing have I asked of the LORD, and that do I long for — To live in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to gaze on the grace of the LORD and inquire in his temple.	4
For he will hide me in his shelter in the day of misfortune. In his sheltering tent he hides me: he lifts me up on a rock.	5
And now that my head he has lifted above my encircling foes, I will march round the altar and sacrifice, shouting with joy, in his tent, making music and song to the LORD.	6
<i>The Serenity of Faith</i>	
Hear, O LORD, my loud cry, and graciously answer me.	7
My heart has said to you, 'Your face, O LORD, I seek.'	8
Hide not your face from me,	9

reject not your servant in anger:  
 for you have been my help.  
 Abandon me not, nor forsake me,  
 O God of my help:  
 10 for father and mother have left me;  
 but the LORD will take me up.  
 11 Teach me your way, O LORD:  
 lead me in an even path,  
 because of my enemies.  
 12 Give me not up, O LORD,  
 unto the rage of my foes;  
 for against me have risen false witnesses,  
 breathing out cruelty.  
 13 Firm is the faith I cherish,  
 that I, in the land of the living,  
 will yet see the goodness of God.  
 14 Let your heart be courageous and strong,  
 and wait on the LORD.

*Psalm 28 — An Answered Prayer for Help*

28 *Of David.*  
 Unto you, O LORD, do I cry;  
 my rock, be not deaf to me:  
 lest, through holding your peace, I become  
 like those who go down to the pit.  
 2 Hear my loud entreaty,  
 as I cry for help to you,  
 lifting my hands, O LORD,  
 towards your holy chancel.  
 3 Take me not off with the wicked,  
 nor with the workers of wrong,  
 whose speech to their neighbours is friendly,  
 while evil is in their heart.  
 4 Give them as they have done,  
 as their wicked deeds deserve.  
 As their hands have wrought, so give to them:  
 requite to them their deserts.

They are blind to all that the LORD does, 5  
to all that his hands have wrought;  
and so he will tear them down,  
to build them up no more.

Blest be the LORD, who has heard 6  
my voice as I plead for mercy.

The LORD is my strength and my shield; 7  
my heart trusts in him.

I was helped: so my heart is exultant,  
and in my song I will praise him.

The LORD is the strength of his people, 8  
the fortress who saves his anointed.

O save your people, 9  
and bless your inheritance.

Be their shepherd  
and carry them forever.

*Psalm 29 — The Lord's Glory in the Storm*

*A psalm of David.* **29**

Ascribe to the LORD, you heavenly beings,  
ascribe to the LORD glory and power  
Ascribe to the LORD the glory he manifests: 2  
bow to the LORD in holy array.

The LORD's voice peals on the waters. 3  
The God of glory has thundered.

He peals o'er the mighty waters.  
The LORD's voice sounds with strength, 4  
the LORD's voice sounds with majesty.

The LORD's voice breaks the cedars, 5

he breaks the cedars of Lebanon,  
making Lebanon dance like a calf, 6  
Sirion like a young wild ox.

The LORD's voice hews out flames of fire. 7

The LORD's voice rends the desert, 8  
he rends the desert of Kadesh.

9 The LORD's voice whirls the oaks,  
and strips the forests bare;  
and all in his temple say 'Glory.'

10 The LORD was king at the flood,  
the LORD sits throned forever.

11 The LORD gives strength to his people,  
he blesses his people with peace.

*Psalm 30 — A Song of Thanksgiving for Deliverance*

**30** *A psalm of David. A song for the dedication of the Temple.*

I will extol you, O LORD,  
because you have lifted me up,  
and not suffered my foes to rejoice over me.

2 I cried to you for help,  
O LORD my God, and you healed me.

3 You have brought me up, LORD, from Sheol,  
from my way to the pit back to life you have called me.

4 Sing praise to the LORD, faithful people;  
give thanks to his holy name.

5 For his anger lasts only a moment,  
his favour endures for a lifetime.

Weeping may lodge for the night,  
but the morning brings shouts of joy.

6 When all went well, I imagined  
that never should I be shaken.

7 For by your favour, O LORD,  
you had set me on mountains strong:  
but you hide your face,  
and I was confounded.

8 Then to you, LORD, I cried,  
to the LORD I begged for mercy,

9 'What profit is there in my blood,  
if I go down to the pit?  
Can you be praised by dust?  
Can it tell of your faithfulness?

Hear, LORD, and show me your favour, LORD be a helper to me.'	10
You have turned my mourning to dancing; my sackcloth you have unloosed, and clothed me with joy:	11
that unceasingly I should sing your praise, and give thanks to you, LORD my God, forever.	12
<i>Psalm 31 — A Prayer for Deliverance from Troubles</i>	
<i>For the leader. A psalm of David.</i>	<b>31</b>
In you, O LORD, I take refuge; let me never be put to shame.	
Rescue me in your faithfulness; incline to me your ear.	2
Deliver me speedily. Be to me a rock of defence, a fortified house, to save me.	
For my rock and my fortress are you; lead me and guide me so your name will be honoured.	3
Draw me out of the net they have hid for me, for you yourself are my refuge.	4
Into your hand I commend my spirit: you ransom me, LORD, faithful God.	5
I hate those devoted to worthless idols; I trust in the LORD.	6
I will rejoice and be glad in your love, because you have looked on my misery, and cared for me in my distress.	7
You have not given me into the enemy's hand, you have set my feet in a spacious place.	8
Be gracious to me, LORD, for I am distressed; my eye is wasted away with sorrow.	9
For my life is consumed with grief, and my years with sighing.	10
My strength is broken with misery, my bones waste away.	
The scorn of all my foes, the butt of my neighbours am I,	11

a terror to my acquaintance.  
At the sight of me in the street  
people turn quickly away.  
12 I am clean forgotten like the dead,  
am become like a ruined vessel.  
13 I hear the whispers of many —  
terror on every side —  
scheming together against me,  
plotting to take my life.  
14 But my trust is in you, LORD.  
'You are my God,' I say;  
15 my times are in your hand, save me  
from the hand of the foes who pursue me.  
16 Make your face to shine on your servant,  
save me in your love.  
17 Put me not, O LORD, to shame,  
for I have called upon you.  
Let the wicked be put to shame  
silent in Sheol.  
18 Strike the false lips dumb,  
that speak proudly against the righteous  
with haughtiness and contempt.  
19 How great is the goodness  
you have treasured for those who fear you,  
and wrought for those who take refuge in you,  
in plain sight of all!  
20 In your sheltering wings you hide them  
from plottings of people,  
you keep them safe in a bower  
from the chiding of tongues.  
21 Blest be the LORD  
for the wonderful love he has shown me  
in time of distress.  
22 For I had said in panic,  
'I am driven clean out of your sight.'  
But you heard my plea,  
when I cried to you for help.



Love the LORD, all you faithful; 23  
 the LORD protects the loyal,  
 but repays the haughty in full.  
 Let your hearts be courageous and strong, 24  
 all you who wait on the LORD.

*Psalm 32 — A Prayer of Confession and Joy*

*Of David. A maskil.* 32

Happy those whose transgression is pardoned,  
 whose sin is covered.  
 Happy are those, free from falseness of spirit, 2  
 to whom the LORD reckons no debt of guilt.

When I held my peace, my bones wore away 3  
 with my endless groaning;  
 for day and night did your hand 4  
 lie heavy upon me.  
 The sap of my life was dried up  
 as with fierce summer-heat. (*Selah*)

I began to acknowledge my sin, 5  
 not concealing my guilt;  
 and the moment I vowed to confess  
 to the LORD my transgression,  
 then you yourself did pardon  
 the guilt of my sin. (*Selah*)

For this cause let all who are faithful 6  
 pray to you in the time of distress;  
 then, when the great waters rush,  
 they will not reach to him.  
 For you are my shelter, 7  
 you protect me from trouble,  
 and surround me with deliverance. (*Selah*)

'With my eye steadfastly upon you, 8  
 I will instruct and teach you  
 The way you should go.  
 Do not be like the horse or the mule, 9  
 that have no understanding,

but need bridle and halter to curb them,  
else they will not come near to you.'

- 10 The godless have many sorrows,  
but those who trust in the LORD  
will be compassed about by his kindness.  
11 Be glad in the LORD, and rejoice, you righteous;  
and ring out your joy, all you upright in heart.

*Psalm 33 — A Hymn of Thanksgiving*

- 33 Shout for joy in the LORD, you righteous:  
praise for the upright is seemly.  
2 Give thanks to the LORD on the lyre,  
play to him on a ten-stringed harp.  
3 Sing to him a new song,  
play skilfully and shout merrily.  
4 For the LORD is straight in his promise;  
and all that he does is in faithfulness.  
5 Justice and right he loves;  
the earth is full of his kindness.  
6 By his word the heavens were made,  
all their host by the breath of his mouth.  
7 He gathers the sea in a bottle,  
the ocean he puts into store-houses.  
8 Let the whole world honour the LORD,  
let all who live on earth be in awe.  
9 For at his word it came into being,  
at his command it stood forth.  
10 The LORD frustrates the designs of the nations,  
what the peoples have purposed, he brings to nought,  
11 but the LORD's own design will stand forever,  
and what his heart has purposed, through all genera-  
tions.  
12 Happy the nation whose God is the LORD,  
the people he chose for himself as his own.  
13 The LORD looks down from heaven,  
he sees all of humanity;

from where he rules he gazes	14
on all who inhabit the earth.	
He fashions the hearts of them all,	15
and gives heed to all that they do.	
It is not by great armies that kings are victorious,	16
it is not by great strength that a warrior saves himself;	
false hope is the war-horse to usher in victory,	17
for all its great might it can provide no escape.	
See! The eye of the LORD is on those who fear him,	18
on those who hope in his kindness;	
to deliver their life from death,	19
and to keep them alive in famine.	
We wait for the LORD:	20
he is our help and our shield.	
For in him our heart is glad,	21
we trust in his holy name.	
Let your kindness, O LORD, be upon us,	22
as is our hope in you.	

*Psalm 34 — The Lord is Mindful of His Own*

<i>Of David, when he feigned madness in the presence of Abimelech,</i>	<b>34</b>
<i>    who drove him away, and he left.</i>	
I will bless the LORD at all times,	
in my mouth will his praise be forever.	
In the LORD will my heart make her boast,	2
the humble will hear and be glad.	
O magnify the LORD with me	3
and let us extol his name together.	
I sought the LORD, and, in answer,	4
he saved me from all my terrors.	
Look to him and you will be radiant,	5
with faces unashamed.	
Here is one who was crushed,	6
but cried and was heard by the LORD,	
and brought safe out of every trouble.	
The LORD's angel encamps	7

about those who fear him, and rescues them.  
 8 O taste and see that the LORD is good,  
     happy those who take refuge in him.  
 9 Fear the LORD, all his people,  
     for they who fear him lack nothing.  
 10 Even young lions may be poor and hungry,  
     but those who seek the LORD  
     will not lack any good thing.  
 11 Come, children, listen to me.  
     I will teach you the fear of the LORD.  
 12 Which of you is desirous of life,  
     loves many and happy days?  
 13 Then guard your tongue from evil,  
     and your lips from speaking deceit.  
 14 Depart from evil, and do good;  
     seek peace, and pursue it.  
 15 The eyes of the LORD are towards the righteous,  
     his ears are towards their cry for help.  
 16 The LORD sets his face against those who do evil,  
     to root their memory out of the earth.  
 17 When righteous cry, they are heard by the LORD,  
     and he saves them from all their distresses.  
 18 The LORD is near to the broken-hearted,  
     he helps those whose spirit is crushed.  
 19 Many misfortunes befall the righteous,  
     but the LORD delivers them out of them all.  
 20 He guards all their bones,  
     none are broken.  
 21 Misfortune will slay the ungodly;  
     those who hate the righteous are doomed.  
 22 The LORD ransoms the life of his servants,  
     and none will be doomed who takes refuge in him.

*Psalm 35 — A Prayer for Deliverance from Malicious Foes*

35 *Of David.*

Contend, LORD, with those who contend with me,  
     do battle with those who do battle with me.  
 2 Grasp shield and buckler,

and rise up as my help. Draw spear and battle-axe, confront those who pursue me.	3
Assure me that you will help me. Dishonour and shame be on those who are seeking my life!	4
Defeat and confusion on those who are planning my hurt! As chaff before wind may they be, with the LORD's angel pursuing them.	5
Slippery and dark be their way, with his angel thrusting them on.	6
For they wantonly hid their net for me, and dug a pit to destroy me.	7
Upon them may ruin come unawares; may the net which they hid catch themselves, and into the pit may they fall.	8
Then I will exult in the LORD, and be joyful because of his help; and all my being will say, 'Who, O LORD, is like you, who save the helpless from those too strong for them, the poor and the helpless from those who despoil them?'	9 10
Violent witnesses rise, and ask of me things that I know not.	11
Evil for good they requite me, leaving me inwardly comfortless.	12
But when <i>they</i> were sick, I put on sackcloth, and chastened myself with fasting. I prayed with head bowed low, as if for my friend or my brother.	13 14
I went about bowed and in mourning, as one who laments his mother.	
When I stumbled, they gleefully gathered, strangers gathered around me, and tore at me without ceasing,	15

- 16      impiously mocking and mocking,  
          bearing their teeth at me.
- 17      How long, LORD, will you look on?  
          Rescue me from their roaring,  
          my precious life from the lions.
- 18      I will then give you thanks in the great congregation,  
          and praise you before many people.
- 19      Suffer not those to rejoice over me  
          who are falsely my foes,  
suffer not those who without cause abhor me  
          to wink with the eye.
- 20      For it is not peace that they speak  
          of those who are quiet in the land;  
but treacherous charges they plot.
- 21      With wide open mouths they shout,  
‘Hurrah! Hurrah!  
          With our own eyes we saw it.’
- 22      But you have seen, too, O LORD,  
          keep not silence, O LORD,  
          be not far from me.
- 23      Bestir you, awake, for my right  
          my God, my LORD, for my cause.
- 24      You are just, LORD: win for me justice,  
          let them not rejoice over me,
- 25      inwardly saying, ‘Hurrah!  
          The desire of our hearts at last!  
          Now we have swallowed him up.’
- 26      Shame and confusion together  
          on those who rejoice at my hurt!  
Clothed with shame and dishonour  
          be those who are haughty to me!
- 27      Let such as delight in my cause  
ring out their gladness,  
          and say evermore,  
‘Great is the LORD whose delight  
          is the well-being of his servant.’

Then my tongue will tell of your justice,  
and all the day long of your praise. 28

*Psalm 36 — The Triumphant Power of God's Love*

*For the leader. Of the servant of the LORD, of David.* 36

Sin whispers within the heart of the wicked,  
who have no dread of God before their eyes.  
It flatters them in their eyes 2  
that their sin will not be found out.

First, their speech becomes wicked and false, 3  
they give up acting wisely and well.  
Then they plot deliberate wrong, 4  
take their stand on the wicked way,  
without the least shrinking from evil.

Your love, O LORD, touches the heavens, 5  
your faithfulness reaches the clouds.  
Your justice is like the great mountains, 6  
your judgments are like the broad sea.  
LORD, you save people and animals.

How precious your love, O God! 7  
All may seek shelter in the shadow of your wings.

They feast on the fat of your house, 8  
they drink of your brook of delights.

For with you is the fountain of life, 9  
in the light that is yours we see light.

O continue your grace to the faithful, 10  
your love to the upright in heart.

Let no arrogant foot tread upon me, 11  
no wicked hand drive me to exile.

There the workers of wrong lie prostrate, 12  
thrust down to rise up no more.

*Psalm 37 — Trust in the Lord and Do Good*

*Of David.* 37

Be not kindled to wrath at the wicked,

nor envious of those who work wrong;  
2 for, like grass, they will speedily wither,  
and fade like the green of young grass.

3 Trust in the LORD, and do good;  
remain in the land, and deal faithfully:  
4 then the LORD will be your delight,  
he will grant you your heart's petitions.

5 Commit your way to the LORD;  
trust in him, and he will act,  
6 making clear as the light your right,  
and your just cause clear as the noon-day.

7 In silence and patience wait on the LORD.  
Be not kindled to anger at those who prosper.  
At those who execute evil devices.

8 Desist from anger, abandon wrath:  
be not kindled to anger it leads but to evil:  
9 for evildoers will be cut off,  
but the land will be theirs, who wait on the LORD.

10 Yet but a little, and the wicked vanish:  
look at their place: they are there no more.  
11 But the humble will have the land,  
and the rapture of peace in abundance.

12 The wicked plots against the righteous,  
snarls like a wild animal;  
13 the LORD laughs,  
for he sees that his day is coming.

14 The wicked have drawn the sword, and bent the bow,  
to fell the poor, to slay those who walk uprightly;  
15 but their sword will pierce their own heart,  
and their bows will be broken in pieces.

16 Better is the righteous person's little  
than the wealth of many wicked.  
17 For the arms of the wicked will be broken,  
but the LORD upholds the righteous.



The LORD watches over the days of the blameless, their heritage will continue forever.	18
They will not be shamed in the evil time, in the days of famine they will be satisfied.	19
Because the wicked will perish: but the foes of the LORD, like a brand in the oven, will vanish, like smoke they will vanish.	20
The wicked must borrow and cannot pay back, but the righteous is lavish and gives.	21
For those blest by the LORD inherit the land, while those whom he curses will be cut off.	22
The LORD supports the steps of those with whom he is pleased.	23
Though they fall, they will not be cast headlong, for the LORD holds their hands.	24
Never, from youth to age, have I seen the righteous forsaken, or their children begging bread.	25
They are ever lavishly lending, and their children are fountains of blessing.	26
Turn away from evil and do good and you will live in the land forever.	27
For the LORD loves justice, he does not forsake his friends.	28
The unrighteous will be destroyed forever, and the seed of the wicked will be cut off.	
But the land will belong to the righteous, they will live upon it forever,	29
The mouth of the righteous murmurs wisdom, and words of justice are on their tongues.	30
The law of their God is in their heart, their steps are never unsteady.	31
The wicked watches the righteous, and seeks to put them to death.	32

- 33 But the LORD leaves them not in their hand:  
at their trial they will not be held guilty.
- 34 Wait on the LORD, and observe his way:  
he will lift you to honour the land will be yours,  
you will feast your eyes on the doom of the wicked.
- 35 I have seen the wicked exultant,  
lifting themselves like a cedar of Lebanon.
- 36 But the moment I passed, they vanished!  
I sought for them, but they could not be found.
- 37 Preserve your honour and practise uprightness,  
for such a person fares well in the end.
- 38 But transgressors will perish together.  
Cut off are the wicked forever.
- 39 The righteous are saved by the LORD,  
who in time of distress is their refuge:
- 40 the LORD helps and rescue them,  
from the wicked he rescues and saves them,  
because they take refuge in him.

*Psalm 38 — A Confession and Prayer for Deliverance*

- 38 *A Psalm of David. A lament.*
- Reprove me not, LORD, in your anger,  
and chasten me not in your wrath;
- 2 for your arrows have sunk into me,  
and your hand lies heavy upon me.
- 3 In my flesh is no soundness  
because of your anger,  
no health in my bones,  
because of my sin.
- 4 For that my guilt  
is gone over my head:  
it weighs like a burden  
too heavy for me.
- 5 My wounds stink and fester,  
for my foolishness I am tormented.

Bent and bowed am I utterly, all the day going in mourning.	6
My loins are filled with burning, and in my flesh is no soundness.	7
I am utterly crushed and numb; I cry louder than lion roars.	8
LORD , you know all that I long for, my groans are not hidden from you.	9
My heart is throbbing, my strength has failed me. The light of my eyes— even it is gone from me.	10
My dear ones and friends keep aloof, and my neighbours stand afar off.	11
They who aim at my life lay their snares, they who seek my hurt speak of ruin, nursing treachery all the day long.	12
But I turn a deaf ear and hear not; like the dumb I open not my mouth.	13
I am like one without hearing, with no arguments in my mouth.	14
For my hope, O LORD, is in you. You will answer, O LORD my God, when I utter the hope that those who made scorn of my tottering feet may not rejoice over me.	15 16
For I am ready to fall, my pain forsakes me never.	17
I acknowledge my guilt, I am anxious because of my sin:	18
My wanton assailants are strong, those who wrongfully hate me are many, who render me evil for good, and oppose me, because I make good my goal.	19 20

- 21 Do not forsake me, O LORD;  
my God, be not far from me.  
22 Hasten to help me,  
O LORD my saviour.

*Psalm 39 — The Pathos of Life*

**39** *For the leader; for Jeduthun. A psalm of David.*

- I vowed to watch my words,  
and sin not with my tongue,  
but to put on my mouth a muzzle,  
while the wicked were in my presence.  
2 I was silent and dumb,  
speechless:  
but my pain was stirred up.  
3 My heart grew hot within me;  
as I mused, the fire was kindled,  
till at last the words came to my tongue.  
4 ‘Teach me, O LORD, my end,  
and the sum of my days what it is.  
Let me know how transient I am.  
5 See! My days you have made but a span,  
and my life is as nothing before you.  
It is but as a breath that everyone stands: (*Selah*)  
6 it is but in mere semblance we walk to and fro,  
and all our noise is for nothing.  
We heap up, and know not who will gather.’  
7 And now, what wait I for, LORD?  
My hope is in you.  
8 From all my transgressions deliver me;  
make me not the scorn of the fool.  
9 I am dumb, never opening my mouth,  
for this is your own doing.  
10 Remove your stroke from off me:  
by the might of your hand I am spent.  
11 When you rebuke someone to punish their sins,  
you consume, like a moth, what they treasures.  
Everyone is only a breath. (*Selah*)

Hear my prayer, O LORD; 12  
 attend to my cry for help.  
 Hold not your peace at my tears.  
 For I am but a guest of yours,  
 a stranger visiting, like all my ancestors.  
 Look away from me, let me smile again, 13  
 before I die and am gone.

*Psalm 40 — Thanksgiving and Petition*

*For the leader. A psalm of David.* 40

For the LORD I waited and waited,  
 till, inclining to me,  
 he heard my cry.  
 From the horrible pit he drew me, 2  
 up out of the miry clay;  
 he set my feet on a rock,  
 and my steps he made firm.  
 He put a new song in my mouth, 3  
 of praise to our God.  
 Many see it, and, filled with awe,  
 put their trust in the LORD.  
 Happy the person who has put 4  
 in the LORD their trust,  
 not looking to false gods  
 or turning to idols.  
 With us you have wrought in rich measure, 5  
 O LORD our God,  
 your marvels and purposes for us —  
 none may compare with you —  
 were I to declare or to tell them,  
 past counting are they.  
 In offerings bloody or bloodless 6  
 you have no delight,  
 but with open ears you have made me.  
 Burnt-offering and offering for sin  
 are not what you ask.  
 Then said I, 'Here I am, 7  
 as the roll of the book has enjoined.

- 8 My delight, O God, is to do your will,  
and your law is within my heart.’
- 9 Well, O LORD, you know  
that, with lips unrestrained,  
your righteousness I told  
in the great congregation,  
10 not hiding it in my heart.  
I have told of your steadfast help,  
from the great congregation I hid not  
your love and your faithfulness.
- 11 So do not restrain, LORD,  
your pity from us.  
Your love and your faithfulness — ever  
may they be our shield.
- 12 For evils that cannot be numbered  
have compassed me round.  
My transgressions have followed me up —  
I can bear it no more.  
They are more than the hairs of my head,  
and my heart has forsaken me.
- 13 O LORD, be pleased to deliver me,  
haste to my help, O LORD.
- 14 May those who are seeking my life  
be ashamed and confounded together;  
may those who delight in my hurt  
be defeated and brought to dishonour.
- 15 May those who hurrah over me  
be dumbfounded because of their shame.
- 16 But may all who seek after you  
rejoice and be glad in you.  
May all those eager for your aid,  
say, ‘Great is the LORD’ evermore.
- 17 I am weak and needy,  
yet the LORD cares for me.  
You are my help and deliverer;  
don’t delay, my God.

*Psalm 41 — A Prayer for Healing and Vindication*

**41** *For the leader; for Jeduthun. A psalm of David.*

Happy are those who consider the weak; in the day of misfortune the LORD will deliver them.	
He will keep them safe, happy, and long in the land, and not give them up to the rage of their foes.	2
The LORD will sustain them on bed of languishing; tending their sickness, as long as they lie.	3
For this cause I say, 'LORD, show me your favour; heal me, because I have sinned against you.'	4
My enemies speak of me nothing but evil, 'When will he die, and his name pass away?'	5
When one comes to see me, their words ring hollow; their heart keeps gathering mischief the while; and when they go out, they give it speech.	6
In secret they whisper together against me, all those who hate me plot evil against me.	7
'Some fatal disease has fastened upon him; and now that he lies, he will rise up no more.'	8
My most trusted friend, on whom I relied, who ate of my bread, has turned against me.	9
But do you, LORD, graciously raise me up, that I may pay them their due reward.	10
By this will I know you delight in me: if my foes may not shout over me in triumph.	11
For my innocence you uphold me, and set me forever before your face.	12
<i>Blessed be the LORD, the God of Israel, from everlasting to everlasting, Amen and Amen.</i>	13

### Book Two

#### *Psalm 42 — Yearning for God*

FOR THE LEADER. A MASKIL OF THE KORAHITES. **42**

Like the hart which longs  
for brooks of water,  
I long

- for you, God.
- 2 I thirst for God,  
for my living God.  
When shall I enter in,  
and see the face of God?
- 3 My tears have been my food  
by day and by night;  
for they say to me all the day long,  
'Where is your God?'
- 4 My heart floods with sorrow,  
as I call to mind:  
how I used to pass on with the throng,  
at their head, to the house of God,  
with glad shouts and giving of thanks,  
in the throng who kept festival.
- 5 Why am I downcast?  
Why this moaning within me?  
Hope in God;  
for yet will I praise him,  
my help, my God.
- 6 I am sunk in my misery;  
I will therefore call you to mind  
from the land of Jordan and Hermon,  
the mountain Mizar.
- 7 Flood is calling to flood  
at the noise of your cataracts;  
all your waves and your breakers  
have passed over me.
- 8 In the day I cry to the LORD  
to summon his kindness;  
and the song that I sing in the night  
is a prayer to the living God.
- 9 I say to God my rock,  
'Why have you forgotten me?  
Why must I walk so sadly,  
so hard pressed by the foe?'



It pierces me to the heart  
 to hear the enemy's taunts,  
 as all the day long they say to me,  
 'Where is your God?' 10

Why am I downcast? 11  
 Why this moaning within me?  
 Hope in God;  
 for yet will I praise him,  
 my help, my God.

*Psalm 43 — Plea for Help*

Right me, defend my cause 43  
 against a pitiless people.  
 From the crafty and crooked,  
 O God, deliver me.

For you are God my protector: 2  
 why have you cast me off?

Why must I walk so sadly,  
 so hard pressed by the foe?

Send forth your light and your truth, 3  
 let them be my guides:

to your holy hill let them bring me,  
 to the place where you live.

Then will I go to God's altar, 4  
 to God my rejoicing;

and with joy on the lyre I will praise you,  
 O God, my God.

Why am I downcast? 5  
 Why this moaning within me?

Hope in God;  
 for yet will I praise him,  
 my help, my God.

*Psalm 44 — A Lament in Defeat*

*For the leader. Of the Korahites. A maskil.* 44

O God, we have heard with our ears,  
 all our ancestors have told us

of the work that you wrought in their day,  
your wonders in days of old,  
2 uprooting and crushing the nations,  
then planting and settling them.  
For it wasn't their own sword that won them the land,  
3 it was not their own arm that brought them the victory.  
Yours was the hand and the arm,  
yours was the face that shone on them with favour.  
4 It was you, my king and my God,  
that ordained the victories of Jacob.  
5 Through you we can thrust back our foes,  
and by your name tread down our assailants:  
6 for not in my bow do I trust,  
nor can my sword win me the victory.  
7 Our victory comes from you,  
and confusion to those who hate us.  
8 In God we boast all the day long,  
and your name will we praise forever. (*Selah*)  
9 Yet you have spurned and disgraced us,  
in not going forth with our armies,  
10 and in making us flee from the foe,  
so that those who hated us plundered us.  
11 You have let us be eaten like sheep,  
you have scattered us over the world,  
12 sold your people for a pittance,  
and getting no gain from their price.  
13 You have made us the butt of our neighbours,  
the derision and scorn of all round us.  
14 O'er the world you have made us a byword,  
the nations at us shake their heads.  
15 My disgrace is forever before me,  
my face is covered with shame,  
16 at the words of blasphemers and scoffers,  
at the sight of the foe and the vengeful.  
17 All this has come upon us,  
yet we have not forgotten you  
nor falsely dealt with your covenant.  
18 Our heart has not turned back,

nor our steps declined from your way,  
 that you thus should have crushed us down, 19  
 and covered us over with gloom,  
 in the place where the jackals roam.  
 Had we forgotten the name of our God, 20  
 or stretched out our hands to a god that was strange,  
 would God not have searched this out? 21  
 For he knows the heart and its secrets.  
 But in your cause it is we are killed all the day, 22  
 and counted as sheep for the slaughter.  
  
 Rouse yourself, why do you sleep Lord? 23  
 Awake, cast us not off forever.  
 Why do you hide your face, 24  
 forgetting our stress and our misery?  
 For we have sunk down to the dust, 25  
 our bodies cling to the ground.  
 Arise, come to our help: 26  
 for your love's sake, ransom us.

*Psalm 45 — Song for the Marriage of a King*

*For the leader; on shoshannim. Of the Korahites. A maskil. A love song.* 45

My heart is astir with beautiful words:  
 I will sing a song, concerning the king,  
 with tongue like the pen of a ready writer.  
  
 Your beauty is more than mortal, 2  
 grace is shed over your lips:  
 therefore God has blessed you forever.  
 Warrior, strap your sword on your thigh. 3  
 What glory and splendour!  
  
 Good fortune attend you, as forth you ride 4  
 in the cause of good faith, and as champion of justice.  
 May your arm instruct you in deeds of dread.  
 Sharp are your arrows; nations fall under you: 5  
 pierced to the heart are the foes of the king.  
  
 Your throne shall endure for ever and ever 6

your royal sceptre a sceptre of equity.  
 7 Right you love and wrong you hate:  
 therefore the LORD your God anoints you  
 With oil of gladness above your fellows.  
 8 With myrrh, aloes, and cassia your robes are all fragrant,  
 you are gladdened by music of ivory harps.  
 9 King's daughters stand ready with jewels for you,  
 at your right hand the queen in gold of Ophir.  
 10 Listen, daughter, and see; and incline your ear:  
 forget your folk and your father's house.  
 11 And when the king desires your beauty,  
 bow to him, for he is your lord.  
 12 So shall the Tyrians come with gifts,  
 and the richest of people will do you homage.  
 13 The king's daughter is glorious altogether,  
 with dress of pearls inwrought with gold.  
 14 In many-coloured robes she is led to the king,  
 with the virgin companions she brought in her train.  
 15 The king's palace they enter with joy and rejoicing.  
 16 May sons of yours take the place of your fathers,  
 whom you will make princes in all the land.  
 17 Your name will I celebrate world without end,  
 so that nations shall praise you for ever and ever.

*Psalm 46 — Our God is a Mighty Fortress*

46 *For the leader. Of the Korahites, on alamothe. A song.*  
 God is our refuge and strength,  
 a very present help in trouble.  
 2 So we have no fear, though earth should change,  
 and the hills totter into the heart of the ocean.  
 3 Let its waters roar and foam,  
 let the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.  
 On our side is the LORD of hosts,  
 our sure defence is the God of Jacob. (*Selah*)  
 4 A river there is, whose streams make glad

God's city, the home the Most High has hallowed. God is within her: she cannot be shaken.	5
God helps her at the turn of the morning. Nations roared, kingdoms tottered:	6
he uttered his voice, earth melted away. On our side is the LORD of hosts,	7
our sure defence is the God of Jacob.	
Come and see what the LORD has done, working appallingly in the earth.	8
He stills wars to the ends of the earth- breaking the bow, snapping the spear,	9
burning the chariots in the fire. 'Refrain; and know surely that I am God,	10
high over the nations, high over the world.' On our side is the LORD of Hosts,	11
our sure defence is the God of Jacob. ( <i>Selah</i> )	

*Psalm 47 — The Lord's Universal Sovereignty*

<i>For the leader. Of the Korahites. A psalm.</i>	<b>47</b>
Clap your hands, all you peoples: shout to God in ringing cries.	
For the LORD is most high and dread, a great king over all the earth.	2
He subdues the peoples under us, the nations under our feet;	3
he chooses our heritage for us, the glory of Jacob whom he loves. ( <i>Selah</i> )	4
God is gone up with a shout, the LORD with the sound of a trumpet.	5
Sing praise to our God, sing praises: sing praise to our king, sing praises.	6
For king of all earth is he: praise God in a skilful song.	7
God is king over all the nations, God sits on his holy throne.	8

9 Princes of nations gather  
 with the people of Abraham's God:  
 for the shields of the earth are God's;  
 greatly exalted is he.

*Psalm 48 — The Marvellous Deliverance of Zion*

48 *A song. A psalm of the Korahites.*

Great is the LORD and worthy all praise  
 in the city of our God.

2 His holy mountain, that rises so fair,  
 is the joy of all the world.  
 Like the mount of the gods is Mount Zion,  
 the city of the great king.

3 Once God made himself known  
 as the defence of her palaces.

4 For see! A concert of kings  
 passed over the frontier together.

5 But one glance, and they were astounded;  
 they hastened away in dismay.

6 Trembling took hold of them there,  
 like the pains of a woman in labour.

7 They were shattered, as east wind shatters  
 the giant ships in pieces.

8 What we heard, we now have seen  
 in the city of the LORD of hosts,  
 the city of our God.  
 God will uphold her forever. (*Selah*)

9 We think, O God, of your love,  
 in the midst of your temple.

10 Your fame, O God, like your name, shall extend  
 to the ends of the earth.  
 Victory fills your hand.

11 Let mount Zion be glad;  
 let the daughters of Judah rejoice  
 because of your judgments.

12 Walk about Zion, go round her;  
 count her towers.

13 Set your mind on her ramparts,

consider her palaces;  
 that you tell to the next generation  
     That such is God, 14  
 our God he it is who shall guide us  
     for ever and ever.

*Psalm 49 — The Problem of the Prosperity of the Wicked*

*For the leader. Of the Korahites. A psalm. 49*

Hear this, you peoples all;  
     give ear, all you who live in the world  
 people of low degree and high, 2  
     the rich and the poor together.  
 My mouth shall utter wisdom, 3  
     the thoughts of a seeing heart.  
 I incline my ear to a proverb, 4  
     on the lyre I will open my riddle.

Why should I be afraid in the days of misfortune, 5  
     when circled by wicked and cunning foes,  
 who put their trust in their wealth, 6  
     and boast of their boundless riches?

For assuredly no one can ransom themselves, 7  
     or give to God the price of their life,  
 for the ransom of a life is costly, 8  
     no payment is ever enough,  
 to keep them alive for ever and ever, 9  
     so as never to see the pit at all.

But see it they will. Even wise people die, 10  
     the fool and the brutish perish alike,  
     and abandon their wealth to others.  
 The grave is their everlasting home, 11  
     the place they shall live in for ever and ever,  
     though after their own names they called whole lands.  
 Despite their wealth, 12  
     they perish like dumb animals.

This is the fate of the confident fool, 13

- and the end of those who are pleased with their portion. (*Selah*)
- 14 Like sheep they descend to Sheol  
with Death for their shepherd;  
down they go straight to the grave,  
and their form wastes away in their home below.
- 15 But God will assuredly ransom my life  
from the hand of Sheol;  
for he will receive me. (*Selah*)
- 16 So be not afraid when someone grows rich,  
when the wealth of their house increases.
- 17 Not a shred of it all can they take when they die,  
wealth cannot follow them down.
- 18 Though they count themselves happy, when they are alive,  
and win praise from many for faring so well,  
19 they must join their ancestors,  
who see the light nevermore.
- 20 The wealthy are without understanding,  
they perish like dumb animals.

*Psalm 50 — True Worship*

**50** *A psalm of Asaph.*

- The LORD God has spoken: He summons the earth  
from sunrise to sunset.
- 2 From Zion, perfection of beauty,  
God's glory shines forth.
- 3 Our God comes, he cannot keep silence,  
devouring fire is before him,  
and furious tempest around him.
- 4 He summons the heavens above  
and the earth to judge his people.
- 5 Gather to him his saints  
by covenant-sacrifice bound to him;  
6 that the heavens may declare his justice,  
for a God of justice is he. (*Selah*)
- 7 'Hear, O my people, and I will speak,  
and protest to you, O Israel:  
I am the LORD, your God.



Not for your sacrifices will I reprove you your burnt-offerings are ever before me	8
Not a bullock will I take from your house, nor he-goats out of your folds;	9
for all beasts of the forest are mine, and the kine on a thousand hills.	10
I know all the birds of the air, all that moves on the fields is mine.	11
Were I hungry, I would not tell you, for the world and its fulness are mine.	12
Am I such as to eat bulls' flesh, or drink the blood of goats?	13
Offer to God a thank-offering, pay the Most High your vows.	14
Summon me in the day of distress, I will rescue you, so will you honour me.'	15
But to the wicked God says:	16
'What right have you to talk of my statutes, or take my covenant into your mouth	
While you yourself hate correction, and cast my words behind you?	17
When you see a thief, you run with them; with adulterers you keep company.	18
You let your mouth loose for evil, your tongue contrives deceit.	19
You shamefully speak of your kin, and slander your own mother's son.	20
And because I kept silence at this, you did take me for one like yourself. But I will convict you and show you plainly.	21
Now you who forget God, mark this, lest I rend you, past hope of deliverance.	22
Those who bring a thank-offering honour me; but to those who follows my way, I will show the salvation of God.'	23

*Psalm 51 — God be Merciful to Me, the Sinner*

51 *For the leader. A psalm of David, when Nathan the prophet come to him after he had been with Bathsheba.*

- In your kindness, O God, be gracious to me,  
in your own great pity blot out my transgressions.
- 2 Wash me clean of my guilt,  
make me pure of my sin.
- 3 For well I know my transgressions,  
my sin is ever before me.
- 4 Against you, only you, have I sinned,  
and done that which is wrong in your sight:  
you therefore are just when you speak,  
and clear when you utter judgment.
- 5 See! In guilt was I brought to the birth,  
and in sin did my mother conceive me.
- 6 It's the innermost truth you desire,  
give me therefore true wisdom of heart.
- 7 Purge me clean with hyssop,  
wash me whiter than snow.
- 8 Fill me with joy and gladness,  
let the bones you have broken rejoice.
- 9 Hide your face from my sins,  
and blot out my guilt altogether.
- 10 Create me a clean heart, O God,  
put a new steadfast spirit within me.
- 11 Cast me not forth from your presence,  
withdraw not your holy spirit.
- 12 Give me back the joy of your help,  
with a willing spirit sustain me.
- 13 I will teach your ways to transgressors,  
and sinners shall turn to you.
- 14 Save me from blood, O God,  
and my tongue shall ring out your faithfulness.
- 15 Open my lips, O LORD,  
and my mouth shall declare your praise.
- 16 For in sacrifice you have no pleasure,  
in gifts of burnt-offering no delight.

The sacrifice pleasing to God 17  
 is a spirit that is broken;  
 a heart that is crushed, O God,  
 you will not despise.

Do good in your pleasure to Zion, 18  
 build the walls of Jerusalem.

Then will you welcome the due forms of sacrifice, 19  
 then on your altars shall bullocks be offered.

*Psalm 52 — The Doom of Arrogance*

*For the leader. A maskil of David, when Doeg the Edomite came and 52*  
*told Saul that David had gone to Abimelech's house.*

Why glory in mischief, you hero?  
 God's kindness is all the day.

Engulfing ruin you plot, 2  
 your tongue like a razor sharpened,  
 you practiser of deceit.

Evil, not good, you love, 3  
 and falsehood, not words of truth. (*Selah*)

But you love all words that devour, 4  
 and a tongue that is given to deceit.

But God, on his part, shall destroy you forever, 5  
 grasp you and pluck you out of your tent,  
 and root you out of the land of the living. (*Selah*)

Smitten with awe at the sight, 6  
 the righteous shall laugh at you.

'Look' (they will say) 'at the hero 7  
 who did not make God his stronghold,  
 but trusted in his great wealth  
 and in the strength of his riches.'

But I am like a fresh olive-tree 8  
 in the house of God.

I trust in the kindness of God  
 for ever and evermore.

I will render you thanks for ever 9  
 for what you have done.

I will tell how good you are

in the presence of those who love you.

*Psalm 53 — The Folly of Denying God*

53 *For the leader. On mahalath. A maskil of David.*

Fools say in their heart,  
 ‘There is no God.’  
 Vile, hateful their life is;  
 not one does good.

2 From heaven God looks out  
 on humans, to see  
 if any are wise,  
 and care for God.

3 But all have turned bad,  
 the taint is on all;  
 not one does good,  
 no, not one.

4 Have they learned their lesson,  
 those workers of evil?  
 Who ate up my people,  
 eating, devouring,  
 never calling to the LORD.

5 Sore afraid will they be,  
 where no fear was;  
 when God scatters the bones  
 of the godless people.  
 They will be put to shame,  
 when God rejects them.

6 If only help from Zion  
 would come for Israel!  
 When God brings his people  
 a change of fortune,  
 how glad will be Jacob,  
 and Israel how joyful!

*Psalm 54 — A Prayer for Deliverance from Oppression*

*For the leader. With stringed instruments. A maskil of David, when the Ziphites came and said to Saul, "David is in hiding among us".* 54

Save me, O God, by your name,  
     by your power secure for me justice.  
 Listen, O God, to my prayer, 2  
     give ear to the words of my mouth.  
 For proud men have risen against me, 3  
     and terrible men seek my life,  
     men who do not set God before them. (*Selah*)

But see! God is my helper, 4  
     the LORD is sustaining my life.  
 Let their evil fall back on my foes: 5  
     cut them off in your faithfulness, LORD.

Then will I bring you glad sacrifice, 6  
     praising your gracious name;  
 for from all distress you have saved me, 7  
     and feasted my eyes on my foes.

*Psalm 55 — Betrayed by a Friend*

*For the leader. With stringed instruments. A maskil of David.* 55

Listen, God, to my prayer.  
     Don't hide yourself from my pleading.  
 Hear me, and answer; 2  
     for bitter is my lament.  
 I am wild with the noise of the foe, 3  
     with the clamour of the ungodly;  
 for they hurl disaster upon me,  
     and attack me with fury.  
 My heart shudders within me, 4  
     terrors of deaths press on me,  
 fear and trembling attack me, 5  
     and horror wraps me round.  
 O for the wings of a dove: 6  
     I would fly away and rest.  
 I would wander far away, 7  
     find refuge in the wilderness. (*Selah*)  
 I would find myself a shelter 8

from raging wind and tempest.

- 9 Confuse them, LORD, upset their plans;  
for I see violence and strife in the city.  
10 By day and by night they make their rounds  
on the city walls,  
while within is crime and trouble,  
11 within is ruin.  
Her market-place is never free  
of deceit and tyranny.

*The Treacherous Friend*

- 12 The taunts were not those of a foe  
that I could have borne;  
the disdain was not that of an enemy  
I could have shunned them:  
13 but it was you, my equal,  
my dear and familiar friend.  
14 We used to be so close,  
together we walked in God's house with the crowd.  
15 May death suddenly take them,  
may they go down to Sheol alive,  
for evil lives in their homes and their hearts.  
16 But I will call on God,  
the LORD will save me.  
17 Evening and morning and noon  
I lament and moan.  
He will hear my voice;  
18 though I am attacked by many  
he will rescue me,  
unharmd from the war.  
19 God, who sits on his ancient throne  
will hear and will humble them,  
for they never change,  
they never fear God. (*Selah*)  
20 My friend turned against me,  
betrayed his word.  
21 His mouth was smoother than butter,

but war filled his heart.  
 His words were softer than oil,  
     but sharper than swords.  
 Cast your burden on the LORD, 22  
     and he will sustain you.  
 He will never let the righteous  
     be shaken.  
 But you, God, will hurl them down 23  
     to the deepest pit.  
 Bloody and treacherous people  
     will not live out half their days;  
     but I will trust you.

*Psalm 56 — A Prayer of Trust in God*

*For the leader. On jonath elem rehokim. Of David. A michtam, when the Philistines seized him in Gath.* 56

O God, be gracious to me,  
     for people trample upon me,  
     all the day righting and pressing me.  
 All the day enemies trample me; 2  
     many there be  
     who contend with me bitterly.  
 In the day of my terror 3  
     I trust in you.  
 In God I maintain my cause, 4  
     in God I fearlessly trust.  
     What can flesh do to me?  
  
 They torture me all the day, 5  
     they ceaselessly plan to hurt me,  
 banded together in secret, 6  
     watching my every step,  
     as those who hope for my death.  
 Pay them out for their sin, O God, 7  
     hurl down the strong in your anger.  
 You yourself count my wanderings. 8  
     Put in your bottle my tears  
     are they not in your book?  
 Then shall my foes be turned back 9

in the day that I call.  
 Of this I am sure,  
 because God is for me.  
 10 In God I maintain my cause,  
 in the LORD I maintain my cause.  
 11 In God I fearlessly trust,  
 what can people do to me?  
 12 Your vows are upon me, O God,  
 I will render thank-offerings to you;  
 13 because you have saved me from death,  
 my feet from stumbling,  
 to the end that I walk before God  
 in the light of the living.

*Psalm 57 — A Prayer for Protection from Persecution*

57 *For the leader. Al tashheth. A michtam of David, when he fled from Saul into a cave.*

Be gracious, O God, be gracious to me,  
 for in you I take shelter.  
 In your sheltering wings I take refuge,  
 till ruin be over past.  
 2 I cry to the Most High God,  
 to the God who accomplishes for me.  
 3 He will send me his succour from heaven,  
 he will thrust away those who would trample me. (*Selah*)  
 4 In the midst of lions I lie,  
 who devour human prey.  
 Their teeth are spears and arrows,  
 and their tongue is a sharpened sword.  
 5 Be exalted, God, o'er the heavens,  
 and your glory o'er all the earth.  
 6 They set a net for my feet,  
 but in it was their own foot caught.  
 Before me they dug a pit,  
 but they fell into it themselves. (*Selah*)  
 7 My heart is steadfast, O God,



my heart is steadfast.  
 I would sing, I would make music;  
     awake, my soul. 8  
 Awake, harp and lyre;  
     I would wake the dawn.  
 I would praise you among the peoples, O LORD, 9  
     and make music among the nations to you;  
 for great to heaven is your love, 10  
     and your faithfulness to the clouds.  
 Be exalted, God, o'er the heavens, 11  
     and your glory o'er all the earth.

*Psalm 58 — A Prayer for Vengeance on Unjust Judges*

*For the leader. Al tashheth. Of David. A michtam.* 58  
 Do you speak what is right, you gods?  
     With equity judge you your people?  
 In the land you practise iniquity — all of you; 2  
     violence do you dispense with your hands.  
 The wicked go astray from the womb 3  
     liars take the wrong path from their birth.  
 Venom have they like the venom of snakes, 4  
     they are like the deaf adder that stops her ears,  
 and refuses to listen to the voice of the charmer, 5  
     or binder of spells, no matter how cunning.  
  
 O God, break to pieces the teeth in their mouth, 6  
     tear out the great teeth of the young lions, LORD.  
 May they melt away like running water! 7  
     Like tender grass, cut down may they be!  
 Like the snail that dissolves on its crawling path, 8  
     like the birth untimely which sees not the sunlight.  
 Faster than a thorn-fire heats your pots, 9  
     he will come with his tempest and sweep them away.  
 The sight of such vengeance will gladden the righteous; 10  
     their feet they will wash in the blood of the wicked.  
 People will say, 'Yes, the just are rewarded: 11  
     yes, on the earth is a God who is Judge.'

*Psalm 59 — A Prayer for Safety*

59 For the leader. Al tashheth. Of David. A michtam, when Saul sent men to watch his house in order to kill him.

Save me, O God, from my enemies;  
 secure me from my assailants.  
 2 Save me from those who do wrong,  
 save me from the bloodthirsty.  
 3 For see! They lay ambush for me,  
 strong men are banded against me  
 not for sin or transgression of mine,  
 for no guilt of mine, O LORD,  
 4 they run and make ready. Awake!  
 Come forth to meet me, and see!  
 5 You, O LORD of hosts,  
 God of Israel, awake!  
 And punish the proud, every one;  
 spare none of the traitors vile. (*Selah*)

6 At evening they come,  
 and, howling like dogs,  
 make their round in the city.  
 7 Look at their venomous mouths,  
 tongues like swords,  
 they think no one  
 hears them.  
 8 But you, LORD, laugh at them,  
 you mock all the insolent.  
 9 My strength, I will sing to you,  
 for God is my sure retreat.  
 10 My God with his love will meet me,  
 and feast my eyes on my foes.

11 Slay them not, lest my people forget,  
 let your hosts keep them roaming and wandering.  
 12 In their sinful speech snare them, O LORD;  
 and may they be trapped in their pride,  
 for the curses and lies that they utter.  
 13 In your wrath make a clean end of them,  
 that people, to the ends of the earth,  
 may know that God rules in Jacob. (*Selah*)

At evening they come, 14  
 and, howling like dogs,  
 make their round in the city.  
 They roam about for a feast, 15  
 and snarl, if they get not their fill.  
 But I will sing of your might; 16  
 I will ring out your love in the morning.  
 For to me you have been a sure refuge,  
 a retreat in the day of my trouble.  
 My strength, I will sing praise to you, 17  
 for God is my sure retreat,  
 my faithful God.

*Psalm 60 — A Prayer after Defeat in Battle*

*For the leader. On shushan eduth. A michtam of David (for teaching), 60  
 when he fought with Aram-naharaim and Aram-zobah, and Joab  
 returned and defeated twelve thousand Edomites in the Valley of Salt.*

O God, you have spurned and broken us,  
 routing us in your wrath — restore us!  
 You have shaken the land and cleft it; 2  
 heal its tottering breaches.  
 You have made your people drink hardship, 3  
 and given us wine of reeling.  
  
 You have given those who fear you a banner, 4  
 a rallying-place from the bow, (*Selah*)  
 for the rescue of your beloved. 5  
 Save by your right hand and answer us.  
  
 God did solemnly swear: 6  
 ‘As victor will I divide Shechem,  
 and mete out the valley of Succoth.  
 Mine is Gilead, mine is Manasseh, 7  
 Ephraim is the defence of my head,  
 Judah my sceptre of rule,  
 Moab the pot that I wash in, 8  
 Edom — I cast my shoe over it,  
 I shout o’er Philistia in triumph.’  
  
 O to be brought to the fortified city! 9

O to be led into Edom!  
 10 Have you not spurned us, O God?  
     You do not march forth with our armies.  
 11 Grant us help from the foe,  
     for human help is worthless.  
 12 With God we shall yet do bravely:  
     he himself will tread down our foes.

*Psalm 61 — Our God is a Strong Tower*

**61**      *For the leader. On stringed instruments. Of David.*

Hear my cry, O God,  
     be attentive to my prayer.  
 2 From the ends of the earth I call  
     unto you, when my heart is faint:  
 lead me to the rock  
     that is high above me.  
 3 For you are a refuge to me,  
     a strong tower in face of the foe.  
 4 O to be guest in your tent forever,  
     hiding beneath your sheltering wings! (*Selah*)  
 5 For you, O God, do hear my vows,  
     and grant the desires of those who fear you.  
 6 Add many days to the life of the king;  
     may his years endure throughout all generations.  
 7 In the presence of God be he throned forever;  
     may kindness and faithfulness watch over him.  
 8 And I will sing praise to your name forever,  
     paying my vows day after day.

*Psalm 62 — Quietness and Confidence*

**62**      *For the leader. On jeduthun. A psalm of David.*

I wait alone in silence for God;  
     From him comes my help.  
 2 Yes, he is my rock, my help, my retreat,  
     I shall not be shaken too sorely.  
 3 How long will you, all of you, batter a man,  
     as one might a leaning wall?

- From his height 4  
 they are planning to topple him.  
 They take pleasure in falsehood; they bless with their  
 mouth,  
 but inwardly they curse. (*Selah*)
- I wait alone in silence for God; 5  
 for from him comes my hope.
- Yes, he is my rock, my help, my retreat, 6  
 I shall not be shaken too sorely.
- On God rests my honour and safety, 7  
 in God is my strong rock, my refuge.
- Trust in him, all you people assembled, 8  
 pour out your heart in his presence;  
 God is a refuge for us. (*Selah*)
- The lowly are nought but a breath, 9  
 the lofty are but an illusion:  
 in the balances up they go,  
 they are lighter than breath altogether.
- Trust not in gain of extortion, 10  
 set no vain hopes in robbery.  
 As for wealth, if it bears fruit,  
 set not your heart upon it.
- One thing God has uttered, 11  
 two things there are which I heard  
 that power belongs to God,  
 and to you, too, O LORD, belongs kindness; 12  
 for you requite each person  
 according to what they have done.
- Psalm 63 — Athirst for God*
- A psalm of David, when he was in the wilderness of Judah.* 63
- O God, my God, you, you do I seek:  
 my heart thirsts for you,  
 my body faints for you  
 in a parched and waterless land.
- As I in the temple have seen you, 2

beholding your power and your glory,  
 3 for better than life is your kindness:  
     my lips shall utter your praise.  
 4 So, while I live, I will bless you,  
     and lift up my hands in your name.  
 5 As with marrow and fat am I feasted;  
     with joyful lips I will praise you.  
 6 I call you to mind on my bed,  
     and muse on you in the night watches;  
 7 for you have been my help,  
     I joyfully sing in the shadow of your wings.  
 8 I cling close after you,  
     your right hand holds me up.  
 9 But those who seek after my life  
     shall go down to the depths of the earth,  
 10 given o'er to the power of the sword,  
     or as prey for jackals to devour.  
 11 But the king shall rejoice in God:  
     all who own his allegiance will glory.  
     For the mouth of the false shall be stopped.

*Psalm 64 — A Prayer for Deliverance from Malicious Foes*

**64**

*For the leader. A psalm of David.*

Hear, O my God, the voice of my lament:  
     guard my life from the foe who affrights me.  
 2 Hide me from villains who secretly plot,  
     from the blustering throng of the workers of evil,  
 3 who have sharpened their tongue like a sword,  
     and aimed bitter words like arrows,  
 4 which from ambush they launch at the blameless,  
     shooting swiftly and unafraid.  
 5 They strengthen their wicked purpose,  
     they tell of the snares they have hidden,  
     they say to themselves, 'Who can see?'  
 6 They think out their crimes full cunningly

hidden deep in their crafty hearts.

But God with his arrow will shoot them, 7  
 swiftly shall they be smitten.

For their tongue he will bring them to ruin, 8  
 all will shudder with horror at the sight of them.

Then every person, touched to awe, 9  
 as they ponder what God has wrought,  
 will tell the tale of his deeds.

In the LORD shall the righteous rejoice, 10  
 in him shall they take refuge;  
 and all the true-hearted shall glory.

*Psalm 65 — Hymn for a Thanksgiving Festival*

*For the leader. A psalm of David. A song.* 65

It is seemly to praise you, O God, in Zion,  
 and to you shall the vow be performed in Jerusalem.

O you who hear prayer, 2  
 unto you shall all flesh come.

Our sins are too mighty for us, 3  
 our transgressions you only can cover them.

Happy the person who you choose 4  
 to live beside you in your courts.

O may we be filled with the joys  
 of your house, of your holy temple.

In dread deeds you loyally answer us, 5  
 O God of our salvation,  
 whom all ends of the earth put their trust in,  
 and islands far away.

By your strength you establish the hills, 6  
 you are armed with might;

you still the roaring of seas, 7  
 and the turmoil of nations,

so that those who live at earth's bounds 8  
 are awed at your signs:  
 the lands of the sunrise and sunset  
 you make to ring with joy.





For you, God, have tested us, have tried us, as silver is tried.	10
You did bring us into prison, and put chains upon us, you did let people ride over our head.	11
We went through fire and through water, but you led us out to a spacious place.	12
I will enter your house with burnt-offerings, I will pay to you my vows, which my open lips have uttered, and my mouth has declared in my straits.	13
I will offer you offerings of fatlings, with the odour of burning rams, I will sacrifice bullocks with goats. ( <i>Selah</i> )	14
I will offer you offerings of fatlings, with the odour of burning rams, I will sacrifice bullocks with goats. ( <i>Selah</i> )	15
Come and hear my story all who fear God — of what he has done for me.	16
For my mouth had no sooner invoked him than his praise was under my tongue.	17
Had I cherished sin in my heart, the LORD would never have listened.	18
But assuredly God has listened, and attended to my loud prayer.	19
Blessed be God, who turned not aside my prayer, nor withdrew his kindness from me.	20

*Psalm 67 — A Harvest Thanksgiving*

<i>For the leader. On stringed instruments. A psalm. A song.</i>	<b>67</b>
Bless us, O God, with your favour, let the light of your face fall upon us; ( <i>Selah</i> ) that the world may know your way, and all nations your power to save.	2
Let the peoples praise you, O God; let the peoples all of them praise you.	3
Let the nations ring out their joy; for you govern the peoples with equity,	4

and guide the nations on earth. (*Selah*)  
 5 Let the peoples praise you, O God,  
 let the peoples, all of them, praise you.  
 6 The earth has yielded her increase  
 by the blessing of God, our God.  
 7 May this blessing of ours win people to him  
 to all the ends of the earth.

*Psalm 68 — Victory*

**68**                    *For the leader. Of David. A psalm. A song.*  
 God arises, his enemies scatter:  
     they who hate him flee before him.  
 2 As smoke before wind is driven,  
     as wax melts before fire,  
     so before God vanish the wicked.  
 3 But the righteous rejoice in God's presence,  
     they exult with exceeding joy.  
 4 Sing to God, make music to his name,  
     his name is the LORD, praise him who rides on the  
     clouds,  
     and exult in his presence.  
 5 Father of orphans, defender of widows,  
     is God in his holy abode.  
 6 God brings home the lonely,  
     he leads forth the prisoner to comfort,  
     so that none but the rebel lives cheerless.  
 7 God, when you went in front of your people  
     in your march through the desert, (*Selah*)  
 8 earth shook, the heavens poured rain  
     at the presence of God, Sinai's God  
     at the presence of God, Israel's God.  
 9 Rain in abundance, God, you did sprinkle,  
     restoring the languishing land of your heritage.  
 10 A dwelling therein your people found:  
     in your goodness, O God, you did care for the poor.  
 11 The LORD spoke the glad tidings of victory,

a great army of women proclaim it:	
‘Kings of armies they flee, they flee,	12
and the housewife divides the spoil:	
dove’s wings covered with silver	13
and pinions with shimmer of gold,	
set with stones, like snow upon Zalmon.’	14
A mountain of God is the mountain of Bashan,	15
a mountain of peaks is the mountain of Bashan.	
You high-peaked mountains, why look you askance	16
at the mountain which God has desired for his home	
whereon the LORD will live forever?	
The chariots of God are twice ten thousand:	17
the LORD came from Sinai, his holy place.	
You did mount the height with trains of your captives,	18
and gifts that you had received from the people.	
The rebels shall live with the LORD God.	
Blest be the LORD who sustains us daily,	19
the God who is also our saviour. ( <i>Selah</i> )	
Our God is a God who is saviour.	20
The ways of escape from death	
are known to the LORD God.	
Yes, God will shatter the head of his foes	21
the rough scalp of those who strut on in their sins.	
The LORD said: ‘I will bring you home from Bashan,	22
home from the depths of the sea,	
that your feet you may bathe in blood,	23
and your dogs lick their share of the foe.’	
In the temple appear God’s triumphal processions,	24
processions in praise of my king and my God,	
with singers in front, and minstrels behind,	25
and maidens with timbrels between them, singing,	
‘You of the well-spring of Israel,	26
bless the LORD God in the dance.’	
There, in front, is Benjamin the little,	27
the princes of Judah beside them,	
the princes of Zebulon, princes of Naphtali.	
God, show your strength,	28

your godlike might,  
 as you did in the past,  
 29 from your temple that crowns Jerusalem.  
 Kings shall bring tribute to you.  
 30 Rebuke the beast of the reed,  
 the herd of bulls, with the calves of the peoples.  
 Trample down the lovers of lies.  
 Scatter the nations whose joy is in war.  
 31 May they come from Egypt with gifts of oil,  
 Ethiopia haste with full hands to God.  
 32 Sing to God, O you kingdoms of earth,  
 make melody to the LORD. (*Selah*)  
 33 Praise him who rides on the ancient heavens.  
 See! He utters his voice, his mighty voice.  
 34 Ascribe strength to the God over Israel,  
 whose strength and majesty live in the skies.  
 35 Awe-inspiring is God in his holy place,  
 it is Israel's God  
 who gives strength and might to his people.  
 Blessed be God.

*Psalm 69 — A Prayer for Deliverance and Vengeance*

**69** For the leader. On shoshannim. Of David.  
 Save me, O God; for the waters  
 are threatening my life.  
 2 I am sunk in depths of mire,  
 where ground there is none.  
 I am come into deep deep waters,  
 the flood overwhelms me.  
 3 I am weary of crying, my throat is parched,  
 my eyes are wasted with waiting for God.  
 4 More than the hairs of my head  
 are those who wantonly hate me.  
 More than my bones in number  
 are those who are falsely my foes.  
 That which I never robbed,  
 how am I then to restore?  
 5 O God, you know my folly,

my guilt is not hidden from you.  
 Through me let not any be shamed, 6  
     who wait for you, LORD God of hosts.  
 Through me let not those be confounded  
     who seek you, O God of Israel.  
 It's in your cause that I have borne taunts, 7  
     and my face has been covered with shame;  
 I became to my kindred a foreigner, 8  
     to my mother's sons a stranger.  
  
 It was zeal for your house that consumed me, 9  
     and the insults they hurled at you fell upon me.  
 When I chastened myself with fasting, 10  
     they took occasion to taunt me.  
 When I put on a garment of sackcloth, 11  
     they made me the theme of a taunt-song.  
 Those who sit in the gate make sport of me 12  
     in the music of drunken songs.  
  
 But I pray to you, LORD, 13  
     for a time of favour.  
 In your great love answer me;  
     with your loyal help, save me  
 from sinking down in the mire. 14  
     Lift me out of the deep deep waters,  
 that the rushing flood may not drown me, 15  
     that the deep may not swallow me up,  
     nor the pit close her mouth upon me.  
 Answer me, LORD, in your gracious kindness, 16  
     turn to me in your great compassion.  
 Hide not your face from your servant, 17  
     for I am in trouble; O answer me speedily.  
 Draw near to me, redeem me; 18  
     because of my enemies, ransom me.  
  
 You know how I am insulted; 19  
     in your sight are all my foes.  
 Insult has broken my heart, 20  
     past cure are my shame and confusion.  
 For pity I looked — there was none!  
     And for comforters, but I found none.

- 21     Poison they gave me for food,  
           and to slake my thirst they gave vinegar.
- 22     May their table, outspread, be a trap to them,  
           and their peace-offerings be a snare.
- 23     May their eyes be darkened and blind,  
           make their loins to shake without ceasing.
- 24     Pour your indignation upon them,  
           let your burning wrath overtake them.
- 25     May their camp be a desolation,  
           in their tents be there none to live.
- 26     For those whom you struck, they persecute,  
           and those whom you wounded, they pain yet more.
- 27     Charge them with sin upon sin,  
           may they not be acquitted by you.
- 28     From the book of life be they blotted,  
           may their names not be written with the righteous.
- 29     Lift me, O God, by your help  
           above my pain and misery.
- 30     Then will I praise God in song  
           and magnify him with thanksgiving,  
 31     which shall please the LORD better than ox,  
           or than bullock with horns and hoofs.
- 32     The oppressed shall rejoice at the sight.  
           You who seek after God, let your heart revive.
- 33     For the LORD listens to the poor,  
           he does not despise his prisoners.
- 34     Let the heavens and the earth sing his praises,  
           the seas, and all creatures that move in them.
- 35     For God will bring help to Zion,  
           and build up the cities of Judah,  
           his people shall live there in possession.
- 36     His servants' children shall have it for heritage,  
           and those who love him shall live therein.

*Psalm 70 — A Cry for Help in Persecution*

- 70             *For the leader. Of David. For commemoration.*  
 Quickly, God, deliver me,

hasten to help me, LORD.  
 May those who are seeking my life, 2  
 be ashamed and confounded.  
 May those who delight in my hurt 3  
 be defeated and brought to dishonour.  
 But may all who seek after you 4  
 rejoice and be glad in you.  
 May all who love your salvation  
 say, 'Glory to God,' evermore.  
 I am weak and needy: 5  
 make haste, God, to me.  
 You are my help and deliverer;  
 LORD, don't delay.

*Psalm 71 — Forsake me not, when I am Old*

In you, O LORD, I take refuge, **71**  
 let me never be put to shame.  
 In your faithfulness save me and rescue me, 2  
 bend your ear to me and save me.  
 Be to me a rock of defence, 3  
 a fortified house, to save me;  
 for my rock and my fortress are you.  
 Save me, my God, from the hand of the wicked, 4  
 from the grasp of the unjust and cruel.  
 For you, LORD, are my hope, 5  
 in whom from my youth I have trusted.  
 On you have I leaned from my birth; 6  
 from my mother's womb it was you who did draw me.  
 In you is my hope evermore.  
 I have been as a wonder to many, 7  
 for you are my refuge and strength.  
 All the day long my mouth 8  
 is filled with your praise and your glory.  
 Cast me not off in the time of old age; 9  
 when my strength is spent, forsake me not.  
 For my foes whisper against me, 10  
 they who watch me take counsel together;  
 'God has left him,' they say: 'pursue 11

and seize him, for he is helpless.’

- 12 O God, be not far from me,  
haste, O my God, to my help.
- 13 Put my foes to shame and dishonour,  
with insult and shame be they covered.
- 14 But I will never stop hoping,  
and more and yet more will I praise you.
- 15 All the day long shall my mouth  
tell your faithfulness and your salvation,  
though I know not how they may be counted.
- 16 I will tell of the might of the LORD,  
and your faithfulness praise, you alone.
- 17 You have taught me, O God, from my youth,  
and till now have I told of your wonders.
- 18 Even in old age and grey hair,  
O God, do not forsake me.  
Still would I tell of your might  
unto all generations to come.
- 19 Your power and your justice, O God,  
extend as far as the heavens:  
for great are the things you have done.  
Who is like you, O God?
- 20 You have caused us to see troubles many,  
but you will revive us again.  
From the depths of the earth  
you will bring me up again.
- 21 You will multiply my greatness,  
and comfort me again.
- 22 So with harp I will praise you,  
and your faithfulness, O my God;  
and make music to you on the lyre,  
O you Holy One of Israel.
- 23 My lips shall ring out their joy,  
my mouth shall sing praises to you;  
all of me, which you have redeemed.
- 24 Yes, all the day long shall my tongue  
utter your righteousness;



for ashamed and confounded are they  
 who were seeking my hurt.

*Psalm 72 — A Prayer for a Just and Glorious Reign*

*Of Solomon.*

72

Give the king, O God, your own spirit of justice your spirit of right to the son of the king, that with right he may judge your people, and your downtrodden ones with justice.	2
May the mountains bear weal for the people, and the hills yield fruits of justice.	3
The weak may he help to their rights, may he save the sons of the needy and crush the oppressor in pieces.	4
May he live as long as the sun, while the moon shines — for ages and ages.	5
May he be like the rain on the meadow, like showers that water the earth.	6
In his days may justice flourish, and welfare abound, till the moon be no more.	7
May he reign from ocean to ocean, from the river to the ends of the earth.	8
May his foes bow down before him, his enemies lick the dust.	9
May tribute be rendered by kings of the isles and of Tarshish; may gifts be brought by the kings of Sheba and Seba.	10
May all kings fall prostrate before him, and all nations yield him their service.	11
For he saves the poor when he cries, the helpless and the downtrodden.	12
He pities the weak and the poor, he saves the lives of the poor.	13
He redeems them from wrong and from violence,	14

- for dear is their blood in his sight.
- 15 Long may he live;  
and may gold of Sheba be given him;  
prayer, too, be made for him ceaselessly,  
all the day long may men bless him.
- 16 May the land have abundance of corn,  
to the tops of the hills may it wave.  
May the fruit thereof flourish like Lebanon,  
may men spring from the city like grass of the earth.
- 17 May his name be blessed forever,  
may his fame endure as the sun.  
May all nations envy his blessedness,  
all tribes of the earth call him happy.
- 18 *Blest be the LORD God, Israel's God,  
who alone does wonders;*
- 19 *And blest be forever his glorious name.  
Let all the earth be filled with his glory.  
Amen and Amen.*
- 20 Here end the prayers of David, son of Jesse.

### Book Three

#### *Psalm 73 — Fellowship with God Here and Hereafter*

- 73 A PSALM OF ASAPH.
- Yes, God is good to the upright,  
the LORD to the pure in heart.
- 2 But my feet were almost gone,  
my steps had nearly slipped,
- 3 through envy of godless braggarts,  
when I saw how well they fared.
- 4 For never a pang have they,  
their body is sound and sleek.
- 5 They have no trouble like mortals,  
no share in human pain.

So they wear their pride like a necklace, 6  
     they put on the garment of wrong,  
 their eyes stand out with fatness, 7  
     their heart swells with riotous fancies.  
 Their speech is mocking and evil, 8  
     condescending and crooked their speech.  
 They have set their mouth in the heavens, 9  
     while their tongue struts about on the earth.  
 Small wonder that people resort to them, 10  
     and drink deep draughts of their lore.  
 'How does God know?' they say, 11  
     'And has the Most High any knowledge?'  
 See! These are the godless, 12  
     with wealth and ease ever increasing.

Yes, in vain have I kept my heart pure, 13  
     and washed my hands in innocence;  
 for all the day long was I plagued 14  
     not a morning but I was chastised.  
 But to resolve to speak like they do 15  
     would be treachery to your children.

So I sought to understand it, 16  
     but a wearisome task it seemed:  
 till I entered the holy world of God 17  
     and saw clearly their destiny.

Yes, you set them on slippery places; 18  
     down to destruction you hurl them.  
 One moment and then what a horror of ruin! 19  
     They are finished and ended in terrors.  
 Like a dream, when one wakes, shall they be, 20  
     whose phantoms the waker despises.

So my bitterness of mind 21  
     and the pain that stabbed my heart  
 show how dull I was and stupid 22  
     just like a beast before you.

But I am always with you, 23  
     you have hold of my right hand.

- 24 By a plan of yours you guide me  
and will afterward take me to glory.
- 25 Whom have I in the heavens but you?  
And on earth there is none I desire beside you.
- 26 Though flesh and heart waste away,  
yet God is the rock of my heart,  
yet God is my portion forever.
- 27 For see! Those who are far from you must perish,  
you destroy all who are false to you.
- 28 But I am happy when close to God;  
the LORD my God I have made my refuge,  
that I may recount all the things you have done.

*Psalm 74 — Lament on the Devastation of the Temple*

- 74 *A maskil of Asaph.*
- Why, O God, have you spurned us forever?  
Why smokes your wrath against the sheep of your pasture?
- 2 Remember the community you purchased of old  
to become by redemption the tribe of your heritage,  
Zion, the mountain you made your home.
- 3 Rouse yourself, visit its ruins complete.  
In the temple the foe has made havoc of all things.
- 4 Like lions your enemies roared through your house,  
replacing our symbols by signs of their own,  
5 hacking, like woodsmen who lift  
axes on thickets of trees,  
6 smashing with hatchets and hammers  
all of its carved work together.
- 7 They have set your temple on fire,  
to the very ground they have outraged  
the place where lives your name.
- 8 They have said in their heart, 'Let us utterly crush them.'  
They have burned all the houses of God in the land.
- 9 No symbol of ours do we see any more:  
no prophet is there any more,

none is with us who knows how long. How long, O God, is the foe to insult?	10
Shall the enemy spurn your name forever? Why, O LORD, do you hold back your hand, why keep your right hand in the folds of your robe?	11
Yet God is our king from the ancient days, in the midst of the earth working deeds of salvation.	12
It was you who did cleave the sea by your might, and shatter the heads of the ocean monsters.	13
It was you who did crush many-headed Leviathan, and give him as food to the beasts of the wilderness.	14
It was you who did cleave the fountains and torrents; it was you who did dry the perennial streams.	15
Yours is the day; yours, too, is the night, it was you who did establish the sun and the star.	16
It was you who did fix all the borders of earth: summer and winter it's you who have made them.	17
Yet, for all this, the foe has insulted you, LORD, and a nation of fools has reviled your name.	18
Do not give your dove to the beasts, do not forget your afflicted forever.	19
Look to the sleek ones - how full they are: the dark places of earth are the dwellings of violence.	20
O let not the downtrodden turn back ashamed: let the poor and the needy sing praise to your name.	21
Arise, God, and defend your cause: remember how fools all the day insult you.	22
Do not forget the uproar of your enemies, the din of your foes that ascends evermore.	23

*Psalm 75 — God the Judge*

*For the leader; al tashheth. A psalm of Asaph, a song.* **75**

We praise you, God, we praise you: we would call on your name and declare your wonders.	
'At the time I choose, I will judge fairly.	2

- 3     Though earth melt and all her inhabitants,  
       it is I who keep steady her pillars.' (*Selah*)
- 4     I say to the boasters, 'Boast not '  
       to the wicked, 'Lift not up your horn:  
 5     lift not your horn on high,  
       speak not boldly against the Rock.'
- 6     For not from east nor west,  
       not from desert nor mountains;  
 7     but God himself is the judge,  
       humbling one and exalting another.
- 8     In the hand of the LORD is a cup  
       foaming wine, richly spiced.  
    Out of this he pours a draught,  
       and all the wicked of earth  
       must drain it down to the dregs.
- 9     But I will rejoice forever,  
       singing praise to the God of Jacob.
- 10    I will hew all the horns of the wicked,  
       but the horns of the just shall be lifted.

*Psalm 76 — A Song of Victory*

- 76   *For the leader. With instrumental music. A psalm of Asaph, a song.*  
       God has made himself known in Judah,  
       his name is great in Israel.
- 2     His tent is in Salem,  
       his dwelling in Zion.
- 3     There he broke the lightning arrows,  
       shield, sword, and weapons of war. (*Selah*)
- 4     Terrible is your splendour  
       on the everlasting mountains.
- 5     Despoiled were the stout of heart;  
       in the sleep into which they had fallen,  
       none of the warriors  
       could lift a hand.
- 6     At your rebuke, God of Jacob,

sank chariot and horse to sleep. Awful are you: who can stand before you, when once you are angry?	7
The judgment you gave from heaven frightened the earth into silence, when God arose to judgment to save the oppressed of the earth. ( <i>Selah</i> )	8 9
The fiercest will praise you, to you will the remnant hold festival. Vow and pay to LORD your God, and let all who are round him bring presents.	10 11
He lops off the courage of princes, and with terror fills kings of the earth.	12

*Psalm 77 — A Prayer for Preservation as in the Days of Old*

<i>For the leader. On Jeduthun. Of Asaph, a psalm.</i>	77
Loudly will I lift my cry to God, loudly to God, so he hears to me. In the day of my trouble I seek the LORD; in the night I lift my hands in prayer, refusing all comfort.	2
When I think of God, I moan; when I muse, my spirit is faint. ( <i>Selah</i> )	3
When you hold my eyes awake, and I am restless and speechless, I think of the days of old, call to mind distant years.	4 5
I commune with my heart in the night, I muse with inquiring spirit.	6
'Will the LORD cast us off forever, will he be gracious no more?	7
Has his love vanished forever? Is his faithfulness utterly gone?	8
Has God forgotten to be gracious, or in anger withheld his compassion?' ( <i>Selah</i> )	9

10 Then I said, ‘This it is that grieves me,  
     that the hand of the Most High has changed.’  
 11 I will think of the deeds of the LORD,  
     and remember your wonders of old.  
 12 I will muse on all you have wrought,  
     and meditate on your deeds.  
 13 Then your way, O God, was majestic:  
     what God was great as our God?  
 14 You were a God who did marvels,  
     you did show your power to the world  
 15 by your arm you rescued your people,  
     the children of Jacob and Joseph. (*Selah*)  
 16 The waters saw you, O God.  
     The waters saw you and shivered;  
     to their depths they trembled.  
 17 Clouds poured torrents of water,  
     thunder rolled in the sky,  
     your arrows sped to and fro.  
 18 Loud was the roll of your thunder,  
     lightnings lit up the world.  
     Earth quaked and trembled.  
 19 In your way, LORD, through the sea,  
     in your path through the mighty waters,  
     your footsteps were all unseen.  
 20 You did guide your folk like a flock  
     by the hand of Moses and Aaron.

*Psalm 78 — The Warnings of History*

78 *A maskil of Asaph.*  
 My people, give ear to my teaching:  
     bend your ears to the words of my mouth,  
 2 as I open my mouth in a poem  
     on the riddling story of the past.  
 3 What we have heard and known,  
     and what our ancestors have told us,  
 4 we will not hide from their children.  
     We will tell to the next generation  
     the praises and might of the LORD,



and the wonders that he has done.

He set up a testimony in Jacob, 5  
 a law he appointed in Israel,  
 which he commanded our ancestors  
 to make known to their children,  
 that the next generation should know it, 6  
 that the children yet to be born  
 should arise and tell their children;  
 that in God they might put their confidence, 7  
 and not forget God's works;  
 but that they might keep his commandments,  
 and not be like their ancestors, 8  
 a generation defiant and stubborn,  
 a generation with heart unsteady,  
 and spirit unfaithful towards God.

Ephraimites, armed bowmen, 9  
 turned back in the day of battle.  
 They did not keep God's covenant, 10  
 they refused to walk in his law.  
 They forgot what he had done, 11  
 and the wonders he had shown them.

He did wonders before their ancestors 12  
 in the country of Zoan in Egypt.  
 Through the sea which he split he brought them, 13  
 making waters stand up like a heap;  
 he led them by day with a cloud, 14  
 all the night with a light of fire.

From the rocks which he split in the wilderness, 15  
 he gave them to drink as of ocean's abundance.  
 He brought streams out of the rock, 16  
 and made water run down like rivers.

Yet they still went on sinning against him, 17  
 they defied the Most High in the desert.  
 They wilfully challenged God, 18  
 demanding the food that they longed for.  
 'Is God able,' such was their challenge, 19

20 'to spread in the desert a table?  
From the rock that he struck there gushed water,  
and torrents that overflowed;  
but can he also give bread,  
or provide his people with meat?'

21 When the LORD heard this, he was furious,  
and fire was kindled on Jacob,  
anger flared up against Israel.

22 For they put no trust in God,  
no confidence in his help.

23 So he summoned the clouds above;  
and, opening the doors of heaven,  
24 he rained manna upon them for food,  
and grain of heaven he gave them.

25 Everyone ate the bread of angels;  
he sent them food to the full.

26 He launched the east wind in the heavens,  
and guided the south by his power.

27 He rained meat upon them like dust,  
winged bird like the sand of the sea.

28 In the midst of their camp he dropped it,  
all around their tents.

29 They ate and were more than filled;  
he had brought them the thing they desired.

30 But the thing they desired became loathsome:  
while their food was still in their mouths,  
31 the wrath of God rose against them.  
He slew the stoutest among them,  
and laid low the young men of Israel.

32 Yet for all this they sinned yet more,  
and refused to believe in his wonders.

33 So he ended their days in a breath,  
and their years in sudden dismay.

34 When he slew them, then they sought after him,  
they turned and sought God with diligence.

35 They remembered that God was their rock,

and the Most High God their redeemer.	
But they flattered him with their mouth,	36
and lied to him with their tongue.	
Their heart was not steady with him,	37
they were faithless to his covenant.	
But he is full of pity:	38
he pardons sin and destroys not.	
Often he turns his anger away,	
without stirring his wrath at all.	
So he remembered that they were but flesh,	39
breath that passes and does not return.	
But how often they rebelled in the desert,	40
and caused him grief in the wilderness,	
tempting God again and again,	41
provoking the Holy One of Israel.	
They did not remember his strength,	42
nor the day he redeemed from the foe,	
how he set his signs in Egypt,	43
in the country of Zoan his wonders.	
He turned their canals into blood,	44
their streams undrinkable.	
He sent forth flies, which devoured them;	45
frogs, too, which destroyed them.	
Their crops he gave to the caterpillar,	46
and the fruits of their toil to the locust.	
He slew their vines with hail,	47
and their sycamore trees with frost.	
He delivered their cattle to the hail,	48
and their flocks to bolts of fire.	
He let loose his hot anger among them,	49
fury and wrath and distress,	
a band of destroying angels.	
He cleared a path for his anger,	50
did not spare them from death,	
but gave them over to pestilence.	
He struck down all the first-born in Egypt,	51

the first fruits of their strength in the tents of Ham.  
52 He led forth his people like sheep,  
he was guide to his flock in the desert.  
53 Securely he led them, and free from fear,  
while their foes were drowned in the sea.

54 To his holy realm he brought them,  
to the mountain his right hand had purchased.  
55 He drove out the nations before them,  
and allotted their land for possession,  
and their tents for Israel to live in.

56 Yet they tempted and angered the Most High God,  
they did not observe his decrees.  
57 They drew back, false like their ancestors;  
they failed like a treacherous bow.  
58 Their shrines stirred him to anger,  
their idols moved him to jealousy.

59 When God heard of this, he was furious,  
and he spurned Israel utterly.  
60 He abandoned his home in Shiloh,  
the tent he had pitched among people.  
61 He gave his strength up to captivity,  
his glory to the hands of the foe.

62 He gave his people to the sword,  
he was furious with his own.  
63 Fire devoured their young men,  
and their maidens had no marriage-song.  
64 Their priests fell by the sword,  
and their widows could not weep.

65 Then the LORD awoke as from sleep,  
like a warrior flushed with wine;  
66 and he beat back his foes,  
putting them to perpetual scorn.  
67 He disowned the tent of Joseph,  
he rejected the tribe of Ephraim;  
68 but he chose the tribe of Judah,  
Mount Zion, which he loves.

- And he built like the heights his sanctuary,  
like the earth which he founded forever. 69
- And he chose David his servant,  
taking him from the sheepfolds. 70
- From the mother-ewes he brought him,  
to be shepherd to Jacob his people,  
and to Israel his inheritance. 71
- With upright heart did he shepherd them,  
and with skilful hands did he guide them. 72

*Psalm 79 — A National Prayer for Deliverance*

*A psalm of Asaph.* **79**

- Heathen, O God, have come into your land,  
defiling your holy temple,  
and laying Jerusalem in ruins.
- They have given the bodies of your dead servants 2  
to the birds of the air to devour,  
and the flesh of your faithful to the beasts of the field.
- Round about Jerusalem 3  
they have poured out their blood like water;  
and there was no one to bury them.
- On every side our neighbours 4  
revile us and mock us and jeer at us.
- How long will you be angry, O LORD? 5  
Will your jealousy burn like fire forever?
- Pour out your wrath on the nations that don't know you, 6  
on the kingdoms that do not call on your name.
- For Jacob they devoured, 7  
they have desolated his home.
- Do not remember against us our ancestors' sins; 8  
O meet us soon with your pity,  
for utterly weak are we.
- Help us, O God our saviour, 9  
for the renown of your name:  
for your reputation deliver us  
and cover over our sins.
- Why should the nations say, 10

'Where is their God?'  
 Let revenge for the outpoured blood of your servants  
 be shown on the heathen before our eyes.  
 11 May the groans of the prisoner come before you;  
 free the children of death by your mighty arm.  
 12 Pay our neighbours back sevenfold  
 for the scorn they have heaped upon you, O LORD.  
 13 Then we, your people, the flock of your pasture,  
 will give thanks to you for evermore,  
 and tell your praise to all generations.

*Psalm 80 — A Prayer for the Preservation of Israel*

80 *For the leader. On shoshannim, eduth. Of Asaph, a psalm.*  
 Listen, Shepherd of Israel,  
 who leads Joseph like a flock of sheep;  
 from your throne on the cherubs shine forth  
 2 before Ephraim, Manasseh, and Benjamin.  
 Stir up your mighty power,  
 come to our help.  
 3 God, restore us:  
 show us the light of your face,  
 so we may be saved.  
 4 O LORD of hosts,  
 how long is your anger to smoke,  
 despite the prayer of your people?  
 5 You have fed them with bread of tears,  
 you have made them drink tears by the measure.  
 6 The scorn of our neighbours you make us,  
 the laughing-stock of our foes.  
 7 God of hosts, restore us:  
 show us the light of your face,  
 so we may be saved.  
 8 A vine out of Egypt you brought;  
 you did drive out the nations, and plant her;  
 9 in the ground you did clear she struck root,  
 and she filled all the land.  
 10 The shade of her covered the mountains,

her branches the cedars of God.  
 She sent forth her shoots to the sea, 11  
 and her branches as far as the River.  
 Why have you torn down her fences, and left her 12  
 to be plucked at by all who pass by,  
 to be gnawed by the boar from the forest, 13  
 and devoured by the beasts of the field?  
 O God of hosts, return: 14  
 look down from heaven and see  
 and visit this vine, and restore her  
 the vine which your right hand has planted. 15  
 She is burned with fire and cut down 16  
 before your stern face they are perishing.  
 Support the one you have chosen, 17  
 the one you have raised for yourself;  
 then from you we will never draw back. 18  
 Preserve us, and we will call on your name.  
 LORD , God of hosts, restore us: 19  
 Show us the light of your face,  
 so we may be saved.

*Psalm 81 — For the Feast of Tabernacles*

*For the leader. On the gittith. Of Asaph.* **81**

Sing aloud to God our strength,  
 shout for joy to the God of Jacob.  
 Raise a song, sound the timbrel, 2  
 sweet lyre and harp.  
 On the new moon blow the horn, 3  
 at the full moon, the day of our festival.  
 For this is a statute for Israel, 4  
 a ruling of the God of Jacob,  
 a witness he set up in Joseph, 5  
 when he marched against Egypt's land,  
 where he heard an unknown language.  
 'I removed from your shoulder the burden, 6  
 and freed your hands from the basket.  
 At your call of distress I delivered you, 7  
 from the thundercloud I answered you.

At Meribah's waters I tested you. (*Selah*)

- 8 Listen, my people, to my warning,  
O Israel, if you would but listen  
9 "There must not be a strange god among you,  
you must bow to no foreign god.  
10 I am the LORD your God  
who brought you up out of Egypt.  
Open your mouth, that I fill it."  
11 But my people did not listen to my voice,  
Israel would have none of me.  
12 So to their own hard hearts I left them,  
to follow their own devices.  
13 O that my people would listen,  
that Israel would walk in my ways.  
14 Soon would I humble their enemies,  
and turn my hand on their foes.  
15 Those who hate the LORD would cringe before him  
in everlasting terror.  
16 But you would I feed with the richest wheat,  
and with honey from the rock to your heart's desire.'

*Psalms 82 — God the Upholder of Justice*

82

*A psalm of Asaph.*

- God has taken his stand  
in the divine assembly:  
in the midst of the gods he holds judgment.  
2 'How long will you crookedly judge,  
and favour the wicked? (*Selah*)  
3 Do right by the weak and the orphan,  
acquitting the innocent poor.  
4 Rescue the weak and the needy,  
save them from the hand of the wicked.  
5 They have neither knowledge nor insight,  
in darkness they walk to and fro,  
while the earth's foundations totter.  
6 It was I who appointed you gods,  
children of the Most High all of you.



Yet like mortals you will surely die,  
you will fall like any prince.' 7

Arise, O God, judge the earth,  
for all nations are yours by inheritance. 8

*Psalm 83 — A Prayer for the Destruction of the Enemies of Judah*

*A song, a psalm of Asaph.* 83

Do not keep silent, O God:  
hold not your peace, be not still, God.  
For see! Your enemies roar, 2  
those who hate you lift up their heads,  
laying crafty plans for your people, 3  
and plotting against those you treasure.  
'Come, let us wipe them out as a nation, 4  
so Israel's name will be mentioned no more.'

For, conspiring with one accord, 5  
they have made a league against you  
Tents of Edom, and Ishmaelites, 6  
Moab, and the Hagrites.  
Gebal and Ammon and Amalek, 7  
Philistia, with the people of Tyre;  
Syria, too, is confederate, 8  
they have strengthened the children of Lot. (*Selah*)

Deal with them as you dealt with Midian, 9  
with Sisera, with Jabin, at the torrent of Kishon,  
who at Endor were destroyed, 10  
and became dung for the field.  
Make their nobles like Oreb and Zeeb, 11  
all their princes like Zebah and Zalmunna,  
who said, 'Let us take for ourselves 12  
the meadows of God.'

Whirl them, my God, like dust, 13  
like stubble before the wind.  
As the fire that kindles the forest, 14  
as flame that sets mountains ablaze,  
so with your tempest pursue them, 15

terrify them with your hurricane.  
 16 Make them blush with shame;  
     until they seek your name, O LORD.  
 17 Everlasting shame and confusion,  
     disgrace and destruction be theirs.  
 18 Teach those who you alone  
     are most high over all the earth.

*Psalm 84 — The Song of the Pilgrims*

**84**      For the leader. On the gittith. Of the Korahites, a psalm.  
 How dearly loved is the place where you live,  
     LORD of hosts!  
 2      How I long and yearn  
     for the courts of the LORD.  
 Now heart and flesh cry for joy  
     to the living God.  
 3      Even the sparrow has found her a home  
     and the swallow a nest,  
 to lay her young,  
     near your altar,  
 LORD of hosts,  
     my king and my God.  
 4      Happy those who live in your house,  
     praising you evermore. (*Selah*)  
 5      Happy those whose strength is in you,  
     people with pilgrim hearts.  
 6      As they pass through the valley of tears,  
     they make it a place of fountains,  
     clothed with the blessings of early rain.  
 7      From rampart to rampart on they march,  
     till at last God reveals himself in Zion.  
 8      LORD , God of hosts, hear my prayer,  
     give ear, O God of Jacob. (*Selah*)  
 9      Behold, O God, our defender,  
     and look upon your anointed,  
 10     for better a single day in your courts  
     than a thousand in my own chambers:

better stand at the door of the house of my God  
 than live in the tents of ungodliness,  
 for the LORD is sun and shield, 11  
 the LORD gives grace and glory.  
 He withholds no good thing from the life that is blameless.  
 LORD of hosts, 12  
 happy those whose trust is in you.

*Psalm 85 — A Prayer for National Restoration*

*For the leader. Of the Korahites, a psalm.* **85**

Once, LORD, you did favour your land,  
 granting change of fortune to Jacob,  
 forgiving the guilt of your people, 2  
 pardoning all their sin, (*Selah*)  
 withdrawing all your fury, 3  
 turning from your hot anger.

Restore us, O God our saviour, 4  
 put away your displeasure against us.  
 Will you cherish your anger against us forever, 5  
 prolonging your wrath to all generations?  
 Will you not revive us again, 6  
 that your people may be glad in you?  
 Show us your kindness, O LORD, 7  
 grant us your salvation.

Let me hear what God the LORD will speak; 8  
 for he will speak of peace  
 to his people, to those who love him,  
 and turn their hearts to him.

Soon those who fear him shall see how he saves, 9  
 and glory shall live in our land.

Kindness and loyalty meet; 10  
 peace and righteousness kiss.  
 Loyalty springs from the earth; 11  
 righteousness looks from the sky.  
 The LORD shall give all that is good, 12  
 our land yielding its increase,  
 righteousness marching before him, 13

and peace on the path he treads.

*Psalm 86 — A Prayer for Divine Guidance and Favour*

86

*A prayer of David.*

- Incline your ear, LORD, and answer me,  
for I am afflicted and needy.
- 2 Guard me, for I am loyal:  
save your servant, who trusts in you.
- 3 LORD, be gracious to me, for you are my God;  
I cry to you all the day.
- 4 Gladden the heart of your servant;  
for to you, LORD, I set my hope.
- 5 For you, LORD, are good and forgiving,  
rich in love towards all who call on you.
- 6 Listen, O LORD, to my prayer;  
attend to my plea for mercy.
- 7 In the day of my trouble I call on you,  
with assurance that you will answer me.
- 8 None of the gods is like you, LORD,  
nor are any works like yours.
- 9 All the nations you have made  
will come and bow down before you,  
giving glory, O LORD, to your name.
- 10 For great are you, and a doer of wonders;  
you alone are God.
- 11 Teach me, O LORD, your way,  
that I may walk in your truth:  
so my heart shall rejoice in your name.
- 12 I will give you thanks, O LORD,  
with all my heart, my God,  
I will honour your name forever.
- 13 For great is your love towards me,  
from the depths of Sheol you have saved me.
- 14 Haughty men have risen up against me, O God,  
a band of the violent seeking my life,  
who think nothing of you.
- 15 But you are a God of pity and grace,

patient and rich in kindness and faithfulness;  
 turn to me with your grace, O LORD.  
 Grant your strength to your servant, 16  
 and save the child of your handmaid.  
 Show me a sign of your favour, 17  
 which those who hate me may see with confusion,  
 since you, LORD, are my helper and comforter.

*Psalm 87 — Zion, City of God*

*Of the Korahites, a psalm. A song.* 87

On the holy mountain stands  
 the city he founded.  
 The LORD loves the gates of Zion 2  
 more than all the dwellings of Jacob.  
 Glorious things he is speaking of you, 3  
 you city of God. (*Selah*)  
 'Among those who are mine I name Rahab and Babylon, 4  
 Philistia, Tyre, Ethiopia,  
 their people will say I was born in Zion.  
 As for Zion it will be said 5  
 each and all were born in her.'  
 The LORD will preserve her.  
 The LORD will count, when enrolling the peoples, 6  
 'This one was born there, and that one was born there.'  
 (*Selah*)  
 Singers and dancers alike will say 7  
 'All my springs are in you.'

*Psalm 88 — The Prayer of Despair*

O LORD my God, 88  
 I cry for help in the day-time,  
 in the night my cry is before you;  
 let my prayer come into your presence, 2  
 incline your ear to my cry.  
 For I am sated with sorrow, 3  
 my life draws near to Sheol.

- 4 I am counted with those who go down to the pit;  
without strength am I.
- 5 My home is among the dead,  
like the slain that lie in the grave,  
whom you remember no more  
cut off as they are from your hand.
- 6 In the deepest pit you have put me,  
in shadows deep and dark.
- 7 Your wrath lies heavy upon me,  
waves of your anger roll over me. (*Selah*)
- 8 You have put my friends far from me,  
you have made them shun me.  
I am shut in, and cannot escape,  
my eyes are wasted with sorrow.
- 9 I call on you, LORD, every day,  
spreading my hands out to you.
- 10 For the dead can you work wonders?  
Can the shades rise again to praise you? (*Selah*)
- 11 Can your kindness be told in the grave,  
your faithfulness in the tomb?
- 12 Can your wonders be known in the darkness,  
or your help in the land of forgetfulness?
- 13 I cry for help to you,  
in the morning my prayer comes before you.
- 14 Why, O LORD, do you spurn me,  
and hide your face from me?
- 15 From my youth I am wretched and dying,  
I am numbed by the terrors I bear.
- 16 The fires of your wrath have passed over me,  
your terrors destroy me,  
surging around me forever,  
hemming me in altogether.
- 18 Those who love me you put far from me;  
the dark is my only friend.

*Psalm 89 — The Promise to David*

<i>A song. A psalm of the Korahites.</i>	<b>89</b>
I will sing evermore of the love of the LORD, proclaiming to all generations his faithfulness.	
For your love you did promise to build up forever, your faithfulness firm as the heavens themselves.	2
'I have made with my chosen a covenant, and sworn to David my servant,	3
to establish his seed forever, and to build up his throne to all ages.' ( <i>Selah</i> )	4
Then the holy assembly in heaven praised your marvellous faithfulness, LORD.	5
For who in the skies may compare with the LORD? Who is like the LORD among the gods?	6
A God to be feared in the holy assembly, awful and great above all who are round him.	7
O LORD God of hosts, who is mighty as you? Your strength and faithfulness, LORD, surround you.	8
You are the LORD of the raging sea: when its waves surge, it is you who still them.	9
It was you who did pierce and crush Rahab in pieces, and scatter your foes by your mighty arm.	10
Yours are the heavens, yours also the earth, the world and its fulness, it's you who did found them.	11
The north and the south, it's you have created them; Tabor and Hermon shout praise to your name.	12
You have an arm with the might of a hero; strong is your hand, high uplifted your right hand.	13
Justice and right are the base of your throne, kindness and faithfulness ever attend you.	14
Happy the people who know the glad shout, who walk, O LORD, in the light of your face.	15
They exult in your name all the day, and your righteousness they extol.	16
For you are our strength and our pride.	17

- Your favour will lift us to honour.  
18 For the holy LORD of Israel  
keeps our defender and king.
- 19 In a vision of old you did speak  
in this way to the one whom you loved,  
'A crown I have set on the hero  
I chose to be over the people
- 20 I found my servant David,  
and anointed with holy oil.  
21 My hand will be with him forever,  
my arm will give him strength.
- 22 No enemy will dare to assail him,  
nor the wicked to oppress him;  
23 but his foes I will shatter before him,  
I will strike down those who hate him.
- 24 My loyal love shall attend him,  
and I will lift him to honour.  
25 I will set his hand on the sea,  
and his right hand on the rivers.
- 26 As for him, he will call me "My father,  
my God, and my rock of salvation."  
27 And I will make him my first-born,  
highest of kings on the earth.
- 28 My love will I keep for him ever,  
my covenant with him shall stand fast.  
29 His line will I make everlasting,  
and his throne as the days of the heavens.
- 30 If his children forsake my law,  
and walk not as I have ordained;  
31 if they profane my statutes,  
and do not keep my commandments;
- 32 I will punish their sin with the rod,  
their iniquity with scourges.  
33 But my love will I not take from him,



nor will I belie my faithfulness.	
I will not profane my covenant	34
by changing the word that has passed my lips.	
Once have I solemnly sworn	35
and I would not lie to David,	
that his line should endure forever,	36
and his throne as the sun before me,	
firm as the moon which for ever	37
and ever is fixed in the sky.' ( <i>Selah</i> )	
But you have cast off in contempt,	38
and been furious with your anointed.	
You have spurned the covenant with your servant,	39
and his sacred crown dashed to the ground.	
You have broken down all his walls,	40
and laid his bulwarks in ruins.	
All who pass on their way despoil him,	41
the scorn of his neighbours is he now.	
You have given his foes the victory,	42
and made all his enemies glad.	
You have turned back his sword from the foe,	43
you did not lift him up in the battle.	
The sceptre you took from his hand,	44
and his throne you did hurl to the ground.	
You have shortened the days of his youth,	45
and covered him with shame. ( <i>Selah</i> )	
How long, LORD will you hide you forever?	46
How long are the fires of your wrath to burn?	
Remember, LORD, the shortness of life	47
how fleeting you made all people.	
Who can live without seeing death?	48
Who can rescue their life from the clutch of Sheol? ( <i>Selah</i> )	
Where, LORD, is your kindness of old,	49
which you in your faithfulness swore to David?	

- 50 Remember, O LORD, how your servants are mocked,  
     how I bear in my heart the scorn of all nations  
 51 The scorn which your enemies hurl, O LORD,  
     which they hurl at the footsteps of your anointed.
- 52 *Blest be the LORD, for ever and ever.  
     Amen and Amen.*

*Book Four*

*Psalm 90 — Hymn of Eternity*

- 90 *A PRAYER OF MOSES, the man of God.*
- LORD, you have been a home to us  
     one generation after another.  
 2 Before the mountains were born,  
     or the earth and the world were brought forth,  
     from everlasting to everlasting  
     you are God.
- 3 You bring us back to the dust,  
     you summon mortals to return.  
 4 For you see a thousand years  
     as the passing of yesterday,  
     as a watch in the night.
- 5 Your floods sweep them away;  
     they are like a dream,  
     or like grass which sprouts in the morning,  
 6 which blossoms and sprouts in the morning,  
     but by evening is cut and withered.
- 7 For your anger consumes us,  
     the heat of your wrath confounds us.  
 8 Our sins you have set before you,  
     our secrets in the light of your face.  
 9 For through your wrath our days are declining,  
     we bring our years to an end as a sigh.
- 10 The span of our life is seventy years,

or, if we are strong, maybe eighty; yet is their breadth but empty toil, for swiftly they go, and we fly away.	
Who lays to heart the power of your anger? Or who stands in reverent awe of your wrath?	11
O teach us to count our days so our minds may learn wisdom.	12
Return, O LORD; why so long? Relent on your servants.	13
Grant us your love to the full in the morning, that all our days we may shout for joy.	14
Make us glad for the days you have humbled us, for the evil years we have seen.	15
Let your servants see you in action, show your majesty to their children.	16
Let the grace of the LORD our God be upon us, uphold what our hands are striving to do.	17
<i>Psalm 91 — In the Shelter of the Most High</i>	
You whose home is the shelter of God Most High, whose abode is the shadow of God Almighty, can say to the LORD, 'My refuge, my fortress, my God, in whom I trust,'	<b>91</b> 2
For he saves you from fowler's snare, from the yawning pit of destruction.	3
He shelters you with his pinions, and under his wings you may hide.	4
His truth will be a shield and buckler.	
You need not fear the terror of night, nor the arrow that flies by day, nor the plague that stalks in darkness, nor the pestilence raging at noon.	5 6
A thousand may fall at your side, and ten thousand at your right hand:	7

but it shall not draw near to you.

- 8 You will only look on with your eyes,  
and see how the wicked are punished.
- 9 As for you, the LORD is your refuge,  
you have made the Most High your defence.
- 10 You will never be met by misfortune,  
no plague shall come near your tent:
- 11 for he orders his angels to guard you,  
wherever you go.
- 12 They will carry you with their hands,  
lest you strike your foot on a stone.
- 13 You will tread upon lions and adders,  
and trample young lions and dragons.
- 14 'Because of their love for me, I will deliver them,  
I will protect those who trust my name.
- 15 I will answer their cry and be with them in trouble,  
bringing them forth into safety and honour.
- 16 I will give them a life of many days,  
I will show them my salvation.'

*Psalm 92 — The Ways of God*

**92** *A psalm. A song; for the sabbath day.*

- It is good to give thanks to the LORD,  
to sing praise to your name, O Most High,
- 2 to declare your love in the morning,  
and your faithfulness in the night,
- 3 with voice and a ten-stringed harp,  
with music that throbs on the lyre.
- 4 For you make me glad by your deeds, LORD,  
at the work of your hands I will ring out my joy.
- 5 How great are your works, O LORD;  
how deep are your thoughts!
- 6 The insensitive cannot know,  
nor can a fool understand,
- 7 that, though the wicked flourish like grass,

and evil-doers all blossom, they will perish forever.	
But you are exalted forever.	8
For see! Your enemies, LORD	9
For see! Your enemies perish, all evil-doers are scattered.	
But you lift me to honour, and anoint me afresh with oil.	10
My eyes will feast on my foes, and my ears will hear of the doom of the wicked.	11
The righteous will sprout like the palm, will grow like a cedar of Lebanon.	12
In the house of the LORD are they planted, in the courts of our God they will sprout.	13
They will still bear fruit in old age, all sappy and fresh will they be	14
So they proclaim the LORD to be just, my rock, in whom is no wrong.	15

*Psalm 93 — The Lord, King of all the World*

The LORD has taken his seat on the throne, clothed with majesty, armed with might.	<b>93</b>
Now the world stands firm, to be shaken no more, firm stands your throne from all eternity. You are from everlasting.	2
The floods, O LORD, have lifted, the floods have lifted their voice, the floods lift up their roar.	3
But more grand than the great roaring waters, more grand than the ocean waves, grand on the height stands the LORD.	4
What you have ordained is most sure; most sure shall your house stand inviolate, O LORD, for ever and ever.	5

*Psalm 94 — A Prayer for Vengeance on the Cruel*

- 94 LORD , God of vengeance,  
God of vengeance, shine forth.
- 2 Rise up, judge of the earth,  
pay back the proud what they deserve.
- 3 LORD , how long shall the wicked,  
how long shall the wicked exult,  
4 with their blustering arrogant words,  
their braggart and wicked speech,  
5 crushing your people, LORD,  
and afflicting your heritage,  
6 murdering widows and strangers,  
slaying the fatherless?
- 7 They think that the LORD does not see,  
nor the God of Jacob regard it.
- 8 Take heed, you dullest of people;  
when will you be wise, you fools?
- 9 Is he deaf, who shaped the ear?  
Is he blind, who fashioned the eye?
- 10 Can he who trains nations not punish them  
he who teaches knowledge to people?
- 11 The LORD knows the thoughts of people,  
that only a breath are they.
- 12 Happy are those whom you chasten,  
and teach out of your law,  
13 keeping them calm in the day of misfortune,  
till a pit be dug for the wicked.
- 14 For the LORD will not leave his people,  
he will not forsake his inheritance.
- 15 For the righteous shall come to their rights,  
and all true-hearted people shall follow them.
- 16 Who will rise up for me against those who do evil?  
Who will stand up for me against workers of wrong?
- 17 Were it not for the help of the LORD,  
I would soon have gone to the silent grave.
- 18 When I thought that my foot was slipping,  
your kindness, LORD, held me up.

When with cares my heart was crowded, your comforts make me glad.	19
Can corrupt justice be your ally, framing mischief by statute?	20
They assail the life of the righteous, and innocent blood condemn.	21
But the LORD is my sure retreat, my God is the rock of my refuge.	22
He will bring back their sin upon them, for their wickedness he will destroy them; the LORD our God will destroy them.	23

*Psalm 95 — For a Festival. A Hymn of Praise and a Solemn Warning*

Come! Let us ring out our joy to the LORD, let us merrily shout to our rock of salvation.	95
Before his face let us come with thanks, with songs of praise let us shout to him.	2
For the LORD is a great God, king above all gods.	3
In his hand are the depths of the earth, the heights of the mountains are his.	4
The sea is his, for he made it: the dry land was formed by his hands.	5
Come! Let us worship and bow on our knees to the LORD our creator.	6
For he is our God; and we are the people he tends, the sheep in his care.	7
If only you would heed his voice today: ‘Do not harden your hearts as at Meribah, or at Massah, that day in the desert,	8
when your ancestors tempted and tried me, though they had seen my deeds.	9
For forty years I was filled with loathing for that generation, so I said: “A people with wandering hearts are they, and ignorant of my ways.”	10

11 So I solemnly swore to them in my anger,  
that never would they enter my place of rest.'

*Psalm 96 — The Lord's Rule*

96 Sing to the LORD a new song,  
sing to the LORD, all the earth.  
2 Sing to the LORD, bless his name,  
from day to day herald his victory.  
3 Tell his glory among the nations,  
his wonders among all peoples.  
4 For great is the LORD and worthy all praise;  
held in awe, above all gods:  
5 for all the gods of the nations are idols,  
but the LORD created the heavens.  
6 Before him are splendour and majesty,  
beauty and strength in his holy place.  
7 Ascribe to the LORD, you tribes of the nations,  
ascribe to the LORD glory and strength.  
8 Ascribe to the LORD the glory he manifests:  
bring you an offering, enter his courts.  
9 Bow to the LORD in holy array:  
tremble before him, all the earth.  
10 Say to the nations, 'The LORD is king.'  
The world stands firm to be shaken no more.  
He will judge the peoples with equity.  
11 Let the heavens be glad and the earth rejoice,  
let the sea and its fulness thunder.  
12 Let the field, and all that is in it, exult;  
let the trees of the forest ring out their joy  
13 before the LORD: for he comes,  
he comes to judge the earth.  
He will judge the world with justice  
and the nations with faithfulness.

*Psalm 97 — The Lord's Judgment*

97 The LORD is king, let the earth rejoice:



let her many isles be glad.	
Clouds and darkness are round about him,	2
justice and right are the base of his throne.	
Fire goes before him,	3
and blazes around his steps,	
his lightnings illumine the world:	4
the earth quakes at the sight.	
Mountains melt like wax	5
before the LORD of all the earth.	
The heavens proclaim his justice,	6
all nations behold his glory.	
Shamed are all image-worshippers,	7
who make a boast of their idols.	
All the gods bow before him.	
Zion is glad at the tidings,	8
the towns of Judah rejoice	
because of your judgments, LORD.	
For you are most high over all the earth,	9
greatly exalted above all gods.	
The LORD loves those who hate evil,	10
he guards the lives of the faithful:	
from the hand of the wicked he saves them.	
Light arises for the righteous,	11
and joy for the upright in heart.	
Rejoice in the LORD, you righteous:	12
give thanks to his holy name.	

*Psalm 98 — A Song of Praise to the Lord*

*A psalm.* **98**

Sing a new song to the LORD,	
for he has done wonders;	
his right hand and holy arm	
have won him the victory.	
The LORD has made his victory known,	2
and revealed to the eyes of the nations his righteous-	
ness.	
Mindful he was of his kindness to Jacob,	3
faithful he was to the house of Israel.	

All the ends of the earth have seen  
the victory of our God.

- 4 Shout, all the earth, to the LORD:  
break into cries and music.  
5 Play on the lyre to the LORD,  
on the lyre and with loud melody.  
6 With trumpet and sound of horn,  
shout before the king.
- 7 Let the sea and its fulness roar,  
the world and the dwellers upon it.  
8 Let the streams clap their hands,  
let the hills shout for gladness together  
9 before the LORD for he comes,  
he comes to judge the earth.  
He will judge the world with justice  
and the nations with equity.

*Psalm 99 — The Lord's Just and Holy Rule*

- 99 The LORD is king; let the nations tremble:  
he is throned upon cherubs; let earth quake.  
2 The LORD is great in Zion,  
he is high over all the nations.  
3 Let them praise your great and terrible name.  
Holy is he.
- 4 You are a king who loves justice,  
equity you have established:  
justice and right you have wrought for Jacob.  
5 Exalt the LORD our God,  
bow down at his footstool.  
Holy is he.
- 6 Among his priests were Moses and Aaron,  
Samuel among those who called on his name.  
They called to the LORD, and he gave them answer.  
7 He spoke to them in the pillar of cloud,  
they kept his commands and the statute he gave them.  
8 LORD our God, you gave them answer.

A God of forgiveness were you to them,  
 who suffered their deeds to go unpunished.  
 Exalt the LORD our God; 9  
 bow down at his holy mountain.  
 For holy is the LORD our God.

*Psalm 100 — A Call to Worship*

*A psalm of praise.* **100**

Shout, all the earth, to the LORD.  
 Serve the LORD with gladness, 2  
 approach him with ringing cries.  
 Be sure that the LORD alone is God. 3  
 It is he who has made us, and his we are  
 his people, the sheep of his pasture.  
 Enter his gates with thanksgiving, 4  
 his courts with praise.  
 Give thanks to him, bless his name.  
 For the LORD is good, his love is forever, 5  
 and to all ages endures his faithfulness.

*Psalm 101 — A Model King*

*Of David, a psalm.* **101**

If kindness and justice I sing,  
 making melody to you, LORD.  
 I would look to the way that is blameless, 2  
 and make it my own.  
 Within my own house I would walk  
 with an innocent heart.  
 I would never direct my eyes 3  
 to a thing that is base.  
 The impulse to stray I abhor  
 it shall not cling to me.  
 Far from me be perverseness of heart, 4  
 or kinship with evil.  
 Who slanders their neighbour in secret, 5

I bring them to silence:  
 haughty looks and proud hearts  
 I will not abide.

6 I will favour the true in the land,  
 they shall live in my court.  
 Those who walk in a way that is blameless  
 will be my attendant.

7 No one will live in my house  
 who practises guile.  
 No one that speaks a lie  
 will abide in my presence.

8 Morn by morn I will wholly wipe out  
 all the bad in the land,  
 and cut off from the LORD's own city  
 all workers of evil.

*Psalm 102 — A Prayer for Pity and for the Restoration of Zion*

**102** Hear my prayer, O LORD;  
 let my cry for help come to you.  
 2 Hide not your face from me  
 in the day of my distress.  
 Incline your ear to me:  
 when I call, answer me speedily.  
 3 For my days pass away like smoke:  
 my bones are burned through as with fire.  
 4 My heart is scorched, withered like grass;  
 I forget to eat my bread.  
 5 By reason of my loud groaning,  
 my flesh clings to my bones.  
 6 Like a desert-owl of the wilderness,  
 like an owl among ruins am I.  
 7 I make my sleepless lament  
 like a bird on the house-top alone.  
 8 All the day wild foes revile me,  
 using my name for a curse.

For ashes have been my bread, and tears have been mixed with my cup.	9
Because of your passionate anger, you did raise me, then hurl me to the ground.	10
My days come to an end, shadows lengthen, I wither like grass.	11
But you, O LORD, are enthroned forever, your fame endures to all generations.	12
You will arise and have pity on Zion; it's time to be gracious; her hour has come.	13
For even her stones are dear to your servants, even the dust of her ruins they look on with love.	14
Then the nations will revere the name of the LORD and all the kings of the earth his glory, when the LORD shall have built up Zion, and revealed himself in his glory,	15
in response to the prayer of the destitute, whose prayer he will not despise.	16
Let this be recorded for ages to come, that the LORD may be praised by a people yet unborn.	17
For he shall look down from his holy height, from the heavens the LORD will gaze on the earth, to hear the groans of the prisoner, to free those who are doomed to die;	18
that people may recount the LORD's fame in Zion, and the praise of him in Jerusalem,	19
when the nations are gathered together, and the kingdoms, to worship the LORD.	20
He has broken my strength on the way, he has shortened my days.	21
I will say, 'My God, take me not hence in the midst of my days.'	22
Your years endure age after age. Of old you have founded the earth, and the heavens are the work of your hands.	23
They shall perish; but you do stand.	24

They shall all wax old like a garment,  
 and change as a robe you will change them.  
 27 But you are the same, your years are endless.  
 28 The children of your servants abide,  
 evermore shall their seed be before you.'

*Psalm 103 — Bless the Lord, O my Soul*

103

*Of David.*

O my soul, bless the LORD;  
 and all that is in me, his holy name.  
 2 O my soul, bless the LORD;  
 and forget not one of his benefits.  
 3 He pardons all your sins,  
 he heals all your diseases.  
 4 He ransoms your life from the pit,  
 he crowns you with kindness and pity.  
 5 He gives you your heart's desire,  
 renewing your youth like the eagle's.  
 6 The LORD executes justice -  
 and right for all who are wronged.  
 7 He revealed his ways to Moses,  
 his acts to the children of Israel.  
 8 Full of pity and grace is the LORD,  
 patient, and rich in kindness:  
 9 he will not always chide,  
 nor cherish his anger forever.  
 10 Not after our sins has he dealt with us,  
 nor requited us after our wickedness.  
 11 For high as the heavens o'er the earth  
 is his love over those who fear him.  
 12 Far as is east from the west  
 has he put our transgressions from us.  
 13 As a father pities his children,  
 so the LORD pities those who fear him;  
 14 for well he knows our frame,  
 he remembers that we are dust.  
 15 A person's days are as grass;

blossoms like a flower of the meadow.	
At the breath of the wind it is gone,	16
and the place thereof knows it no more.	
But the love of the LORD is eternal,	17
and his kindness to children's children,	
to those who keep his covenant	18
and mindfully do his behests.	
The LORD has set his throne in the heavens;	19
the whole world is under his sway.	
Bless the LORD, you angels of his,	20
mighty heroes performing his word.	
Bless the LORD, all you his hosts,	21
you servants who do his will.	
Bless the LORD, all you his works,	22
far as his sway extends.	
O my soul, bless the LORD.	

*Psalm 104 — The Hymn of Creation*

Bless the LORD, O my soul.	<b>104</b>
O LORD my God, you are very great,	
clad in awful splendour,	
covered with robe of light.	2
You stretch out the heavens like the cloth of a tent.	
He lays the beams of his chambers on water.	3
He takes dark clouds for his chariot,	
and rides on the wings of the wind.	
He takes the winds for his messengers,	4
the fire and the flame for his servants.	
He founded the earth upon pillars,	5
to sustain it unshaken forever.	
With the garment of ocean he covered it,	6
waters towered over the mountains.	
But at your rebuke they fled,	7
scared by the roar of your thunder,	
mountains rose, valleys sank down	8
to the place appointed for them.	
They dared not pass the bounds set for them,	9
or cover the earth any more.	

10 He sent brooks into the valleys,  
they meander between the mountains.  
11 The wild beasts all drink from them,  
and the wild asses quench their thirst.  
12 The birds have their home by the banks,  
and sing in the branches.  
13 From his chambers above he gives drink to the mountains,  
and satisfies earth with the vials of heaven.

14 He makes grass grow for the cattle,  
and herbs for people.  
He brings bread out of the earth;  
15 wine, to gladden hearts;  
oil, to make faces shine;  
bread, to strengthen hearts.  
16 The trees of the LORD drink their fill  
the cedars he planted on Lebanon,  
17 where the little birds build their nest,  
and the stork whose home is the cypress.  
18 The high hills are for the wild goats,  
and the rocks are for coney to hide in.

19 He created the moon to mark seasons,  
and told the sun when to set.  
20 You make it dark: night comes,  
when all the wild beasts creep out.  
21 Young lions that roar for their prey,  
seeking their meat from God.  
22 At sunrise they slink away,  
and lie down in their dens.  
23 Then people go forth to their work,  
and toil till evening.

24 How many, O LORD, are your works,  
all of them made in wisdom!  
The earth is filled with your creatures.  
25 And there is the great broad sea,  
where are countless things in motion,  
living creatures, both great and small.  
26 There go the ships,  
and the Leviathan you made to play there.



They all look in hope to you, to give them their food in due season.	27
And you give with open hand; they gather and eat to their heart's desire.	28
When you hide your face, they are terrified; when you take their breath away, they die and go back to their dust.	29
But a breath from your lips creates them, and renews the face of the earth.	30
May the glory of the LORD be forever, may the LORD rejoice in his works.	31
A glance of his makes the earth tremble, a touch of his makes the hills smoke.	32
I will sing to the LORD while I live, I will play to my God while I am.	33
May my musing be sweet to him. for I rejoice in the LORD.	34
But may sinners be swept from the earth, and the wicked vanish forever. O my soul, bless the LORD. Hallelujah.	35

*Psalm 105 — The Inspiration of the Past*

Give thanks to the LORD, call on his name: make known his deeds among the nations.	<b>105</b>
Sing to him, make music to him, tell of all his wondrous works.	2
Make your boast in his holy name, be glad at heart, you who seek the LORD.	3
Seek after the LORD and his strength, seek his face evermore.	4
Remember the wonders he did, his portents, the judgments he uttered, you who are offspring of Abraham, his servant, the children of Jacob, his chosen ones.	5 6
He is the LORD our God: in all the earth are his judgments.	7
He remembers forever his covenant,	8

his promise for a thousand generations  
9 The covenant he made with Abraham,  
the oath he swore to Isaac,  
10 and confirmed as a statute to Jacob,  
a pact everlasting to Israel  
11 to give them the land of Canaan  
as the lot which they should inherit.

12 And when they were very few,  
few and but pilgrims therein,  
13 wandering from nation to nation,  
journeying from people to people,  
14 he allowed no one to oppress them,  
even punishing kings for their sakes.  
15 He forbade them to touch his anointed,  
or do any hurt to his prophets.

16 When he called down famine on the land,  
and cut off the bread which sustained them,  
17 he sent before them a man,  
Joseph, who was sold as a slave.  
18 His feet were galled with fetters,  
he was laid in chains of iron,  
19 till the time that his word came to pass,  
the word of the LORD that had tried him.

20 The king sent and freed him,  
the ruler of nations released him.  
21 He made him lord of his household,  
and ruler of all his possessions,  
22 to admonish his princes at will  
and instruct his elders in wisdom.

23 Thus Israel came into Egypt,  
Jacob sojourned in the land of Ham.  
24 His people he made very fruitful,  
and mightier than their foes.  
25 He inspired them to hate his people,  
and to deal with his servants craftily.

26 He sent his servant Moses,

and Aaron whom he had chosen, portents he wrought in Egypt,	27
and signs in the land of Ham. Darkness he sent, and it fell:	28
yet they gave no heed to his word.	
He turned their waters into blood, thus causing their fish to die.	29
Their land was alive with frogs, swarming even in the royal chambers.	30
At his command came flies, and lice in all their borders.	31
He gave them hail for rain and fire that flashed through the land,	32
smiting their vines and figs, breaking the trees of their border.	33
At his command came locusts, young locusts beyond all counting,	34
which ate every herb in the land, ate up, too, the fruit of their ground.	35
He struck down in their land all the first-born, the firstlings of all their strength	36
Then forth he led Israel with silver and gold, and among his tribes no one was weary.	37
Egypt was glad when they left, for terror had fallen upon them.	38
He spread out a cloud to screen them, and fire to give light in the night.	39
He sent quails at their entreaty, and heavenly bread in abundance.	40
He opened the rock; waters gushed: in the desert they ran like a river.	41
For he remembered his holy promise to Abraham his servant.	42
So he led out his people with joy, his elect with a ringing cry.	43
And he gave them the lands of the nations, the fruit of their toil for possession,	44

45 that so they might keep his statutes,  
and be of his laws observant.  
Hallelujah.

*Psalm 106 — The Nation's Sin against the Lord*

106 Hallelujah!  
Give thanks to the LORD for his goodness,  
for his kindness endures forever.  
2 Who can describe his heroic deeds,  
or publish all his praise?  
3 Happy they who act justly,  
and do righteousness evermore.

4 Remember me, LORD, as you remember your people,  
and visit me with your gracious help.  
5 May I see the good fortune of your elect,  
may I share in the joy of your nation,  
and in the pride of your heritage.

6 We, like our fathers, have sinned,  
we have done perversely and wickedly  
7 In the land of Egypt our fathers,  
all heedless of your wonders,  
and unmindful of your great kindness,  
at the Red Sea defied the Most High.  
8 But true to his name he saved them,  
in order to show his might.  
9 He rebuked the Red Sea, and it dried;  
they marched through the depths as through desert,  
10 saved from the hand of the hostile,  
redeemed from the hand of the foe.  
11 The waters covered their enemies:  
not one of them was left.  
12 So then they believed in his words,  
and began to sing his praise.

13 But soon they forgot his deeds:  
they did not wait for his counsel.  
14 Their greed was ravenous in the desert;  
they put God to the test in the wilderness.

He gave them the thing they had asked for, but sent wasting disease among them.	15
The camp grew jealous of Moses and of Aaron, holy one of the LORD.	16
The earth opened and swallowed up Dathan, and covered Abiram's company.	17
Fire broke out on their company, flame kindled upon the wicked.	18
They made a calf in Horeb, and bowed to the molten image.	19
They exchanged their glorious God for the image of ox that eats grass.	20
They forgot the God who had saved them by mighty deeds in Egypt	21
Wonders in the land of Ham, terrors by the Red Sea.	22
So he vowed, and would have destroyed them, but for Moses his elect, who stepped into the breach before him, to divert his deadly wrath.	23
They spurned the delightsome land, they refused to believe in his word.	24
They grumbled in their tents, would not listen to the voice of the LORD.	25
So he swore with uplifted hand to lay them low in the wilderness; to disperse their seed among heathen, to scatter them over the world.	26 27
Then they joined them to Baal of Peor, and ate what was offered the dead.	28
They provoked him to wrath by their deeds, and plague broke out among them.	29
Then Phinehas stood between, and so the plague was stayed;	30
and it was counted to him for righteousness unto all generations forever.	31

32 They angered him at the waters of Meribah,  
through them it went ill with Moses.  
33 They rebelled against his spirit,  
and he uttered speech that was rash.

34 They did not destroy the nations,  
as the LORD had commanded them;  
35 but they mingled with the heathen,  
and learned to do as they did.  
36 Their idol gods they worshipped,  
and they were ensnared by them.  
37 They sacrificed their sons  
and their daughters to the demons.  
38 They poured out innocent blood  
the blood of their sons and daughters  
whom they offered to Canaan's idols,  
and the land was polluted with blood.  
39 They became unclean by their works,  
and adulterous in their deeds.  
40 Then the LORD's fury was on his people,  
filled with horror at his inheritance.  
41 He delivered them to the heathen,  
to the sway of those who hated them.  
42 Their enemies oppressed them,  
and subdued them under their hand.  
43 Many a time he saved them,  
but they rebelled at his counsel,  
and were brought low by their wrongdoing.  
44 Yet he looked upon their distress,  
when he heard their cry.  
45 He remembered his covenant,  
and, in his great kindness, relented.  
46 He caused them to be pitied  
by all who carried them captive.

47 Save us, O LORD our God,  
and gather us out of the nations,  
to give thanks to your holy name,  
and to make our boast of your praise.

48 *Blessed be the LORD, the God of Israel,*

*from everlasting to everlasting.  
And let all the people say 'Amen.'  
Praise the LORD.*

*Book Five*

*Psalm 107 — The Song of the Redeemed*

GIVE THANKS TO THE LORD for his goodness for his kindness endures forever.	107
Let this be the song of the ransomed, whom the LORD has redeemed from distress, gathering them from all lands, east, west, north, and south.	2 3
In the wastes of the desert some wandered, finding no way to a city inhabited.	4
Full of hunger and thirst, their spirit failed.	5
Then they cried to the LORD in their trouble, and he saved them from their distresses,	6
guiding them straight on the way, till they reached an inhabited city.	7
Let them thank the LORD for his kindness, for his wonderful deeds for people;	8
for the thirsty he satisfies, and the hungry he fills with good things.	9
Some sat in darkness and gloom prisoners in irons and misery, for rebelling against God's word, and spurning the Most High's counsel.	10 11
Their heart was bowed with toil; there was no one to help when they stumbled.	12
Then they cried to the LORD in their trouble, and he saved them from their distresses.	13
Out of darkness and gloom he brought them, and burst their chains.	14
Let them praise the LORD for his kindness, for his wonderful deeds for people.	15

- 16 For he shattered the gates of bronze,  
and broke bars of iron.
- 17 Some were sick from their wicked ways,  
and suffering because of their sins.
- 18 All manner of food they hated;  
they had come to the gates of death.
- 19 Then they cried to the LORD in their trouble,  
and he saved them from their distresses.
- 20 He sent his word and healed them,  
and delivered their life from the pit.
- 21 Let them praise the LORD for his kindness,  
for his wonderful deeds for people.
- 22 Let them offer to him thankofferings,  
and with joy tell what things he has done.
- 23 Some crossed the sea in ships,  
doing business in great waters.
- 24 They have seen what the LORD can do,  
and his wonderful deeds on the deep.
- 25 At his command rose a tempest,  
which lifted the waves on high.
- 26 Up to heaven they went, down to the depths;  
their courage failed them.
- 27 They staggered and reeled like drunkards;  
all their skills useless.
- 28 Then they cried to the LORD in their trouble,  
and he saved them from their distresses.
- 29 He stilled the storm to a whisper,  
and the waves of the sea were hushed.
- 30 They were glad, because it was quiet;  
they were led to the haven they longed for.
- 31 Let them praise the LORD, for his kindness,  
for his wonderful deeds for people.
- 32 Where the people assemble, extol him,  
and praise him in council of elders.
- 33 He turns streams into a wilderness,  
springs of water into thirsty land,
- 34 fruitful land into a salt waste,  
because of the sin of the people.



A desert he makes pools of water, a land of drought into springs of water.	35
He settles the hungry therein, they establish a city to live in.	36
They sow fields and plant vineyards, which furnish a fruitful yield.	37
By his blessing they multiply greatly, and he lets not their cattle decrease.	38
Yet when they are bowed and diminished by oppression, misfortune, or sorrow,	39
he pours contempt upon princes, and on trackless wastes leads them astray	40
He lifts the poor out of misery, and makes families fruitful as flocks.	41
At this sight shall the upright be glad, and all wicked mouths shall be stopped.	42
Let those who are wise observe this, and consider the love of the LORD	43

*Psalm 108 — A Prayer for Victory*

*A song. A psalm of David.* **108**

My heart is steadfast, O God, my heart is steadfast.	
I would sing, I would make music; awake, my soul.	
Awake, harp and lyre; I would wake the dawn.	2
I would praise you among the peoples, O LORD; make music among the nations to you.	3
For great to heaven is your love, and your faithfulness to the clouds.	4
Be exalted, O God, o'er the heavens, and your glory o'er all the earth.	5
So those you love may be rescued, save by your right hand and answer us.	6
God did solemnly swear: 'As victor will I divide Shechem, portion out the valley of Succoth.	7

8 Mine is Gilead, mine is Manasseh,  
 Ephraim is my helmet,  
 Judah my sceptre of rule,  
 9 Moab the pot that I wash in,  
 on Edom I hurl my sandal,  
 I shout o'er Philistia in triumph.  
 10 O to be brought to the fortified city!  
 O to be led into Edom!  
 11 Have you not spurned us, O God?  
 You do not march forth with our armies.  
 12 Grant us help from the foe,  
 for human help is worthless.  
 13 With God we shall yet do bravely,  
 he himself will tread down our foes.

*Psalm 109 — A Prayer for the Lord's Help*

**109**

*For the leader. Of David, a psalm.*

O God whom I praise, keep not silence;  
 2 for their wicked mouths they have opened against me,  
 they speak to me with tongues that are false,  
 3 they beset me with words of hatred,  
 and fight without cause against me.  
 4 My love they requite with hostility,  
 while for them I lift up my prayer.  
 5 Evil for good they reward me,  
 and hatred for my love.  
 6 'Set over him one who is godless,' they say,  
 'an opponent at his right hand.  
 7 From his trial let him come forth guilty,  
 may his prayer be counted as sin.  
 8 Grant that his days may be few,  
 that his office be seized by another.  
 9 Grant that his children be fatherless,  
 and that his wife be a widow.  
 10 Up and down may his children go begging,  
 expelled from their desolate home.  
 11 May all that he owns be seized by the creditor

may strangers plunder the fruits of his toil.	
May none extend to him kindness, or pity his fatherless children.	12
His descendants be doomed to destruction! Blotted out be his name in one generation!	13
May his father's guilt be remembered, and his mother's sin not blotted out:	14
on record always before the LORD, and his memory root from the earth;	15
for he gave no thought to show kindness, but pursued the poor and the needy, drove the downhearted to death.	16
May the curses he loved light upon him, may the blessings he loathed be afar.	17
Like a garment he clothed him with curses; may they pierce to his inwards like water, and cling to his bones like oil.	18
Let them be like the robe he wraps round him, like the belt he wears every day.'	19
Be this the reward of my adversaries, of those who speak evil against me.	20
But you, LORD my GOD, be true to your name, deal kindly with me; in your gracious kindness save me.	21
For I am poor and needy, and my heart is wounded within me.	22
I am gone like a lengthening shadow, I am shaken off like a locust.	23
My knees totter from fasting, my flesh is shrivelled and spare.	24
They heap insults upon me: when they see me, they shake their head.	25
Help me, O LORD my God, and save me in your kindness.	26
Teach them that this is your hand,	27

and your own doing, O LORD.  
 28 Let them curse, if only you bless.  
     Put my assailants to shame,  
     and make your servant glad.  
 29 My opponents be clothed with dishonour,  
     and wrapped in a robe of shame.  
 30 I give thanks to you, LORD, with loud voice,  
     I give praise in the midst of the throng;  
 31 for he stands by the poor, at his right hand,  
     to save them from those who condemn them.

*Psalm 110 — A Promise of Victory to the King*

110 *Of David, a psalm.*  
 This said the LORD concerning my lord,  
     'Sit at my right hand,  
     till I set your foot on the neck of your foes.'  
 2 On Zion the LORD is wielding  
     your sceptre of might, and charges you  
     to rule over the foes that surround you.  
 3 The day that you march to battle  
     your people will follow you gladly  
     young warriors in holy array,  
     like dew-drops, born of the morning.  
 4 The LORD has sworn and will not repent,  
     'As for you, you are priest for ever  
     as Melchizedek was.'  
 5 By your side will the LORD shatter kings  
     on the day of his wrath.  
 6 He will execute judgment  
     filling the valleys with dead,  
     the broad fields with shattered heads.  
 7 He will drink of the brook by the way,  
     and march onward with uplifted head.

*Psalm 111 — In Praise of the Divine Goodness*

Hallelujah.	<b>111</b>
I will thank the LORD with all my heart, in the assembled congregation of his people.	
Great are the things that the LORD has done, worthy of study by those who love them.	2
Majestic and glorious is his work, and his righteousness abides forever.	3
For his marvellous deeds he has won renown; the LORD is gracious and full of compassion.	4
Food he gives to those who fear him, always he remembers his covenant.	5
His mighty works he has shown to his people, in giving to them the nations for heritage.	6
All that he does is faithful and right, all his behests are firm and sure.	7
They are established for ever and ever, executed with truth and uprightness.	8
To his people he sent redemption, he has appointed his covenant forever.	9
His name is holy and awe-inspiring. The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom those who keep it are wise indeed. His praise abides for ever and ever.	10

*Psalm 112 — The Blessings of Godliness*

Hallelujah. Happy are those who fear the LORD, and greatly delight in his commandments.	<b>112</b>
Mighty on earth shall be their seed; a blessing shall rest on the race of the upright.	2
Wealth and riches are in their houses, their prosperity stands forever.	3
To the upright arises light in the darkness; full of favour and pity and kindness are they.	4
It is well with those who show pity and lend, who support all their affairs upon justice.	5
For they will never be shaken; the just will be forever remembered.	6
They will not be afraid of evil tidings, with steady heart they trust the LORD.	7

8 Their heart is firm and unafraid:  
     they know they will feast their eyes on their enemies.  
 9 With lavish hands they give to the poor,  
     and their prosperity stands forever.  
     They are lifted to heights of triumph and honour.  
 10 The sight of them fills the wicked with anger:  
     grinding their teeth with despair.  
     The hopes of the wicked will come to nothing.

*Psalm 113 — The Lord loves the Humble*

**113** Hallelujah.  
 Praise the LORD, you his servants,  
     praise the name of the LORD.  
 2 The name of the LORD be blessed  
     from now and for evermore.  
 3 From sunrise to sunset  
     is the name of the LORD to be praised.  
 4 High is the LORD above all nations,  
     above the heavens is his glory.  
 5 Who is like the LORD our God,  
     seated on high?  
 6 He bends down to look  
     at the heavens and earth.  
 7 He raises the weak from the dust,  
     he lifts the poor from the dunghill,  
 8 and sets them beside the princes,  
     even the princes of his people.  
 9 He gives the childless woman a home,  
     and makes her the happy mother of children.  
     Hallelujah.

*Psalm 114 — The Marvel of the Exodus*

**114** When Israel went out of Egypt,  
     Jacob's house from a barbarous people,  
 2 God chose Judah for himself,  
     Israel became his kingdom.  
 3 The sea saw it, and fled,

Jordan river ran backwards. Mountains skipped like rams, hills like the young of the flock.	4
Why, sea, do you flee? Jordan, why run backwards?	5
Mountains, why skip ram-like? Why, hills, like the young of the flock?	6
Earth, tremble before the LORD, at the presence of Jacob's God, who turns rocks into pools of water, and flint into fountains of water.	7 8

*Psalm 115 — Israel's Incomparable God*

Not to us, LORD, not to us, but to your name give glory, for your kindness" and faithfulness" sake.	<b>115</b>
Why should the heathen say, 'Where is now their God?'	2
Our God he is in heaven; whatever he wishes, he does.	3
Their idols are silver and gold, made by human hands.	4
They have mouths, but cannot speak; they have eyes, but cannot see.	5
They have ears, but cannot hear; they have noses, but cannot smell.	6
They have hands, but cannot feel; they have feet, but cannot walk: no sound comes from their throats.	7
Their makers become like them, so do all who trust in them.	8
O Israel, trust in the LORD: he is their help and their shield.	9
House of Aaron, trust in the LORD: he is their help and their shield.	10
You who fear the LORD, trust in the LORD he is their help and their shield.	11

12 The LORD, mindful of us, will bless us:  
     he will bless the house of Israel,  
     he will bless the house of Aaron.  
 13 He will bless those who fear the LORD,  
     the small and the great together.  
 14 May the LORD add to your numbers  
     to you and to your children.  
 15 Blessed be you of the LORD,  
     creator of heaven and earth.  
 16 The heavens are the heavens of the LORD,  
     but the earth has he given to people.  
 17 The dead cannot praise the LORD,  
     nor those who go down into silence.  
 18 But we will bless the LORD  
     from now and for evermore.  
     Hallelujah.

*Psalm 116 — Song of Thanksgiving for Deliverance*

**116** I love the LORD, for he hears  
     my voice, my pleas for mercy.  
 2 For he has inclined his ear to me:  
     I will call upon him as long as I live.  
 3 About me were snares of death,  
     the anguish of Sheol was upon me:  
     distress and sorrow were mine.  
 4 Then I called on the name of the LORD:  
     ‘I beseech you, O LORD, deliver me.’  
 5 Gracious and just is the LORD,  
     compassionate is our God.  
 6 The LORD preserves the simple;  
     when I was drooping, he saved me.  
 7 Be at peace, my heart, once more,  
     for the LORD has been good to you.  
 8 You have rescued me from death,  
     my eyes from tears,  
     my feet from stumbling.



Before the LORD I will walk in the land of the living.	9
I held fast my faith, though I said, 'Ah me! I am sore afflicted', though in my alarm I said, 'Everyone is a liar.'	10 11
What shall I render the LORD for all his bounty to me? I will lift up the cup of salvation, and call on the name of the LORD. I will pay my vows to the LORD in the presence of all his people.	12 13 14
Grave in the eyes of the LORD is the death of his loyal and loved ones. Ah, LORD! I am your servant, your servant, child of your handmaid. You have loosened my bonds.	15 16
I will offer to you a thank-offering, and call on the name of the LORD. I will pay my vows to the LORD in the presence of all his people, in the courts of the house of the LORD, in the midst of you, O Jerusalem. Hallelujah.	17 18 19

*Psalm 117 — A Call to Praise*

Praise the LORD, all you nations: laud him, all you peoples. For his mighty love is over us: the LORD is faithful forever. Hallelujah.	<b>117</b> 2
--	-----------------

*Psalm 118 — Thanksgiving for Victory*

Give thanks to the LORD for his goodness, his kindness endures forever. Let the house of Israel now say:	<b>118</b> 2
--	-----------------

his kindness endures forever.  
 3 Let the house of Aaron now say:  
     his kindness endures forever.  
 4 Let those who fear the LORD now say:  
     his kindness endures forever.  
  
 5 Out of straits I called on the LORD,  
     the LORD answered and gave me room.  
 6 The LORD is mine; I am fearless.  
     What can mere people do to me?  
 7 The LORD is mine, as my help:  
     I shall feast my eyes on my foes.  
 8 It is better to hide in the LORD  
     than to trust in mortals.  
 9 It is better to hide in the LORD  
     than to put any trust in princes.  
 10 Everywhere heathen swarmed round me;  
     in the name of the LORD I cut them down.  
 11 They swarmed, swarmed around me;  
     in the name of the LORD I cut them down,  
 12 they swarmed around me like bees,  
     they blazed like a fire of thorns:  
     in the name of the LORD I cut them down.  
  
 13 Sore they pushed me, to make me fall;  
     but the LORD gave me his help.  
 14 The LORD is my strength and my song,  
     and he is become my salvation.  
 15 Hark! In the tents of the righteous  
     glad cries of victory are ringing.  
     The hand of the LORD has wrought bravely,  
 16 the hand of the LORD is exalted,  
     the hand of the LORD has wrought bravely.  
  
 17 I shall not die: nay, I shall live,  
     to declare the works of the LORD.  
 18 Though the LORD has chastened me sore,  
     he has not given me over to death.

*(The Procession arrives at the Temple)*

'Open to me the gates of victory. 19  
I would enter therein and give thanks to the LORD.'

*(The Welcome)*

'This is the gate of the LORD: 20  
the righteous may enter therein;'

I thank you because you have heard me, 21  
and are become my salvation.

The stone which the builders despised 22  
is become the head-stone of the corner.

This has been wrought by the LORD; 23  
it is marvellous in our eyes.

This day is the LORD's own creation: 24  
in it let us joy and be glad.

O LORD, save us, we pray, 25  
O LORD, prosper, we pray.

Blessed the one who enters 26  
in the name of the LORD.

From the house of the LORD we bless you.

The LORD is God, 27  
he has given us light.

Wreath the dance with boughs, 28  
till they touch the horns of the altar.

You are my God, I will thank you; 28  
O my God, I will exalt you.

Give thanks to the LORD for his goodness: 29  
his kindness endures forever.

*Psalm 119 — The Power and Comfort of the Word of God*

Happy they whose life is blameless, 119  
who walk by the law of the LORD.

Happy they who keep his charges, 2  
and seek him with all their hearts;

who have done no wrong, 3  
but walk in his ways.

You yourself have appointed your precepts 4

to be kept with diligence.

5 O to be steadily guided  
in the keeping of your statutes!

6 Then unashamed shall I be,  
when I look towards all your commandments.

7 I will thank you with heart unfeigned,  
when I learn your righteous judgments.

8 I will observe your statutes:  
O forsake me not utterly.

9 How can a young person keep their life pure?  
By giving heed to your word.

10 With all my heart have I sought you,  
let me not stray from your commandments.

11 In my heart have I treasured your word,  
to keep from sinning against you.

12 Blessed are you, O LORD;  
teach me your statutes.

13 With my lips have I rehearsed  
all the judgments of your mouth.

14 I delight in the way of your charges,  
more than in riches of all sorts.

15 I will muse upon your precepts,  
and look to your paths.

16 In your statutes I delight,  
I will not forget your word.

17 Grant that your servant may live,  
and I will observe your word.

18 Open my eyes, that I see  
wondrous things out of your law.

19 But a guest am I on the earth:  
hide not your commandments from me.

20 My heart is crushed with longing  
for your ordinances, at all times.

21 You rebuke the proud, the accursed,  
who wander from your commandments.

22 Roll away from me scorn and contempt,  
for I have observed your charges.

23 Though princes sit plotting against me,

your servant will muse on your statutes. Your charges are my delight, they are my counsellors.	24
I lie grovelling in the dust; revive me, as you have promised.	25
I told of my ways, you made answer; teach me your statutes.	26
Grant me insight into your precepts, and I will muse on your wonders.	27
I am overcome with sorrow; raise me up, as you have promised.	28
Put the way of falsehood from me, and graciously grant me your law.	29
I have chosen the way of fidelity, your ordinances I long for.	30
I hold fast to your charges: O put me not, LORD, to shame.	31
I will run in the way of your commandments, for you give me room of heart.	32
Teach me, O LORD, the way of your statutes, and I will keep it to the end,	33
instruct me to keep your law, and I will observe it with all my heart.	34
Guide me in the path of your commandments, for therein do I delight.	35
Incline my heart to your charges, and not to greed of gain.	36
Turn away my eyes from vain sights, revive me by your word.	37
Confirm to your servant the promise which is given to those who fear you.	38
Remove the reproach which I dread, because your judgments are good.	39
Behold, I long for your precepts. Quicken me in your righteousness.	40
Visit me, LORD, with your love and salvation, as you have promised.	41
So shall I answer my slanderers,	42

for my trust is in your word.  
43 Snatch not from my mouth the word of truth,  
for in your judgments I hope.  
44 I will keep your law continually,  
for ever and evermore.  
45 So shall I walk in wide spaces,  
for I give my mind to your precepts.  
46 I will speak of your charge before kings,  
and will not be ashamed thereof.  
47 Your commandments are my delight,  
I love them exceedingly.  
48 I will lift up my hands to your commandments,  
and muse upon your statutes.  
  
49 Remember your word to your servant,  
on which you have made me to hope.  
50 This is my comfort in trouble,  
that your word gives life to me.  
51 The arrogant utterly scorn me,  
but I have not declined from your law.  
52 When I think of your judgments of old,  
O LORD, I take to me comfort.  
53 I am seized with glowing anger  
at the wicked who forsake your law.  
54 Your statutes have been to me songs  
in the house of my pilgrimage.  
55 I remember your name in the night,  
O LORD and observe your law.  
56 My lot has been this,  
that I have kept your precepts.  
  
57 My portion are you, O LORD:  
I have promised to keep your words.  
58 I entreat you with all my heart;  
grant me your promised favour.  
59 I have thought upon my ways,  
and turned my feet to your charges.  
60 I hastened and tarried not  
to give heed to your commandments.  
61 Though the godless have wound their cords round me,

I have not forgotten your law.	
At midnight I rise to praise you	62
because of your righteous judgments.	
With all those who fear you I company,	63
aid with those who observe your precepts.	
The earth, LORD, is full of your kindness;	64
teach me your Statutes.	
Well have you dealt with your servant,	65
as you have promised, O LORD.	
Teach me discretion and knowledge,	66
for I have believed your commandments.	
Till trouble came I was a wanderer,	67
but now I observe your word.	
You are good and do good;	68
teach me your statutes.	
The proud have forged lies against me,	69
but I keep your precepts with all my heart.	
Their heart is gross like fat,	70
but I delight in your law.	
It was good for me to be humbled,	71
that I should learn your statutes.	
The law of your mouth is better to me	72
than thousands of pieces of silver and gold.	
Your hands have made me and fashioned me;	73
make me wise to learn your commandments.	
Those who fear you shall see me with joy,	74
for in your word have I hoped.	
I know, O LORD, that your judgments are right,	75
and in faithfulness you have afflicted me.	
Let your love be a comfort to me,	76
for so have you promised your servant.	
Visit me with your quickening pity,	77
for your law is my delight.	
Put the proud to shame, who have wronged me falsely:	78
I will muse on your precepts.	
Let those turn to me who fear you,	79
that they may learn your charges.	
Let my heart be sound in your statutes,	80

that I may not be put to shame.  
 81 My long for you to rescue me,  
     I put my hope in your word.  
 82 My eyes pine away for your promise:  
     saying, 'When will you comfort me?'  
 83 Though shrivelled like wine-skin in smoke,  
     your statutes I have not forgotten.  
 84 How few are the days of your servant!  
     When will you judge those who harass me?  
 85 Proud people have dug for me pits  
     people who do not conform to your law.  
 86 All your commandments are trusty.  
     With falsehood they harass me: help me.  
 87 They had nearly made an end of me,  
     yet I did not forget your precepts.  
 88 Spare me in your kindness,  
     and I will observe the charge of your mouth.  
  
 89 Forever, O LORD, is your word  
     fixed firmly in the heavens.  
 90 Your truth endures age after age;  
     it is established on earth, and it stands.  
 91 By your appointment they stand this day,  
     for all are your servants.  
 92 Had not your law been my joy,  
     in my misery then had I perished.  
 93 I will never forget your precepts,  
     for through them you have put life in me.  
 94 I am yours, O save me,  
     for I give my mind to your precepts.  
 95 The wicked lay wait to destroy me,  
     but I give heed to your charge.  
 96 I have seen a limit to all things:  
     but your commandment is spacious exceedingly.  
  
 97 O how I love your law!  
     All the day long I muse on it.  
 98 Your commandment makes me wiser than my enemies:  
     for it is mine forever.  
 99 I am prudent above all my teachers,



for your charges are my meditation.	
I have insight more than the aged, because I observe your precepts.	100
I refrain my foot from all wicked ways, that I may keep your word.	101
I turn not aside from your judgments, for you yourself are my teacher.	102
How sweet are your words to my taste, sweeter than honey to my mouth!	103
Insight I win through your precepts, therefore every false way I hate.	104
Your word is a lamp to my feet, and a light to my path.	105
I have sworn an oath, and will keep it, to observe your righteous judgments.	106
I am afflicted sorely: revive me, O LORD, as you said.	107
Accept, LORD, my willing praise, and teach me your judgments.	108
My life is in ceaseless peril; but I do not forget your law.	109
The wicked set traps for me, yet I do not stray from your precepts.	110
In your charges are my everlasting inheritance, they are the joy of my heart.	111
I am resolved to perform your statutes forever, to the utmost.	112
I hate people of divided heart, but your law do I love.	113
You are my shelter and shield: in your word do I hope.	114
Begone, you wicked people, I will keep the commands of my God.	115
Uphold me and spare me, as you have promised: O disappoint me not.	116
Hold me up, and I shall be saved: and your statutes shall be my unceasing delight.	117
All who swerve from your statutes you spurn:	118

their cunning is in vain.  
119 All the wicked of earth you count as dross,  
therefore I love your charges.  
120 My flesh, for fear of you, shudders,  
and I stand in awe of your judgments.

121 Justice and right have I practised,  
do not leave me to my oppressors.  
122 Be your servant's surety for good:  
'Let not the proud oppress me.  
123 My eyes pine for your salvation,  
and for your righteous promise.  
124 Deal in your love with your servant,  
and teach me your statutes.  
125 Your servant am I; instruct me,  
that I may know your charges.  
126 It is time for the LORD to act:  
they have violated your law.  
127 Therefore I love your commandments  
above gold, above fine gold.  
128 So by all your precepts I guide me,  
and every false way I hate.

129 Your decrees are wonderful,  
gladly I keep them.  
130 When your word is unfolded, light breaks;  
it imparts to the simple wisdom.  
131 With open mouth I pant  
with longing for your commandments.  
132 Turn to me with your favour,  
as is just to those who love you.  
133 Steady my steps by your word,  
so that sin have no power over me.  
134 Set me free from those who oppress me,  
and I shall observe your precepts.  
135 Shine with your face on your servant,  
and teach me your statutes.  
136 My eyes run down with rills of water,  
because your law is not kept.

137 Righteous are you, O LORD,

and right are your ordinances.	
The laws you have ordered are just, and trusty exceedingly.	138
My jealousy has undone me, that my foes have forgotten your words.	139
Your word has been tested well; and your servant loves it.	140
I am little and held in contempt, but your precepts I have not forgotten.	141
Just is your justice forever, and trusty is your law.	142
Stress and strain are upon me, but your commandments are my delight.	143
Right are your charges forever, instruct me that I may live.	144
With my whole heart I cry; O answer me. I would keep your statutes, O LORD.	145
I cry to you: O save me, and I will observe your charges.	146
Ere the dawn I cry for your help: in your word do I hope.	147
Awake I meet the night-watches, to muse upon your sayings.	148
Hear my voice in your kindness: O LORD, by your judgments revive me.	149
Near me are wicked tormentors, who are far from thoughts of your law; but near, too, are you, O LORD, and all your commandments are trusty.	150 151
Long have I known from your charges that you have founded them for all time.	152
Look on my misery, and rescue me; for I do not forget your law.	153
Defend my cause and redeem me: revive me, as you have promised.	154
Salvation is far from the wicked, for their mind is not in your statutes.	155
Great is your pity, O LORD:"	156

Revive me, as you have ordained.  
157 My foes and tormentors are many,  
but I have not declined from your charges.  
158 I behold the traitors with loathing,  
for they do not observe your word.  
159 Behold how I love your precepts:  
revive me, O LORD!, in your kindness.  
160 The sum of your word is truth,  
all your laws are just and eternal.  
  
161 Princes have harassed me wantonly:  
but my heart stands in awe of your word.  
162 Over your word I rejoice  
as one who finds great spoil.  
163 Falsehood I hate and abhor,  
but your law do I love.  
164 Seven times a day do I praise you  
because of your righteous judgments.  
165 Right well do they fare who love your law:  
they go on their way without stumbling.  
166 I hope for your salvation;  
O LORD I do your commandments.  
167 I observe your charges:  
I love them greatly.  
168 I observe your precepts and charges:  
all my ways are before you.  
  
169 Let my cry come before you, O LORD:  
give me insight, as you have promised.  
170 Let my prayer enter into your presence:  
deliver me, as you have said.  
171 My lips shall be fountains of praise,  
that you teach me your statutes.  
172 My tongue shall sing of your word,  
for all your commandments are right.  
173 Let your hand be ready to help me,  
for your precepts have been my choice.  
174 I long, LORD, for your salvation,  
and your law is my delight.  
175 Revive me that I may praise you,

and let your precepts help me.  
 I have strayed like a wandering sheep 176  
 seek your servant, because  
 I do not forget your commandments.

*Psalm 120 — Prayer for Deliverance from Slander and Treachery*

*A song of ascents.* **120**

In distress I cried to the LORD,  
 and he answered me.  
 ‘Deliver me, LORD, 2  
 from the lip that is false  
 and the tongue that is crafty.’

What shall he give to you, 3  
 you tongue that is crafty?

What yet shall he give to you?  
 Arrows of warrior, sharpened, 4  
 with glowing broom coals together.

Woe is me that I sojourn in Meshech, 5  
 that I live by the tents of Kedar.

Already too long have I dwelt 6  
 among those who hate peace.

I am for peace: 7  
 but when I speak of it,  
 they are for war.

*Psalm 121 — The Lord Our Protector*

*A song of ascents*

I will lift up my eyes to the mountains. **121**  
 O whence shall help for me come?

From the LORD comes help to me 2  
 the creator of heaven and earth.

Your foot he will not let totter: 3  
 he who guards you will not sleep.

The guardian of Israel 4  
 will neither slumber nor sleep.

5     The LORD is he who guards you  
       your shelter upon your right hand.  
 6     The sun by day shall not strike you,  
       nor the moon by night.  
 7     From all evil the LORD will guard you,  
       he will guard your life.  
 8     The LORD will guard your going and coming  
       from now and for evermore.

*Psalm 122 — The Joy and the Prayer of the Pilgrims*

**122**                                    *A song of ascents. Of David.*

I was glad when they said to me,  
       ‘We will go to the house of the LORD.’  
 2     Now we are standing,  
       within your gates, O Jerusalem.  
 3     O Jerusalem, built close-packed,  
       like a city without breach or gap,  
 4     to you do the tribes come,  
       the tribes of the LORD,  
       as the law has ordained for Israel,  
       there to give thanks to the LORD.  
 5     There once stood thrones of justice  
       even thrones of the household of David.  
 6     Pray that all may be well with Jerusalem,  
       and well with those who love you,  
 7     well within your ramparts,  
       and well within your palaces.  
 8     For the sake of my brethren and friends,  
       I will wish you now prosperity:  
 9     for the sake of the house of the LORD  
       our God, I will seek your good.

*Psalm 123 — A Prayer for Mercy*

**123**                                    *A song of ascents.*

I Lift up my eyes to you,

who are throned in the heavens.  
 As the eyes of a servant 2  
 turn to the hand of his master,  
 or the eyes of a maid  
 to the hand of her mistress,  
 so do our eyes turn  
 to the LORD our God,  
 until he is gracious to us.  
  
 Be gracious, be gracious to us, LORD. 3  
 Scorn enough, and more, have we borne  
 More than enough have we borne 4  
 of derision from those at their ease,  
 of scorn from those who are haughty.

*Psalm 124 — A Magnificent Deliverance*

*A song of ascents. Of David.* **124**

'Had it not been the LORD who was for us'  
 let Israel say  
 'Had it not been the LORD who was for us 2  
 when enemies rose against us,  
 then alive they'd have swallowed us up, 3  
 when their anger was kindled against us.  
 Then the waters would've swept us away, 4  
 and the torrent passed over us clean:  
 then most sure would've passed over us clean 5  
 the wild seething waters.'  
  
 Blest be the LORD who has given us not 6  
 to be torn by their teeth.  
 We are like a bird just escaped 7  
 from the snare of the fowler.  
  
 The snare is broken,  
 and we are escaped.  
 Our help is the name of the LORD, 8  
 the Creator of heaven and earth.

*Psalm 125 — A Sure Defence*

125 *A song of ascents.*

Those who trust in the LORD  
are like Mount Zion,  
that cannot be moved,  
but abides forever.

2 Round Jerusalem are the mountains,  
and the LORD is round his people  
from now and for evermore.

3 For he will not suffer  
the sceptre of wrong  
to rest on the land  
allotted to the righteous;  
else the righteous might put forth  
their own hand to evil.

4 Do good, O LORD,  
to the good,  
and to the true-hearted.

5 But those who swerve  
into crooked ways  
will the LORD lead away  
with the workers of evil.

Peace be upon Israel.

*Psalm 126 — Sowing in Tears*

126 *A song of ascents.*

When the LORD turned the fortunes of Zion,  
we were like dreamers.

2 Then was our mouth filled with laughter,  
our tongue with glad shouts;  
then among the nations they said,  
'The LORD has dealt greatly with them.'

3 The LORD had dealt greatly with us,  
and we were rejoicing.

4 Turn our fortunes, O LORD,  
as the streams in the Negreb.



They who sow in tears 5  
 shall reap with glad shouts.  
 Forth they fare, with their burden of seed, 6  
 and they weep as they go.  
 But home, home, with glad shouts they shall come  
 with their arms full of sheaves.

*Psalm 127 — The Need of Heavenly Help*

*A song of ascents. Of Solomon.* **127**

Unless the LORD builds the house,  
 those who build it labour in vain.  
 Unless the LORD guards the city,  
 the watchman wakes in vain.

In vain you rise early, 2  
 and finish so late,  
 and so eat sorrow's bread;  
 for he cares for his loved ones  
 in their sleep.

Children are a gift of the LORD, 3  
 the fruit of the womb, a reward.  
 Like arrows wielded by warriors, 4  
 are the children of youth.

Happy the man who has filled 5  
 his quiver full of them.  
 He will not be ashamed when he speaks  
 with enemies in the gate.

*Psalm 128 — The Blessings of Home*

*A song of ascents.* **128**

Happy all who fear the LORD,  
 who walk in his ways.  
 You will eat what your hands have toiled for, 2  
 and be happy and prosperous!

Like a fruitful vine shall your wife be 3  
 in the innermost room of your house:

your children, like olive shoots,  
round about your table.

- 4 See! This is the blessing  
of the man who fears the LORD.  
5 The LORD shall bless you from Zion.  
You will see Jerusalem nourish  
all the days of your life.  
6 You will see your children's children.

Peace upon Israel.

*Psalm 129 — A Prayer for the Discomfiture of the Enemies of Zion*

129 *A song of ascents.*

- 'Sore have they vexed me from youth'  
thus let Israel say  
2 'Sore have they vexed me from youth,  
but they have not prevailed against me.  
3 The ploughers ploughed on my back,  
they made their furrows long.  
4 But the LORD, who is righteous, has cut  
the cords of the wicked.'  
5 Let all who are haters of Zion  
be put to shame and defeated.  
6 May they be as the grass on the house-top,  
which withers before it shoots up;  
7 which fills not the arms of the reaper,  
nor the lap of the binder of sheaves  
8 whereof no one says as they pass,  
'The blessing of God be upon you.'

In the name of the LORD we bless you.

*Psalm 130 — Out of the Depths*

130 *A song of ascents.*

Out of the depths  
I call to you, LORD.

LORD , hear my voice: 2  
 give heed with your ears  
 to my loud plea.

If you should mark sin, LORD, 3  
 O LORD, who could stand?

But with you is forgiveness, 4  
 that you may be feared.

I wait for the LORD, 5  
 I wait for his word,

I look for the LORD 6  
 more than watchman for morning,  
 than watchman for morning.

Israel, hope in the LORD: 7  
 with the LORD there is love  
 with him plenteous redemption.

And he redeems Israel 8  
 from all his iniquities.

*Psalm 131 — As a Little Child*

*A song of ascents. Of David.* **131**

O LORD, my heart is not haughty,  
 my eyes are not lofty,  
 I walk not among great things,  
 things too wonderful for me.

Yes, I have soothed and stilled myself, 2  
 like a young child on his mother's lap;  
 like a young child am I.

O Israel, hope in the LORD 3  
 from now and for evermore.

*Psalm 132 — The Ancient Promise to David and Zion*

Remember, O LORD, David **132**  
 all his sufferings,

the oath that he swore to the LORD, 2  
 and his vow to the Strong One of Jacob,

3 never to enter his tent,  
never to lie on his bed,  
4 never to give his eyes sleep  
or his eyelids slumber,  
5 till he had found a place for the LORD,  
for the Strong One of Jacob to live in.

6 We heard of it in Ephrathah,  
in the fields of Jaar we found it.  
7 We went to the place where he dwelt,  
we bowed ourselves low at his footstool.  
8 'Arise, LORD, and enter your resting-place,  
you and your mighty ark.  
9 Let your priests wear a garment of righteousness,  
your faithful shout aloud for joy.  
10 For the sake of David your servant,  
do not reject your Anointed.'

11 The LORD swore an oath to David  
an oath that he will not break;  
'I will set on your throne  
a prince of your line.  
12 If your sons keep my covenant  
and the statutes I teach them,  
then their sons, too, forever,  
will sit on your throne.'

13 For the choice of the LORD is Zion;  
she is the home of his heart.

14 'This is forever my resting-place,  
this is the home of my heart.  
15 I will royally bless her provision,  
and give bread to her poor in abundance.  
16 Her priests I will clothe with salvation;  
her faithful will shout for joy.  
17 There will I raise up for David  
a dynasty of power.  
I have set my anointed a lamp  
that shall never go out.  
18 Robes of shame I will put on his foes,  
but on his head a glittering crown.'

*Psalm 133 — Family together**A song of ascents. Of David.* **133**

Behold! How good and how pleasant  
 is the dwelling of kindred together!  
 Like precious oil on the head 2  
 that ran down on the beard,  
 the beard of Aaron, running  
 over the collar of his robe:  
 like the dew upon Hermon which falls 3  
 on the mountains of Zion.  
 For there has the LORD ordained blessing —  
 life that is endless.

*Psalm 134 — An Evening Invocation**A song of ascents.* **134**

Attend! Bless the LORD,  
 all you the LORD's servants,  
 who stand by night  
 in the house of the LORD.  
 Lift your hands to the holy place, 2  
 bless the LORD.  
 The LORD who made heaven and earth, 3  
 bless you from Zion.

*Psalm 135 — The Lord's Power Revealed in Nature and History**Hallelujah.* **135**

Praise the name of the LORD.  
 Praise the LORD, you his servants,  
 who stand in the house of the LORD, 2  
 in the courts of the house of our God.  
 Praise the LORD, for the LORD is good: 3  
 "Sing praise to his name it is pleasant.  
 The LORD for himself chose Jacob, 4  
 Israel as his own special treasure.  
 For I know that the LORD is great, 5  
 that our LORD is above all gods.

6 All that he wills he does  
in the heavens and on the earth,  
in the seas and in all the abysses.  
7 Clouds he brings up from the ends of the earth,  
lightnings he makes for the rain,  
wind he brings out of his storehouses.

8 The first-born of Egypt he struck,  
both humans and animals.  
9 Signs and wonders he sent  
into your midst, O Egypt,  
upon Pharaoh and all his servants.  
10 Many nations he struck,  
mighty kings he slew  
11 Sihon, king of the Amorites,  
Og, king of Bashan,  
and all the kingdoms of Canaan.  
12 He gave their land for possession,  
possession to Israel his people.

13 Your name, O LORD, is forever;  
your memorial world without end.  
14 For the LORD secures right for his people,  
and takes pity upon his servants.

15 The idols of heathen are silver  
made by human hands.  
16 They have mouths, but cannot speak:  
they have eyes, but cannot see.  
17 They have ears, but cannot hear:  
there is no breath in their mouths.  
18 Their makers become like them,  
so do all who trust in them.

19 House of Israel, bless the LORD:  
house of Aaron, bless the LORD.  
20 House of Levi, bless the LORD:  
you who fear the LORD, bless the LORD.  
21 Blest be the LORD out of Zion,  
who lives in Jerusalem.  
Hallelujah.

*Psalm 136 — The Lord's Love Revealed in Nature and History*

Give thanks to the LORD for his goodness: for his kindness endures forever.	<b>136</b>
Give thanks to the God of gods: for his kindness endures forever.	2
Give thanks to the Lord of lords: for his kindness endures forever.	3
To him who alone does great wonders: for his kindness endures forever.	4
Whose wisdom created the heavens: for his kindness endures forever.	5
Who spread forth the earth on the waters: for his kindness endures forever.	6
Who made great lights: for his kindness endures forever.	7
The sun to rule over the day: for his kindness endures forever.	8
Moon and stars to rule over the night: for his kindness endures forever.	9
Who struck the first-born of Egypt: for his kindness endures forever.	10
And brought Israel out from their midst: for his kindness endures forever.	11
With strong hand and outstretched arm: for his kindness endures forever.	12
Who cut the Red Sea in pieces: for his kindness endures forever.	13
And brought Israel right through the midst: for his kindness endures forever.	14
And shook Pharaoh with all his host into the sea for his kindness endures forever.	15
Who led his people through the desert: for his kindness endures forever.	16
Who struck down great kings: for his kindness endures forever.	17
And slew noble kings: for his kindness endures forever.	18

19 Sihon, king of the Amorites:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
20 And Og, king of Bashan:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
21 Who gave their land for possession:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
22 Possession to Israel his servant:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
23 Who remembered our low estate:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
24 And rescued us from our foes:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
25 Who gives to all flesh food:  
for his kindness endures forever.  
26 Give thanks to the God of heaven:  
for his kindness endures forever.

*Psalm 137 — By the Waters of Babylon*

137 By the waters of Babylon there we sat,  
and we wept at the thought of Zion.  
2 There on the poplars we hung our harps.  
3 For there our captors called for a song:  
our tormentors, rejoicing, saying:  
'Sing us one of the songs of Zion.'  
4 How can we sing the LORD's song  
in the foreigner's land?  
5 If I forget you, Jerusalem,  
may my right hand wither.  
6 May my tongue stick to the roof of my mouth,  
if I am unmindful of you,  
or don't set Jerusalem  
above my chief joy.  
7 Remember the Edomites, LORD,  
the day of Jerusalem's fall,  
when they said, 'Lay her bare, lay her bare,  
right down to her very foundation.'  
8 Babylon, despoiler,



happy are those who pay you back  
 for all you have done to us.  
 Happy are they who seize and dash 9  
 your children against the rocks.

*Psalm 138 — The Constancy of the Lord's Care*

*Of David.* **138**

I will thank you, O LORD, with all my heart:  
 in the sight of the gods I will sing your praise,  
 and prostrate before your holy temple, 2  
 will praise your name for your constant love,  
 for you have exulted your promise above all.

When I called you, you answered; 3  
 you gave me strength, you inspired me.

All the kings of the earth shall praise you, O LORD, 4  
 when they shall have heard the words you have  
 uttered;

and they shall sing of the ways of the LORD, 5  
 and tell of the LORD's transcendent glory.

For, high though the LORD is, he looks on the lowly, 6  
 and strikes down the haughty from far away.

Though my way be distressful, yet you preserve me: 7  
 you lay your hand on my angry foes,  
 and your right hand gives me victory.

The LORD will accomplish all that which concerns me. 8  
 Your kindness, O LORD, endures forever.  
 O do not abandon the work of your hands.

*Psalm 139 — The Ever-Present God*

*For the leader. Of David, a psalm.* **139**

O LORD, you search and know me;  
 when I sit, when I rise you know it, 2  
 you perceive my thoughts from afar.

When I walk, when I lie you sift it, 3  
 familiar with all my ways.

There is not a word on my tongue, 4

but see! LORD, you know it all.

5 Behind and before you beset me,  
upon me you lay your hand.

6 It's too wonderful for me to know  
too lofty I cannot attain it.

7 Whither shall I go from your spirit?  
Or whither shall I flee from your face?

8 If I climb up to heaven, you are there:  
or make Sheol my bed, you are there.

9 If I lift up the wings of the morning  
and fly to the end of the sea,  
10 there also your hand would grasp me,  
and your right hand take hold of me.

11 If I say, 'Let the darkness cover me,  
and night be the light about me,'  
12 The dark is not dark for you,  
but night is as light as the day.

13 For you did put me together;  
in my mother's womb you did weave me.

14 I give you praise for my fashioning  
so full of awe, so wonderful.  
Your works are wonderful.

You knew me right well;  
15 my bones were not hidden from you,  
when I was made in secret,  
and woven in the depths of the earth.

16 Your eyes saw all my days:  
they stood on your book every one  
written down, before they were fashioned,  
while none of them yet was mine.

17 But how far, O God, beyond measure  
are your thoughts! How mighty their sum!  
18 Should I count, they are more than the sand.  
When I wake, I am still with you.

Will you slay the wicked, O God? 19  
 And remove from me the bloodythirsty,  
 who maliciously defy you 20  
 and take your name in vain.

Do I not hate those who hate you, LORD? 21  
 Do I not loathe those who resist you?  
 With perfect hatred I hate them, 22  
 I count them my enemies.

Search me, O God, know my heart: 23  
 test me, and know my thoughts,  
 and see if guile be in me; 24  
 and lead me in the way everlasting.

*Psalm 140 — A Prayer for Preservation*

Rescue me, LORD, from evil people; **140**  
 from the violent guard me  
 from those who plot evil in their heart, 2  
 and stir up war continually:  
 who make their tongue as sharp as a serpent's, 3  
 and under whose lips is the poison of adders. (*Selah*)

Preserve me, O LORD, from the hands of the wicked, 4  
 from the violent guard me  
 from those who are plotting to trip up my feet.  
 The proud have hidden a trap for me, 5  
 cords they have spread as a net for my feet:  
 snares they have set at the side of my track. (*Selah*)

I have said to the LORD, 'My God are you; 6  
 give ear, LORD, to my loud plea.

O LORD my LORD, my saviour mighty, 7  
 you did cover my head in the day of battle.

Grant not, O LORD, the desires of the wicked; 8  
 and what they have purposed, promote you not.' (*Selah*)

Let them not lift up their heads against me. 9  
 May the mischief they prate bring themselves to destruction,

10 may he rain upon them coals of fire,  
     may he strike them down swiftly, to rise no more,  
 11 no place in the land may there be for the slanderer:  
     may the violent be hunted from sorrow to sorrow.

12 I know that the LORD will do right by the weak,  
     and will execute justice for those who are needy.  
 13 Surely the righteous shall praise your name,  
     and they who are upright shall live in your presence.

*Psalm 141 — A Prayer for Protection from Persecutors*

**141** *A psalm of David.*

LORD, I call to you: hasten, to me,  
     give ear to my voice, when I call to you.  
 2 Let my prayer be presented as incense before you,  
     and my uplifted hands as the evening meal-offering.

3 Set, O LORD, a watch on my mouth,  
     put a guard on the door of my lips.  
 4 Incline not my heart to an evil matter,  
     to busy myself in deeds of wickedness,  
 in company with workers of evil:  
     never may I partake of their dainties.

5 A wound or reproof from a good person in kindness  
     is oil which my head shall never refuse.  
     In their misfortune my prayer is still with them.

6 Abandoned they are to the hands of their judges:  
     they shall learn that my words are true.

7 Like stones on a country road cleft and broken  
     so lie our bones scattered for Death to devour.  
 8 But my eyes are turned towards you, O LORD.  
     Do not pour out my life, for in you I take refuge.  
 9 Keep me safe from the trap they have laid for me,  
     from the snares of the workers of trouble.  
 10 Into their own nets let wicked people fall;  
     while I pass by in safety.

*Psalm 142 — A Prayer for Deliverance from Persecutors*

<i>A maskil of David, while he was in the cave, a prayer.</i>	<b>142</b>
Loudly I cry to the LORD: to the LORD plead loudly for mercy, I pour my complaint before him, I tell my troubles to him.	2
When my spirit is faint within me, my path is known to you. In the way I am wont to walk in, they have hidden a trap for me.	3
I look to the right and the left; but not a friend have I. No place of refuge is left me, not a man to care for me.	4
So I cry to you, O LORD: I say, 'My refuge are you, all I have in the land of the living.'	5
Attend to my piercing cry, for very weak am I. Save me from those who pursue me, for they are too strong for me.	6
Free me from prison, that I may give thanks to your name, for the righteous are patiently waiting till you show your bounty to me.	7

*Psalm 143 — A Prayer for Deliverance and Guidance*

<i>A psalm of David.</i>	<b>143</b>
Listen, O LORD, to my prayer; give ear to my plea. In your faithfulness give me answer, and in your righteousness.	2
With your servant O enter you not into judgment, for in your sight can no one alive be justified.	3
For the enemy persecutes me,	3

- crushing my life to the ground,  
 making me live in the darkness,  
 as those who have long been dead.  
 4 My spirit is faint within me,  
 my heart is bewildered within me.
- 5 I remember the days of old,  
 and brood over all you have done,  
 musing on all that your hands have wrought.
- 6 I spread out my hands to you:  
 I thirst for you,  
 like parched earth. (*Selah*)
- 7 Answer me soon, LORD,  
 because my spirit is spent.  
 Hide not your face from me,  
 else become I like those who go down to the pit.
- 8 Let me learn of your love in the morning,  
 for my trust is in you.  
 Teach me the way I should go:  
 for my heart longs for you.
- 9 Save me, O LORD, from my foes:  
 for to you I have fled for refuge.
- 10 Teach me to do your will,  
 for you yourself are my God.  
 Guide me by your good spirit,  
 O LORD, on a way that is smooth.
- 11 Be true to your name LORD, spare me,  
 bring me out of distress in your faithfulness.
- 12 In your kindness extinguish my enemies,  
 and all those who vex me destroy;  
 for I am your servant.

*Psalm 144 — The Warrior's Song*

**144** *Of David.*

Blest be the LORD my rock,  
 who trains my hands for war,  
 my fingers for fighting.

- My rock and my fortress, 2  
 my tower, my deliverer,  
 my shield, behind whom I take refuge,  
 who lays nations low at my feet.
- LORD , what are mortals 3  
 that you care for them,  
 humans,  
 that you think of them?
- They are like a breath, 4  
 their days as a shadow that passes.
- LORD , bow your heavens and come down: 5  
 touch the hills, so that they smoke.
- Flash forth lightning and scatter them, 6  
 your arrows send forth and confound them.
- Stretch out your hand from on high; 7  
 pluck me out of the mighty waters,  
 out of the hands of foreigners,
- who speak with the mouth of falsehood, 8  
 and lift their right hand to swear lies.
- O God, a new song I would sing you, 9  
 on a ten-stringed harp make you music.
- For to kings you give the victory, 10  
 and David your servant you save.
- Snatch me from the cruel sword, 11  
 rescue me from the hand of foreigners,  
 who speak with the mouth of falsehood,  
 and lift their right hand to swear lies.
- The Prosperity of the Lord's People*
- May our sons in their youth 12  
 be as plants well tended:  
 our daughters like cornices  
 carved as in palaces.
- May our barns be bursting 13  
 with produce of all kinds.  
 In the fields may our sheep bear

by thousands and ten thousands.

14 May our cattle be fat,  
our walls unbreached,  
may no cry of distress  
ring in our streets.

15 Happy the people  
who fares so well:  
and so fares the people  
whose God is the LORD.

*Psalm 145 — The Kingdom Everlasting*

145 *A song of praise. Of David.*

I will exalt you, my God, O king:  
I will bless your name for ever and ever.

2 I will bless you every day:  
I will praise your name for ever and ever.

3 Great is the LORD and worthy all praise,  
his greatness is unsearchable.

4 One age to another shall praise your deeds,  
declaring the mighty things you have done.

5 Of your glorious majesty they shall tell,  
and I will muse of your many wonders.

6 Of the might of your terrible acts they shall speak,  
and the tale of your great deeds I will tell.

7 The fame of your abundant goodness  
and righteousness they shall pour forth in song.

8 The LORD is full of grace and pity,  
patient and rich in loving-kindness.

9 The LORD is good to all the world,  
and his pity is over all things that he made.

10 All your works give you thanks, O LORD,  
and you are blessed of those who love you.

11 They shall speak of your glorious kingdom,  
and of your might shall they discourse,



making known to all his mighty acts, and the glorious majesty of his kingdom.	12
Yours is a kingdom that lives through all ages: through all generations extends your dominion. The LORD is faithful in all that he promises, gracious is he in all that he does.	13
The LORD upholds all who fall; he lifts up all who are bowed down. The eyes of all look in hope to you, and you give them their food in due season.	14
You yourself open your hand, and fill with your favour all things that live. The LORD is righteous in all his ways, gracious is he in all that he does.	16
The LORD is near to all who call him, to all who call upon him in truth. He will fulfil the desires of those who fear him; he will hear their cry for help and save them.	17
The LORD is the keeper of all who love him, but all the wicked will he destroy. My mouth will utter the praise of the LORD, and all life will bless his holy name for ever and ever.	20
	21

*Psalm 146 — The Great Protector*

My soul, praise the LORD.	<b>146</b>
I will praise the LORD, while I live; I will sing to my God, while I am.	2
Put not your trust in princes mortals, in whom is no help.	3
When their breath goes out, they go back to the dust: on that very day their purposes perish.	4
Happy those whose help	5

is the God of Jacob:  
 whose hope is set  
 on the LORD their God,  
 6 the Creator of heaven and earth,  
 the sea, and all that is in them.  
  
 He remains eternally loyal.  
 7 For the wronged he executes justice;  
 he gives bread to the hungry;  
 the LORD releases the prisoners.  
 8 The LORD gives sight to the blind:  
 the LORD raises those who are bowed.  
 The LORD loves the righteous.  
 9 The LORD preserves the stranger,  
 upholds the widow and orphan,  
 but the wicked he leads to disaster.  
  
 10 The LORD shall reign forever,  
 your God, O Zion, to all generations.  
 Hallelujah.

*Psalm 147 — The Lord's Love and Power Revealed in Nature*

**147** Hallelujah.  
 It is good to sing praise to our God,  
 for praise is sweet and seemly.  
 2 The LORD builds up Jerusalem,  
 the outcasts of Israel he gathers.  
 3 He heals the broken in heart,  
 and binds up their wounds.  
 4 He counts the numberless stars,  
 he gives names to them all.  
 5 Great is our LORD, rich in power,  
 and measureless is his wisdom.  
 6 The LORD lifts up the down-trodden,  
 the wicked he brings to the ground.  
  
 7 Sing songs of thanks to the LORD,  
 and play on the lyre to our God.  
 8 For he covers the sky with clouds,  
 he prepares rain for the earth,

makes grass to grow on the mountains.	
He gives the cattle their food	9
the young ravens when they cry.	
His pleasure is not in the strength of the horse,	10
his joy is not in the speed of a runner;	
but the LORD has his pleasure in those who fear him,	11
in those who wait for his kindness.	
Praise the LORD, then, O Jerusalem:	12
sing praise to your God, O Zion.	
For he strengthens the bars of your gates,	13
and blesses your children within you.	
He brings peace to your borders,	14
and choicest of wheat in abundance.	
He sends his command to the earth:	15
his word runs very swiftly.	
Snow he gives like wool,	16
frost he scatters like ashes.	
He casts forth his ice like morsels:	17
who can stand before his cold?	
He sends forth his word, and melts them:	18
his wind blows the waters flow.	
He declares his word to Jacob,	19
his statutes and judgments to Israel.	
No other nation did he do this for,	20
they know nothing of his judgments.	
Hallelujah.	

*Psalm 148 — The Universal Chorus of Praise*

Praise the LORD from the heavens,	<b>148</b>
praise him in the heights.	
Praise him, all his angels;	2
praise him, all his hosts.	
Praise him, sun and moon;	3
praise him, all stars of light.	
Praise him, you highest heavens,	4
and you waters above the heavens.	
Let them praise the name of the LORD,	5

for at his command they were made.  
 6 And he fixed them for ever and ever  
 by a law which they dare not transgress.  
 7 Praise the LORD from the earth:  
 you depths, with your monsters, all.  
 8 Fire, hail, snow and ice,  
 and stormy wind doing his word.  
 9 All you mountains and hills,  
 all you fruit trees and cedars,  
 10 all you wild beasts and tame,  
 creeping things, birds on the wing.  
 11 All you kings and nations of earth;  
 all you princes and judges of earth:  
 12 young men and maidens together,  
 old men and children together.  
 13 Let them praise the name of the LORD,  
 for his name alone is exalted.  
 Over heaven and earth is his glory.  
 14 He has lifted his people to honour.  
 Wherefore this chorus of praise from his saints,  
 from Israel, the people who stand in his fellowship.  
 Hallelujah.

*Psalm 149 — Song of Victory*

**149** Hallelujah.  
 Sing to the LORD a new song,  
 sound his praise where the faithful are gathered.  
 2 Let Israel rejoice in its maker,  
 sons of Zion exult in their king.  
 3 Let them praise his name in the dance,  
 making music with lyre and with timbrel.  
 4 For the LORD delights in his people,  
 adorning the humble with victory.  
 5 Let the faithful exult and extol him  
 with glad ringing cries all night long.  
 6 High praises of God in their mouth,

and a two-edged sword in their hand:  
 on the heathen to execute vengeance, 7  
 and chastisement sore on the nations,  
 binding their kings with chains, 8  
 and their nobles with fetters of iron,  
 to execute on them the doom that is written. 9

This is the glory of all his faithful.  
 Hallelujah.

*Psalm 150 — Hallelujah*

Hallelujah. 150  
 Praise God in his holy place.  
 Praise him in the sky, his stronghold.  
 Praise him for his deeds of power. 2  
 Praise him for his boundless greatness.

Praise him with blast of horn; 3  
 praise him with harp and lyre.  
 Praise him with timbrel and dance; 4  
 praise him with strings and pipe.  
 Praise him with resounding cymbals, 5  
 praise him with clashing cymbals.  
 Let all that has breath praise the LORD. 6  
 Hallelujah.

